

**CONTINUITY AND CHANGE OF IDENTITY IN THE
HOME ENVIRONMENT**

Development of the private house in Hofuf, Saudi Arabia

NEWCASTLE UNIVERSITY LIBRARY

097 52892 9

Thesis L6197

A thesis submitted to the University of Newcastle upon Tyne in fulfilment
for the Degree of Doctor of Philosophy in Architecture

MASHARY A. AL-NAIM

Centre for Architectural Research and Development Overseas,
Faculty of Law, Environment and Social Sciences,
University of Newcastle upon Tyne,
United Kingdom.

**JULY
1998**

**To my parents,
my wife, and
my children**
without whose
support and patience
this work
could never
have been completed

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Abstract.....	vi
Acknowledgement.....	vii
List of Figures.....	viii
List of Table.....	xv
Glossary.....	xvi

CHAPTER I: INTRODUCTION

1.1 Prologue.....	3
1.2 Identity: Change and Resistance in Saudi Society.....	4
1.2.1 Tradition Vs Modernity.....	4
1.2.2 Westernisation and Social Resistance.....	7
1.2.3 Searching for Identity.....	11
1.3 Significance of the Study.....	15
1.4 The Hypothetical Frame.....	17
1.5 Aims and Objectives.....	20
1.6 Research Strategy.....	22
1.7 The Setting.....	22
1.7.1 Why Hofuf.....	23
1.7.2 Why Home Environment.....	24
1.7.3 Why Private Home.....	25
1.8 Study Organisation.....	25

CHAPTER II: IDENTITY IN TRANSITIONAL CONTEXT: THE EXPERIENCE OF CHANGE IN THE SAUDI HOME ENVIRONMENT

2.1 Prologue.....	31
2.2 The Experience of Early Change (1938-60).....	32
2.2.1 The Early Physical and Spatial Conflict.....	33
2.2.2 The Consolidation of the Early Conflict.....	36
2.3 The Experience of Rapid Change (1960-Present Day).....	43
2.3.1 Institutionalising the New House Image.....	44
2.3.2 Transformation of the New House Type.....	48
2.3.3 Prevailing Trend in the House Design.....	51
2.4 Summary.....	54

CHAPTER III: IDENTITY AND HOME THEORETICAL PERSPECTIVE

3.1 Prologue.....	58
3.2 The Meaning of Identity: Conceptual Framework.....	59

3.2.1 The Concept of Physical Object.....	60
3.2.2 The Concept of Values.....	64
3.2.2.1 Mechanisms of Values.....	65
3.2.2.2 Levels of Values.....	68
3.2.2.3 Values and Continuity of Identity.....	71
2.3 The Concept of Collective Memory.....	72
3.3 Home and Identity.....	75
3.3.1 The Concept of Home.....	75
3.3.2 Home as an Expression of Identity.....	80
3.3.2.1 Home as an Individual and Collective Medium.....	81
3.3.2.2 Home as a Physical and Social Image.....	82
3.3.2.3 Home, Use, and Identity.....	84
3.4 Summary.....	87

CHAPTER IV: PROCESS OF IDENTIFICATION IN THE HOME ENVIRONMENT: DEVELOPING AN OPERATIONAL MODEL

4.1 Prologue.....	91
4.2 Identity and Meaning.....	92
4.3 The Dimensions of Identity.....	96
4.3.1 Perceptual and Associational Dimension.....	96
4.3.2 Individual and Group Dimension.....	99
4.4 Types of Identity in the Home Environment.....	104
4.5 Identity as a Dynamic Process.....	105
4.6 Growth of Identity in the Home Environment.....	109
4.7 Process of Identification in the Home Environment.....	112
4.7.1 Re-Identification of Existing Identity.....	115
4.7.1.1 Continuity of Existing Identity.....	115
4.7.1.2 Partial Continuity of Existing Identity.....	115
4.7.2 Identification of the New Forms.....	118
4.7.2.1 Collective Action.....	118
4.7.2.2 Personal Action.....	120
4.7.2.3 Imposed Collective Action.....	121
4.8 Summary.....	122

CHAPTER V: METHODOLOGY AND FIELDWORK

5.1 Prologue.....	126
5.2 Rationale of the Research Method.....	127
5.3 The Pilot Study.....	129
5.4 Fieldwork and Research Environment.....	133
5.4.1 In-Depth Case Studies.....	135
5.4.1.1 Traditional Home Environment.....	137
5.4.1.2 Hybrid Home Environment.....	138
5.4.1.3 Formal Home Environment.....	139
5.4.2 House Measurements and Floor Plan Collections.....	140
5.4.3 In-Depth Interviews.....	141

5.4.3.1 Semi-Structured Interviews.....	143
5.4.3.2 Focus Group Interviews.....	145
5.4.3.3 Personal Interviews.....	146
5.4.4 Observation.....	150
5.4.5 Collecting Visual Data.....	153
5.4.5.1 Home Exterior.....	153
5.4.5.2 Home Interior.....	154
5.4.6 Documents.....	155
5.5 Analysing the Data.....	156
5.5.1 The Basic Analytical Work.....	158
5.5.2 Spatial Analysis.....	159
5.5.3 Visual Analysis.....	159
5.5.4 Constructing Spatio-Temporal Images.....	160

CHAPTER VI: THE CONCEPT OF *FEREEJ*: MAKING AN IDENTITY IN THE TRADITIONAL HOME ENVIRONMENT

6.1 Prologue.....	167
6.2 The Concept of <i>Fereej</i> in the Traditional Home Environment.....	168
6.2.1 The Family's Environmental Behaviour in the <i>Fereej</i> System.....	169
6.2.2 The Social Spectrum of the <i>Fereej</i> System.....	176
6.3 <i>Fereej</i> System: From Social Organisation to Place Making.....	182
6.3.1 Physical Formation of the <i>Fereej</i> System.....	184
6.4 Continuity of the <i>Fereej</i> System in the Traditional Home Environment.....	188
6.5 The <i>Fereej</i> as a Territorial System.....	190
6.6 The Use and Meaning of the Physical Environment in the <i>Fereej</i> System.....	197
6.6.1 The Use and Meaning of External Domestic Space.....	197
6.6.2 Use and Meaning of the <i>Sabat</i>	201
6.6.3 Consistency of Physical Morphology.....	203
6.6.4 The Use and Meaning of the House Façade.....	206
6.7 Summary.....	217

CHAPTER VII: DWELLING IN THE *FEREEJ* SYSTEM: RITUALS AND CEREMONIES IN HOFUF'S TRADITIONAL HOUSE

7.1 prologue.....	221
7.2 Formation of the Traditional House: Historical Approach.....	222
7.2.1 Spatial Principle of the Traditional House.....	227
7.2.2 Continuity and Change of the Physical and Spatial Features of the Traditional House (up to 1950).....	230
7.3 Rituals and Ceremonies of Internal Domestic Spaces.....	245
7.3.1 Rituals and Ceremonies in the Male Reception Spaces.....	245
7.3.2 Rituals and Ceremonies in the Family Spaces.....	255
7.4 Decoration and Visual Elements in the Traditional House.....	261
7.4.1 The Use of Decoration in the Traditional House.....	261
7.4.2 From a Utilitarian Form to a Symbolic Form: Development of the Decorative elements.....	264

7.5 Summary.....	270
------------------	-----

CHAPTER VIII: IDENTITY IN TRANSITION: CHANGE AND RESISTANCE IN HOFUF'S HOME ENVIRONMENT

8.1 Prologue.....	275
8.2 The <i>Fereej</i> System in the Hybrid Neighbourhoods.....	277
8.2.1 <i>Assalhiyyah</i> Suburb (1904-40).....	277
8.2.1.1 Physical Characteristics of <i>Assalhiyyah</i>	279
8.2.1.2 The <i>Fereej</i> System in <i>Assalhiyyah</i>	283
8.2.2 The Post-Oil Neighbourhoods (1940-60).....	287
8.2.2.1 Formation of the Post-Oil Neighbourhoods (1940-60).....	291
8.2.2.2 Dwelling in the Hybrid <i>Fereej</i>	296
8.3 The Transitional <i>Fereej</i> System.....	305
8.3.1 The Dwelling in the Transitional <i>Fereej</i>	309
8.4 Contemporary Forms of the <i>Fereej</i> System.....	320
8.5 Summary.....	328

CHAPTER IX: THE IDENTITY OF THE CONTEMPORARY PRIVATE HOME IN HOFUF

9.1 Prologue.....	333
9.2 Design Profession and the Contemporary Private Home in Hofuf.....	334
9.3 Spatial Development of the Private Home in Hofuf.....	336
9.3.1 From Transitional House to Villa Style.....	338
9.3.2 Refining the Villa Type.....	348
9.3.3 Localising the Villa Type.....	359
9.4 Rituals and Ceremonies of the Contemporary Private Home.....	369
9.4.1 Rituals and Ceremonies in the Male Reception Spaces.....	369
9.4.1.1 The <i>Majlis</i> Hall.....	370
9.4.1.2 <i>Mugallat</i> and Arabic <i>Majlis</i>	372
9.4.1.3 The Entrance Hall.....	374
9.4.1.4 The Coffee Ritual.....	375
9.4.2 Rituals and Ceremonies of the Women's <i>Majlis</i>	378
9.4.3 Rituals and Ceremonies of Family Spaces.....	380
9.4.3.1 The Living Room.....	380
9.4.3.2 The Kitchen.....	382
9.5 Summary.....	384

CHAPTER X: CONCLUDING REMARKS

10.1 Prologue.....	389
10.2 Identity in Hofuf's Home Environment.....	391
10.2.1 <i>Fereej</i> System as an Identity Maintenance.....	392
10.2.1.1 The <i>Fereej</i> System as a Place Making.....	393
10.2.1.2 Relevance of the <i>Fereej</i> System to the Current Issues in Saudi Home Environment.....	395

10.2.2 Searching for Identity as Form Giver.....	396
10.2.2.1 The Three Portions of the House.....	397
10.2.2.2 The Family and Community Relationship.....	399
10.2.2.3 Personalising the House.....	401
10.3 Future of the Home Environment and Private Home in Hofuf.....	401
10.3.1 Encouraging the <i>Fereej</i> System.....	402
10.3.2 Managing Internal Space Clustering.....	403
10.3.3 Respecting Associational Meanings in the Home Environment.....	403
10.3.4 The problem of the House Size.....	403
10.3.5 Allowing Future Transformation.....	404
10.4 Areas for Further Research.....	404

APPENDICES

APPENDIX I: Formation of the Traditional Settlement in Hofuf.....	408
APPENDIX II: The Community of Hofuf: Continuity and Change.....	416
APPENDIX III: Population Growth of Hofuf.....	432
APPENDIX IV: Historical Documents.....	433
APPENDIX V: Examples of the In-Depth Combined Technique.....	434
APPENDIX VI: The Issue of Identity and Home Environment in the Local Newspapers.....	435

REFERENCES

CONTINUITY AND CHANGE OF IDENTITY IN THE HOME ENVIRONMENT

Development of the Private House in Hofuf, Saudi Arabia

ABSTRACT

The purpose of this study is to examine the impact of searching for identity in the house form in the city of Hofuf. Studies so far carried out into material culture in general and into the development of the house, specifically the use and meaning of space, in Saudi Arabia have not dealt with the matter of identity and how it relates, in its various manifestations, to house form. The main question to be considered is whether the house form in Hofuf responded to the need to express individual and collective identity.

The assumptions behind this study were firstly that people's actions in relation to the home environment have been influenced in some way by continued traditions, secondly that these actions have been the expressions or attempted expressions of people's identity whether individual or collective, and thirdly that the existing identity of the contemporary home is a mix of continued, developed and new traditions, meanings and experiences.

This study has adopted the ethnographic approach because it is difficult to understand the relationship between people and their physical environment without going deep into their everyday lives. The interaction between people and physical form required from the researcher a study of the physical home environment in Hofuf as it has been in the nineteenth and twentieth centuries. Moreover not only the physical environment had to be investigated, but also how people understood and interpreted the meanings of physical forms. It was these considerations which led the researcher to measure many houses, to take many photographs, to collect many floor plans, and to conduct many interviews with residents in Hofuf.

The development of private home in the the city of Hofuf shows that there have been strong traditions and experiences which have maintained the significance of the home environment in general and the private home in particular over a period of time and through a series of changes in the its perceptual and associational aspects. In particular the contemporary private house in Hofuf shows, despite changes in layout and perceptual aspects, the enduring associational meaning and use of space within the home environment.

The desire to express personal identity in the features of the house combined with the need to maintain privacy requirements, and other factors such as a greater demand for individualised sleeping spaces, has led, in the contemporary Hofuf house, to a potential crisis, where the increasing size of houses threatens to make them economically unviable. This situation has to be dealt with, perhaps through quantitative studies using the findings of this present investigation. In this way it may be possible for future planners and designers to retain the enduring and essential symbolic meanings of the private home while adapting and restructuring the physical home environment.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Praise be to Allah, Lord of the Worlds; by His will the completion of this thesis is made possible, and may His blessing and peace be upon His prophet Muhammad.

I would like to express my gratitude to all those who helped me, whether directly or indirectly, in the preparation of my dissertation. I am especially indebted to the staff of the Centre for Architectural Research and Development Overseas (CARDO), and in particular to my supervisor Dr A.G. Tipple, without whose expert and attentive guidance and keen interest I would not have been able to complete my thesis. My thanks go also to Dr Adenrele Awotona, my former supervisor, for his assistance at the beginning of my research and for helping to refine my original ideas and concepts

I would also like to thank the following: the Cultural Attache of Saudi Arabia, Abdullah Al-Nasser, for his assistance and for writing several letters to support me in gaining information from the government and from private institutions in Saudi Arabia; ARAMCO for the magnificent illustrations and aerial photographs of Hofuf which they provided; the following design offices: Abdulrahman Al-Naim, Nasser Al-Mulhim, Al-Barraq, Al-Shayeb, and Al-Khalifa for supplying me with floor plans covering the development of many private homes in Hofuf in the last two decades; the Municipality of Al-Hasa for their kindness in supplying the main documents of the recent master plan of Al-Hasa; the local museum of Al-Hasa for enabling me to photograph objects in daily use in the private homes of Hofuf.

I would also like to thank Sheikh Ahmed Ben Ali Al-Mubarak for taking the time and trouble to accompany me on interviews and on fieldwork trips to *Assalhiyyah*. Also I would like to thank Mr Ibrahim Al-Shuaibi, Mr Abdullah Al-Jughayman, Mr Mohammed Al-Hashim, Mr Abdullah Al-Hashim, Mr Abdulrahman Al-Humadi, Mr Saleh Al-Hassan and a number of ladies in Hofuf for their time in informing me about the daily life and objects of the traditional home environment. My gratitude goes also to Mr Saleh Al-Zufar for allowing access to his private collections of traditional objects in daily use. Also I would like to thank Mr Abdulaziz Al-Isfor and Mr Abdulaziz Al-Doghan for giving me valuable historical documents amount the traditional residential properties in Hofuf. My special thanks to all those others whom I interviewed or who gave me access to their private collections for my research.

My deepest gratitude goes to my friend Mr Ahmed Al-Mulla for his help in several stages of this study - measurements, interviews, photographs - and above all for his moral support.

Finally I wish to express my sincere appreciation to my family, especially my mother, my wife, my brothers, my sisters and my children for their patience and support. Thanks also goes to Mr Graeme Robertson for proofreading my thesis.

LIST OF FIGURES

CHAPTER I

- Fig. 1.1: The hypothetical resistance model in Hofuf's home environment.....19
Fig.1.2: Location of Hofuf.....23

CHAPTER II

- Fig.2.1: The new housing image of Aramco in the 1930s and 40s.....33
Fig. 2.2: Saudi Camp in Dhahran in 1930's and 40's.....34
Fig. 2.3: Planning System of Al-Khobar.....35
Fig. 2.4: Villa type in Dammam (1950s).....36
Fig. 2.5: New images in Riyadh (1950s and 1960s).....38
Fig. 2.6: The mud surfaces in the traditional houses in Riyadh.....39
Fig. 2.7: A number of traditional house gateways transformed to imitate the new house types in 1950s and 60s in Hofuf.....40
Fig. 2.8: A number of homes in Makkah constructed in the 1940's, 50's, and 60's contain traditional and modern images.....41
Fig.2.9: Dammam between 1940s and 1960s.....42
Fig. 2.10: Growth of *Al-Dawaser* neighbourhood in Dammam (1935-73).....42
Fig.2.11: A number of villas constructed in 1950's by the Aramco Home Ownership Programme in Dammam.....46
Fig.2.12: Transformation of *Al-Malaz* villa.....49
Fig.2.13: Two villas in Hofuf.....50
Fig. 2.14: Different images in the City of Dammam representing the re-use of traditional forms.....52

CHAPTER IV

- Fig. 4.1: Aspects of identity in the home environment.....95
Fig. 4.2: Types of Identity.....104
Fig. 4.3: The relationship between value, meaning, and types of Identity in the Home Environment.....105
Fig. 4.4: Levels of Identity in the Home Environment.....111
Fig. 4.5: Growth of Identity.....113
Fig. 4.6: Main and supplementary measures of identity in the home environment.....114
Fig. 4.7: Continuity of meaning and form of the existing identity.....115
Fig. 4.8 (A) Continuity of associational identity and parts of perceptual identity.....116
Fig. 4.8 (B) Continuity of perceptual identity and parts of associational identity.....116
Fig. 4.8 (C) Continuity of parts of associational and perceptual identity.....117
Fig. 4.8 (D) Continuity of Associational identity.....117
Fig. 4.8 (E) Continuity of perceptual identity.....118
Fig. 4.9: Collective action path.....119
Fig. 4.10: Personal action.....120

Fig. 4.11: Imposed collective action.....	122
---	-----

CHAPTER V

Fig. 5.1: The Interaction between the analytical frame and the data.....	157
--	-----

CHAPTER VI

Fig.6.1: Old man sitting on <i>daka</i> in <i>Alkut</i>	173
Fig. 6.2: Traditional home environment in Hofuf.....	177
Fig. 6.3 Unitary physical mass of the traditional neighbourhood.....	178
Fig. 6.4 In the traditional home environment it is difficult to find physical boundaries between the different <i>fereej</i> s.....	179
Fig. 6.5: The social system in the traditional home environment in Hofuf.....	181
Fig. 6.6 Division of the traditional house.....	185
Fig. 6.7: private cul-de-sacs connecting a group of houses from the same family in <i>Anna'athil</i>	186
Fig.6.8: The dynamism of the traditional home environment at its micro level.....	187
Fig. 6.9: The perceptual and associational identity of the <i>fereej</i> system had continued for long time in the traditional home environment.....	190
Fig.6.10: The selected <i>fereej</i> in <i>Anna'athil</i>	192
Fig.6.11: Territorial demarcation of the traditional home environment in Hofuf.....	193
Fig.6.12: Hidden boundaries divided the traditional quarter of <i>Anna'athil</i> into social and physical units.....	194
Fig.6.13: The <i>fereej</i> system in the traditional home environment is mainly located at the intermediate kinship level but it adapted to the frame of communal beliefs.....	195
Fig. 6.14: Part of a <i>fereej</i> in <i>Anna'athil</i> quarter shows the main physical elements that every <i>fereej</i> had.....	198
Fig. 6.15: Physical expression of the <i>fereej</i> (group of houses, irregular streets, <i>sabats</i> , cul-de-sacs, and open spaces) with hidden physical boundaries.....	200
Fig.6.16: A group of children play in <i>Alkut</i>	201
Fig.6.17: <i>Sabats</i> in the traditional home environment.....	202
Fig.6.18: A view taken from the old Emirate building in the northern part of <i>Alkut</i> ...	204
Fig.6.19: Section in the study area in <i>Anna'athil</i> show two houses facing each other.	205
Fig.6.20: <i>Majlis riwaq</i> (loggia).....	207
Fig.6.21: The entrance of the traditional house.....	209
Fig.6.22: Entranceway used as sitting area for visitors in <i>Alkut</i>	210
Fig.6.23: A house in <i>Anna'athil</i>	211
Fig.6.24: A house in <i>Anna'athil</i>	212
Fig.6.25 Loggias (<i>majlis riwaq</i>).....	213
Fig. 6.26: The loggia connects male reception space with the community.....	214
Fig. 6.27: Continuity of hospitality as collective and associational identity in the traditional home environment.....	214
Fig. 6.28: Openings in the <i>tarma</i> used by women to observe the external domestic space.....	215
Fig.6.29: <i>Tarma</i> inside one of the upstairs rooms.....	216

CHAPTER VII

Fig.7.1: Historical document, dated 1857 (1277H).....	224
Fig.7.2: In most of the cases <i>muraba'a</i> has pointed arch in the middle.....	225
Fig.7.3: The name <i>hawī</i> (courtyard) always referred to the family courtyard.....	226
Fig.7.4: A house in <i>Anna'athil</i> showing the three parts of the house.....	229
Fig.7.5: One of the early houses in <i>Alkut</i>	231
Fig.7.6: <i>Majlis</i> associated with a courtyard in a house in <i>Anna'athil</i>	232
Fig.7.7: The organisation of internal domestic space in the traditional house (nineteenth century).....	233
Fig.7.8: The family zone in the entrance opening on to the family courtyard with a decorative arch.....	234
Fig.7.9: <i>Majlis</i> of two storeys.....	235
Fig.7.10: The organisation of internal domestic space in the traditional house (Late nineteenth century and early twentieth century).....	235
Fig.7.11: A house in the <i>Arrif'a</i> had a <i>majlis</i> of two storeys on the ground floor (part of the old courtyard).....	236
Fig.7.12: Summer <i>majlis</i>	237
Fig.7.13: A house with upstairs <i>majlis</i>	238
Fig.7.14: <i>Majlises</i> on the first floor.....	239
Fig.7.15: Loggia and <i>masbah</i>	240
Fig.7.16: The <i>masbah</i> in the traditional house.....	241
Fig.7.17: The organisation of internal domestic space in the traditional house (in the first half of twentieth century).....	242
Fig.7.18: External <i>agasi</i> linking the <i>majlis</i> upstairs with the main <i>sikka</i>	244
Fig.7.19: Continuity and change of identity of the traditional <i>majlis</i> in Hofuf.....	244
Fig.7.20: Furniture of the traditional <i>majlis</i>	246
Fig.7.21: A house in <i>Anna'athil</i> has a two-storey <i>majlis</i> hall.....	247
Fig.7.22: The owner of the house prepares and presents the coffee for his guests.....	248
Fig.7.23: The <i>wijaq</i> (coffee place).....	249
Fig.7.24: The coffee place.....	250
Fig.7.25: A typical <i>majlis</i> hall in the Hofuf's traditional house.....	251
Fig.7.26: Different types of <i>dallas</i>	252
Fig.7.27: Coffee rituals in traditional Hofuf.....	254
Fig.7.28: The courtyard.....	255
Fig.7.29: The courtyard was the centre for family activities.....	256
Fig.7.30: The <i>agasi</i>	256
Fig.7.31: A house in <i>Anna'athil</i> occupied by two nuclear families.....	258
Fig.7.32: Organisation of the two nuclear family members around the food mat.....	258
Fig.7.33: Food rituals and arrangement of the extended family.....	259
Fig.7.34: A roof plan shows the division of the roofs.....	259
Fig.7.35: a) A typical kitchen in the traditional house.....	260
Fig.7.36: Continuity of meaning and form of the family part.....	260
Fig.7.37: The mangrove pole ceiling of the <i>majlis</i> hall.....	261
Fig.7.38: Mural painting in the <i>majlis</i> hall and the main <i>muraba'a</i>	262
Fig.7.39: The palm tree was used as decorative figure in traditional Hofuf.....	263

Fig.7.40: The development of the <i>ruwshan</i>	265
Fig.7.41: <i>Ruwshan</i> over a room door in a courtyard.....	265
Fig.7.42: <i>Ruwshans</i> looking to the main <i>sikka</i>	266
Fig.7.43: Endless patterns of <i>ruwshan</i>	267
Fig.7.44: The development of the <i>rusana</i>	268
Fig.7.45: Different forms of <i>rusana</i>	269
Fig.7.46: Development of the <i>ruwshan</i> and the <i>rusana</i> from utilitarian elements to symbolic elements.....	270

CHAPTER VIII

Fig.8.1: Hofuf between 1904 and 1935.....	278
Fig.8.2: <i>Assalhiyyah</i> Neighbourhood.....	279
Fig.8.3: Physical characteristics of <i>Assalhiyyah</i>	281
Fig.8.4: <i>Fereej</i> developing in the edge of several <i>hotas</i>	283
Fig.8.5: Development of the <i>fereej</i> system in <i>Assalhiyyah</i> neighbourhood.....	284
Fig.8.6: A traditional house in <i>Assalhiyyah</i>	285
Fig.8.7: Reconstruction of perceptual and associational identities in <i>Assalhiyyah</i>	286
Fig.8.8: One of the Aramco's employees' houses in <i>Al'adama</i> , Dammam (1950s)....	287
Fig.8.9: A house built by an Aramco employee in 1950s.....	291
Fig.8.10: Growth of the post-oil neighbourhoods.....	293
Fig.8.11: A house in <i>Almazrou'iyyah</i> constructed in 1940s.....	296
Fig.8.12: A number of hybrid house gateways constructed in the 1940s.....	297
Fig.8.13: The main facades of a number of houses constructed in 1940s.....	298
Fig.8.14: A house in <i>Almazrou'iyyah</i> constructed in 1940s.....	299
Fig.8.15: The organisation of internal domestic space in the hybrid house of 1940s	299
Fig.8.16: A house constructed in the late 1950s.....	300
Fig.8.17: Hybrid and <i>musalah</i> houses in 1950s in Hofuf.....	301
Fig.8.18: A house in <i>Anna'athil</i> built in 1953.....	301
Fig.8.19: The organisation of internal domestic space in the late 1950s.....	302
Fig.8.20 A number of hybrid houses.....	303
Fig.8.21: Process of identification in the hybrid neighbourhoods.....	304
Fig.8.22: Transformation of <i>Anna'athil</i> quarter.....	305
Fig.8.23: Impact of government developments on the hybrid neighbourhoods.....	307
Fig.8.24: The redistribution of the traditional <i>hamolas</i> in Hofuf's contemporary home environment.....	308
Fig. 8.25: A transitional house constructed in 1960's in <i>Albugsha</i> neighbourhood.....	310
Fig.8.26: The number of imported air-conditioners to Saudi Arabia.....	311
Fig.8.27: The number of imported refrigerators to Saudi Arabia.....	312
Fig.8.28: The weight of imported items of sanitary equipment to Saudi Arabia.....	312
Fig.8.29: A typical transitional <i>majlis</i>	313
Fig.8.30: A transitional house built in early 1970's in <i>Adduraibiyah</i> neighbourhood..	314
Fig.8. 31The organisation of the internal domestic space of the transitional house...	315
Fig.8.32: The front façade of the transitional house.....	316
Fig.8.33: A number of transitional house gateways.....	317
Fig.8.34: Attempts by inhabitants of the transitional house in the 1970's to decorate their house facades.....	318

Fig.8.35: The cement plastered used as a decoration meduim.....	319
Fig.8.36: The growth of the new identity in Hofuf's home environment.....	319
Fig.8.37: One of the contemporary houses which consists of a villa style on the ground floor and two apartments in the first floor.....	323
Fig.8.38: Reproducing a traditional <i>fereej</i> in the contemporary home environment in Hofuf.....	326
Fig.8.39: The internal passageway connecting all the houses physically and socially.....	327
Fig.8.40: Clustering in Alkhaldiyyah neighbourhood.....	328
Fig.8.41: A cartoon published in Al-Riyadh newspaper.....	330

CHAPTER IX

Fig.9.1: A number of villas constructed in 1980's and 90's.....	338
Fig.9.2: A number of villas constructed in the late 1970s.....	339
Fig.9.3: A villa constructed after 1975 in <i>Assinaidiyyah</i>	341
Fig.9.4: A number of villas constructed in the late 1970's and early 1980's.....	343
Fig.9.5: The organisation of internal domestic space of the contemporary house of the late 1970's.....	344
Fig.9.6: A number of stone facades.....	345
Fig.9.7: Granite facades with some visual symbols.....	346
Fig.9.8: A number of gateways constructed in the late 1970s.....	347
Fig.9.9: A villa constructed in the middle of the 1980s.....	349
Fig.9.10: Development of private home in the early 1980s.....	351
Fig.9.11: The organisation of internal domestic space of the contemporary house of the early 1980s.....	352
Fig.9.12: Development of the private home in the late 1980s.....	354
Fig.9.13: A private home constructed in the late 1980s.....	356
Fig.9.14: The organisation of internal domestic space of the contemporary house of the late 1980s.....	357
Fig.9.15: A number of gates constructed in the first half of the 1980s.....	358
Fig.9.16: Two examples showing how the staircase split from the living room in the 1990s houses.....	360
Fig.9.17: A villa constructed in the early 1990s.....	361
Fig.9.18: A number of villas constructed in the first half of the 1990s.....	363
Fig.9.19: The organisation of internal domestic space of the contemporary house of the early 1990s.....	364
Fig.9.20: A number of villas constructed in the early 1990s.....	365
Fig.9.21: The recent development of the private home in Hofuf.....	366
Fig.9.22: The organisation of internal domestic space of the recent contemporary house (after 1995).....	367
Fig.9.23: A number of gates constructed in the early 1990s.....	368
Fig.9.24: The recent gate fashion in Hofuf.....	368
Fig.9.25: Furniture arrangement of the contemporary <i>majlis</i> in Hofuf.....	371
Fig.9.26: The front zone moved from the narrower side in this large <i>majlis</i> hall to the wider side.....	371
Fig.9.27: The Spatio-temporal path of the spatial development of the <i>majlis</i> hall in the private home of Hofuf.....	372

Fig.9.28: Informal gathering always held sitting on the ground.....	373
Fig.9.29: People still prefer to host their guests in the ground.....	373
Fig.9.30: Few people use the dining table in the contemporary home.....	374
Fig.9.31: a) The entrance hall used as sitting place for short chats.....	374
Fig.9.32: The washbasin usually opening to the entrance hall in the male reception spaces.....	375
Fig.9.33 Serving the coffee is still very important in contemporary Hofuf.....	376
Fig.9.34 Process of localising the modern coffeepot.....	377
Fig.9.35: Variety in form and design for the modern coffee pot.....	378
Fig. 9.36: The Spatio-temporal path for the spatial development of the women's <i>majlis</i> in the private home of Hofuf.....	380
Fig. 9.:37 The Spatio-temporal path of the spatial development of the living room in the private home of Hofuf.....	381
Fig.9.38: The living room in the contemporary house is more symbolic and only small part of it used for the family.....	381
Fig.9.39: A kitchen opening to family living spaces.....	383
Fig. 9.40: The Spatio-temporal path for the spatial development of the kitchen in the private home of Hofuf.....	384

APPENDIX I

Fig.A. 1.1: The mosque of Ali Bash in 1950.....	408
Fig.A.1.2. Hofuf in 1862.....	410
Fig.A.1.3: Main street in old Hofuf.....	411
Fig.A.1.4: Hofuf before 1904 with its three quarters.....	412
Fig.A.1. 5: Narrow street in northern part of <i>Arrif'a</i> quarter.....	414
Fig.A.1.6. <i>Anna'athil</i> quarter in 1908.....	414
Fig.A.1.7: Street and Sabat in <i>Anna'athil</i>	415

APPENDIX II

Fig.A.2.1: Traditional carpenter and pottery maker in Hofuf.....	416
Fig.A.2.2: <i>Gary</i> (transportation cart in traditional Hofuf).....	417
Fig.A.2.3: One farmer in Al-Hasa trying to irrigate his farm.....	418
Fig.A.2.4: <i>lilat alhaflah</i>	420
Fig.A.2.5: <i>Bu tbaila</i>	421
Fig.A.2.6: A number of children singing and asking for nuts in <i>al-girgai'an</i>	422
Fig.A.2.7: Men of an extended family meet every Friday in a farm in Hofuf.....	428
Fig.A.2.8: Old people still gather in the traditional Areas.....	429
Fig.A.2.9: Old people gathering.....	430
Fig.A.2. 10: Old men used his villa gate as setting area.....	431

APPENDIX IV

Fig.A.4.1: Examples of historical documents for the daily life and properties contracts in the traditional Hofuf.....	433
---	-----

APPENDIX V

- Fig. A.5.1: Sketches by the interviewee showing the transformation of his house in *Assalhiyyah*.....434
Fig. A.5.2: Examples of documenting the data on the floor plan.....434

APPENDIX VI

- Fig. A.6.1: A number of articles written by the researcher in Al-Riyadh newspaper (between 17-9-97 and 9-7-98).....435
Fig. A.6.2: The issue of identity and home environment in the local newspapers.....435

LIST OF TABLES

CHAPTER II

Table 2.1: Construction Materials Used by Aramco's Employees (1962 and 1968)	47
--	----

CHAPTER V

Table 5.1 (A): Characteristics of the traditional home environment.....	131
Table 5.1 (B): Characteristics of the hybrid home environment.....	131
Table 5.1 (C): Characteristics of the formal home environment.....	132
Table 5.2: The in-depth case studies.....	136

CHAPTER VIII

Table 8.1: Saudi Arabia's revenue from oil between 1943 and 1952.....	288
Table 8.2: Percentage of Aramco employees who originally came from Al-Hasa (1962 and 1968).....	289
Table 8.3: Proportion of Aramco's employees living with their own household during the work week (1962 and 1968).....	290
Table 8.4: House types in Al-Hasa Region (1975) (around 16000 houses).....	309
Table: 8.5 Building Materials used in Hofuf (1972).....	309
Table 8.6: Income group in <i>Alkhaldiyyah</i> neighbourhood (per month).....	321
Table 8.7: Number of automobiles per household in <i>Alkhaldiyyah</i> neighbourhood....	321
Table 8.8: Household size in Al-Hasa region (1975).....	322
Table 8.9: Size of the household in Hofuf in 1996(1612 families).....	322
Table 8.10: House size in Hofuf in 1996 (1612 families).....	323
Table 8.11: Knowing about neighbours in <i>Alkhaldiyyah</i> neighbourhood.....	325
Table 8.12: Relationship with people in <i>Alkhaldiyyah</i> neighbourhood.....	325

CHAPTER IX

Table 9.1: Kitchen and Toilet in Hofuf's Houses (1612 families).....	383
--	-----

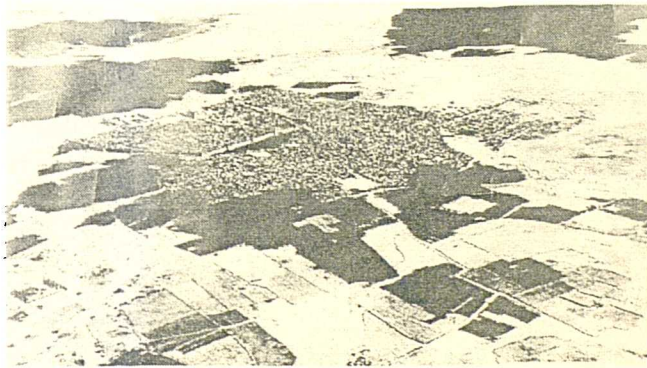
APPENDIX III

Table A.3.1: Population growth of Hofuf (1819-1995).....	432
--	-----

GLOSSARY OF THE IMPORTANT ARABIC WORDS USED IN THE STUDY

<i>Agasi</i>	Gallery around a courtyard used as a main circulation to connect different spaces the first floor.
<i>Bakhar</i>	Small room open to traditional <i>majlis</i> used as a storage space.
<i>Baraha</i>	Open space usually located at the intersection of the main <i>sikkas</i> in the traditional home environment.
<i>Buriga</i>	The covered part in the animal zone in the traditional house.
<i>Bushtakhtah</i>	A small wooden box used as an office drawer usually found in arge houses where the owners carry out some business activities in their <i>majlises</i> .
<i>Daka</i>	A mud bench used for sitting.
<i>Dalla</i>	Coffeepot.
<i>Dehreez</i>	The entrance of the traditional house.
<i>Dar</i>	Small room opening on to a bigger room in the traditional house.
<i>Fereej</i>	Social and physical unit developed in the traditional home environment for both creating physical and social homogeneity. Also, it was the main device used by a group of people to express their identity.
<i>Finjal</i>	Small coffee cup
<i>Gerd</i>	Made of palm leaves and used to cover the semi shaded space in the front of the traditional <i>majlis</i> hall. Also, it used in some cases for furnishing the <i>dakkas</i> .
<i>Hamola</i>	A name usually used to define a clan in the society. It is similar to the English word 'house'. For example 'House of Windsor'. However, this word denotes the status of the family and its position in the society.
<i>Hawi</i>	Courtyard.
<i>Hota</i>	The name of the residential block in <i>Assalhiyyah</i> neighbourhood. It means the land surrounded by a fence or street on all sides.
<i>Jussa</i>	A built-in box used to store dates for daily use.
<i>Kandooj</i>	A small room located inside or outside the house to store dates for commercial purposes.
<i>Liwan</i>	A rectangular utilitarian room in the traditional house.
<i>Madda</i>	A carpet made of bamboo.
<i>Maiz</i>	A wooden box consisting of two or more steps (usually do not exceeding four) used to exhibit the coffeepots.
<i>Majlis</i>	Men's reception space.
<i>Majlis Riwaq</i>	Loggia or a covered place with two opened arches usually located over the main entrance. Its openings located over the main gate. It is usually associated with a <i>majlis</i> in the first floor, but some time it is used as part of the summer <i>majlis</i> in those houses which have a <i>majlis</i> in the ground floor.
<i>Masbah</i>	Covered roof usually associated with a <i>majlis</i> in the first floor. Also, it may exist in a family roof.
<i>Mugad</i>	The traditional kitchen.
<i>Mugallat</i>	A room associated with the male reception space. It was used as women reception space in the transitional house and as dining room in the contemporary house.
<i>Murab'a</i>	A square room in the traditional house, mainly considered, with the courtyard, symbolic space in the family part of the traditional house.
<i>Musallah</i>	A house made of reinforced concrete.
<i>Nuss-Musallah</i>	A house made mainly of reinforced concrete, but with its ceilings and roof made of wood.
<i>Riwaq</i>	The covered part of a courtyard. Usually it is defined from the opened part by an arcade.

<i>Rusana</i>	Built-in shelf in the wall of the traditional house.
<i>Ruwshan</i>	Small ventilation opening high in the wall of rooms in the traditional house
<i>Sabat</i>	usually this term used to refer to a part of street in the traditional home environment. this part in had its uniqueness due to the existing of the room over street bridge two houses and connect them together.
<i>Semada</i>	The animal court in the traditional house.
<i>Sikka</i>	Main street in the <i>fereej</i> system in the traditional home environment.
<i>Sikka Saad</i>	Cul-de-sac.
<i>Sindook</i>	It connotate positive meaning in the traditional home environment because it refers to the most secured houses while in the contemporary home environment it connotates a negative meaning because it refers to the form of the house.
<i>Usaila</i>	The bathing area in the traditional house.
<i>Takkaya</i>	A wooden box covered with cloth used with mattresses in the tradtional <i>majlis</i> .
<i>Tarma</i>	A small box over the main gate in the traditional home environment used by as a device for observing the external domestic spaces. The word <i>tarma</i> implies that women can see without speech.
<i>Wijaq or Wijar</i>	A coffee place inside the majlis or the riwaq. It is very symbolic place and associated with a deep associational meanings.



Hofuf (1935), Aramco

CHAPTER I

INTRODUCTION

CONTENTS

- 1.1 Prologue
- 1.2 Identity: Change and Resistance in Saudi Society
 - 1.2.1 Tradition Vs Modernity
 - 1.2.2 Westernisation and Social Resistance
 - 1.2.3 Searching for Identity
- 1.3 Significance of the Study
- 1.4 The Hypothetical Frame
- 1.5 Aims and Objectives
- 1.6 Research Strategy
- 1.7 The Setting
 - 1.7.1 Why Hofuf
 - 1.7.2 Why Home Environment
 - 1.7.3 Why Private Home
- 1.8 Study Organisation

1

INTRODUCTION

1.1 PROLOGUE

Traditional societies in Saudi Arabia showed very harmonious relationships within their home environments. This ceased to be the case when these societies were exposed to rapid economic and social change in the second half of this century. Those values and experiences which were inherited for centuries have been threatened by the new actors in the built environment: designers and governmental institutions; they have broken the previous relationship between the people and their physical settings.

It is expected that Saudi people will resist the new imposed forms. This is because people tend to distinguish themselves from others through different communication systems, and the built environment is one of those systems that enable people to express their identity. Therefore, they will resist those elements which may prevent them from expressing themselves. This resistance is because people always search for a device to enable them to maintain a balanced relationship between physiological and psychological needs.

The transitional residential context in Saudi Arabia has brought the question of identity to centre stage. This thesis, however, is not interested in the reasons behind the need for identity in the Saudi home environment; rather it aims to understand and describe the impact of this phenomenon on the development of the private house form in the city of Hofuf. How has the private house responded to individual and group expression in the home environment? The subject of this study is continuity and change of identity in the Saudi home environment in general and in the city of Hofuf in particular. We are trying to identify those cultural aspects and values which play an essential role in the creation and reinforcement of people's identity in their home environment.

1.2 IDENTITY: CHANGE AND RESISTANCE IN SAUDI SOCIETY

‘... collective identity search is symptomatic of the fact that some modern social systems deprive people of psychological “payoffs,” the lack of which, expressed by terms such as alienation, meaningless, identity problem, motivates a mass grouping for activities and symbols with which to restore or find new identity. ... When mass movements become concerned with identity, they develop certain characteristics, such as “ego-screaming,” concern with costume and self-ornamentation, style rebellion, concern with emotional gestures rather than practical effects ...’¹

Understanding the impact of *self and group expressions on the development of house form and design* requires answers to several questions. Among these questions are: What is meant by self and group expression? What is meant by identity? Is there any specific way to create an identity in the home environment? Is there any fixed definition for the concept of identity? If there is such a definition, what about the mechanism of social change? To what extent has this dynamic mechanism influenced the existing identity? Can we argue that the concept of identity is a dynamic phenomenon that may change over time and take different forms? And if so, can we trace a spatio-temporal path for the continuity and change of identity and its physical representation in the home environment? This dissertation is concerned with all these questions. However, we need to discuss some of them in a preliminary way here to introduce the issue of identity in the Saudi home environment, its roots and its consequences.

The purpose of the following discussion is to present the issue of identity as a phenomenon associated with the drastic transformation that social and physical traditions in Saudi Arabia have passed through. We are looking for continuity and change of identity in the home environment, how people preserve or change their identity. This discussion will introduce the issue in its broadest perspective. Concepts such as traditions, modernisation, and westernisation will be addressed with special consideration of their role in enhancing the search for identity in the Saudi home environment.

1.2.1 TRADITION VS MODERNITY

Many traditional societies have been influenced by the process of modernisation, especially in this century. Traditional society in Saudi Arabia has been transformed from isolated regions constituting small villages scattered here and there, to a modern country with large cities and a huge transportation network. The radical and rapid transformation that took place in Saudi

¹ Klapp, O. (1969) *Collective Search for Identity*, New York, Holt, Rinehart and Winston, Inc., p. vii.

Arabia was a result of the increase in oil revenue after World War II.² This influenced the traditional political, economic, and social orders and increased the gap between traditional orders and the new orders.³ A new way of thinking was created within the old societies contradicting the previous one. Traditional societies were dependent on traditions and customs as codes for organisation while contemporary modern societies are strongly influenced by rationality. The faith of modern societies is usually based on science, pragmatic reasoning and utilitarianism, while traditional societies tend to believe in the legitimacy of scriptural teaching and traditional norms.⁴

While tradition contrasts with modernity, they cannot both exist in isolation in a society. This can be contrasted with C. B. Wilson's (1988) statement that 'society cannot be both modern and traditional at the same time.'⁵ The 'strands of tradition', however, may continue in modern societies even when the society to which they belong has disappeared, but we should realise that these strands do not reflect the whole tradition.⁶ The view that sees traditions able to continue in modern societies can be linked to what Shils suggests when he stresses that the ambiguity and flexibility of traditions had enabled the new concept to survive and develop. In that sense, traditions

'... often possess sufficient ambiguity and hence flexibility to allow innovations to enter without severely disruptive consequences. Then, too, patterns of traditional beliefs (and their accompanying practices) do not form such a rigorously unitary whole; some parts are more affirmative toward modernity, or at least less resistant toward innovation. Many traditional beliefs are not so much objects of zealous devotion to symbols of the past as they are the resultants of a situation without alternatives. Once alternatives become visible and available, what appeared to be an immobile tradition might well yield to a new practice.'⁷

Despite the common belief that a society becomes modern only when it totally rejects its traditional socio-cultural bonds, continuity of traditions in modern societies is essential. This is not to say that the society will be both traditional and modern, but as Popper explained, tradition

² Lebkicher et al (1960) *Aramco Handbook*, Netherlands, Arabian American Oil Company, p. 74. Also Facy, W. (1992) *Riyadh: The Old City*, London, Immel Publishing, pp. 302-3.

³ Lipsky, G. A. (1959) *Saudi Arabia: Its People, its Society, its Culture*, New Haven, HRF Press.

⁴ Lerner, D. (1958) *The Passing of Traditional Society: Modernizing the Middle East*, New York, The Free Press, .PP. 48-9. Also Shils, E. (1966) *Political Development in the New States*, Paris, Mouton & Co. Shils indicates that the traditional societies are 'attached to beliefs and rules which guided past practices, and which are regarded as guides to right practice in the present. The attachment to these beliefs is firmer or more intense than it is in modern societies, and it is more widely shared throughout the society.' (p. 31).

⁵ Cited in Fu, C. (1990) *Regional Heritage and Architecture - A Critical Regionalist Approach to a New Architecture for Taiwan*, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, Edinburgh, University of Edinburgh, p. 15.

⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 15.

⁷ Shils, E. (1966), *Op. Cit.*, p. 32.

emerges as a result of our need for a certain predictability in our social life. In this regard tradition provides order and regularity in our social environment, and it provides us with the possibility of communication.⁸ Without tradition 'there can no longer be reliance on the accepted norms'.⁹ However, 'tradition is not a matter of a fixed or given set of beliefs or practices which are handed down or accepted passively'.¹⁰ Rather, as Wright (1985) has argued, 'tradition is very much a matter of present-day politics ...'.¹¹

Continuity of traditions or their strands in modern societies can be seen as a sort of internal resistance by people to balance between the deep rooted values and the new values. Nasr shares this view and adds that tradition 'is related etymologically to transmission' and contains within the scope of its meaning the idea of 'transmission of knowledge, practice, techniques, laws, forms and many other elements of both an oral and written nature'.¹²

Tradition, in this sense, is seen as a mechanism which has no authority but 'forms the most important source of our knowledge and serves as the base of our thought and action'.¹³ Rapoport defined tradition as a model resulting from the 'collaboration of many people over many generations.' For him, tradition 'has the force of law honoured by everyone through collective assent'. Therefore, respect for tradition by the community members gives 'collective control', which works as 'discipline' for a community.¹⁴

Rapid urban growth is usually associated with socio-economic change.¹⁵ Similar to other Arab countries the conflict in Saudi Arabia is between borrowed elements, which are largely physical, and inherited elements, which are mostly values and beliefs.¹⁶ This has produced numerous social problems for the Saudi home environment. What has happened to Saudi cities in the last three decades is almost complete urban transformation.¹⁷ It is debatable whether this physical

⁸ Popper, K. (1968) 'Towards a Rational Theory of Tradition', in his The Growth of Scientific Knowledge, New York, Harper and Row, pp. 120-35.

⁹ Rapoport, A. (1969) House Form and Culture, Englewood Cliffs, N.J., Prentice-Hall, INC, p. 6.

¹⁰ Morley, D. & Robins, K. (1995) Spaces of Identity, London, Routledge., p.47.

¹¹ Cited in *Ibid.*, p. 47.

¹² Nasr, S. H. (1981) Knowledge and the Sacred, Edinburgh, Edinburgh University Press, p. 67.

¹³ Al-Hathloul, S. (1981) Tradition, Continuity, and Change in the Physical Environment: The Arab-Muslim City, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, MIT, Cambridge, p. 254.

¹⁴ Rapoport, A. (1969), *Op. Cit.*, p. 6.

¹⁵ Payne, G. (1977) Urban Housing in the Third World, London, Leonard Hill, p. 3.

¹⁶ Jarbawi, A. (1981) Modernism and Secularism in the Arab Middle East, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, Cincinnati, University of Cincinnati, p. 33.

¹⁷ The process of change started in Saudi Arabia in the 1930s and reached its peak by 1970s. For example, Dalley indicates how rapid the development was in the 1970's in Saudi Arabia. He stated that 'in Saudi Arabia where development is running probably faster than anywhere else in the world. Concepts which may appear acceptable this year will probably be rejected next year as totally unacceptable'. Dalley, K. (1976) 'The Current State of Play in Saudi Arabia', RIBAJ, May, p. 166. This was attributed to the acceleration in the oil revenues. The

change caused the social change or vice versa.¹⁸ What is clear is that an obvious contradiction appeared in Saudi society between tradition and modernity. Thus, the ability of the contemporary built environment to meet the cultural demands of Saudi society may be questioned.

1.2.2 WESTERNISATION AND SOCIAL RESISTANCE

In the previous discussion we explained the importance of traditions in contemporary Saudi society. The continuity of traditions, however, does not contradict with the concept of modern society because traditions have the ability to continue and develop over time. In the following discussion we will try to grasp the reasons that have inflamed the need for identity in the Saudi home environment. We can confidently attribute the need for an identity in Saudi Arabia to the overlap in people's minds between the process of modernisation and the concept of westernisation. If we go back to the early part of this century, there was no need to search for or even talk about identity in Saudi Arabia. However, the search for identity was started by the first direct contact with western culture in the 1930s.

It is not only Saudi Arabia that confuses the distinction between westernisation and modernisation; it is a worldwide phenomenon largely due to western writers who frequently define any modernisation process as an adoption of western cultural, economical, and political models.¹⁹ Klapp, for example, indicates that the problem of identity is the price which developing societies should pay for the technological advancement. He said:

'... it is ironical to see underdeveloped countries marching into the future as though they were going to receive the blessing of technology and abundance without the price of self-doubt that

decision was made by the government to utilise the fortune in modernising the country by implementing five year development plans, begun in 1970. These plans aimed to develop the economical and human resources and enhance the social sector and physical infrastructure. The consequences of these plans was the total transformation of the physical environment in many Saudi cities (See Chapter II).

¹⁸ Behavioural-environmental studies addressed three views regarding the impact of physical environment on people's behaviour, including environmental determinism, environmental possibilism, and environmental probabilism. Environmental determinism insists on the deterministic nature of the built environment on human behaviour. Possibilism argues that the physical environment 'provides possibilities and constraints within which people make choices based on other, mainly cultural, criteria'. Probabilism suggests that the physical environment provides 'possibilities for choice and is not determining, but that some choices are more probable than others in given physical settings'. Rapoport, A. (1977) *Human Aspects of Urban Form*, Oxford, Pergamon Press, p. 2. Also see Broady, Maurice (1966) 'Social Theory in Architectural Design', *Arena-The Architectural Association Journal*, 81, (January), pp. 149-154.

¹⁹ Eisenstadt, N. (1966) *Modernisation: Protest and Change*, Englewood Cliffs, N.J., Prentice-Hall. He writes: 'Historically, modernisation is the process of change towards these types of social, economic, and political systems that have developed in Western Europe and North America from the seventeenth century to the nineteenth and twentieth centuries to the South American, Asian, and African countries'. (p. 1). Also, Payne, G. (1977), *Op. Cit.*, pp. 13-20.

seems to go with them. Probably they would say, "Give us the tractors first and we'll be glad to take on the luxury of worrying about identity problems." .²⁰

Costello also indicated the western influences on the Middle Eastern Countries in the second half of this century.²¹ Generally, western influences have developed a desire to maintain the local culture all over the world.²² Hakim shares these views and he indicates that, three decades after World War II a backlash between the traditional and modern values spread over the Arabic-Islamic World, which brought the issue of identity in the built environment to centre stage.²³

The major argument of western studies about modernisation stresses that non-western societies become modern only when they interact with western societies, especially when they are 'invaded, defeated and exploited by the West'. What is clear is that the west is 'evidently, a name always associating itself with those regions, communities and peoples that appear politically or economically superior to other regions, communities and peoples'.²⁴

It is necessary here to clarify that an overlap between the concept of 'modernisation' and 'westernisation' is widely found in non-western societies. However, this misinterpretation was originally generated by western scholars. Many western scholars attributed the modernisation process to western culture. This can be clearly understood from the statement of Shils, that is: "modern" means being Western without the onus of dependence on the West."²⁵ This view is shared by Rustow when he states ' modernisation began in Europe in the Renaissance and spread overseas in the wake of Europe's expansion'.²⁶ Also, Larrain discusses European cultural identity.

²⁰ Klapp, O. (1969), Op. Cit., p. 4. He illustrates several example from non-western societies (Japan and India). In these examples he explains how these societies become confused about their identities. These societies stressed the old traditions as a refuge from the sense of rottenness. (p. 15-6). In the Arab world, Daniel discusses the concept of 'Westernisation must mean modernisation'. He indicates the resistance of the Arabic societies to the modernisation due to its western origin. He states 'Arabs ... can hope to modernise in a way characteristic of their own cultural history. Their profound resentment at a hundred years of political, economic and cultural interference will ensure that they will take Western technology with a minimum of Western Ideas ...' Daniel, N. (1971) 'Westernisation in the Arab World' in Michael A. The Middle East, London, Anthony Blond, pp. 516-25.

²¹ Costello, V. F. (1977) Urbanization in the Middle East, Cambridge, Cambridge University Press, p. 1.

²² For example in Japan it was expected that 'economic transformation necessitates a transformation in society which shifts Japan inevitably closer to the ideals, values, and ways of the West. In due course, the homogenising spread of Western culture will absorb the remnants of an Eastern tradition ... [what happened is] that the distinctiveness of the Japanese outlook on life still persist and that, in the minds of ordinary folk, things have changed less radically than crude social and material manifestations might suggest'. Jeremy, M. & Robinson, M. E. (1989) Ceremony and symbolism in the Japanese home Honolulu, University of Hawaii Press, p. xi.

²³ Hakim, B. (1994) 'The 'Urf' and its Role in Diversifying the Architecture of Traditional Islamic Cities', Journal of Architectural and Planning Research, Vol. 11, No. 2, pp. 108-127.

²⁴ Morley, D. & Robins, K. (1995), Op. Cit., p. 159.

²⁵ Shils, E. (1966), Op. Cit., p.10.

²⁶ Rustow, D. (1967) A World of Nations: Problems of Political Modernisation, Washington D.C., Brookings Institution, p. 1.

He states 'This identity conceived of place as the centre where history was being made and it was able to place and recognize everybody else as peripheral'.²⁷

It is assumed in much of the literature that, as earlier modernisation took place in western societies, it is somehow an intrinsically western process. Only a little thought clarifies the difference between modernisation as a process that may occur at any time in any society, and westernisation which appeared in the colonial era and by which those societies governed by western governments were forced to adopt western living standards.

Modernisation, in that sense, 'is very much a westernization process; a process which depends largely on imitation rather than on innovation'.²⁸ It was a term applied only to non-western traditional societies, and their modernisation efforts were judged by western criteria. This meant that for any society to be modern it should adopt a western model for modernisation. Recoeur (1967) criticises this tendency when he indicates the impact of universalisation on local cultures.

He states that:

'The phenomenon of universalization, while being an advancement of mankind, at the same time constitutes a sort of subtle destruction, not only of traditional cultures, which might not be an irreparable wrong, but also of what I shall call for the time being the creative nucleus of great civilizations and great culture, that nucleus on the basis of which we interpret life, what I shall call in advance the ethical and mythical nucleus of mankind.'²⁹

This view is supported by Rapoport when he criticises the impact of westernisation on other cultures. He states:

'There is a danger in applying western concepts which represent only one choice among the many possible, to the problems of other areas, instead of looking at them in terms of local way of life, specific needs, and ways of doing things.'³⁰

Modernity as a philosophical concept is widely integrated with the concept of westernisation in Saudi Arabia. These two concepts were ambiguously connected in both literature and people's minds which increased resistance to the physical changes in contemporary Saudi Arabians' home

²⁷ Larrain, J. (1994) *Ideology & Cultural Identity: Modernity and the Third World Presence*, Cambridge, Polity Press, p. 141.

²⁸ Jarbawi, A. (1981), *Op. Cit.*, p.3.

²⁹ Cited in, Frampton, K. (1980) *Modern Architecture: A Critical History*, London, Thames and Hudson, p. 314.

³⁰ Rapoport, A. (1969), *Op. Cit.* p. 129. Also Lomax and Berkowitz had criticised this phenomenon when they said: 'Man's total heritage of life-styles can contribute to the future, without giving precedence any longer to the European social and aesthetic practices that accompanied the

environments. Jomah, for example, confused the processes of modernisation and westernisation in his study about the house in the western region of Saudi Arabia. He states 'The environmental stress that took place in Hedjaz in the middle 1900s is usually described as "Westernization" or "Modernization"'.³¹

Because the clash was between two completely different cultures and life patterns, modernisation in Saudi Arabia is widely interpreted as westernisation. This enhanced the sense of threat to the identity and enhanced the internal social resistance towards the introduced concept.³² Abercrombie in his visit to the kingdom in 1966 has said 'whenever I went, I found the Arabians welcoming the 20th century, but never with open arms'.³³ People in Arabia, at that time, were very reactive against modernisation. In every aspect of life they thought about the impact of imported values and technology on their morals and social values. As Abercrombie's Saudi friend said 'modernization we want, we need, and we will have ... but on our own terms'.³⁴

This resistance never changed even when the whole of Arabia was exposed to extensive change in the 1970's.³⁵ Dalley³⁶ indicates the resistance of Saudis to western influences in the 1970's. He states:

'A matter of great concern to the Saudis is the influence of foreigner on the morals and social habits of the people ... The Saudis are probably quite right not wanting to be influenced by our ways, but it is difficult to see how it can be avoided if they are insistent on paying for hundreds of years of "development" in decades.'³⁷

Al-Awaji also indicates in 1971 that traditional values still dominated the social life in Saudi Arabia. He states 'The dominant social value system ... is still traditional. Not only [has it] continued to dominate, but also [it has compelled] institutions to adapt their behaviour to its

rise of industry.' Lomax, A. with Berkowitz, N. (1973) 'The Evolutionary Taxonomy of Culture', *Ekistics*, Vol. 36, No. 213 (August), pp. 77-84.

³¹ Jomah, H. S. (1992) *The Traditional Process of Producing A House in Arabia During the 18th and 19th Centuries: A Case of Hedjaz*. Unpublished PhD. Thesis, Edinburgh, University of Edinburgh, pp. 325.

³² Abercrombie, S. (1975) 'The Middle East: Design, Politics and Policy', *Design and Environment*, Vol. 7, No. 4, pp. 11-13. He states 'Certainly the Middle Easterners do not want from us cultural - and certainly not religious - missionaries. In general, their beliefs, their dress, food, decorations, prayers and ways of behavior are infinitely more firmly established and devoutly practiced than our own'. (p. 12).

³³ Abercrombie, T. (1966), "Saudi Arabia Beyond the Sands of Mecca", *National Geographic*, Vol. 129, No. 1, pp1-53.

³⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 5.

³⁵ We can link this social resistance and what the Ministry of Labour and Social Affairs aimed to preserve in the 1960's. Assah mentions that the ministry aimed 'to assist in directing balanced social development in the kingdom with the aim of raising the standard of the citizens, improving their living conditions and providing them with the necessities for happy and dignified life, at the same time preserving and reinforcing spiritual and moral values with the object of building a progressive integrated community'. Assah, A. (1969) *Miracle of the Desert Kingdom*, London, Johnson Publications Ltd., p. 252.

³⁶ One of the British architects who worked in Saudi Arabia for several years.

³⁷ Dalley, K. (1976), *Op. Cit.*, p. 166.

demand'.³⁸ In the 1970's and 80's, several researchers indicate that Saudi society was still persisting on its traditional way of life. In 1977, Costello indicates that, among the Middle East countries, Saudi Arabia had minimal European influences.³⁹ Shirreff also shares this view when he states in 1979 that 'in Riyadh, the conflict between traditional and modern, ethnic and foreign, is most marked.' He discusses the possibilities of change in the social traditions of Saudi Arabia. However, he concludes that 'the resistance is strong, and in 1978 it was felt to be tightening up.'⁴⁰ Anderson supports this view when he states 'traditionalism still pervades Saudi Arabian society.'⁴¹ Also, he indicates that traditions found a way to continue in the modern Saudi society. He states that 'the traditional forms of social interaction which ensure cohesion within tribal society have found accommodation in modern Saudi Arabian organizations'.⁴²

Thus, the issue of identity arose as a result of the association between the modernisation process and westernisation. It is thus argued here that the need for identity in Saudi Arabia is widely associated with the threat that people felt as a result of the rapid changes that traditional Saudi societies have experienced in the last three decades.

1.2.3 SEARCHING FOR IDENTITY

It is clear that the social resistance that emerged from the overlapping between the concept of modernisation and the concept of westernisation in the Saudi-home environment has encouraged many researchers and architects to search for identity in contemporary Saudi built environment. It is necessary to discuss how this social resistance translated into forms. The following discussion aims to present a general review of the yearning for identity in Saudi Arabia in the past two decades. In relation to this discussion, Kalpp mentions five reasons by which struggle for identity can be intensified in any society. Two of them in particular can be used to understand what has happened in the recent Saudi built environment.⁴³ The first is 'the breaking up of old traditions in connection with modernization and acculturation'. The second is the

³⁸ Cited in Anderson, G. (1984) Differential Urban Growth in the Eastern Province of Saudi Arabia: A Study of the Historical Interaction of Economic Development and Socio-Political Change, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, Baltimore, Maryland, University of John Hopkins, p. 160. (Anderson's parentheses).

³⁹ Costello, V. F. (1977), Op. Cit., p.1, and 81.

⁴⁰ Shirreff, D. (1979) 'Saudi Arabia' Middle East Annual Review, Essex, England, pp. 315-38.

⁴¹ Anderson, G. (1984), Op. Cit., p. 159.

⁴² *Ibid.*, p. 163.

⁴³ For other reasons see *Ibid.*, pp. 15-20. Also he lists twelve identity troubles as follows: 1) a feeling of being blemished, or that there is something wrong with one's self, 2) self-hatred, 3) touchiness, over sensitivity, being easily wounded, 4) excessive self-concern, 5) a feeling of alienation, 6) the feeling of unrealised (nobody appreciates me), 7) hankering to be somebody else, 8) excessive consciousness of role-playing in real life, 9) excessive other-directedness, 10) the grounds of one's self-assurance are shaken, 11) an unresolved ethical dilemma so severe that it is in fact an identity crises, 12) despair in the absence of a physical threat to existence or career (pp.11-3).

'mobile pluralism' which is 'great movement of persons from one status, subculture, class, community ... This means pressure to adjust one's identity with situations, rather than holding fast to one image'.⁴⁴

From the previous discussion, two main questions arise. Has the need for identity in Saudi Arabia emerged to say, 'Here we are, despite the drastic changes and foreign influences; this is our identity'? Or has it emerged as a kind of vestige from the superior western culture that directly influenced the social and physical orders in Saudi Arabia? It is important to clarify here that the following discussion is not intended to answer these two questions; rather it will try to discuss them broadly to set a context for our discussion of the built environment.

As a result of the rapid change in the 1970's, a sense of not belonging became the main issue in the home environment in Saudi Arabia, since people suddenly found themselves in a completely different physical environment. For example, Ben Saleh (1980) indicated the loss of traditional identity in the Saudi built environment. He said:

'Recent buildings have lost their traditional identities and have become hybrids of exotic character in their architectural form, main concepts, arrangement of spaces, organization of elements, and building techniques employed.'⁴⁵

Konash agrees with this view and he criticises the lack of knowledge of western firms that practised in Saudi Arabia about the local culture and suggests a collaboration between Saudi and foreign architects.⁴⁶ Al-Hathloul also studied the impact of western urban concepts in the contemporary Saudi cities. He suggested that Arabic-Islamic traditions which formulate the needs of Saudi families should be respected in any future building regulations.⁴⁷ Fadan goes further in his criticism and attributes the loss of traditional identity to the social changes in Saudi society. He states 'attraction to Western life-style have drawn Saudi attention away from

⁴⁴ *Ibid.*, pp. 15-7.

⁴⁵ Cited in Al-Gabbani, M. (1984), *Community Structure, Residential Satisfaction, and Preferences in a Rapidly Changing Urban Environment: The Case of Riyadh, Saudi Arabia*, Unpublished PhD, Michigan, University of Michigan. P. 275.

⁴⁶ Konash, F. (1980) *Evaluation of Western Architecture in Saudi Arabia: Guideline and Critique*, Unpublished Master Thesis, Albuquerque, New Mexico, University of New Mexico.

⁴⁷ Al-Hathloul, S. (1981) *Op. Cit.*, (the study introduces for the first time the impact of Western urban concepts on the Saudi-home environment. Also, it suggests that 'urban form within the Arab-Muslim city is to be found not within the physical elements themselves but within their system of arrangement (the rules of conduct), then these elements can be adapted or can even change so long as their system of arrangement or their relationships remain constant.' p. 266).

developing a clear and concise understanding of the evolution of a traditional living environment'.⁴⁸ These studies agree on the negative impact of western images on Saudi cities.

At the time concerned, however, people were fascinated by western images. For example, Boon mentions that contemporary homes in Saudi Arabia were strongly influenced by colonial villas in the Middle East.⁴⁹ Al-Gabbani finds in his study about Riyadh that 'most of the housing units constructed follow western models which symbolize prestige and use costly imported materials'.⁵⁰ Abu-Ghazzeah indicates that modern architecture in Saudi Arabia is seen to be 'culturally destructive'. He criticises the desire by Saudi architects to reflect images of economic and technological development through the adoption of 'western design'. He attributes this situation to the 'disassociation of the privileged business elite from their cultural roots.' These people tried to express themselves in the home environment by images mainly borrowed from the West. This then encouraged the middle classes to imitate the western images that were created by the business elite group.⁵¹ This is not to say that people did not express their socio-cultural values and express themselves in their homes, but that people experienced new things for the first time, and hence they were attracted to them. Personal and social identities were expressed through extensive alterations to those houses later on.

In the 1980's a mix of western, traditional, and historical (mostly Arabic-Islamic) images were found in the Saudi home environment.⁵² This reflects the consciousness by designers and people to create visual identity in the home environment.⁵³ Mofei, for example, criticised the situation of new buildings which derived their physical forms from different resources. We can see some buildings strongly influenced by the world wide prevailing trends in architecture, such as postmodernism and regionalism. Other examples are extremely formal and far from local cultural images, such as Greek or Roman classical images. In the best cases, we can see some

⁴⁸ Fadan, Y.M. (1983) *The Development of Contemporary Housing in Saudi Arabia. (1950-1983)*, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, MIT Cambridge, p. 15.

⁴⁹ Boon, J. (1982) 'The Modern Saudi Villa: Its Cause and Effect', *American Journal for Science and Engineering*, Vol. 7, No. 2, pp. 132-143.

⁵⁰ Al-Gabbani, M. (1984), Op. Cit., p. 275.

⁵¹ Abu-Ghazzeah, T. (1997) 'Vernacular Architecture Education in the Islamic Society of Saudi Arabia: Towards the Development of an Authentic Contemporary Built Environment', *Habitat Int.*, Vol. 21, No. 2, pp. 229-253.

⁵² Musa'ad Al-Angari (the former mayor of Riyadh) mentioned in 1983 that Riyadh had several architectural styles such as European, Islamic, and vernacular. *Assyasa* (Kuwaiti Newspaper) (6-2-1983).

⁵³ We can link the consciousness about the traditional and historical forms in Saudi Arabia in the 1980s to the criticism of modern architecture by many architects and historians. For, example Venturi (1966) in his book 'Complexity and Contradiction in Architecture' paved the way for postmodern architecture. Malcolm attributes the failure of modern architecture to its inability to understand the relationship between the physical space and social space and its ignorance of the traditional pattern and historical continuity. Frampton shares these views and he stresses that modern architecture isolated itself from society due to its rational and industrial tendency. Frampton, K. (1980), Op. Cit., p. 9; Kaufman, J. (1982) 'Post Modern Architecture' *An Ideology*, Unpublished PhD Thesis, Los Angeles, University of California; Malcolm, M. (1974) *Crisis in Architecture*, London, RIBA Publications, p.16-7

buildings imitating traditional forms or borrowing some forms from Arabic-Islamic architecture such as Mamluk architecture.⁵⁴

Most of the studies into the built environment in Saudi Arabia have attributed the lack of identity to borrowed physical elements. The focus was on the impact of borrowed forms on visual identity rather than paying more attention to relationships between people and the surrounding physical objects. Therefore, most of the suggestions to maintain identity in the contemporary home environment were centred on re-using traditional images. Boon, for example, suggested that in order to have an identity, it is important to revive urban traditional images.⁵⁵ Al-Nowaiser reached the same conclusion when he indicated that, in order to reflect 'a genuine sense of identity', it is necessary to find 'valid features of architectural heritage' to incorporate into the contemporary Saudi home environment.⁵⁶

These views helped and accelerated the emergence of an architectural trend in Saudi Arabia in 1990s.⁵⁷ This trend concentrated on external images and specifically on recycling the traditional images in the new buildings. However, this trend is still far from the real need of people in Saudi Arabia. Recently, one of the local newspapers⁵⁸ discussed this matter under the title 'Issue: our contemporary buildings have no identity'. The editor stated that 'the architectural crisis of our contemporary buildings increases day after day ... a confusion of images is the only description for our contemporary buildings'.

We can argue here that what happened, and is still happening, in the built environment in Saudi Arabia is a reaction to this sense of loss of identity.⁵⁹ Borrowing from the past is used as a tool to maintain visual identity in Saudi Arabia. This is clearly understood from what Al-Shuaibi⁶⁰ states that 'designers of various disciplines always borrow from the past, whether ancient or

⁵⁴ Mofit, F.A. (1989) "Transformation in the Built Environment in Saudi Arabia", *Urban Futures*, Vol. 2, No. 4, pp. 17-26.

⁵⁵ Boon, J. (1982) Op. Cit., p. 142.

⁵⁶ Al-Nowaiser, M. A. (1983) *The Role of Traditional and Modern Residential Urban Settlements on the Quality of Environmental Experience in Saudi Arabia: Unyzeh and New Alkabra in Alkaseem Region*, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, California, University of Southern California, p. 328.

⁵⁷ We can go back further and attribute this trend to the Doxiadis plan for Riyadh city in 1968. This plan suggested that 'in any new comprehensive planning legislation, special building rules and regulations should be drafted to ensure the maintenance of the basic principles of local architecture (i.e. internal courtyard, etc.) without necessarily mimicking old and absolute architectural forms and construction techniques'. (Cited in Al-Hathloul, S. (1981), Op. Cit., p. 174).

⁵⁸ Al-Yaum (Arabic newspaper), No. 8698 (2/4/1997) (see App. VI).

⁵⁹ Early attempts to re-use traditional images in contemporary buildings started in the late 1970's especially in governmental buildings. This can be attributed to the worldwide raised consciousness about the local cultures. Al-Naim, M. (1996) 'Culture, History, and Architecture: Qasr Al-Hokm District in Riyadh', *Ahlan Washlan*, Saudi Arabian Airline Magazine, Vol. 20, No. 9, pp.12-17.

⁶⁰ Saudi Architect.

recent'.⁶¹ Abu-Gezzeh also encourages those buildings which he calls 'hybrid regional architecture'. For him, this type of buildings 'reflects both modern and traditional influences'.⁶²

1.3 SIGNIFICANCE OF THE STUDY

Although an important current issue, identity as a concept and as a system has not been clearly defined.⁶³ The search for identity in Saudi Arabia has attempted to narrow it down to a form and visual image that can be achieved through the design process, rather than a comprehensive social phenomenon constituted by day-to-day interaction between people and their surrounding physical objects. In this sense, this study is concerned with the social side of residential settlements and will address the issue of identity as a phenomenon inherently linked with people's values. This is not to say that the study will not be concerned about physical aspects of identity, but to stress the importance of understanding identity in its social and physical contexts. We argue that socio-cultural values play a vital role in enhancing and consolidating people's identity in their home environment. The questions, however, are which values will do this job, and whether those values have the capability to continue over time. Study of people's values is essential for understanding the impact of people's need to be identified in their homes and on the formation of the home itself over time. Rapoport points out the importance of values in understanding physical forms. He states that:

'... the values and rule systems of different groups help understand the urban forms which their choices produce. Values thus affect the definition of problems, the data used and solutions proposed.'⁶⁴

Seeing identity from its social dimension in the Saudi home environment is rarely discussed. However, some studies have tried to investigate the connection between social values and physical form. For example, Al-Nowaiser compares the traditional and modern home environment. He indicates that the modern home environment has less social interaction than the

⁶¹ Salam, H. (1990) (Ed) *Expressions of Islam in Buildings*, Proceedings of International Seminar, Sponsored by the Aga Khan Award for Architecture and the Indonesian Institute of Architects, Jakarta and Yogyakarta, Indonesia, p. 38.

⁶² See Abu-Gezzeh, T. (1997).

⁶³ The identity of Saudi cities is considered among the national issues. For example, the Saudi agenda in the United Nation conference raised the issue of maintaining the architectural identity in the contemporary Saudi cities. *Ministerial Committee for the Environment MCE*, (1995), Agenda 21: Saudi Arabia, p.16 (Arabic).

⁶⁴ Rapoport, A. (1977) *Human Aspects of Urban Form*, Oxford, Pergamon Press, p. 24

traditional one.⁶⁵ Also, Al-Soliman tries to study how social values are expressed physically in the traditional and modern built environments.⁶⁶ Bahammam also studies the social reasons behind the alterations that people made in their houses in Riyadh.⁶⁷ While Al-Hussayen examines the role of women in the traditional and contemporary built environment in central Arabia.⁶⁸ This kind of study provides us with some general understanding about the vital role of socio-cultural values in the formation of the contemporary Saudi home environment. However, these studies are still far from the exploration of how people express themselves in their home environment.

Since the 1930s there has always been a search for identity in the Saudi home environment. This desperation to maintain a sense of identity has taken two approaches. First, there is a conscious search for identity, by which decision makers, designers, and people (through the designing of their houses and/or their alteration and modification later on) impose certain forms and spatial relationships to reinforce and/or reformat the house image. Second, there is an unconscious search for identity. This is manifested by the meanings that people embody in the spaces and things around them (how people continue to maintain these meanings and how they create new meanings over time). This study is simply trying to understand the collaboration of these two approaches in forming the contemporary private home image in the city of Hofuf.

The main question of this study, thus, is: To what extent has the image of contemporary residential settlements in Hofuf been influenced by the continuity and change of traditions (socio-cultural values and past experiences)? In other words, is it possible to trace the constant and changeable values by which people maintain or recreate their identity in their home environment?

In this sense, there are some other questions the study will try to answer:

- 1 To what extent are we able to define the mechanisms that work in reinforcing a sense of identity in contemporary residential settlements in Hofuf?
- 2 Identity can be expressed in the home environment by people who have the ability to create certain composition from the collaboration of physical and social aspects. In this light, are we able to trace the continuity and change of identity in the home environment over time? In other

⁶⁵ Al-Nowaiser, M. A. (1983), Op. Cit, p. 280.

⁶⁶ Al-Soliman, T. M. (1991) 'Societal Values and their Effect on the Built Environment in Saudi Arabia: A Recent Account.' *Journal of Architectural and Planning Research*, Vol. 8, No. 3, Autumn, pp. 235-255.

⁶⁷ Bahammam, A. (1992) *An Exploration of the Residents' Modification: Private-Sector Low-Rise Contemporary Housing in Riyadh, Saudi Arabia*, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, Michigan, University of Michigan.

⁶⁸ Al-Hussayen, A. (1996) *Women and Built Environment: Case Studies: Ar-Riyadh and Ushaigir*, Unpublished PhD Thesis, Edinburgh, University of Edinburgh.

words, to what extent are we able to understand the meaning of things in the home environment and how those meanings change over time?

3 Is it necessary to have certain physical forms to express identity or is it possible to express it by various devices?

4 In the light of the above questions, to what extent has house form in Hofuf developed to accommodate continuity or change? Can we identify those core values which has played an essential role in the formation of contemporary private houses in the city?

1.4 THE HYPOTHETICAL FRAME

Today's issue lies in our ability to understand social dynamism and what people think about their home identity; why they need to identify themselves; how traditions work in the society; and why people create new traditions. This study argues that every society has continuous traditions. They may change and take different forms but their existence is essential for the society to survive. As Rapoport states 'for any group to survive' it is important that 'there must be continuity at some level'. Traditions have the ability to maintain a certain continuity within a group.⁶⁹

Saudi Arabians have tried to maintain a certain continuity which can be linked to the strong impact of their religion.⁷⁰ These traditions can be linked with what Rapaport named the 'cultural core'. He differentiates the cultural core from 'peripheral' values, which are modified to changes in life circumstances. His argument is that the cultural core continues as a determinant factor in the creation of individual identity and as a mechanism by which members of a group communicate their collective identity. He states:

'... since cultures change, there is also the question of how long a group maintains its identity, that is, remains recognizable both to itself and to others as being distinct since it takes agreement by both parties to maintain group boundaries ... In this connection, I have suggested that the distinction between the core of culture (which changes little and slowly) and its periphery (which

⁶⁹ Rapoport, A. (1986) "Culture and Built Form-A Reconsideration", In D. G. Saile (ed) *Architecture in Cultural Change*, Essays in Build Form and Culture Research, Lawrence, University of Kansas, pp. 157-175.

⁷⁰ Hamdan finds that Islamic values had not been changed in Saudi Arabia because 'Islam in Saudi Arabia is not only a religion, but also a way of life.' Many traditions are linked to religious values. Nasr shares this view and has said 'Tradition is inextricably related to revelation and religion, to the sacred, to the notion of orthodoxy, to authority, to the continuity and regularity of transmission of truth...'. This means continuity of religious values indicate continuity of those relevant traditions. This is not to say that only those traditions which linked with the religious values will continue overtime, but to say that these traditions and some other traditions can be seen as core values. Hamdan, S. (1990) *Social Change in the Saudi Family*, Unpublished Ph.D., Iowa State University, Ames, Iowa, p. 149; Nasr, S. (1981), Op. Cit., p.68.

changes quickly) is potentially useful for the analysis and design of built form, particularly in situation of rapid culture change ... These core elements maintain the identity of the group.’⁷¹

In that sense, a change in lifestyle may influence the peripheral values and modify them to cope with the new way of living, but those values which enable the people to generate meanings in their built environment will continue in their function.

The cultural core will find one way or another to continue in contemporary societies. The strength of these values depends on the degree of resistance by any society towards change and the ability of its members to preserve their cultural core. Continuity of identity of any society stems from these core values. We are not arguing here that the existence of these values ensures full continuity of identity; they will, however, play an essential role in creating a new identity. As Bloom states, in a change of life circumstance, ‘individuals may make new and appropriate identifications. Individuals may also seek to protect and enhance identification already made’.⁷²

Rapoport presents two definitions for the concept of identity. The first stresses the importance of continuity of identity. This means that identity referred to the ‘unchanging nature of something under varying aspects or conditions.’ While the second definition concerns with the ‘condition of being one thing and not another’.⁷³ However, in the first meaning the implicit and explicit resistance to the introduced objects, images, lifestyles, etc., by people play an important role in the continuity of certain meanings for a long period of time. Habraken introduces the concept of implicit and explicit constraints as two mechanism that enable us to evaluate the form. He argues that in the time of producing a new form there is an internal mechanism that forces the form to take certain shapes. These shapes are compatible with people’s past experience, belief system, norms and lifestyle.⁷⁴

For the purpose of this study, it was necessary to develop a hypothetical model to enable the researcher to examine the questions of the study. The proposed framework consists of three main assumptions connected together to create a continuous process in the home environment (Fig. 1.1).

⁷¹ Rapoport, A. (1986), *Op. Cit.*, pp. 157-175.

⁷² Bloom, W. (1990) *Personal Identity, National Identity and International Relations*, Cambridge, Cambridge University Press, P. 50.

⁷³ Rapoport, A. (1981) ‘Identity and environment: A cross-cultural perspective’, in J.S. Duncan (Ed) *Housing and Identity: Cross-Cultural Perspectives*, London, Croom-Helm, p.6-35.

⁷⁴ Habraken (1985) *The Appearance of the Form*, Cambridge, Massachusetts, Awater Press, pp. 63-66.

The first assumption is that, in the city of Hofuf, there have been continued traditions (socio-cultural values and past experiences) which have influenced people’s conscious and unconscious actions in the home environment.

The second assumption starts from the fact that the house consists of functional spaces, which people use daily. Each space is related to other spaces to create the spatial organisation. This organisation of spaces is strongly influenced by the continued traditions, core and peripheral values and experiences. Moreover, this spatial organisation is represented by the house form. A house then, consists of many parts related to each other and creates one composition.

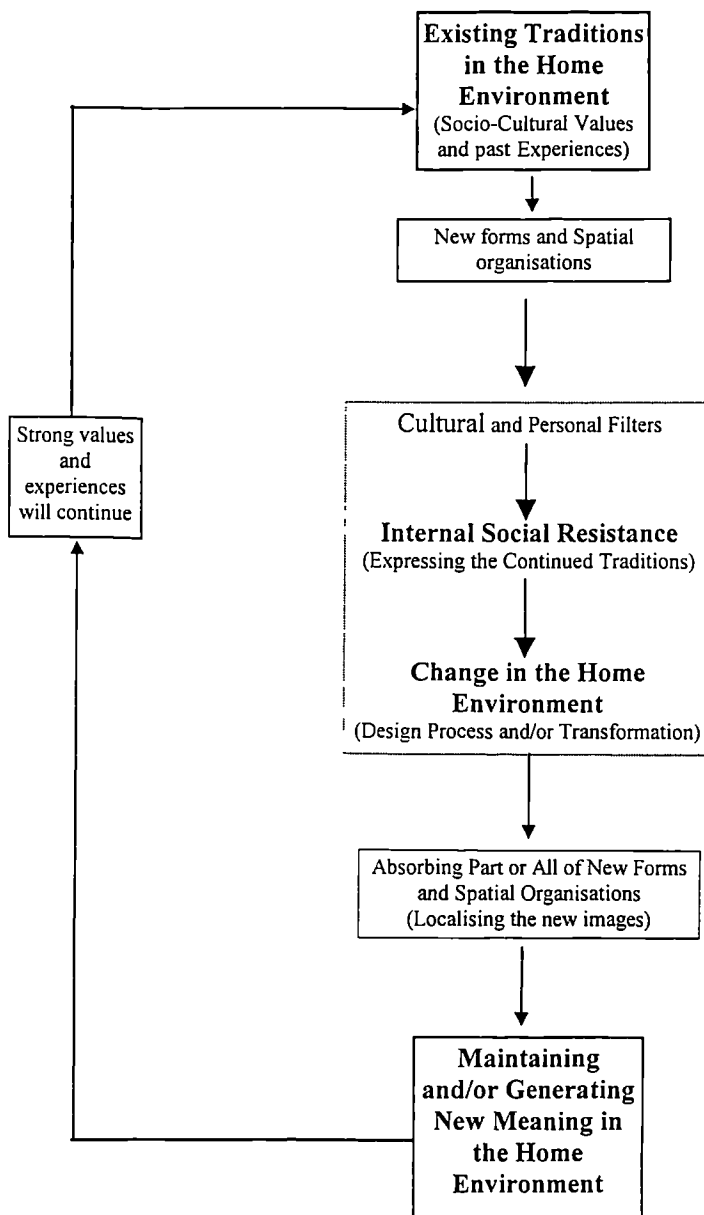


Fig. 1.1: The hypothetical resistance model in Hofuf's home environment

The second assumption is that despite the external and technocratic forces that imposed certain forms and spatial relationships in the private homes in Hofuf, people always develop internal resistance to these forms and spaces, mostly unconsciously, in the direction of local culture. The internal resistance emerges from existing and continued traditions. These traditions will infiltrate the new forms and relationships and modify them over time.⁷⁵ This exposes the private home to extensive and continuous changes to meet people's continued traditions, either by the design process (development of house design in Hofuf) or by the transformation of existing houses.

Through the process of forming and reforming the private house in Hofuf, people either consciously and/or unconsciously have been expressing themselves as individuals and groups by maintaining and/or generating new meanings in their home environment. This leads us to the third assumption.

The third assumption is that the existing identity of the present private home in Hofuf is a mix of continued, developed, and new traditions, meanings, and experiences.

The aforementioned assumptions propose that people use their cultural filters (socio-cultural values and past experiences) and personal filters (preferences and habits) to resist new forms and spatial concepts that may be introduced into any home environment. It is important to clarify that 'resist' does not mean 'refuse'; rather it means adapt and localise new images and associate them with existing meanings (both continued and newly developed ones).

1.5 AIMS AND OBJECTIVES

While architects prefer to design a new and strange house in order to make it conform with their aesthetic values, inhabitants prefer to have it suitable for their socio-cultural values. Therefore it is important to provide the designers with the ability to understand the continued cultural values in order to respect them in their future designs. The main goal of this study is to understand and describe those aspects which motivate people to adopt and refine the internal and external elements in their home design in general, and those which are related to expressing individual and group identities in particular.

⁷⁵Rapoport discusses the cultural and personal filters by which people modify their perceived environment. He states 'that the objective and perceived worlds are separated by an information filter (knowledge) and an attitude filter (goals). Rapoport, A. (1977), *OP. Cit.*, p. 38.

This study aims to understand how people's need to identify themselves as individuals and a group influences the form of the private home in the city of Hofuf. Identity is seen in this study as a phenomenon which has a very dynamic nature. Therefore, our purpose is to show that identity is a phenomenon created and given new life by people who make and use the built environment. This study also tries to say that the present trend in the contemporary architecture of Saudi Arabia, that has tried to use specific forms, traditional or historical, as a way of creating the sense of identity in the home environment, will create a forged identity. Identity should be expressed by people rather than be imposed on them.

The aim behind this understanding is to point the attention of decision makers and designers to the importance of the continuity of the cultural core in contemporary residential settlements rather than the concentration on forms and shapes, which may conflict with the core values and then may change. In this sense, the study tries to develop a set of recommendations regarding the future of the home environment in Hofuf, for both existing and future development. For this purpose, three categories of the study objectives have been fulfilled as follows:

Theoretical:

- Investigation of the concept of identity, its meaning, its levels, and its aspects.
- Investigation of the physical and social aspects of identity in house-settlement systems.
- Reconstruction of a theoretical basis for identity in the home environment in Saudi Arabia.

Documentation:

- Investigation of the physical and social arrangements of house-settlement systems in the city of Hofuf.
- Reconstruction of the physical and social aspects of identity in the traditional settlements of the city of Hofuf.

Evaluation:

- Construction of a spatio-temporal path for the continuity and change of identity in the home environment in Hofuf.
- Study of the impact of this path on the change and development of spatial organisations and use of the dwellings over time and their associated physical forms.

- Tracing of the continued, developed, and new traditions in the contemporary home environment in Hofuf.

1.6 RESEARCH STRATEGY

In order to fulfil the objectives of the study it was decided that an ethnographical research method would be used. Graphical and visual data as well as observing people's lifestyles felt to be essential in this study because we are looking for the process that people follow in their interactions with the physical forms to express their individual and collective identities in their home environment. In order to make use of the collected data a structuralist approach was followed by combining the semiotic and symbolic approaches as a philosophical technique for interpreting the data.

1.7 THE SETTING

The study focuses on the development of the home environment in the city of Hofuf. It is an old town located in the region of the Al-Hasa Oasis, which is located on the eastern coast of the Arabian peninsula (Fig.1.2).⁷⁶ Traditionally this region has always been of importance economically and strategically. The economic importance of the region in the past is attributable to the availability of water and agricultural land and in the present to the availability of oil.⁷⁷ The city was the capital of the region until 1952, when the government office moved to Dammam, the new capital of the Eastern Province.⁷⁸

Hofuf has been experiencing change since 1904, when a group of people decided to construct a new neighbourhood outside the old city wall. This new settlement introduced for the first time a new land subdivision pattern contrasting with that in the old city. With the discovery and exporting of oil in 1938, the city faced a series of changes in its physical and social contexts. This brought the early question of identity in its contemporary home environment to the centre stage.

⁷⁶ There is a belief that Hofuf began as a small village in Al-Hasa Oases called *Arrigayyat*, in the fifteenth century (See Appendix I).

⁷⁷ See Appendix I.

⁷⁸ Al-Hathloul, S. (1981), Op. Cit., p. 150.

1.7.1 WHY HOFUF?

Because of the researcher's familiarity with the area, Hofuf has been selected as a case study.⁷⁹ It was realised from the beginning that accessibility to the data is essential for carrying out this study especially in a research environment like Saudi Arabia, where people are very sensitive about talking about themselves and about their needs.⁸⁰ Working in a society where the researcher was familiar with and known by many of its members reduced these difficulties to some extent.

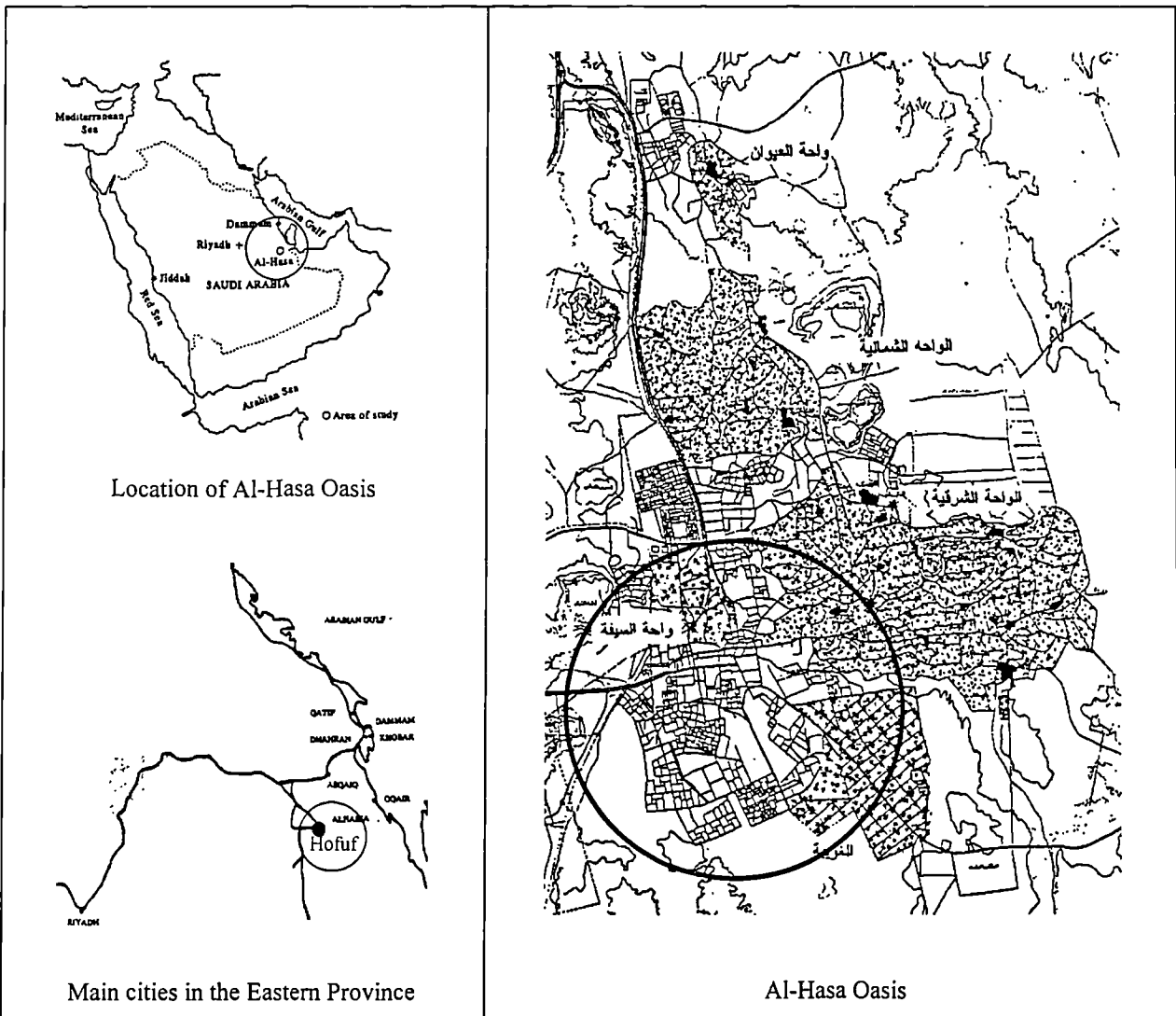


Fig.1.2: Location of Hofuf.

Hofuf, also, looks like a suitable site to carry out this study because of its long-standing socio-cultural values and experiences. The settings in the city represent all stages that the private house form has passed through. This is attributed to the process of modernisation through which the

⁷⁹ Hofuf is the city where the researcher was born and lived for about eighteen years (1967-84).

city has passed. Some cities in Saudi Arabia have urbanised more slowly than others. Hofuf is one of those cities that has passed through slower changes than the three main cities, Riyadh, Jeddah and Dammam. This gave Hofuf the chance to preserve large parts of its traditional settlements and subsequent settlements. The gradual change in Hofuf enabled the researcher to build up a spatio-temporal path for the development of the home environments in the city.

1.7.2 WHY HOME ENVIRONMENT?

Home environment can be understood, according to Rapoport as 'that system of settings within which a particular set of activities takes place'.⁸¹ This system manifests the physical and social identity of people and can be described as a

'system of settings that has particular environmental quality ... and which people choose (within given constraints) on the basis of lifestyle (and ultimately culture) to match their ideals, values, images and so on, and to be supportive of their activities (including latent aspects), their lifestyle and so on.'⁸²

Dovey describes home environment as 'one thoroughly imbued with the familiarity of past experience. It is one the environment we inhabit day after day until it becomes taken for granted and is unselfconscious'.⁸³ The study aims to understand and describe those mechanisms by which people reinforce their individual and group identities in their private homes. However, in order to study any house it is essential to look at it in its context. House form is strongly influenced by the planning systems, block arrangement, lot size, shape and infrastructure. For the purpose of the analytical work, two levels in the residential settlement should be investigated:

- a) **Settlement level:** To measure the external constraints, physical and social, that may influence the planning system, house arrangement etc.
- b) **House level:** To understand the internal constraints, physical and social, that may influence the organisation and use of spaces and their associated physical forms.

⁸⁰ See Chapter V.

⁸¹ Rapoport, A. (1985) 'On Diversity' and "Designing for Diversity", in B. Judd, J. Dean, and D. Brown (Eds) *Housing Issues I: Design for Diversification*, Canberra, Royal Australian Institute of Architects. (See Rapoport, A. (No Date) *Thirty Three Papers in Environment-Behaviour Research*, Newcastle Upon Tyne, The Urban International Press, pp. 373-97. He also states 'The diversity of cultural landscapes generally, and home environments, is the result of different groups with different lifestyles making home environments congruent and supportive with these lifestyles. They may do this through designing and building, but more typically today they do it through choice and subsequent modification and personalization ...' (p. 383)

⁸² Rapoport, A. (1990) 'Environmental Quality and Environmental Quality profiles', In N. Wilkinson (Ed) *Quality in the Built Environment*, Newcastle (UK) Urban International Press, p.75-83. Also see Rapoport, A. (1985) 'Thinking about Home Environments', In Irwin Altman & Carol M. Werner, *Home Environments*, New York, A Division of Plenum Publishing Corporation, pp. 255-286.

⁸³ Dovey, K. (1985) 'Home and Homelessness', In I. Altman and C. M. Werner (Eds) *Home Environment* New York, Plenum Press, pp. 33-64.

1.7.3 WHY PRIVATE HOME?

Home for Werner 'is the setting for the development and maintenance of a variety of interpersonal relationships ... it provides an ideal setting in which to contemplate temporal and physical factors that are important in the formation and progress of relationships'.⁸⁴ The scope of the study will cover the private house. This will not include the apartment dwelling, for example, because in Hofuf this type of housing is not common and only newly married couples use it. The reason behind our concentration on private housing is because of the need to focus our study on the house type in which people reflect maximum participation. This is not the case for the apartment building where most of the residents live temporarily and have no right to alter their apartments.

1.8 STUDY ORGANISATION

The study consists of two parts in addition to the introduction and conclusion. The first part includes four chapters covering the theoretical background and methodology of the study. The second part, also of four chapters, covers the empirical analysis. The first part aims to furnish the study with an extensive literature review regarding the concept of identity, its need in the home environment in general and in Saudi Arabia in particular, and the methods of collecting and analysing data. Also, it describes what the researcher did in the field as well as the general social and physical characteristics of the city of Hofuf. The second part illustrates and analyses the continuity and change of identity in Hofuf's home environment. An in-depth analytical approach has been carried out in this part to explore the meanings that the people of Hofuf embodied in the surrounding spaces and things in their private homes and how those meanings changed over time.

In the second chapter, a comprehensive review of the experience of change in the Saudi home environment was carried out. It aims to criticise the experience of change in the Saudi home environment in the light of the resistance model. This chapter scrutinises the valid literature about home environment in Saudi Arabia and analyses it according to the idea of social resistance. The discussion tries to trace the attitude of people towards their home environment as well as to interpret their approach towards maintaining their identity in their private homes. It is important for this study to build up a clear picture of the concept of identity in the Saudi built

⁸⁴ Werner, C. M. (1987) 'Home Interiors: A Time and Place for Interpersonal Relationships', *Environment and Behaviour*, Vol. 19, pp. 169-79. She stressed that home 'is an excellent setting in which to ground theories of inter-personal relationships.' (p.170).

environment. It depends on those previous studies which have already been carried out in the area as well as on a visual survey carried out by the researcher in 1995. Furthermore, in order to cover the whole experience that the Saudi home environment has passed through, this chapter is divided into two main sections. First, by the early changes in the home environment, where people still had maximum freedom to create what they liked in their homes. The second section covers the late period of change when the government institutions were established and were involved in the home environment.

The concepts of identity and home are explored in Chapter III. This chapter tackles the notions of identity and home from their theoretical side. It is necessary to study the concept of identity from its physical, social and temporal aspects. Concepts such as object, values, and memory have been elaborated and discussed in order to define the meaning of identity in this study. The meaning of home also has been discussed. This chapter aims to give an idea about the difficulties of defining both identity and home as well as to provide different possibilities for the researcher to develop an operational model to study continuity and change of identity in the home environment.

Identity was seen from different standpoints including cultural, social, group, and personal standpoints. For example, the relationship between cultural identity and personal identity is discussed. This chapter aims to create a link between the concept as a philosophical issue and the need of people to identify themselves in their built environment.

Chapter IV will reinforce the concept of identity in the home environment. This chapter aims to provide the researcher and the reader with cross-cultural examples around the following questions: How have people expressed their individual and group identities in the home environment? How have they maintained or changed these identities? Here we expand the discussion about the concept of identity to understand how it works in the physical context. An operational model has been developed to depict the process of identification in the home environment. In this chapter four types of identity with different strengths and levels have been developed to enable the researcher to describe the phenomenon of continuity and change of identity in the Hofuf home environment.

Chapter V is the last chapter in part one. This chapter connects the previous three chapters and makes use of them because it explains why and how the data was collected and analysed. It

consists of four sections including a theoretical section which justifies the ethnographic qualitative approach which was used in this study. 'Pilot study' is the second section. It introduces the home environment typology in the city of Hofuf and justifies the criteria for selecting the in-depth case studies. This section introduces the three types of home environments in Hofuf, traditional, transitional, and contemporary. The third section is the main field work. In this section a full description of how, why, and what the data are that have been collected in each home environment. The fourth section presents the analytical frame, how the collected data will be presented and analysed, which approach is used and why it is used.

The subsequent chapters mainly discuss the continuity and change of identity in Hofuf's home environment. These chapters are strongly linked to each other in the sense that they represent the chronological development of the home environment in Hofuf. Chapter VI, for example, analyses the concept of *fereej* in the traditional home environment in Hofuf. The concept of *fereej* was a mechanism of making identity in traditional Hofuf. This chapter tries to give a lucid picture about the physical and social organisations in the external domestic space in traditional Hofuf.

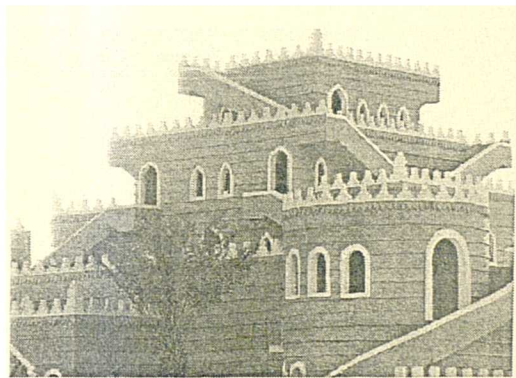
The main objective of the Chapter VII is to discuss how people of traditional Hofuf expressed their perceptual and collective identities in their internal domestic spaces. This chapter includes three main sections, spatial organisation, rituals and ceremonies of the internal domestic spaces, and the use of decoration as visual symbols in the traditional house. It concentrates on those spaces by which people expressed their identity such as male reception and family living spaces.

The reconstructed traditions and experiences in the previous two chapters will be used, in the subsequent chapters, as criteria to evaluate the continuity and change of identity, which values and experiences are continued, which ones change etc. Chapter VIII, for example, aims to record and interpret the people of Hofuf's reactions towards the first contact with the western culture. It consists of three parts. The first part deals with the indirect influences of the western urban concept on the *Assalhiyyah* neighbourhood (planned in 1904). The second part aims to trace the acceleration of change in the private house in Hofuf. It covers those neighbourhoods which had been constructed between 1940 and 1960. This part emphasises the implication of direct contact with western material culture and how private houses in Hofuf responded to these changes. Both parts also explain the mechanisms by which the people of Hofuf have localised several forms,

spatial organisations, and technologies, and how they gave them collective meanings known and understood by local community. The third part of this chapter covers a critical period in the development of home environment in Hofuf, which started when the government institutions introduced into the home environment. With the inauguration of the first comprehensive building regulations in 1960, the relationship between people and their homes took a different path. In this period, private houses in Hofuf are seen in transitional situation. They were a mix of new and old in terms of organisations and components, but they have one common external image: that is, abstract concrete facades.

Chapter IX presents recent private home developments in Hofuf. It covers those neighbourhoods which have been constructed in the last two decades. The purpose of this chapter is to describe those mechanisms by which people have expressed themselves in their private homes. Tracing the core values and experiences that are still working in the home environment is the main goal of this chapter. For this purpose, it compares and contrasts the different responses of people, which have been described in the previous three chapters, towards maintaining or generating meanings in their private homes. Spatio-temporal paths for development of traditions, things, images, forms, spatial organisations, etc., can be derived.

The concluding remarks are presented in Chapter X. It is obvious that Chapter IX contains the main conclusion of the study, but still the need for a complete chapter to illustrate and summarise the whole study exists. This chapter links the whole study together and at the same time it aims to re-introduce the hypothetical model in its final shape. The hypothetical model, which is introduced in the beginning of the study and discussed in more detail in Chapter IV is now reproduced, but in a form of spatio-temporal relationships with summarised examples taken across the study. This chapter also discusses the main recommendations regarding the future of the home environment in Hofuf and introduces several areas for future research.



New building in Damman

CHAPTER II

IDENTITY IN TRANSITION: THE EXPERIENCE OF CHANGE IN THE SAUDI HOME ENVIRONMENT

CONTENTS

- 2.1 Prologue
- 2.2 The Experience of Early Change (1938-60)
 - 2.2.1 The Early Physical and Spatial Conflict
 - 2.2.2 The Consolidation of the Early Conflict
- 2.3 The Experience of Rapid Change (1960-Present Day)
 - 2.3.1 Institutionalising the New House Image
 - 2.3.2 Transformation of the New House Type
 - 2.3.3 Prevailing Trend in the House Design
- 2.4 Summary

2

IDENTITY IN TRANSITIONAL CONTEXT: THE EXPERIENCE OF CHANGE IN THE SAUDI HOME ENVIRONMENT

2.1 PROLOGUE

Identity as a concept has social and physical connotations. It constitutes a collection of cues recognised by a group of people at a specific time and place. People and places, however, are exposed to change over time. In that sense, identity may change and people may resist this change because they want to feel that they maintain a certain level of continuity. However, continuity of identity is a very debatable concept. Every society faces a real challenge to maintain its identity for any length of time, especially under conditions of rapid economic and technological change.

The purpose of this thesis is to study how people have preserved or changed their identity in the home environment in the city of Hofuf. However, it is important first to carry out a general review of the home environment in Saudi Arabia. This review will be very useful in identifying the main forces that may influence people and places in Hofuf. The discussion that follows aims to clarify how the concept of identity is perceived by people, designers, and researchers in Saudi Arabia today. A lack of identity in the contemporary home environment in Saudi Arabia is indicated by many researchers.¹ This raises the following questions: What do we mean by identity? How do people express their personal and social identities? Is there any action we need to take to maintain individual and social identity? This thesis aims to answer these questions. However, the purpose of this chapter is to understand why the search for an identity has become an important social and intellectual issue in Saudi Arabia.

In the introduction to this study we introduced a hypothetical model of resisting new forms in the home environment. This model sees the identity in the home environment as a dynamic phenomenon. It can change and reform over time within the frame of the cultural core of society. This chapter tries to use this model to conduct a general critique for the experience of

¹ For example, see Konash, F. (1980); Boon, J. (1982); Al-Nowaiser, M. (1983); Mofiti, F.A. (1989); Alangari, A. (1996) *The Revival of the Architectural Identity: The City of Arriyadh*, Unpublished PhD Thesis, Edinburgh, University of Edinburgh; Abu-Ghazzeh, T. (1997)

change in the Saudi home environment. The goal here is to guide the researcher in the in-depth study of the city of Hofuf.

Historically Saudi Arabia has experienced drastic urban changes since the late 1930s through to the present day. For that reason this review is limited to this period. The researcher has tried to trace people's physical reactions towards urban change, and investigate how these reactions have shaped their identity over time. Unfortunately, there is very little literature about identity in the home environment in Saudi Arabia.² This meant the researcher had to make several visits to some of the main cities in Saudi Arabia (Riyadh, Jeddah, Makkah, Dammam, Khobar, and Hofuf) to carry out a diachronic visual survey.³ This survey aimed to trace some of the external physical characteristics that people tried to express in their homes to maintain their personal and social identities.

The following discussion attempts to analyse the experience of change in the Saudi home environment with special emphasis on the ways that people have used to adopt new forms in their home environment. The aim is to understand the general reactions of people towards the change over time. Identity is a social system, and unless we view it from this perspective we cannot understand how people realise it in their home environment. In this sense, we are looking for the relationship between people and their home environment rather than explaining the reasons behind any changes identified.

2.2 THE EXPERIENCE OF EARLY CHANGE (1938-60)

'The relative importance of other people and physical forms in shaping place identity implies that distinctions made between self, others and physical environments continually serve to define bodily experiences and consciousness of the unique persons. It would seem that the home, in terms of the kind of opportunities it affords people for personal and social action and how these enable self impression and expression is one profound centre of significance to a sense of place identity.'⁴

Originally Saudi Arabia consisted of several traditional societies. Despite the fact that these societies shared the same source of values, the Arabic-Islamic culture, each region still had

² Many researchers have indicated the lack of identity in the contemporary home environment in Saudi Arabia, few studies have been carried out about this issue. For example Alangari (1996), has recently finished his study about Riyadh. His study is mainly about the monumental projects that have been erected in Riyadh in the last two decades.

³ Completed by the researcher in summer 1995.

⁴ Sixsmith, J. (1986) 'The Meaning of Home: An Exploratory Study of Environmental Experience', *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, Vol. 6, pp. 281-298.

specific social and physical characteristics.⁵ The socio-cultural values and physical environment of each society have been disturbed by the introduction of western urban concepts in the last four decades. However, the first interaction with the new urban concept is very important in building up a spatio-temporal path for the relationship between people and their home environment in Saudi Arabia over time.

2.2.1 THE EARLY PHYSICAL AND SPATIAL CONFLICT

The origin of contemporary residential settlements in Saudi Arabia stems from the early part of this century when Aramco (Arabian-American Oil Company) built its housing projects in the eastern region of Saudi Arabia between 1938 and 1944 (Fig. 2.1).⁶ These projects introduced for the first time a new concept of space and a new home image. It is possible to say that this early intervention has had a deep but not immediate effect on the native people. It made them question what they know and how they should behave. In the other words, this early change can be seen as the first motive for the social resistance to the new forms and images in the contemporary Saudi home environment.

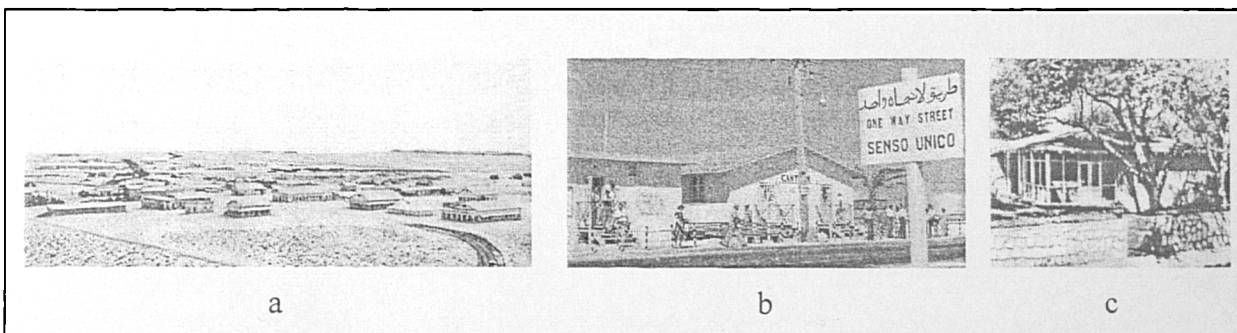


Fig.2.1: The new housing image of Aramco in the 1930s and 40s. a)The early American camp in Dhahran (1930's). b) American camp in Ras Tanunurah (1950's). Source: Facy, W. (1994) Story of the Eastern Province of Saudi Arabia, London, Stacy International, p. 92 &96. c) One of the early houses in the American Camp in Dhahran. Source: Lebkicher et al. (1960), Op. Cit., p. 196.

The significant impact of this experience presented itself in conflicts between old and new in local society. The threat from interfering outside elements to the social and physical identity created for the first time a social reaction towards physical environment. Resistance to the new

⁵ Konash, F. (1980), Op. Cit., p. 83. He states that in Saudi Arabia, 'people are different, even within every culture there are sub-cultures. There are differences between eastern and western, and between city people, villagers and Bedouins'. See also Talib, K (1983) Shelter in Saudi Arabia, London, Academy Edition, and King, G. (1998) The Traditional Architecture of Saudi Arabia, London, I. B. Tauris.

⁶ Aramco built its first camp in Dhahran in 1938, then in Ras-Tanura in 1939, and by 1944 in Abqaiq. Shiber, S. G. (1967) 'Report on City Growth in the Eastern Province, Saudi Arabia', in his Recent Arab City Growth, Kuwait, P. 428.

is expected in the early stages of change, but we need to know how people reacted to the changes and how deeply the people's image was influenced by them.

The conflict between traditional cultural values and the introduced western physical images was very limited at the beginning of modernisation; the native people followed what they knew and tried to implement it in their daily lives, including their homes. However, the contrast between traditional images and the new images in the minds of local people can be considered the beginning of physical and social changes in the Saudi home environment.

The first indication of a conflict between the local culture and western culture can be ascribed to Solon T. Kimball, who visited Aramco headquarters in 1956. He described how the senior staff (American) camp in Dhahran was completely imported from United States. He said:

'No one westerner would have difficulty in identifying the senior staff "camp" as a settlement built by Americans in our southwestern tradition of town planning. It is an area of single-story dwellings for employees and their families. Each house is surrounded by a small grassed yard usually enclosed by a hedge.'

This American camp, which introduced new spatial concepts, contrasted strongly with the surrounding home environments in the old cities in the region, Hofuf and Qatif.

The native people still persisted with their own spatial concepts and images and resisted the imported ones. They considered them as strange things. Therefore, when Saudi workers and their relatives 'moved in, they took over any empty land available and erected basic shelters and fences of locally available material, separated from each other by narrow irregular footpaths'.⁸

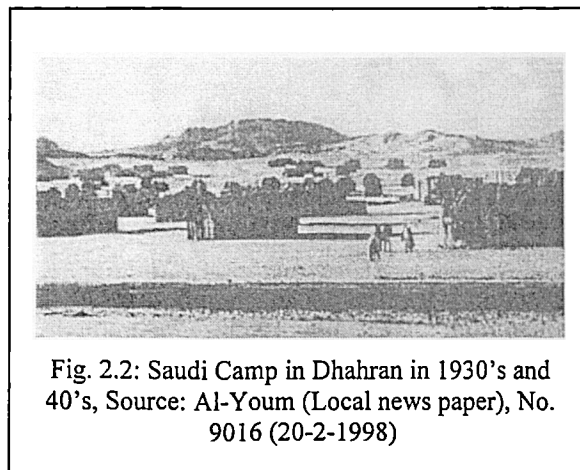


Fig. 2.2: Saudi Camp in Dhahran in 1930's and 40's, Source: Al-Youm (Local news paper), No. 9016 (20-2-1998)

This created 'a community of mud-brick and timber houses, built in a traditional and comfortable way'. (Fig.2.2).⁹

⁷ Kimball, Solon T. (1956) "American Culture in Saudi Arabia", *Transaction of the New York Academy of Sciences*, Ser. II, Vol. 18, No. 5, (p. 472).

⁸ Shiber, S. G. (1967), Op. Cit. P. 430.

⁹ Shirref, D. (1980) 'Housing-Ideas Differ on what People Want', *Middle East Annual Review*, in J. Andrews and D. Shirref *World Information*, Essex, England, pp. 59-62. Also, Al-Hathloul (1981), has said: 'The initial growth of Dammam and Al-Khobar in the late 1350's[H]/1930's and early 1360's[H]/1940's was not planned in an orderly fashion. As the population grew, people took over any available land and erected basic shelters and fences of local materials. Following the traditional pattern of Arab-Muslim cities, the streets were narrow and irregular.' (pp. 145-6)

Kimball noticed this community and described the Saudi camp which was built adjacent to the senior staff camp as 'neither planned nor welcomed'. He added that 'these settlements represent the attempt by Arabs to establish a type of community life with which they are familiar. Here the employees, mostly Saudis ... '. Kimball recognised the insistence of the native people on their own identity through his description of the Saudi camp as 'an emerging indigenous community life'.¹⁰

We need to mention here that in the first two decades of change several alterations appeared in local people's attitudes towards the home. What Kimball described is the position of native people from the first direct contact with western culture. People, at this stage, refused the change and stuck with what they knew. This is not to say that the new images had not influenced people; however, they were in the process of developing a new attitude towards their homes. This attitude was not yet fully formed to reflect how deeply the new images broke the old idea of home.

The government and Aramco were not happy with the growth of these traditional settlements.¹¹ Therefore, by 1947, the government had asked Aramco, who employed American engineers and surveyors, to control the growth around the oil areas. This created the first planned cities in Saudi Arabia, which followed a gridiron pattern, Dammam and Khobar (Fig. 2.3).¹² The spatial concepts and house images that were introduced into these two cities accelerated the impact of the new housing image on the local people, not only in these two new developments, but also in surrounding old cities.

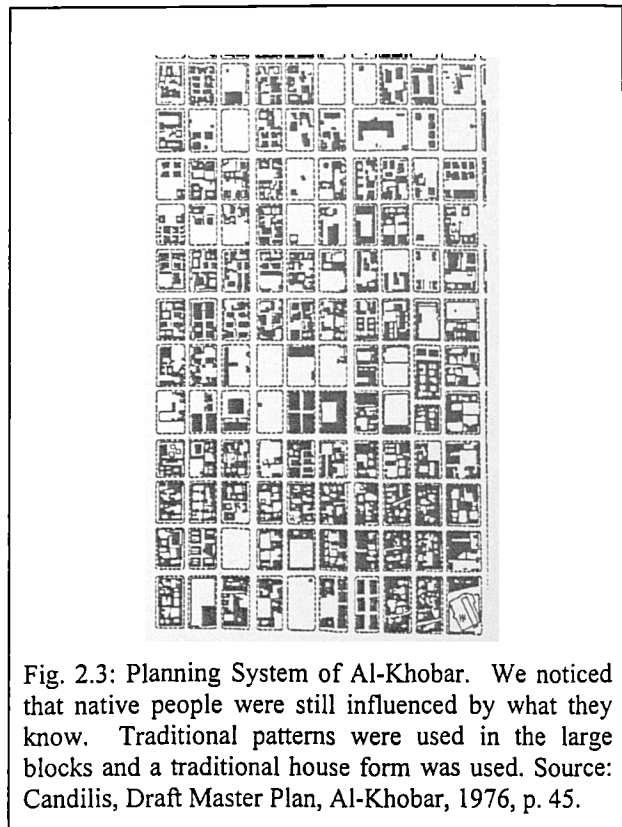


Fig. 2.3: Planning System of Al-Khobar. We noticed that native people were still influenced by what they know. Traditional patterns were used in the large blocks and a traditional house form was used. Source: Candilis, Draft Master Plan, Al-Khobar, 1976, p. 45.

¹⁰ Kimball, S. (1956), Op. Cit., (p.472).

¹¹ Ibid., p. 473.

¹² Shiber (1967). He describes the plan of Al-Khobar as: 'It covered only about one quarter square mile North of the company pierhead storage yard. The blocks averaged 130 by 200 feet with separating streets of 40 and 60 foot widths.' Moreover, he indicated how the new plan ignored the existing Saudi settlements. He states 'Here again, the gridiron pattern was oriented north-south. No consideration was given to the mushroom growth of temporary structures and those were demolished to open the new streets.' (P. 430). Also, Al-Hathloul (1981), Op. Cit., p. 146.

For example, in Hofuf, local people developed a new term called *Bayt Arabi* (Arabic house).¹³ This meant that people had realised that there was a difference in material, form, and spatial concepts between the Arabic house, which is the house they had known all their lives, and another type of house which had no definition except 'new house'.¹⁴ Before the introduction of the new concepts of home to the area people did not need to define their home because there was only one type of home, and every member in the society knew and used it. Therefore, the appearance of this term in Hofuf is considered by the researcher to be the first indication given by local people that they felt any kind of threat to their identity.

2.2.2 THE CONSOLIDATION OF THE EARLY CONFLICT

As we discussed earlier, this new type of house, which later became known as a villa, was imported originally in the 1930s, but it was developed in the 1950s when the Aramco Home Ownership Program forced people to submit a design for their houses in order to qualify for a loan.¹⁵ People relied upon Aramco architects and engineers to design their new houses, because there were few architects in Saudi Arabia at that time.¹⁶ In order to speed up the process, Aramco architects and engineers developed several design alternatives for their employees to choose from. However, all these designs adopted a style known as the 'international Mediterranean' detached house (Fig. 2.4).¹⁷

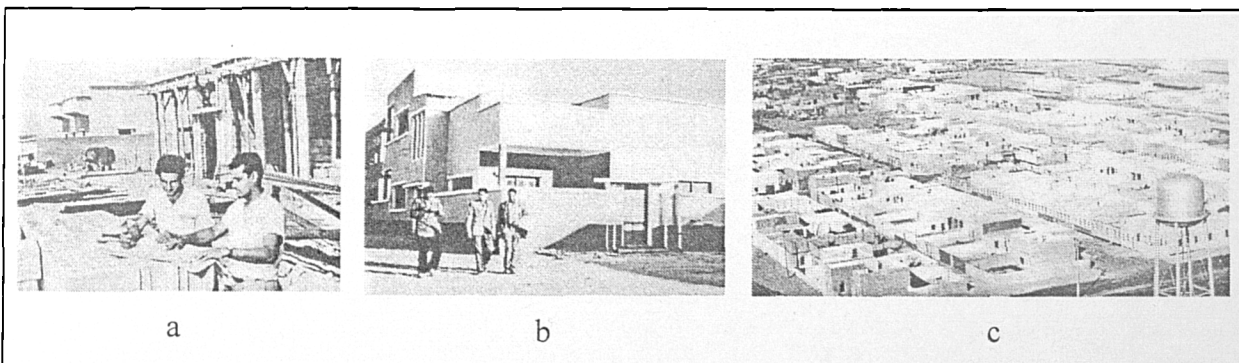


Fig. 2.4: Villa type in Dammam (1950s). a) Aramco architects and engineers in 1950's. b) Villa-type in Dammam in 1950's. c) A neighbourhood in Dammam in 1950's appeared as a result of Aramco Home Ownership Program. Source: Lebkiher et al. (1960), Op. Cit., pp. 212-14.

¹³ See Chapter VIII.

¹⁴ Al-Naim, M.(1993) *Potentiality of the Traditional House: A Case Study of Hofuf Alhasa*, Unpublished master thesis, Dammam, King Faisal University, p. 98.

¹⁵ Lebkiher, R. et al. (1960), Op. Cit., pp. 212-16; Shiber, S. (1967), Op. Cit., P. 431; Al-Hathloul, S. (1981), Op. Cit., p. 167.

¹⁶ Al-Hathloul, S. (1981), Op. Cit., p. 167.

¹⁷ Al-Hathloul, Saleh & Anis-ur-Rahmaam (1985), Op. Cit. P. 208.

Compared to what happened in the Eastern region, few changes occurred in Riyadh in 1930's and 1940's. However, an indication of social change can be found in those suburbs constructed at that time. For example, for the first time in the city, the new neighbourhoods were classified according to economical and social status.¹⁸ Still the construction methods and style were completely traditional. Facey described the changes in Riyadh in 1940s as:

'Despite the mushrooming development of the city outside the walls, traditional methods of construction continued to be employed. The local architecture had to be adapted to the creation of buildings for government and the royal family on a scale hitherto unimagined by local craftsmen.'¹⁹

The aforementioned situation completely changed in the 1950s because King Saud succeeded his father in 1953 and decided to modernise Riyadh.²⁰ This was manifested by two other relevant events that took place in Riyadh. The government built the royal residential district, known as *Annasriyyah*, in 1957, through which reinforced concrete was introduced to Riyadh for the first time.²¹ The conflict between new and old in the minds of local people became an important issue in Riyadh because it was facing radical physical and social change. This was manifested in the construction of *Al-Malaz* neighbourhood which was also completed in the late 1950s (Fig. 2.5).²²

The urban concepts that were implemented in Riyadh were similar to those in Dammam and Khobar.²³ Nevertheless, there was an initial difference between the two experiences. In the case of *Annasriyyah* and *Al-Malaz*, the whole projects, including planning, designing and construction, were completed by governmental agencies. People who used the residential units were given no chance to express their opinion about the houses they would use. Generally, with Aramco and Riyadh housing projects

¹⁸ Facey, W. (1992), *Riyadh the Old City: From its Origin Until the 1950s*, London, Immel Publishing. He states that 'The growth of suburbs in the 1930s and 1940s took, broadly, two forms. Low-income groups, such as the bedouin labourers and mechanics, congregated in concentrated suburbs to the east and south of the old city. The royal family and the well-to-do, by contrast, built their palaces and residences to the north and west, and adopted more spacious pattern settlements.' (p. 300)

¹⁹ *Ibid.*, p. 302.

²⁰ Facey indicates that 'Riyadh during the reign of King Saud underwent prodigious growth. The King was determined that the new fabric of the city should reflect its status as capital of a modern nation. Traditional, local methods and styles of architecture and planning gave way entirely to imported ones. Henceforth cement and reinforced concrete took over. Grid-plan streets and arterial roads appeared ...' (p. 317)

²¹ Abercrombie, T. (1966), *Op. Cit.*, p. 10. He describes *Annasriyyah* as: 'The mile-square palace complex was a city within a city, complete with mosques, schools, shops, and playgrounds. Rows of sumptuous villas lined the four-lane avenue leading to the giant pink reception hall'. (p.10)

²² Al-Hathloul, S. (1981), Fadan, Y.M. (1983). This project was created to house the governmental employees when King Saud transferred the governmental agencies from Makkah to Riyadh in 1953.

²³ 'The physical pattern of Al-Malaz follows a gridiron plan with a hierarchy of streets, rectangular blocks, and large lots which in most cases take a square shape. Thoroughfares are 30 metres in width, main streets 20 metres, and secondary or access streets 10 and 15 metres.' Al-Hathloul, S. & Anis-ur-Rahmaam (1985), *Op. Cit.*, p. 208.

‘... a completely different conception of a house, cluster, and neighbourhood has been introduced. It starts from the tiny details of the house construction, and spreads to the internal spatial organisation of the rooms and finally to the external appearance and the relationship of the house to those in the neighbourhood.’²⁴

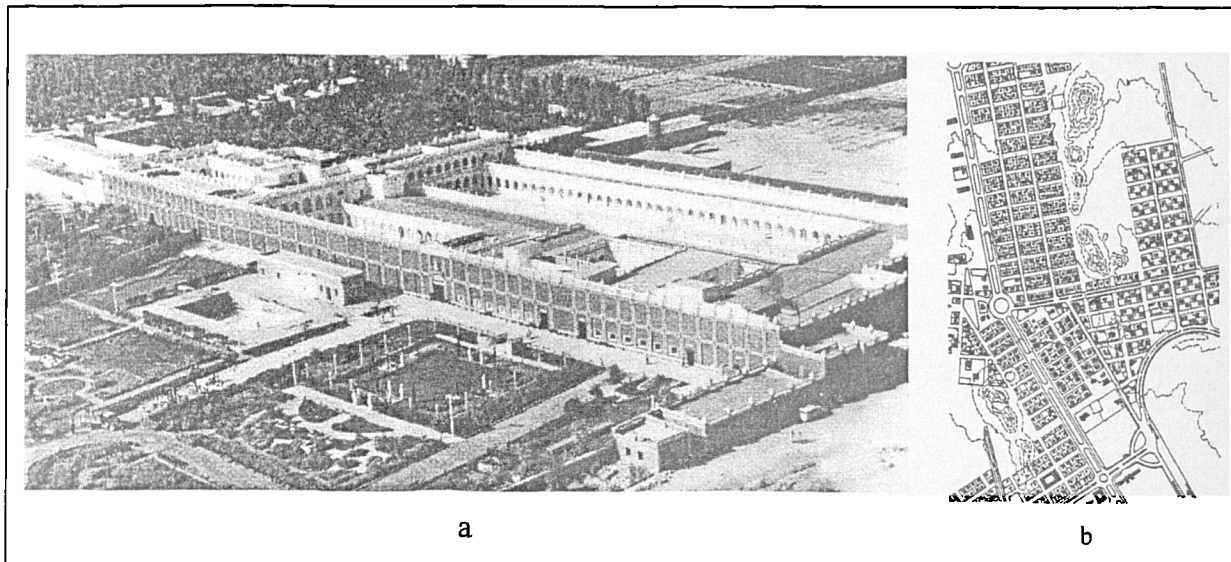


Fig. 2.5: New images in Riyadh (1950s and 1960s). a) *Annasriyyah* in 1957. Source: Facy, W. (1992), Op. Cit., p. 321. B) *Al-Malaz* planning system. Source: Al-Hathloul, S. (1981), Op. Cit., p. 164.

The imposing of the new house image was still limited to governmental and Aramco employees many of whom had experienced different cultures, either because they were not natives of Saudi Arabia or because they had studied abroad. However, these two major changes in Riyadh raised questions about the meaning of the home and disturbed the previous mental images of the local people. This can be observed by the way first *Annasriyyah*, and then *Al-Malaz*, were called New Riyadh.²⁵

The increasingly obvious contrast between old and new made people start to think about their options. Their identity was under threat by new and continuing urban change. Several questions appeared in their minds. Should they preserve their own traditional identity or adapt to change? Should they stick with what they knew or make use of the new concepts and technology? Certainly, people are usually more enthusiastic about experiencing the new, especially if it is

²⁴ Fadan, Y.M. (1983), Op. Cit., P. 97.

²⁵ Al-Hathloul, S. (1981), Op. Cit., p. 160.

associated with a distinguished social class, such as governmental employees, who appeared as a highly educated elite in an illiterate society.²⁶

In a similar fashion to what happened in the eastern region, many people who lived in the traditional areas in Riyadh kept their traditions in buildings and remained in their traditional houses right up until the late 1960s. The impact of the new images was very clear but society was not yet ready to step towards the social and physical changes. Nevertheless, people in the traditional areas did make a few changes to imitate these images introduced by the new houses in *Al-Malaz*.

The mud surfaces of the traditional houses were plastered with cement and the edges of the house parapets were topped with a thin layer of cement to reflect the sharp and neat edges of the concrete. These changes extended to the old style wooden external gates which, were replaced by steel ones with shades similar to those in the *Al-Malaz* houses. It is apparent, then, that concrete structures with their neatness and sharp edges became a very common symbol used by people in Saudi Arabia to communicate modernity (Fig. 2.6).²⁷

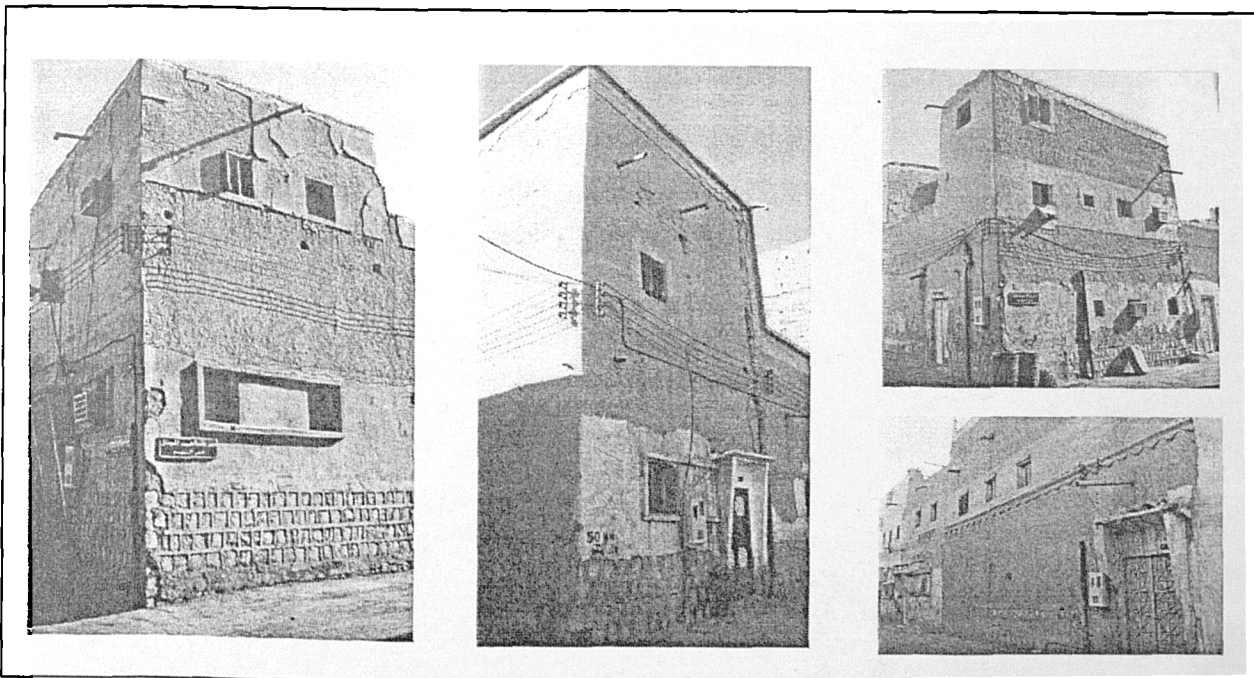


Fig. 2.6: The mud surfaces in the traditional houses in Riyadh plastered by cement and the traditional house gate was replaced by a concrete one because it reflects modernity. Source: Visual survey 1995.

²⁶ Alangari (1996), argues that *Al-Malaz* project 'inspired the populace to imitate and copy the new residential prototype (the villa) for several reasons: firstly, the project was sponsored by the Government, so it was an authorised scheme by the decision makers showing how modern [Riyadh] should be; secondly, it was the first residential public project to be executed in the capital with modern facilities and landscape boulevards in contrast with the dusty and unhygienic traditional residential quarter'. Therefore, 'to the society it became the dream living environment'. (p. 267).

²⁷ Al-Naim, M. (1996) "The Role of Symbol in Architecture: A Critical View for Contemporary Saudi Architecture" *Al-Qafilah*, Vol. 45, No. 5, pp. 37-42 (Arabic).

The agreement amongst people in the traditional areas of Riyadh about the meaning of modernity is a clear indication of their ability to create and develop new meanings within their home environment. Also, the manner in which they expressed this meaning was a very important step in absorbing the new images. This meaning of modernity was also found in other regions of Saudi Arabia. For example, many people in Hofuf changed their traditional house gates to imitate the gates in the new houses. The interesting point here is that, even if the change does not lead to better conditions, people will still pursue it in order to imitate what carries status in society. This is what happened in Hofuf when people substituted their beautiful decorative gates for abstract forms because they were symbols of modernity (Fig. 2.7).

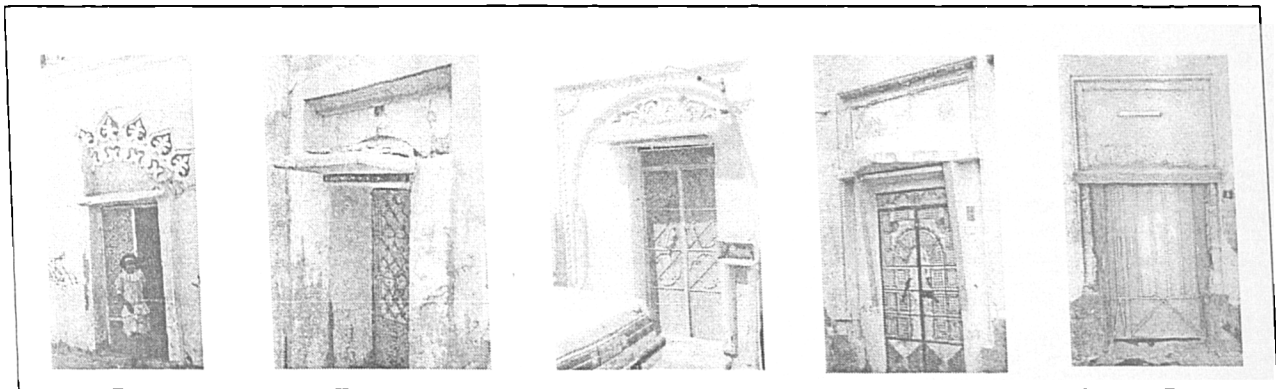


Fig. 2.7: A number of traditional house gateways transformed to imitate the new house types in 1950s and 60s in Hofuf. Source: Visual survey 1995

Another important phenomenon found throughout the kingdom can also be associated with the early conflict between old and new. When old cities expanded outside their old boundaries, the new houses which were constructed in the new areas carried both local and imported images. This produced unique house forms in each region which still distinguished them from other regions. Moreover, the use of imported images was controlled by their ability to communicate the local meanings that people associated with them.

For example, in the cities visually surveyed by the researcher, hybrid forms were found in neighbourhoods constructed adjacent to the traditional areas. These forms had a similarity to the local traditional forms, but they also contained new images which had already been localised symbolically to communicate modernity, such as the concrete gate, sharp lines and edges, etc (Fig.2.8).²⁸

²⁸ See also, Al-Harbi, T. H. (1989) *The Development of Housing in Jeddah: Changes in Built Form from the Traditional to the Modern*, School of Architecture, University of Newcastle Upon Tyne, p. 111, and Al-Naim, M. (1996) 'The Impact of Social Change on the Intra-Urban Migration

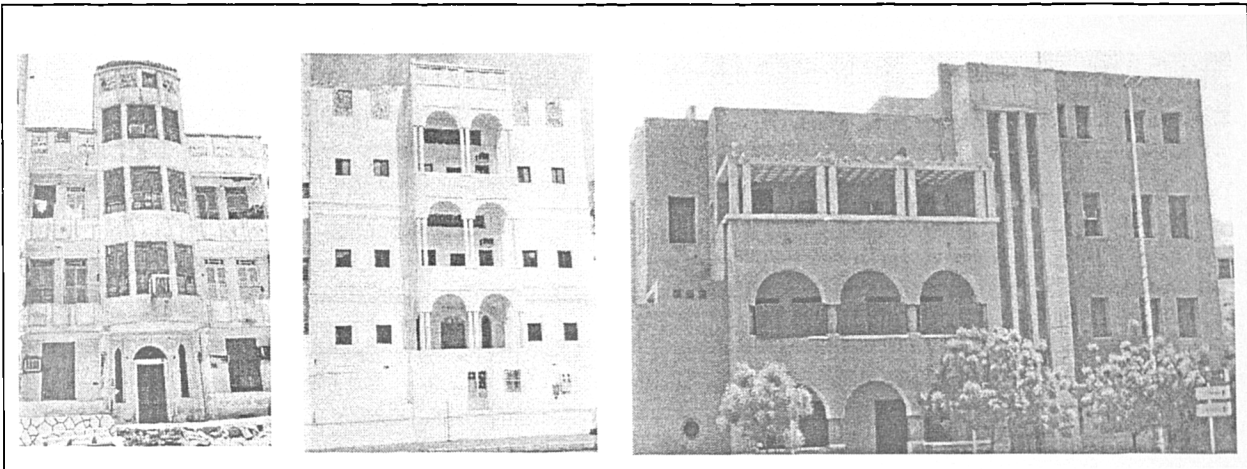


Fig. 2.8: A number of homes in Makkah constructed in the 1940's, 50's, and 60's contain traditional and modern images. Source: Visual survey 1995.

This hybrid form existed also in the two new cities in the eastern region, Dammam and Khobar, especially in those neighbourhoods which constituted the original settlements (Fig.2.9).²⁹ For example, Al-Said studied the growth of the original settlement in Dammam, Al-Dawaser neighbourhood.³⁰ He found that, between 1930 and 1970, this neighbourhood grew from 56 to 250 residential units 'mostly typical courtyard residential units as a result of contentious house subdivision and room addition'. (Fig. 2.10).³¹ The situation was similar in Khobar, where the house style was influenced by the prevailing traditional styles in the region. Even though several modern settlements appeared in these two cities due to Aramco programmes, people in the original settlements insisted on the traditional house form.³²

We can argue that people, at that time, were still influenced by their previous experience and were able to express this very easily since building regulations were not yet applied. This meant that people had maximum flexibility to decide the form of their houses. It is important to note here that most Saudi Arabians still had a strong connection with their social, physical and aesthetic traditions, all of which were strongly reflected in their home environment.

in the Saudi Cities: The Case of Hofuf', *Addarah*, Vol. 22, No. 1, pp. 179-214 (Arabic). Al-Harbi finds that the neighbourhoods that were constructed in Jeddah in the 1940s had traditional forms.

²⁹ In the 1920's, two small fishing settlements were established in Dammam and Khobar occupied by Al-Dawaser tribe. Al-Said, F. (1992) *Territorial Behaviour and the Built Environment. The Case of Arab-Muslim Towns, Saudi Arabia*, Unpublished PhD. Thesis, Glasgow, University of Glasgow, p. 217.

³⁰ The original settlement was described by MOMRA in 1981 thus: 'The dwelling unit and clusters were added onto or joined to one another according to needs of the inhabitants. Neither the open space nor circulation pattern were predetermined. They resulted from the accidental disposition of dwelling units and the definition of family territorial holdings.' (cited in *Ibid.*, p. 225).

³¹ *Ibid.*, p. 234.

³² In the 1960's Dammam municipality had power to apply Aramco's building regulations. However, this was applied only for the Aramco neighbourhoods. Al-Said said 'even though Dammam municipality has complete control over its streets and building regulations, the neighbourhood has only been affected by the creation of a major street ... in the north, and the winding of south street ...' (p. 234).

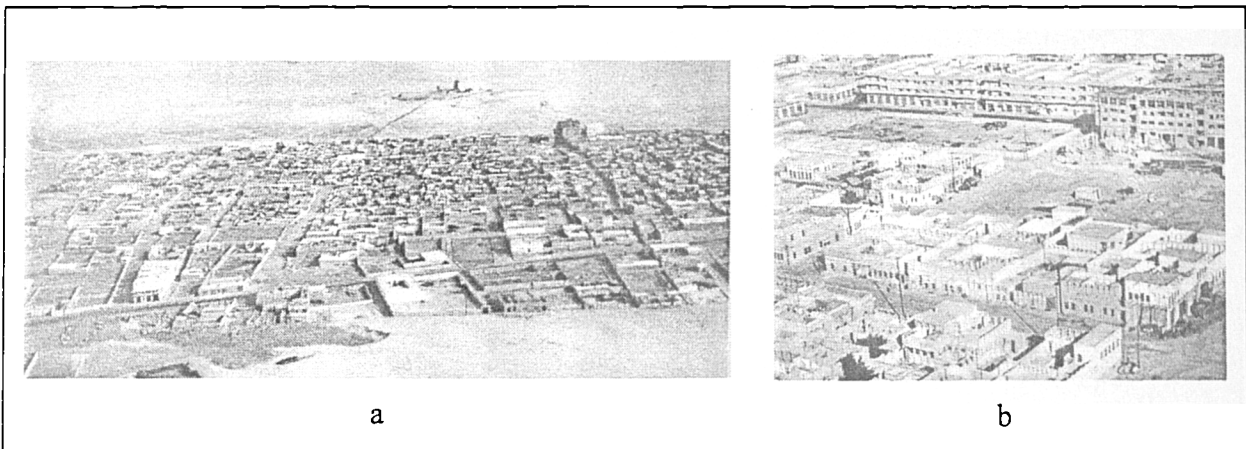


Fig.2.9: Dammmam between 1940s and 1960s. a) Dammmam (*Al-Dawaser* neighbourhood in the 1940's). b) Part of *Al-Dawaser* neighbourhood and the new development in 1960's (traditional area became denser and the traditional style continue). Source: Aramco.

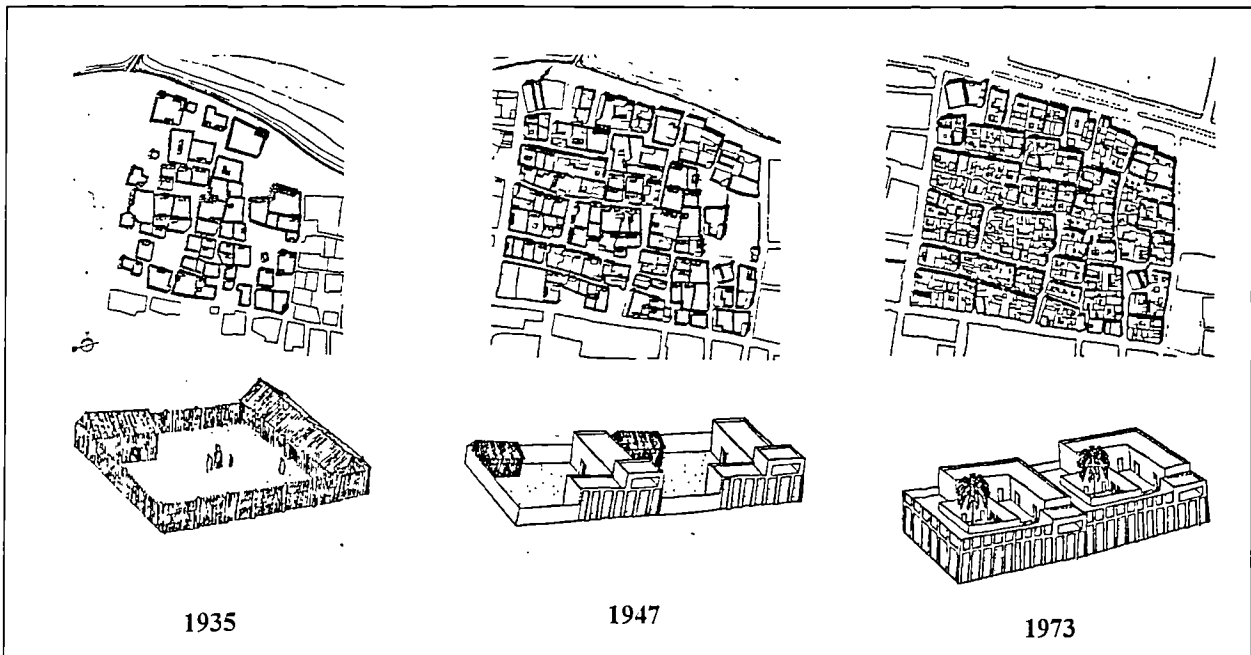


Fig. 2.10: Growth of *Al-Dawaser* neighbourhood in Dammmam (1935-73). Source: Developed from Al-Said, F. (1992), Op. Cit. pp. 228-235 and p. 246.

We propose here that this attitude towards the new images reflects the way in which they become important communication tools in the community. This raises important questions: Was it an internal mechanism developing to absorb the new? Did the localising of these new images by associating understandable social meanings form the main step towards internalising these images in the collective memory? If so, this internalisation of the new images was the first stage towards generating a new identity in the home environment.

Generally, two main lessons can be derived from the early changes in the home environment. On the one hand, there is the people's persistence in reserving their existing identity. This is reflected in their tendency to use certain physical elements in the home environment to communicate to each other. Replacing the old communicative elements by acceptable new ones, on the other hand, is an initial step in the acceptance of change in the home environment. This evaluation and selection of what is acceptable for reflecting social meanings is a very important step.

According to the resistance model, the above mentioned mechanism can be seen as process of absorbing and internalising the new selected forms until eventually they become part of the collective memory. As we noticed, the new forms had been filtered at the personal and cultural levels. New local meanings had been associated with the new forms and in some cases they mixed with the traditional form to produced a new local form. We can argue that what happened was a process of identification where people strive to find for themselves a place in the modern era of the Saudi home environment.

2.3 THE EXPERIENCE OF RAPID CHANGE (1960-PRESENT DAY)

In the previous discussion we tried to demonstrate how people interact with changes in their home environment. We noticed the attempts by local people to evaluate the new in order to localise some elements that are able to convey social meanings. The desire by people to alter their existing identity and to adapt to changes can be considered as one of the social mechanisms by which the society creates a balance between old and new. However, the modernisation process in Saudi Arabia continued to drive people from their original physical environment, and this created a new challenge for people who had already experienced some change and were ready to accept more.

A new situation occurred in the 1970s, manifested in the direct interference by the government in the home environment. Up until this point, the change experienced had a limited impact on the people's collective mental image. Generally we can attribute this situation to three factors, represented by the changes in the economic, educational, and communication systems in Saudi Arabia and their impact on the Saudi family.³³ Contemporary communication systems, coupled

³³ Abercrombie, T. (1966), *Op Cit.*, p. 14; Konash, F. (1980) *Op. Cit.*, p. 36; Al-Suba'ee, A. (1987), *Oil Discovery and its Impact on the Social Life of Eastern Province (1930-1960)*. (Arabic); Hamdan, S. S. (1990, *Op. Cit.*, p.209. The impact of economic development enabled the

with economic and technological development, changed most of the local characteristics of traditional societies.³⁴ The contemporary media in Saudi Arabia contributed in introducing a taste for modern housing to the Saudi family. The family, which was witnessing radical change in its economic status, was influenced by commercial advertisements.³⁵

The following discussion will try to clarify the characteristics of the new meanings that arose in the Saudi society. Explaining the reactions of people towards the changes in the home environment is of utmost concern because this will lead us to the process which people followed to maintain their cultural core. The changes took different forms and influenced every aspect of life. Almost every citizen in Saudi Arabia was influenced by government policies to replace traditional urban, economic, educational, and communication, etc., systems with modern ones.³⁶ These changes resonated throughout the home environment. How were personal and social identities modified to absorb the changes? What were the new meanings that occurred in the Saudi home environment? Why and how did they internalise their new identity in the home environment? These are some of questions this part will attempt to answer.

2.3.1 INSTITUTIONALISING THE NEW HOUSE IMAGE

The desire to create a modern country in a short period brought about total physical change to most Saudi cities.³⁷ As in the Middle Eastern countries, the process of modernisation in Saudi

government to subsidise people in Saudi Arabia to change their old houses and move to a new house type. Changes within the Saudi family structure took place very early. The contact with western concepts and lifestyle changed family structure, led to decreased interest in the extended 'kinship network' and accelerated the move to the nuclear family. The economic change was limited to a certain group of people, the middle class, at first, but then extended to include a wide range of people in the country, especially after the formal education programmes by the government in the second half of this century. Another important factor, which accelerated the change within traditional Saudi families, and increased the size of the middle class, was the formal education of women. This was prohibited in traditional society because there was a belief that the true role of a woman was in her home and it was a matter of pride that women stayed at home and only left on being transferred to their graves. (See Appendix II).

³⁴Morely, D. and Robin, K. (1995), Op. Cit., p. 11.

³⁵Commercial advertisements were mostly prohibited on the Saudi TV until the mid 1980's. However, newspapers were allowed to advertise commercial goods. Al-Khaldi, M. 'The Role of Shopping Mall and the Satellite Channels in Spreading the Consumption culture', *Al-Yaum* (Arabic newspaper), No. 8692. (2/4/1997).

³⁶ It seems that modernisation of the old Saudi cities was enthusiastic due to the desire to originate a unified national identity after the unification of the country in 1932. In this sense, melting the social and physical diversities of the local societies in Saudi Arabia into one unified society, was a very important goal for the government. In a heterogeneous society such as Saudi Arabia, the challenge of building a new society would lead to the emergence of a common Saudi model of citizenship. The term 'melting pot' was used by Babad and Benn to refer to the idea that 'differences between groups will disappear and society will be characterized by uniformity, equality, and the acceptance of one salient ideology' Babad, E., Birnbaum, M., & Benne, K. (1983) *The Social Self: Group Influences On Personal Identity*, London, Sage Publication, p. 28. The attempt to create a national identity in Saudi Arabia was associated with the application of unified economic, educational and urban policies. For example, King Faisal in 1966 explained the policies of the Kingdom. He said 'Our country is large and the population is scattered. In the next ten years we must build 10,000 miles of new roads. We must encourage industry, foreign trade, improve our agriculture, expand our communications facilities, build and staff more hospitals.' (cited in Abercrombie, T. (1966), Op Cit. p. 13).

³⁷This phenomenon is found in most Arab countries which tried to achieve modernity rapidly. Lerner mentioned this issue, they said: 'what happened in the West over centuries, some Middle Eastern now seek to accomplish in years' Lerner, D. (1958), Op. Cit., p. 47. This rapid change coupled with a lack of local design and construction firms to accelerate the gap between the traditional culture and the new introduced culture in the Saudi home environment. Abercrombie, S. (1975), Op. Cit., pp. 11-13; Kelly, K. & Schnadelbach, R. T. (1975) 'Dry Prospects in Saudi Arabia', *Landscape Architecture Magazine*, October, PP. 442-44; Konash, F. (1980), Op. Cit., P.2; Shirref, D. (1980), Op. Cit., p. 59. They clearly criticise the role of the western firms that worked in Saudi Arabia in the construction boom. These firms imposed the western physical image without any consideration of the local culture and image. Kelly and Schnadelbach (1975), mention that western designers in Saudi Arabia 'must consider whether they will give their wealthy, often inexperienced clients, the fashionably too-tall buildings and too-broad

Arabia 'is largely physical and heavily imitative of the western model's external departments and life styles'.³⁸ This is manifested in the unified governmental planning policies throughout the kingdom. However, prior to 1960, most of the attempts to regulate and control the growth of Saudi cities were partial and had limited impact.³⁹ By 1960, the first real building regulations were issued in the form of a circular by the Deputy Ministry of Interior for Municipalities.⁴⁰ This circular as Al-Said mentions, is

'the turning point in [the] Saudi Arabian contemporary built environment physical pattern and regulations. It require [d] planning of the land, subdivision with cement poles, obtaining an approval for this from the municipality, prohibited further land subdivision, controlled the height of the buildings, the square ratio of the built [are] require set backs ...'⁴¹

Still, these regulations took fifteen years until they regularly applied in all Saudi cities. This is clearly traced from the confirmation of the master plans that were initiated for all Saudi regions between 1968 and 1978.⁴² For example, the first master plan was executed by Doxiadis for Riyadh between 1968 and 1973.⁴³ This plan confirmed the setback regulations and applied planning system similar to what had been used in Khobar. It presented the grid as the most desirable pattern to be followed in the planning of Riyadh as well as in other cities of the country.

Despite the fact that the Saudi home environment witnessed building regulations from the beginning of the change, however, their impact on the home environment at first influenced neither house form nor the surrounding spaces. This was because the government had not yet

streets they often crave; or whether they will attempt to meet their *real* needs'. Shirref (1980), said that an 'architect who has used precast concrete in New York or Sydney will be tempted to use it in Riyadh.'

³⁸Jarbawi, Ali B. (1981 Op. Cit., p. 21.

³⁹ In an interview with Dr. Said Farsi (former mayor of Jeddah) in *Al-Madina* (Arabic Newspaper) No. 12529 (3-8-1997), he indicated that 'the real modern planing in Jeddah and other Saudi cities was started in 1958. This was with the co-operation with ... United Nations, which sent Dr Sayed Karim who later recommended to create the first office for city planning. The first resident expert in this office was Dr. Abdulrahman Makhloof between 1959 and 1963.'

⁴⁰ These regulations as follows: 1) Prior to the issuance of building permits, confirmation must be made of the existence of concrete posts. 2) Plots are to be sold according to their drawn and established boundaries, and should be strictly prohibited from further subdivision. 3) Height should not exceed eight metres, except with the approval of the concerned authority. 4) A built-up area generally should not exceed sixty percent of the land area, including attachments. 5) Front setbacks should be equal to one-fifth of the width of the road and should not exceed six metres. 6) Side and rear setbacks should not be less than two metres and projections should not be permitted within this area. 7) Building on plots of land specified for utilities and general services should only be permitted for the same purpose. 8) Approval of the plan does not mean confirmation of ownership limits [boundaries] and the municipality should check the legal deed on the actual site. 9) The owner should execute the whole approved plan on the land by putting concrete posts for each plot of land prior to its disposal either by selling or building. See Al-Hathloul, S. (1981), Op. Cit., pp. 205-6; Al-Said, F. (1992), Op. Cit., p. 257.

⁴¹ Al-Said, F. (1992), Op. Cit., pp. 258-9.

⁴² Al-Hathloul, S. & Anis-Ur-Rahmaan (1985), Op. Cit., pp. 208-11. This can be seen from the master plans that were launched in all regions in Saudi Arabia between 1968 and 1978. These master plans were as follows: Western Region by Robert Matthew, Johnson-Marshall & Partners in 1973; Central and Northern regions by Doxiadis and Ekistics, completed in 1975; Eastern Region by Candilis, Metra International Consultants (France) in 1975-76; Southern Region by Kenzo Tange & UTREC in 1977-78.

⁴³Al-Hathloul (1981) Op Cit., p. 174.

developed institutions to follow up these regulations.⁴⁴ However, with the establishment of the Ministry of Municipal and Rural Affairs⁴⁵ and Real Estate Development Fund (REDF) in 1975, the government became aware of the need to follow up the construction of private houses that had benefited from the loans.⁴⁶ However, the strict application of these regulations ‘institutionalised’ the villa as the only house type in Saudi Arabia.⁴⁷

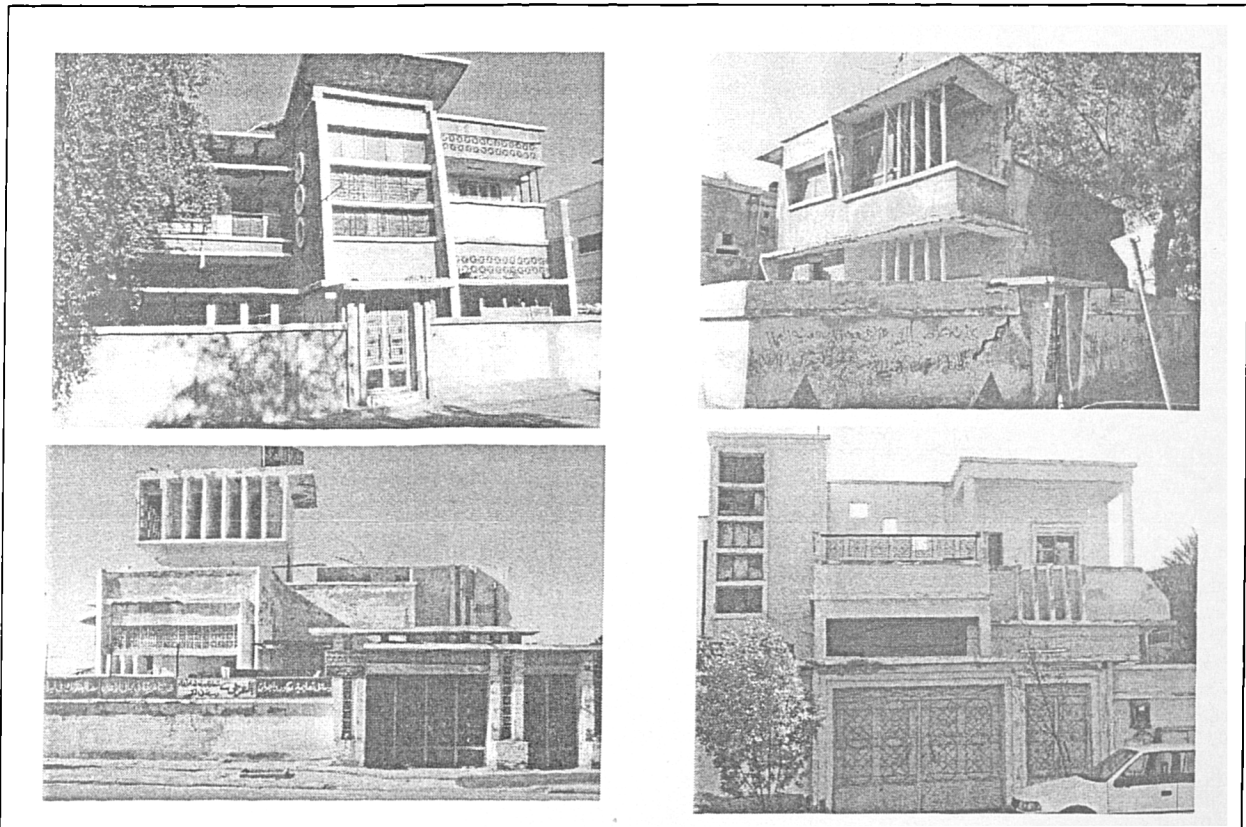


Fig.2.11: A number of villas constructed in 1950's by the Aramco Home Ownership Programme in Dammam. Source: Visual survey 1995.

It is important at this stage to consider the position of the people in relation to the rapid developments in the home environment. If we go back to the beginning of the period of change we can generalise that Aramco's developments in the Eastern region in general, and Aramco's home ownership programme in particular, may be considered the origin of the physical

⁴⁴ The first regulation, the Municipalities Statute, was issued by the government in 1937 under the Royal Order No. 8723, Rajab 1357 H. This order defined the role of the municipality in supervising the city, including construction. This statute was followed by another one called 'Roads and Building Statute' in 1941. Al-Hathloul, S. & Anis-Ur-Rahmaan (1985), Op. Cit., p. 206.

⁴⁵ Al-Said, F. (1992), Op. Cit., p. 257.

⁴⁶ Johns, R. (1977) 'Saudi Arabia', *Middle East Annual Review*, pp. 287-308; Sherriff, D. (1979), Op. Cit., p. 331; Al-Saati, A. J. (1989) 'Housing Finance and Residents' Satisfaction: the Case of real Estate Development Fund (REDF)', *Open House International*, Vol. 1, No. 2, P. 33. Also, Al-Soliman, T. M. (1991), Op. Cit., pp. 235-255. The Real Estate Development Fund (REDF), was established in 1975 to provide people with interest-free loans to build new houses. For example, between 1974 and 1987 more than 440,000 new homes were constructed in different Saudi cities as a result of government loans.

⁴⁷ Al-Hathloul, S. (1981), Op. Cit., p. 171.

contradiction that appeared later in the Saudi home environment (Fig. 2.11). The home style that was imposed by Aramco's programme in the 1950s continued to have a powerful impact until the 1970s, especially since the building regulations supported and encouraged it. This could be seen very clearly when owning a new detached house (villa) in Saudi Arabia became a social symbol of personal and social identity.⁴⁸

Modern building materials, especially concrete had a very strong image. We noticed in the previous section how people transformed their traditional facades with concrete gateways and cement plasters. Table 2.1 shows that the cement block became an important building material in the 1960's. The mud construction system which was common in the 1940's and 50's became less important. This indicates how deep the new images that were imported by Aramco influenced the Saudi home environment.

Table 2.1: Construction Materials Used by Aramco's Employees (1962 and 1968)

Type of material	1962	1968
Cement block	70.8	84.3
Mud brick	15.0	9.1
Barasti (palm leaves)	5.1	3.4
Tent	1.2	-
Furush (sea rocks)	0.8	1.7
Company portable	0.4	-
Other (mostly wood)	6.7	1.5

Source: Shea, T. W. (1972) 'Measuring the Changing Family Consumption Patterns of Aramco's Saudi Arab Employees -1962 and 1968' In D. Hopwood (ed) *The Arabian Peninsula: Society and Politics*, London, George Allen and Unwin Ltd, p. 249.

We can attribute the emergence of a symbolic role for the villa-type house to the appearance of a middle class in the 1950s. This class included a mixed group of people from all over the kingdom, but mostly employees of Aramco and the government. These people were characterised by their literacy and experience of material culture.⁴⁹ This class 'brought about

⁴⁸ Al-Saati, A. J. (1989), Op. Cit., pp. 33-41; Al-Hathloul, S. & Edadan, N. "Housing Stock Management Issues in the Kingdom of Saudi Arabia", *Housing Studies*, Vol. 7, No. 4. pp. 268-79; Gabbani, M. Al- (1984), Op. Cit., p. 275; Abu-Ghazzeh, T. (1997), Op. Cit., p. 237.

⁴⁹ Abercrombie (1967), talks about the contradictory faces of Riyadh in the 1960's. One of his Saudi friends said 'It's becoming a city of two different worlds'. Moreover, Abercrombie described his friend: 'Born in Riyadh and schooled in California, Soliman felt perfectly at home in both.' (p.5)

cultural contact between Saudi society and the Western world'⁵⁰, and tended to express its status by residing in the new dwelling type, the villa.⁵¹ Due to their contact with the other cultures, the members of the middle class were strongly influenced by the villa type housing that spread throughout the Middle East in the colonial era and which was associated with people at high levels of administration.⁵²

The villa represented modernity and the people's attitude was based on 'the stylistic association that "modern", as expressed in the modern villa style, is "good", by virtue of being modern'.⁵³ The villa's ability to present individual identity and originality through uniqueness of design may also have led to its rise in popularity since the conformist of the traditional society was beginning to be seen as 'backward' and individualism as 'modern' and therefore intrinsically 'good'. Jomah notes the sense of individualism that distinguished house design in the cities of Makkah, Jeddah, and Madina in the middle of this century. He considers these styles to be representative of a shift from a 'tradition-directed' to a 'self-directed' pattern of social organisation.⁵⁴ For him 'the concept of home was ... reduced from the traditional spiritual home to the modern physical and spatial one'.⁵⁵

Individuals always surround themselves with specific objects to communicate with other members of the community. The need to express a common meaning in the home environment encouraged the villa type to become the device which enabled the Saudi family to express its new social status. In that sense, the home can be seen as a dynamic dialectic process between individuals and their community.⁵⁶ While the Saudi family expressed its wealth and modernity by owning and living in a villa, they used the uniqueness of their villa form to represent their personalities.⁵⁷

2.3.2 TRANSFORMATION OF THE NEW HOUSE TYPE

The desperation of families to achieve social status by owning a new villa, coupled with the interference from the government, through building regulations, created an unstable situation in

⁵⁰ Fadan, Y.M. (1983) Op. Cit., p. 74.

⁵¹ The appearance of such a class, however, conflicted with the egalitarian characteristics of traditional society, where rich and poor live closed to each other. This increased the conflict between old and new and the issue of identity appeared as a social problem, especially with the acceleration towards change in the following years.

⁵² Boon, J. (1982), Op. Cit., p. 140.

⁵³ Ibid., p. 140.

⁵⁴ Jomah, H. S. (1992), Op. Cit., pp. 327-28.

⁵⁵ Jomah, H. S. (1992), p. 328.

⁵⁶ Altman, I. & Gauvain, M. (1981) 'A Cross-Cultural and Dialectic Analysis of Homes', In L. Liben et al. (Eds) Spatial Representation and Behavior A Cross the Life Span: Theory and Application, New York, Academic Press, pp. 283-320.

the home environment. This manifested itself in the people's insistence on communicating their cultural core with their surrounding objects, especially in their homes. Therefore, external and internal alterations were made by people in their villas. These alterations created a contradictory image in the contemporary Saudi home environment.⁵⁸

For example, most of the villa-type dwellings in the *Al-Malaz* project were transformed to meet the local social values. This means that when the new model was imposed on the people, they tried later to adapt it to express themselves and satisfy their socio-cultural values.⁵⁹ Al-Said studied the transformation that took place in *Al-Malaz* between 1960 and 1991 (Fig.2.12). He attributes the alterations in *Al-Malaz* villas to the existence of hidden rules amongst the residents, he named them as 'unwritten rules'. These rules stemmed from the 'traditional Arab-Muslim territory type'.⁶⁰

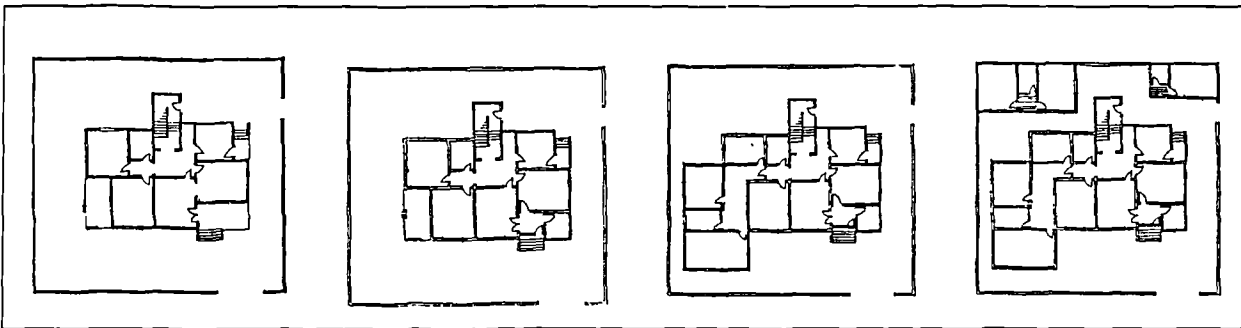


Fig.2.12: Transformation of *Al-Malaz* villa. Source: Al-Said, F. (1992), Op. Cit. p.267.

Bahammam finds that most of the Saudi families in Riyadh made alterations to their private houses to meet their social needs.⁶¹ This phenomenon created an external physical contradiction in the home environment because, in general, satisfaction of the cultural core is more important than the physical appearance of the house.⁶² This view is shared by Al-Hussayen when he

⁵⁷ Altman and Guavain (1981), state that 'the uniqueness and identity of a family is often reflected in the construction of individual homes'. They add that 'a family's identity is often symbolised by the number and variety of rooms in its home'. (p. 296)

⁵⁸ For example, to provide privacy for the home gardens, metal sheets were used by people to increase the height of their house fences. Also, most of balconies were closed because they cannot be used. The alterations include the form as well as the spatial organisation. Al-Hathloul, S. (1981); Bahammam, A. (1992) *An Exploration of the Residents' Modification: Private-Sector Low-Rise Contemporary Housing in Riyadh, Saudi Arabia*, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, Michigan, University of Michigan.

⁵⁹ Al-Hathloul, S. (1981), Op. Cit., p. 170

⁶⁰ Al-Said, F. (1992), Op. Cit., p. 266.

⁶¹ Bahammam states: 'The residents' modifications constitute a positive and not a negative reaction to their contemporary villa-type dwelling. The residents, with such alterations and addition, shape their built environment as they shape their life patterns. They arrange their residential setting to fulfil their needs and requirements; producing dwellings that fit their lifestyle –dwellings that have special meaning for their inhabitants. Furthermore, the resident's modifications are very clear indications that their needs have been ignored and are not satisfied. The residents, by carrying out these modifications, transfer their subjective reality (needs) into an objective reality (physical setting)'. (p. 327)

⁶² Abdulla Omar Khyat (well known Saudi writer) criticises the alterations that had been made by people in one of the housing project in Jeddah (apartments buildings). He states 'Some people closed the balcony; other used it for a satellite'. Also he mentions that some people used the balcony for animals such as goats and chickens. *Okaz* (Arabic newspaper), No. 11252 (7/6/1997).

attributes the alteration that people made to their houses to the ignorance of the role of the women in the society by the designers and decision makers.⁶³

It is clear, then, that the forces of change within a society cannot totally succeed in shifting its core values because they are strongly ingrained and have an innate ability to survive. Even the aggressive imposition of new values represented by sudden physical change is only partly accepted while the rest is resisted or adapted over time. The physical contradictions, which appear in the present Saudi home environment, can be attributed to the internal resistance by members of the society in order to preserve these values (Fig.2.13). It is necessary therefore to consider social dynamics as well as continuous core values as main factors in achieving an understanding of continuity and change of identity in the home environment.

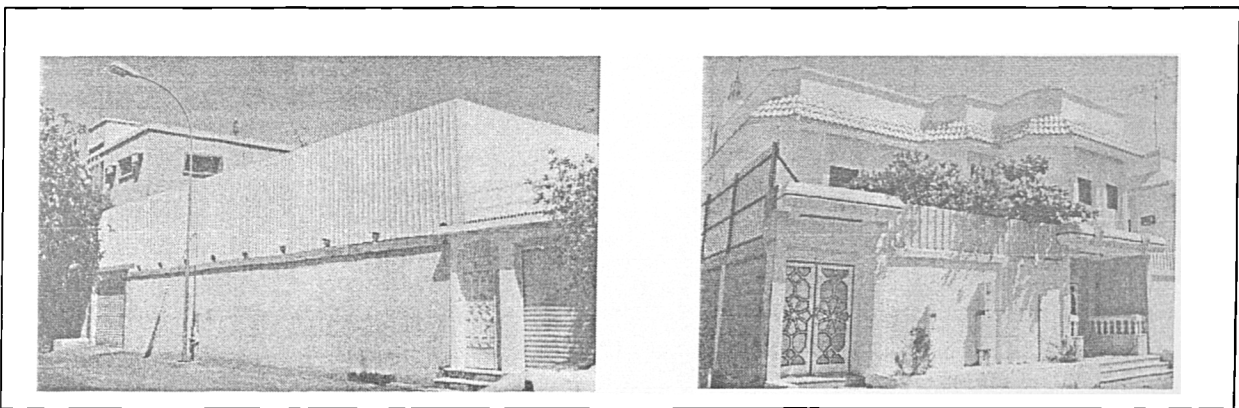


Fig.2.13: Two villas in Hofuf (people altered the facades of their houses to provide more privacy for the front setbacks by using metal sheets to increase the height of their house fences). Source: Visual survey 1995.

The aforementioned situation completely contrasts with what happened in the early period of change, when the external form was used as a communicative tool conveying the symbol of modernity. This can be attributed to the fact that people in the early period of change still lived in their traditional houses, which were physically and socially compatible with life patterns at that time. Even when people moved out, they carried with them the traditional spatial concepts and organisation and applied them in their new houses. The hybrid form that resulted from symbolising modernity was a vital step to absorbing change.⁶⁴ The situation was totally different for those citizens housed by Aramco and the government in villa type accommodation since they had no choice but to adopt new spatial concepts and organisations. The people's reaction to this

⁶³ Al-Hussayen, A. (1996), Op. Cit., p. 3.

⁶⁴ See Chapter VIII.

situation was a very drastic alteration of those houses, which were constructed in the 1960's, 1970's, and 1980's throughout Saudi Arabia.

2.3.3 PREVAILING TREND IN THE HOUSE DESIGN

Despite the fact that the form which was used as a symbol of modernity in the early period of change continued in the villa type, which they moved to later, people still made various alterations to the interior of their villas that contrasted with their outward appearance. This does not mean that individualism in the house form is no longer valid in the present home environment in Saudi Arabia, simply that if the external appearance is not compatible with socio-cultural needs, people will tend to satisfy social norms even if they create a contradictory external form.

We can link the above mentioned situation with the current prevailing trend in Saudi Arabia, which recalls the traditional external images in contemporary houses. By using traditional forms which have proved their suitability over many years, people express the desire to eliminate contradictions in the external appearance of their contemporary homes. In the researcher's opinion, this borrowing from the past will not solve the problem because the interior and exterior of the home should ideally express one entity, which is not so in this case.

Nowadays, re-circulating traditional images has become a phenomenon in most Saudi cities.⁶⁵ The attempts by government to revive the traditional architecture of Riyadh in the 1980s influenced most people of Arabia.⁶⁶ Therefore, many people are now enthusiastic about using local architecture as a resource for the design of their new homes. Furthermore, in some cities which have no deep roots, such as Dammam, the people from different regions of Saudi Arabia who have settled in the city recall images from their region of origin (Fig. 2.14). This reflects the desperation of designers to create a sense of continuity in the contemporary built environment in Saudi Arabia.

⁶⁵ Asharq Al-Awsat (Arabic newspaper), No. 5882; Al Riyadh (Arabic news paper), No.10370 (14/11/1996); Al-Yaum (Arabic newspaper), No. 8664 (5/3/1997). This phenomenon has spread throughout the whole kingdom. Local people in every region have tried to revive their own local architecture.

⁶⁶ Alangari (1996), the whole study talks about the attempts of reviving the architectural identity in the city of Riyadh. Most of the examples that had been used represented re-circulating the traditional forms as the only trend of reviving the architectural identity in the city.

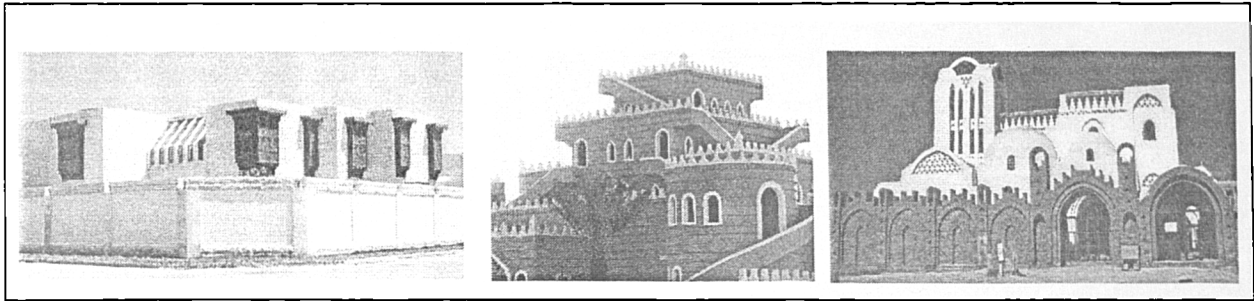


Fig. 2.14: Different images in the City of Dammam representing the re-use of traditional forms. Source: Visual survey 1995

The desire to recreate traditional images is discussed by Rybcynski. He states ‘This acute awareness of tradition is a modern phenomenon that reflects a desire for custom and routine in a world characterized by constant change and innovation’.⁶⁷ The impact of external forms on people’s image is a result of the strong connection between what the eye sees and the perceived environment. People tend to evaluate the visual quality of the surrounding environment according to their past experiences. In that sense, the sentimental reaction towards the traditional images in Saudi Arabia can be attributed to the sadness and emptiness felt by people at the loss of these images rather than an expression of their actual identity.

The direct use of the traditional image in present home design is criticised by many researchers because, as Al-Hathloul mentions we should look at the present from our own perspective because it is different from the past.⁶⁸ As a Saudi academician states: ‘our contemporary houses have no roots. What we have now is ornamentation in the facades rather than paying attention to the home interior and respecting the surrounding spaces’.⁶⁹

Despite the cultural and sentimental messages that these contemporary hybrid forms express, the use of these images, as we said in the beginning, may reveal a sense of visual continuity, but it will not reflect the actual people’s identity. Compared to the early hybrid form in the beginning of the period of change, which was congruent with the internal social mechanism, the contemporary hybrid form is considered a kind of architectural fashion not linked with internal social action; rather it expresses the desire by architects to communicate visual cultural meanings.

⁶⁷ Rybczynski, W. (1986) *Home A Short History of an Idea*, Middlesex, Penguin Books Ltd., p. 9.

⁶⁸ Al-Hathloul, S. (1992) “Authentication of Modern Architecture”, *Al-Muhandis*, Vol. 5, No. 2, pp. 46-7 (1412 H) (Arabic).

⁶⁹ *Al-Riyadh* (Arabic news papers), No. 10412 (26/12/1996). The dialogue was with Dr. Majdi Hariri.

In fact, identity is an issue which has no clear boundaries and can change from time to time.⁷⁰ If we consider that the traditional form reflects our roots, this does not mean that it expresses our own identity. Identity in the contemporary Saudi home environment should reflect the Saudi society with its contemporary morals and values. It is necessary for us to understand ourselves and the forces at work within our society and to respect them rather than impose ready made forms and convince ourselves of their validity to represent our identity. In this sense, our identity should be inspired from within, and should proceed from our own understanding out to the whole surrounding world, from our interaction with all aspects of everyday life.

Meaning in the home environment emerges from the interaction between people and physical objects. However, the social requirements change over time, which means that the associated physical objects will also change, or at least the meaning of the physical form will change. For example, while the traditional house consisted of a limited number of multi-purpose rooms, the new economic power of the contemporary Saudi family increased demand for larger numbers of rooms by family members, which naturally increased the whole house.⁷¹ Furthermore, the increase in number of women working outside the home, which followed the spread of education, forced many families to employ a house maid and/or nanny. This new situation developed eventually to become another tool to express social status. Also, the meaning of the kitchen changed from a dirty place to a place associated with the main living spaces that may be exposed to visitors.⁷²

The aforementioned changes in the home either in the external or the internal domains reflect how things may change in society. People tend to experience new things; this will pave the way to internalise a new identity in the home environment. Unless there are continuous shared values which have the ability to control the relationships in a society and regulate the changes, society will fall into a chaos.

⁷⁰ See Chapter III and IV.

⁷¹ Doxiadis Associates (1977) 'Formulating a Housing Program for Saudi Arabia', *EKISTICS*, Vol. 44, No. 261, pp. 105-8.

⁷² On several occasions the researcher of this study was involved in designing some houses in Hofuf, Mubarraz, Dhahran, Dammam, and Khobar. In 1993, the owner of a house in *Addana* neighbourhood in the city of Dhahran argued with the researcher about the kitchen in his new house. He said 'I will spend a lot of money in the kitchen, therefore, I want it to be exposed to visitors.' To meet the desire of the owner, the design of the house was developed by associating the kitchen with the living room. This tendency is common amongst Saudi people currently and reflects the new attitude towards domestic space and the meanings that may be associated with them in the future (See Chapter IX).

2.5 SUMMARY

Identity, similar to other social phenomena, may change over time, which means that each generation will express its identity from its own perspective. This is not to say that society will shift from one discrete identity to another, but people will interact with new technological inventions and foreign ideas etc. Lifestyle, hence, may change and new meanings for useful things will be created. In many cases the strands of past experience will influence people's evaluation of the new things, thus enabling them to choose those new things that provide them with a sense of continuity. According to the pressure that people may be under, all or part of the old identity may continue. In that sense, in spite of this long chain of physical and social change, we cannot say that the old identity of the local societies in Saudi Arabia has completely disappeared.

In this chapter, we have tried to examine the reasons which have led to the search for identity in the contemporary Saudi home environment. One of the main reasons uncovered was the confusion between the terms modernisation and westernisation in Saudi society. This phenomenon is common in many non-western societies today. However, in Saudi Arabia the situation has an added dimension because of the deeply held religious belief of its society. The resistance which the people have shown to social change reveals that even where there is a total physical change, people will keep up the vital traditions that maintain continuity for society, which we have termed 'cultural core'.

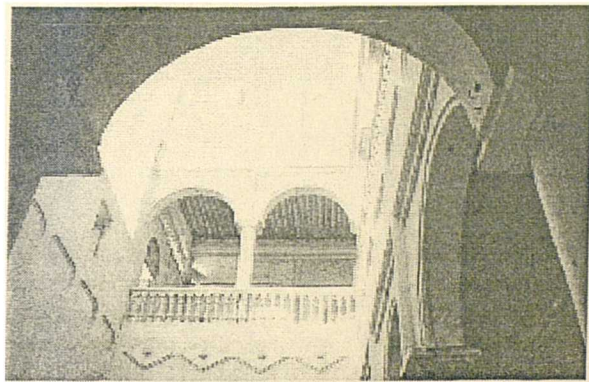
The link between tradition and the cultural core has emerged from the religious and social connotations of the traditions. The cultural core, as we mentioned previously, has the ability to survive over time. Its existence is essential to regulate the non-verbal communication system in any society. We proposed that in the early period of change, cultural core played a vital role in developing an internal social mechanism to absorb change. Despite the hybrid form that emerged due to this mechanism, a high sense of continuity may have existed in the home environment at that time. In the later period of rapid change, the cultural core also continued to have a role. This was manifested in the wide drastic alterations to the villa type housing. Even though these alterations contradicted the external appearance of the villa, people made changes in their houses to meet their religious and social values. This showed the importance of

respecting the cultural core, which exists in people's minds and begins its organising and communicating role when people start to live in the new houses.

One important issue regarding identity should be mentioned, that identity is not something given to society, but something that should emerge from the interaction between individuals and groups in society and between the whole society and the surrounding physical objects. Therefore, in order to really understand the issue of identity, we should first explore the meaning of identity to people and what their mechanisms are for expressing it in the built environment, rather than impose certain forms on them and try to convince them about their validity as a reference for their identity. This study sees the prevailing trend in Saudi Arabia for borrowing from the past as a kind of architectural fashion developed and enhanced by architects and not as a decision made by the people.

Study of the mechanisms that enable people to express their personalities and develop readable codes in the community requires from us a clear understanding of the relationship between physical change and social dynamism. It is necessary to mention here that every physical object may change over time according to the change in its use by people. In that sense, new meanings may be attached to this object. Change in the meaning of the object over time, thus, may reveal how societies change and adapt to new circumstances. This is what we assume happened to the villa type housing. At first, owning a villa became a social symbol reflecting the status of the family. Later, when large number of people moved to villas, owning a villa lost its role as a social symbol. A new social symbol will take or has already taken its place in the society. This could be manifested in the type of building materials used, furniture, etc.

In general, people tend to express themselves in their built environment, which means that, in addition to the explicit constraints such as building regulations, the spatial relationships and the physical forms will respond to the implicit, socio-cultural constraints. People tend to identify themselves by using their surrounding objects. Moreover, this process of identification can take place both consciously and unconsciously. The process will absorb imported physical forms either by giving them a specific meaning compatible with core values or will modify these forms to meet the existing meanings.



Courtyard in Hofuf's traditional house

CHAPTER III

IDENTITY AND HOME: THEORITICAL PERSPECTIVE

CONTENTS

- 3.1 Prologue
- 3.2 The Meaning of Identity: Conceptual Framework
 - 3.2.1 The Concept of Physical Object
 - 3.2.2 The Concept of Values
 - 3.2.2.1 Mechanisms of Values
 - 3.2.2.2 Levels of Values
 - 3.2.2.3 Values and Continuity of Identity
 - 3.2.3 The Concept of Collective Memory
- 3.3 Home and Identity
 - 3.3.1 The Concept of Home
 - 3.3.2 Home as an Expression of Identity
 - 3.3.2.1 Home as an Individual and Collective Medium
 - 3.3.2.2 Home as a Physical and Social Image
 - 3.3.2.3 Home, Use, and Identity
- 3.4 Summary

3

IDENTITY AND HOME: THEORITICAL PERSPECTIVE

3.1 PROLOGUE

In the previous two chapters we discussed the concept of resistance in the Saudi home environment. We concluded that identity is a dynamic phenomenon. It reflects the time and place and is associated with economic and technological situations. Our argument is that there is always tension between new and old in the Saudi home environment. This tension is what makes people resist innovations and modify them to meet local needs. We should realise house designs in any new area are, as Tipple states 'only the beginning of an on-going development process rather than a blueprint for once-for-all development'.¹ In the Saudi home environment we noted that there is an on-going process of resistance initiated by people to localise the new forms.

This thesis aims to study and understand how and why people tend to identify themselves in their home environment. What are the mechanisms they used to attain or renew their identities? For this purpose, we need to explore two main concepts, identity and home. This chapter aims to discuss identity and home from different perspectives.

Identity is a wide concept; it is difficult to define it in a few words. However, this study looks at the implication of identity for the house form in the city of Hofuf. In this context, it is necessary to develop a comprehensive theoretical understanding for those ideas that relate to both identity and home. For example, identity can be seen as constant continuity of the physical characteristics of the home environment or it may mean a continuity of the collective memory of any group of people. Scrutinising those related concepts will provide us with a wide view of identity and home and how they overlap.

This chapter is divided into two main sections. The first section deals with the concept of identity, its physical, social, and temporal aspects. In the second section, home as a physical and social concept has been elaborated. The main purpose here is to define the meaning of home and how it can express its users' identity.

3.2 THE MEANING OF IDENTITY: CONCEPTUAL FRAMEWORK

‘Since identity consists of concepts, rather than qualities ... it is always to some extent arbitrary, challengeable, and changeable - when people change their minds. While identity does not require agreement, it does require a certain conjuncture or coincidence between what a person claims for himself and where others place him.’²

Sense of identity is one of the fundamental human needs.³ Fromm classified human needs into five main categories: relatedness, transcendence, rootedness, sense of identity, and the need for a frame of orientation and devotion. He added that a sense of identification emerges from the needs of human existence. In this sense, individuals and groups will strive to identify themselves to and with other individuals and groups.⁴

In the search for the meaning of identity, it is necessary to discuss the different possible meanings that are related to our study. The American Heritage Dictionary (1991) lists three definitions for the term ‘identity’. The first is that identity is seen as a ‘collective aspect of the set of characteristics by which a thing is definitively recognizable or known’. The second definition sees identity as a ‘set of behavioural or personal characteristics by which an individual is recognizable as a member of a group’. And finally, the third defines identity as a ‘quality or condition of being the same as something else’.

Being the same as something implies being different from something else. This leads us to what Benswessi calls ‘identity of’ and ‘identity with’. He states that ‘identity of’ is ‘the persistent sameness within oneself ... a persistent sameness which allows a thing to be differentiated from others’.⁵ Stone argues that to have identity similar to a specific group means that you are different from members of other groups. He states that ‘identity is intrinsically associated with all the joining and departure of social life. To have an identity is to join with some and depart from others, to enter and leave social relations at once’.⁶ ‘Identity with’ refers to those shared characteristics that create the sameness, therefore ‘by

¹ Tipple, A. G. (1998) ‘User-Initiated Extensions as the Way Forward for Low Cost Housing Estates’, Paper presented in the 15th Inter-Schools Conference on Development (29 - 31 March), Cardiff, University of Wales.

² Klapp, O. (1969), Op. Cit., p. 6.

³ Human need can be defined, as in Doyal and Gough, as ‘a *motivational force* instigated by a state of disequilibrium or tension set up in an organism because of a particular lack’. Doyal, L. & Gough, I. (1991) *A Theory of Human Need*, London, Macmillan, p. 35.

⁴ Fromm, E. (1955) *The Sane Society*, New York, Holt, Rinehart and Winston. Also, Rutledge summarises several studies about human needs. He illustrates the Robert Ardrey, Abraham Maslow, Alexander Leighton, Henry Murray, and Peggy Peterson theories. The need for identity was a common need in these studies, which indicates that searching for identity is innate in human beings. Rutledge, A. (1985) *A visual Approach to Park Design*, New York, A Wiley – Interscience Publication, pp. 59-67. Chadirji lists three basic needs for human beings including, utilitarian, symbolic, and aesthetic needs. The need for identity is considered part of the symbolic need. Chadirji, R. (1995) ‘Criticising the Architectural Trends in the Eastern Arabic World’, Paper presented in the workshop of ‘Theory and Practice Conflict in the Traditional Architecture’, ((16-18 January), Bahrain (Arabic). Also, see Chadirji, R. (1995) *Dialogue on the Structure of Art and Architecture*, London, Riad El-Rayyes, p. 98. (Arabic).

⁵ Benswessi, (1987), Op. Cit., p. 18.

⁶ Cited in Jones, R. K. (1978) ‘Paradigm Shifts and Identity Theory: Alternation as a Form of Identity Management’, In Hans Mol (Ed) *Identity and Religion: International, Cross-cultural Approaches*, London, SAGE Publication Ltd, pp. 59-82.

saying who we are, we are also striving to express what we are, what we believe and what we desire'.⁷

Brittan (1973) stresses the importance of behavioural and spatial characteristics in the creation of identity. He states 'the notion of identity is not just ... a labelling process, but also ... as an *announcement* on the part of the individual about his interpersonal and structural location, his situation'.⁸ Therefore, we need to understand 'identity of' and 'identity with' in the context of the first two definitions, where identity is defined in its physical and social contexts.

Several theoretical and philosophical writings have elaborated the term 'identity'. Most of these mentioned the difficulties of providing one complete definition for the notion 'identity' due to its many shades of meaning. However, our purpose in this section is not to review this literature but to explore it in order to enable us to consolidate the hypothetical model, which we introduced in the introduction of this study. The approach we follow in this theoretical discussion depends on constructing a conceptual framework able to bind the main ideas and perspectives that elaborate the meaning of identity.

The following discussion will investigate three concepts related to and overlapping with identity. These ideas are: bodily or physical object, values, and collective memory. It is important to mention that we cannot understand the concept of identity by exploring these concepts individually. Rather it is necessary to grasp the overlapping ties between them. In general, the purpose of this discussion is to dismantle the concept of identity into its main components to understand how it works in the home environment.

3.2.1 THE CONCEPT OF PHYSICAL OBJECT

'The object we make is within a system ... connects us to a larger world. Our product is, in that way, a social affirmation. By the use of style, a fashion, a method, a technical convention, or a symbolic meaning we identify ourselves as part of a social group ... The artefact, apart from its practical purpose, has the power to express cultural ties and maintain old customs ... The thematic system is our way to socialise, not by bodily movement or words, but through things.'⁹

The concept of body is parallel to the concept of identity. This view emerged because of the importance of bodily continuity to perform the continuity of identity. However, human

⁷Weeks, J. (1990) 'The Value of Difference', In Jonathan Rutherford (Ed) *Identity: Community, Culture, Difference*, London, Lawrence & Wishart, pp. 88-100.

⁸Cited in Jones, R. K. (1978), *Op. Cit.*, p. 64.

⁹Habraken, N. J. (1985), *Op. Cit.*, p. 79.

beings tend to use things and give them certain meanings to express their image, preference, etc.¹⁰ In some literature, home is viewed as the most important object, after the human body, by which people represent personal identity. Dovey supports this view when he states 'the house is commonly experienced as a symbolic body'.¹¹ This view is shared by Despres when she states 'after the body itself, home is seen as the most powerful extension of the psyche'.¹²

What is important for this study is the house form. If we see the house as a physical object, therefore, what is the relationship between the form and the physical object? Read, for example, defines the form as 'the shape imparted to an artefact by human intention and action.'¹³ Swinburne says that a physical object constitutes substance and properties. This view goes back to Aristotle, who distinguished between substances and properties. For Aristotle, the substances are the 'individual things', e.g., one physical object, while the properties 'universal', which can be possessed by many different physical objects. In this sense, the form of physical object emerges from the forms that are given to its properties or what Swinburne named 'matter'.¹⁴

This concept enables us to see physical objects from two perspectives. First, any physical object is an independent entity and it has its own identity. Second, groups of individual objects may create one 'unitary object'.¹⁵ Both views see the mechanism of creating the form of physical object from two different scales. This mechanism is what Hirsch calls 'bodily unity', which is

'... rooted in our primitive, pre-conventional experience of unity. And it seems that only our innate constitution can plausibly account for the specific and complicated conditions that a portion of the world has to satisfy if it is to be experienced primitively as a unit.'¹⁶

Heidegger, for example, introduced the term 'structural unity'. For him identity can be understood as a structural unity, which consists of certain coherent aspects that seek

¹⁰ For example, Read discusses how utilitarian objects became sacred ones. Read, H. (1966) 'The Origin of Form in Art' In Gyorgy Kepes (ed) *The Man Made Object*, New York, George Braziller, pp. 30-49.

¹¹ Dovey, K.(1985) 'Home and Homelessness', In I. Altman and C. M. Werner (Eds) *Home Environment* New York, Plenum Press, pp. 33-64. He adds that 'There is evidence that this kind of symbolism, whereby the meaning of body, house, and world are gathered in the form of the house is widespread in the indigenous world'.

¹² Despres, C. (1991) 'The Meaning of Home: Literature Review and Directions for Future Research and Theoretical Development', *The Journal of Architectural and Planning Research*, Vol. 8, No. 2 (Summer), pp. 96-115.

¹³ Read, H. (1966), Op. Cit., p. 30.

¹⁴ Swinburne, R. (1984) 'Personal Identity: The Dualist Theory', In Sydney Shoemaker and Richard Swinburne, *Personal Identity*, Oxford, Basil Blackwell, pp. 1-66.

¹⁵ For example, a table is one 'unitary object' consisting of several individual objects. Table in this sense, has its own 'implicit frame' by which we are able to define the table whatever design it takes. See Hirsch, E. (1982) *The Concept of Identity* Oxford, Oxford University Press.

¹⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 262.

unification.¹⁷ Hirsch supported the concept of structural unity by introducing the concept of ‘unitary object’, where the object consisting of several parts seeks to synthesise and unify to produce one unitary object. He developed two main criteria to understand unity. The first is the ‘spatial connectedness’, where the parts of an object can be connected continuously, which maintains its spatial connectedness. Second is ‘dynamic cohesiveness’, where the parts of an object tend to remain together under various pressures to maintain the object’s cohesiveness.¹⁸

In this situation, the concept of bodily unity highlights one of the innate mechanisms that enable human beings to identify things. This view, thus, sees that people tend to differentiate between things and look at them as synthesised compositions or as ‘unitary objects’. This means that the process of synthesising things is an innate biological mechanism. Its functions are to enable human beings to identify things by relating them to each other and give them specific unitary meaning. This can be linked to what Freud had explained about the process that people will pass through to identify objects in their life stages. He said:

‘First, identification is the original form of emotional tie with an object; secondly, in a regressive way it becomes a substitute for a libidinal object-tie, as it were by means of introjection of the object into ego; and thirdly it may arise with any new perception of a common quality shared with some other person who is not an object of the sexual instinct. The more important this common quality is, the more successful may this partial identification become, and it may thus represent the beginning of a new tie.’¹⁹

We see physical objects as forms. Forms, in this sense, are responsible for conveying the meanings of objects. The implicit frame which is usually part of our ability to see objects as units enables us to identify the instrumental or the utilitarian meanings of any objects such as a table, a chair, etc. However, there are also the associational or the cultural meanings which objects may also convey. The later meanings have developed over time and have emerged from the long relationship between people and used objects. This view is supported by Csikszentmihalyi and Rochberg-Halton when they state that:

‘Humans display the intriguing characteristic of making and using objects. The things with which people interact are not simply tools for survival, or for making survival easier and more comfortable. Things embody goals, make skills manifest, and shape the identities of their users. Man is not only *homo sapiens* or *homo ludens*, he is also *homo faber*, the maker and user of objects, his self to a larger extent a

¹⁷Heidegger, M. (1960) ‘The Principle of Identity’, In Essays in Metaphysics: Identity and Difference, New York, Wisdom Library.

¹⁸Hirsch, E. (1982), Op. Cit., pp. 236-263.

¹⁹Cited in Bloom, (1990), Op. Cit., p. 28.

reflection of things with which he interacts. Thus objects also make and use their makers and users.²⁰

Sir Philip Dowson explains the importance of social meaning of architectural form. He states 'Architecture is a fabric that clothes society. It should be human and reassuring, and, as when we dress ourselves up, it should be meaningful ... it should communicate.'²¹ Habraken goes further and indicates that the objects are usually used by people as devices to create collective meanings. He states:

'The form binds people and defines a social circle simply by being there; what is said about it only tells us something about the relation between people and the form. And about their relations through the form ... the form will exist as long as people agree to have it. It is the role of the form to connect, in its peculiar way, people with diverse opinions, quite apart from whatever other functions it must perform and messages it is expected to carry. In this way we live with our forms and through our forms as naturally as we live with one another.'²²

Two problems appear from depending on the object only to understand the meaning of identity. The first problem is that the meaning of a physical object depends on how people see and evaluate objects. However, this leads us to another idea, which is the use of objects. Use in this sense plays an important role in generating meaning for physical objects. However, due to changes in lifestyle, the use of objects may change, which leads to change in the meaning of objects.

The second problem is the nature of a physical object, because it consists of parts and these parts may change or at least the relationships between these parts may change, so that the meaning of object may change. To overcome this problem, Swinburne argues that what makes the 'substance' similar to the previous one is the 'matter' that makes up the substance. However, he admits that despite gradual replacement of the matter over time, the substance will remain similar to the previous one.²³ This opinion holds that an object may maintain its identity despite the replacement of some of its constituents.

For example, home as one physical entity can be changed due to changes in lifestyle. Consequently, the elements that constitute home will suffer some changes. The transformations that may occur to parts of a dwelling may produce a completely different

²⁰Csikszentmihalyi, M. & Rochberg-Halton, E. (1981) *The Meaning of Things: Domestic System and the Self* Cambridge, Cambridge University Press, p. 1.

²¹Cited in Benswessi, A.H. (1987) *A Study of the Concept of Identity: Towards an Architecture as a Harmonious Identifiable Fabric*, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, University of Pennsylvania, USA, p. 72

²²Habraken, N. J. (1985) , Op. Cit., p.83.

²³Swinburne, R. (1984), Op. Cit., p.5

dwelling, in the physical sense. In this case, we cannot say that the original dwelling completely disappears because some of the original meanings continue in the transformed one. This can be linked to what Swinburne explained when he said that ‘appearance changed gradually with time’. The process of transformation needs continuous observation, and when we are not observing the transformed object, we think that sudden changes have occurred in it.²⁴

Our attempt to understand the role of physical objects in creating a sense of identity is one step in a series which should be taken to understand identity in general and identity in the home environment in particular. As we have noticed, exploring the concept of identity from the physical perspective led us to ignore many important social and temporal aspects where the meaning of an object is gradually developed and continuously modified.

3.2.2 THE CONCEPT OF VALUES

‘Identity [is] ... an integral aspect of a sociology of religion that insists on the necessity of taking into account the various dimensions of man’s personality.’²⁵

Values have an essential role in the construction of individual and group identities. They motivate individuals; constrain groups; and reinforce and reform society and culture.²⁶ It is necessary to understand the meaning of values and how they construct individual and group identities. Values, as Sorokin mentions, stand for ‘the qualities of being of use, being desired, being looked upon as good.’²⁷ They also include the whole of human actions. Whitehead (1938) shares this view when he states ‘our experience is a value-experience’.²⁸ Swinburne also had said ‘A person’s character is his way of viewing the world and his dispositions to kinds of action. That is, it consists of his most general beliefs and purposes.’²⁹ For him, belief will change only if there is new evidence, while purposes can change overnight.³⁰

²⁴Ibid., pp. 50-51.

²⁵Gopalan, S. (1978) ‘Identity-Theory Against the Backdrop of the Hindu Concept of Dharma: A Socio-Philosophical Interpretation’, In Hans Mol (Ed) *Identity and Religion: International, Cross-Cultural Approaches*, London, SAGE Publication Ltd., pp. 119-132.

²⁶For example, in a study made by William Christian on a valley in northern Spain, he found that religious places have an important role in creation the sense of identity and guide people to form their community. Mol, Hans (Ed) (1978, a) *Identity and Religion: International, Cross-Cultural Approaches*, London, SAGE Publication Ltd., p. Also, Lewins (1978), found in his research of Italian and Ukrainian communities in Australia that religious beliefs had a direct influence on ethnic identity and group identity. Lewins, F. W. (1978) ‘Religion and Ethnic Identity’, In Hans Mol (Ed) *Identity and Religion: International, Cross-Cultural Approaches*, London, SAGE Publication Ltd, pp. 19-38.

²⁷Cited in Cowell, F. R. (1970) *Values in Human Society* USA, An Extending Horizons Book, pp. 44-5.

²⁸Ibid., p. 45.

²⁹Swinburne, R. (1984), *Op. Cit.*, p. 63.

³⁰Ibid., pp. 63-4.

Shaker discusses a number of definitions for what she calls 'values premises'. Values, for her, refer to 'the place of human beings in the scheme of things' and they reflect 'the temporal direction and significance of human history'. They also imply 'beliefs about the meaning of life' and 'conceptions of moral worth'. By them human beings can define 'good and bad'.³¹

Values then, as a set of concepts, work together to enable human beings to evaluate and control their actions. They help people to differentiate between things and provide them with the ability to say that this is suitable for us and this is not. In this sense, values constitute rules and concepts to generate meanings and mechanisms to mobilise these meanings. Duncan for example, explains that values in housing are 'not autonomous or mysterious in their origin but are rooted in individual consciousness and action'.³² The purpose of understanding and studying people's values is to enable us to understand how people identify themselves as individuals and as groups in their home environment. Lawrence explains how values work as a communication system. He states 'communication between different groups of people clarifies one or more systems of domestic customs and values in a society at precise points in time'. He adds that 'values, as well as domestic roles, routines and rituals, are not simply expressed by individuals: they are acquired, nurtured, transmitted, reinforced, or modified by interpersonal communication'.³³ This interpersonal communication will provide the balance between individuals and social structure.

3.2.2.1 Mechanisms of Values

In this study we will use Mol's four mechanisms. These mechanisms include objectification, commitment, ritual and belief systems.³⁴ They preserve and generate identity over time by internalising the new identity. This internalisation can be sudden or gradual; also it may be directed to groups or to individuals.

³¹ Shaker, F. (1972) *Modernization of the Developing Nations: The Case of Saudi Arabia*, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, Purdue University, pp. 196-7.

³² Duncan, J. (1981) *Housing and Identity Cross-Cultural Perspectives* London, Croom Helm Ltd., p. 1.

³³ Lawrence, R. (1991) 'The Meaning and Use of Home', *The Journal of Architecture and Planning Research*, Vol. 8, No. 2, (Summer), pp. 91-95.

³⁴ Mol, (1978), OP. Cit., p. 7

Objectification

Mol defined the notion of 'objectification' as 'the tendency to sum up the variegated elements of mundane existence in a transcendental frame of reference whereby they can appear more orderly, more consistent and more timeless'.³⁵ Gopalan explains the term objectification as a visualisation mechanism of the way in which ideals are conceived.³⁶ The process of objectification depends on man's ability for abstract thinking and using symbols. Moreover, we can argue here that the purpose of objectification is to 'project a conception of reality'. It is 'a system of values or a meaning structure in a transcendental realm'.³⁷

Commitment

This mechanism is strongly related to the 'priority-setting'. It consists of two parts. The first is the action or the investment of time, energy, or emotion.³⁸ The second is the valuation of the investment. To a group or social identity, commitment is a prerequisite for its functioning.³⁹

In this sense, if we understand the objectification as a mechanism of generating meanings, commitment should be seen as a way by which people mobilise their collective meanings. Therefore, the degree of commitment can be seen as the sum of identity attributed to a given belief system. In other words, identity can be seen as consisting of a specific system and the commitment is the mechanism that the individual and group have for protecting the belief system by mobilising it over time.

Ritual⁴⁰

For Mol rituals consolidate identity. He states that:

'Ritual maximises order, reinforces the place of the individual in his society and strengthens the bonds of a society vis-à-vis the individual. Through repetitive, emotion-evoking action, social cohesion and personality integration are reinforced - at the same time that aggressive or socially destructive actions are articulated, dramatized and curbed.'⁴¹

Durkheim (1965) states that 'through [ritual] the group periodically renews the sentiment

³⁵Mol, H. (1976) *Identity and Sacred*, Oxford, Basil Blackwell, pp. 264-65

³⁶Gopalan, S. (1978), OP. Cit., p. 123.

³⁷Manju & Sinha, B. (1978) 'Ways of Yoga and the Mechanisms of Sacralisation', In Hans Mol (Ed) *Identity and Religion: International, Cross-Cultural Approaches*, London, SAGE Publication Ltd, pp. 133-150.

³⁸Hardin, B. & Kehrer, G. (1978) 'Identity and Commitment', In Hans Mol (Ed) *Identity and Religion: International, Cross-Cultural Approaches*, London, SAGE Publication Ltd, pp. 83-96.

³⁹Mol, H. (1978), OP. Cit., p. 185.

⁴⁰American Heritage Dictionary (1991) defines the term 'rite' or 'ritual' as a 'prescribed or customary form for conducting a religious or other solemn ceremony'.

which it has of itself and of its unity; at the same time, individuals are strengthened in their social nature'.⁴² Moreover, rituals have the potentiality to restore sameness through their repetitive nature. They 're-commit' certain system of meaning to memory.⁴³ Rituals and commitments to these rituals maintain group identity over time.

Belief System

Hardin and Kehrer argue that belief systems can be seen as 'the cognitive aspects of identity'.⁴⁴ Belief system is the main mechanism by which other mechanisms gain their existence. Signs and symbols, for example, attained their meanings from the belief system which allows people to communicate through these symbols. It creates the order, the rituals, by which individuals and groups present a common interest and consolidate their collective identity.

Borhek and Curtis (1975) define a belief system as 'a set of related ideas (learned and shared), which has some permanence, and to which individuals and or groups exhibit some commitment'.⁴⁵ Yet, a belief system consists of constant and changeable parts. They mention seven elements that make up the belief system: values, criteria of validity (the means that are used to determine the validity of any particular statement), logic (the rules that relate each substantive belief to another within the belief system), perspective (related to the concepts of identity of, and identity with, where the group see themselves as different from, or related to, others), substantive beliefs (constant facts), prescriptions and proscriptions (sense of norms), and technology ('associated beliefs concerning means to attain valued goals').⁴⁶

Habermas indicates the importance of a belief system in maintaining levels of communication between the generations of any society. He states 'a social system has lost its identity as soon as later generations no longer recognise themselves within the once-constitutive tradition'.⁴⁷ We see the belief system in this study as the source that enables people to recognise meanings in their daily life. If the mechanism of objectification is responsible for generating meanings, the belief system is responsible for these meanings having the meaning they reflect.

⁴¹Mol, H. (1976), Op. Cit., p. 13

⁴²Cited in Manju and Sinha, (1978), Op. Cit., p. 141 (his paranthesis)

⁴³Mol, H. (1978), OP. Cit., p. 191.

⁴⁴Hardin, B. & Kehrer, G. (1978), Op. Cit., p. 85.

⁴⁵Cited in Ibid., p. 84.

⁴⁶Ibid., pp. 84-5.

⁴⁷Habermas, J. (1974) 'On Social Identity', *Telos*, Vol. 19, (Spring), pp. 91-103.

3.2.2.2 Levels of Values

In any society there are certain traditions and experiences handed down from one generation to another. We name them the 'cultural core'.⁴⁸ These core values maintain a kind of continuity in the society. New values also will find a place and will interact with continued values. Continuity and change of socio-cultural values cannot be measured easily, but we can describe how and why certain values have continued over time and why other values have changed and modified. Allen Wheelis argues that 'identity is founded ... on those values which are at the top of the hierarchy - the beliefs, faiths and ideals which integrate and determine subordinate value'.⁴⁹ In this sense, we need to classify values to distinguish between dominant and subordinate values.

According to Mol socio-cultural values can be divided into three categories, religious values, cultural values, and social values.⁵⁰ However, in this study values will be classified into religious values, conventions, and habits. Social values imply those conventions that have developed locally and find agreement by at least one group over a long period, while the individual values are related to those habits by which individuals express their preference and images.

Religious Values

Gopalan sees religion as a 'product', which is the sum of the values that by God or developed by human thinking and social interaction, and a 'process' by which that product shapes personality.⁵¹ Lewins argues that religion reinforces identity. He states 'with a strong religious tradition regional identity is further reinforced by the measure of social control which local religion obtains'.⁵²

In a time of rapid social changes, as in Saudi Arabia, religion can function as an identity anchor. Jones argues that religion supports the identity by regulating the commitment of the individuals in society. Those values are part of the religion. They are considered as religious roles and principles, and have strong impact on the people's daily life.⁵³ Al-Soliman argues that there is great exchangeability between the religious values and social, economic, and

⁴⁸ The phrase 'cultural core' in this study is seen as a set of high values, mostly religious, but also it constitutes some changeable values, conventions, which have the strength of the religious values but in a specific time and place. This is why we consider the cultural core as containing the most enduring, but not constant, values.

⁴⁹ Cited in Mol, H. (1978), Op. Cit., p. 2.

⁵⁰ Ibid., pp. 1-17.

⁵¹ Gopalan, S. (1978), Op. Cit., p.124.

⁵² Lewins (1978), Op. Cit., p. 25.

⁵³ Jones, R. K. (1978), Op. Cit., p. 74.

educational values.⁵⁴ Most of the time, religious values have a strong relationship with the organisation of time, space, communication and meaning.⁵⁵

Conventions

Similar to the religious values, there are some values that have power and impact on the daily life of the people.⁵⁶ These values have the importance of religious values but they may be limited by time and place, which means that they are suitable for specific people in certain time. They can be influenced by life circumstances, for example if the circumstances change they may adapt to meet the new circumstances. They are called 'conventions' or 'Urf'.⁵⁷ Hakim discusses the meaning of conventions and he illustrates different views and definitions by Islamic scholars. Generally, most of the definitions agree on certain key phrases such as, 'accepted by people', 'compatible to their way of thinking', 'considered to be of good character', 'a way of doing things', and 'constantly repeated'.⁵⁸

In the Islamic culture, good conventions were accepted as one of the sources of regulation for daily life '*fiqh al mu'amalat*'. But their use should not abolish or cancel a ruling from the *Quran*, or *Sunna* (the Prophet's sayings) or a principle of *Shari'a* (the most constant values). The holy *Quran* mentions the importance of the conventions, the translation of the meaning of the verse (7:199) being 'take things at their face value and bid to what is customary [or accepted by local tradition], and turn away from the ignorant.'⁵⁹ But, conventions are very dynamic and can be changed with time. Thus, their practice in the Islamic *shari'a* is reflected in specific time and place. This means that we can find certain conventions were used in the past and are not acceptable in the present; or we can find some conventions acceptable in a specific community and not acceptable in another community with different customs..⁶⁰

The conventions, however, can be initiated in several ways, such as the order or encouragement of the local authority, inherited from previous generations, or generated

⁵⁴Al-Soliman, T. (1991), Op. Cit., p. 247.

⁵⁵For example, in terms of the organisation of time, we can see the impact of one of the most essential daily rituals, the five prayers, on the daily life of Saudi society.

⁵⁶Al-Naim, M. (1992) 'The Ideal House', *Al-Iqtisad* (Dammam, Saudi Arabia), No. 227 (April), pp. 56-61 (Arabic).

⁵⁷Hakim, B. (1994), Op. Cit., pp. 108-27.

⁵⁸Ibid., p. 109. He lists several definitions for the term 'Urf'. These definitions were put forward by a number of Muslim scholars:

1) What is accepted by people and is compatible to their way of thinking and is normally adopted by those considered to be of good character (Al-Ghazali, d. 1111).

2) Action or belief in which persons persist with the concurrence of reasoning powers and which their natural dispositions agree to accept as right (Al-Jurjani, d. 1413).

3) A habit or way of doing things that is constantly repeated, and which settles well and is accepted by people considered of good character (Ali Haider, d. ?)

4) What is customary to a people and which they follow in their sayings, and acts and in what they reject (Abdul-Wahab Al-Khalaf, d. 1956)

5). The habit (or custom) of a people in their sayings or acts (Mustafa Al-Zarka, born 1904).

⁶⁰What is customary to a people and which they follow in their living pattern (Abdulaziz Al-Khayyat, born 1923).

⁵⁹Hakim, B. (1986) *Arabic-Islamic Cities: Building and Planning Principles* London, KPI limited, p. 144.

locally by the response to certain circumstances or changes in the environment. Hakim differentiates between two types of conventions, public and private. On the one hand, public conventions are established and followed by a large community or many communities. Private conventions, on the other hand, are followed locally by one small community or group of people.⁶¹

Habits

There are several individual values that determine people's daily lives. These values create kinds of rituals in the daily life of individuals and subgroups (families). In this regard, Hakim explains the meaning of habits and stresses the place of the motive in conceiving the habits. He states:

‘The origin of habit ... is initiated at the individual level. For every act there must be an impetus or reason. This impetus could be external to the individual, or it could emanate from within. So if the person feels content with his act in response to the impetus (whether it is external or internal), and it is repeated, then it becomes a habit...’⁶²

For Hakim, the habits are different from customs or conventions, because the custom emerges when the individual action, or habit, is spread and repeated by the community. He stated that every convention is a habit, while not every habit is a convention.⁶³ However, unless the habits find their way to become conventions, they will be more exposed to change over time. This is because ‘the evolution of values and attitudes is slower than the evolution of behaviour’.⁶⁴

One important point should be mentioned: that is that habit is controlled by religious and cultural values. Therefore, if we attribute individual identity to habits, we mean those specific characteristics such as taste, preference and daily routines which can be different from one to another. But shared values, religious and conventional, control the individual values.⁶⁵

⁶⁰Hakim, B. (1994), Op. Cit., p. 110.

⁶¹ Ibid., p. 111.

⁶² Ibid., p. 110.

⁶³ Ibid., p. 110.

⁶⁴ Bernard, Y. (1993) ‘Flexibility in the Usage of Dwelling’, In Marjorie Bulos & Necdet Teymur (Eds) Housing: Design, Research, Education, England, Avebury.

⁶⁵For example, the way we dress in Saudi Arabia is a public convention. In this sense, we use dress to express our social identity. However, society stresses using this dress and forces the individual to dress similarly to all community members. On one occasion my father was angry with me because he saw me wearing a different style outside the house. He told me that I should follow tradition in my dress. In this case, individual and subgroup identity is controlled by group and social identity. Moreover, physical aspects (the form of dress in this case) that are used to reflect certain traditional socio-cultural values still have their importance in contemporary Saudi society. One important point should be clarified regarding this example. That is, the dress (in term of its form) was developed and several

3.2.2.3 Values and Continuity of Identity

To recapitulate, the concept of value is wide and includes several types and levels of value. The role of value in defining and consolidating individual and collective identities is essential. It is obvious that the religious values are the most constant and influential factors that maintain continuity of identity over time. However, in the built environment, the social values, or conventions, constitute the most important values because the built environment is dynamic and requires those strong and flexible values that maintain shared ideas and behaviour and at the same time adapt to the new changes that may occur over time.

When we mentioned the concept of the 'cultural core', we indicated that it consists of both religious and social values. This means that core values are seen in this study not as a constant set of rules but as a set of rules working to maintain people's identity in a specific time and place and link them with their past and future. One important point needing to be mentioned here is that in many cases social values have developed from religious values. For example, privacy is a religious principle but people interpret this principle in different ways from one place to another and have given it different forms from one time to another. What is important for this study is that people usually use the most constant values to develop less constant values to cope with the changes that may occur in their home environment.

In relation to the previous concept, the physical object, values work as criteria for selecting, modifying, and absorbing the new forms that may be introduced to any home environment. People's identity, in this case, can be maintained not only through the continuity of the physical objects but also through the continuity of meaning of the physical objects. The relationship between the physical objects and people's value is critical in understanding continuity and change of identity in the home environment. This is because values are very important motives for resisting new forms in order to adapt them to meet local needs.⁶⁶

improvements were added to it to suit the change in life circumstances. This means that even if the conventions continue, some changes and improvement may occur to them.

⁶⁶ See Chapter II.

3.2.3 THE CONCEPT OF COLLECTIVE MEMORY

‘What a person believes about his identity may be different from what he claims publicly. We only take public memory claims to be evidence of personal identity when we believe them to be honest, to express genuine memory belief.’⁶⁷

‘What this account makes necessary for identity with a “past self” is not that one remembers the actions and experiences of that past self but that one has “memory continuity” with that past self - memory continuity consisting in the occurrence of a chain of memory-connected person – stages.’⁶⁸

In the previous discussion we have admitted that physical objects are not enough to understand the continuity of identity in the built environment. We have established a need for viewing the concept of identity from different angles. Continuity of physical object, in this perspective, is not enough for the continuity of identity. What is important is the meaning of physical objects. The discussion presented the values as rules and mechanisms of generating meanings in the daily life. The levels of values informed us about the dynamism of generating meanings. However, one important aspect still needs more investigation, and that is the temporal aspect of identity. In the following discussion we will review the role of collective memory in the continuity of meaning over time. Our assumption is that, in any community, the continuity of physical objects cannot reflect a continuity of identity unless the meaning of these objects continues in the collective memory of that community.

The word ‘memory’ refers to what Hunter mentions: ‘what the person does and experiences here and now is influenced by what he did and experienced at some time in his past.’ Therefore, when we talk about ‘a person’s memory we are almost always drawing attention to relationships between his past and his present activities.’⁶⁹ Hunter indicates two main accomplishments by which memory of past experiences enables a person to adjust to present circumstances. The first is recalling, that is, ‘of reproducing in the present some absent event from the past’. The second is recognising, which mainly deals with ‘identifying some present event as being familiar from the past’.⁷⁰

What is important for this study is the role of memory or past experience in the continuity of identity.⁷¹ This is because past experience plays an important role in the expression of

⁶⁷ Swinburne, R. (1984), Op. Cit., p. 9.

⁶⁸ Shoemaker, S. (1984) ‘Personal Identity: A Materialist’s Account’, In Sydney Shoemaker and Richard Swinburne, Personal Identity, Oxford, Basil Blackwell, p. 81.

⁶⁹ Hunter, I. (1957) Memory London, Penguin Book Ltd., pp. 14-5.

⁷⁰ Ibid., p. 20.

⁷¹ We can relate this concept to what John Locke called ‘bucket theory’. This theory sees the mind of new born baby as a ‘*tabula rasa*’, ‘an empty slate’. Gombrich in his discussion of this theory has said ‘nothing could enter this mind except through the sense organs. Only when these “sense impressions” became associated in the mind could we build up a picture of the world outside.’ He added that ‘without a pre-existent framework of “fitting system” we could not experience the world’, Gombrich, E. H. (1979, 1984) The Sense of Order: A Study in the Psychology of Decorative Art, London, Phaidon, p. 1.

personal identity and enables shared values to continue in present and future home environments. Blee has mentioned that 'Traditions and memory represent the projection of identity into the time dimension'.⁷² Oliver, for example, finds that in 'each new settlement the design elements of a past tradition are re-established'.⁷³ Lawrence shares this view when he states 'the personal history of past experience of houses and family life have had a significant relationship with those ideas and images which ... users have used during the participatory design process for their future houses'.⁷⁴ This means that people will give their new homes already known meanings to maintain certain continuity of their individual and group identities.

The philosophical view that emphasises the importance of memory in the creation of identity argues that the absence of continuity of memory in some particular case involves the absence of personal identity. As the founder of this view, John Lock argues that memory or what he calls 'consciousness' constitutes personal identity.⁷⁵ Lock mentions that the capacity to remember makes up the identity over time.⁷⁶

Shoemaker introduces the term 'past self' which is more to do with 'memory continuity' than remembering the actions and experiences of that past. In this sense, memory continuity depends on the 'memory-connection' of 'person-stages'. For example, if two person-stages belong to the same person, it should be that the later contains memories of experiences contained in the earlier one.

Past experience, thus, represents the role of memory in the creation of present and future identity. In this sense, Lawrence finds that 'the influence of past experience has been strong in ordering the priorities of the residents with respect to the design and construction of their houses'.⁷⁷ Dovey supports this view when he says 'homes of our past set the ground for our very perceptions of attractiveness and ugliness'.⁷⁸ As we noticed, memory is an important factor in creating a sense of identity in the home environment because, people tend to do what they know rather doing new things. This is strongly linked to what Gill (1972) said 'we desire what we know; and only what we know can we desire'.⁷⁹

⁷² Blee, M. J. (1966) 'The Meeting: Man and Man-Made Object, Architectural Implications', In Gyorgy Kepes (ed) The Man Made Object, New York, George Braziller, pp. 76-89.

⁷³ Oliver, P. (1975) Shelter, Sign & Symbol London, Barrie & Jenkins, p. 26.

⁷⁴ Lawrence, R. (1983) 'Understanding the Home Environment: Spatial and Temporal Perspectives', Housing Science, Vol. 7, No. 1, pp. 13-25.

⁷⁵ Swinburne, R. (1984), Op. Cit., p.8

⁷⁶ Shoemaker, S. (1984), Op. Cit., p.77.

⁷⁷ Lawrence, R. (1983), Op. Cit., pp.20-23.

⁷⁸ Dovey, K. (1985), Op. Cit., p. 37.

⁷⁹ Cited in Benswessi, (1987), Op. Cit., p. 73.

Hume in the eighteenth century elaborated the concept of memory. For him 'memory' is a mechanism of producing the identity, not only in understanding it. The concept of 'memory' strongly connects with Hume's view about identity when he mentions that identity can be discovered by 'perception' rather than by 'reasoning'. Perception, in this sense, is a communicative tool to understand and evaluate the built environment. Memory in this regard plays an important role in the environmental cognition and evaluation. Hume said 'the true idea of the human mind, is to consider it as a system of different perceptions ... which are link'd together by the relation of cause and effect ...'.⁸⁰

As in the memory of individuals, public memory can be seen as a device by which people define and control their personal identity. In this case 'a given group recognises itself through its memory of a common past'.⁸¹ Moreover, the concept of 'collective memory' becomes essential for the understanding of identity. As Morley and Robins argue, 'the cohesion of collective identity must be sustained *through time*, through a collective memory, through lived and shared traditions, through the sense of a common past and heritage'.⁸²

Hunter discusses three phases of memory. The initial phase is the phase of learning and it 'requires time and involves a complex of activities which are themselves derived from previous learning'. The final phase is 'remembering'. It also 'involves a complex of activities whose execution is affected by various circumstances'. One of these influences is the learning phase while the other influence is derived from the present circumstances. The intervening phase 'is that of retaining the interval between learning and remembering ...'.⁸³

The memory phases are strongly related to what we mean by the temporal aspect of identity. (Or we can call it recreating the sense of identity). This because 'we recreate, in the here and now, the salience of some event, or experience, or piece of information from our past.'⁸⁴ For example, familiarity with the previous home environment represents the initial stage, the learning stage, where people know and use the meanings of objects to communicate their personal and social identities. While the final stage is the remembering of the previous meanings to mobilise them in the present home environment. The intervening phase is the time that people take to absorb the new images and concepts.

⁸⁰Hume, D. (1967) *A Treatise of Human Nature*, Oxford, Clarendon Press (First Edition was published in 1739), p. 261.

⁸¹Morley, D. & Robins, K (1995), Op. Cit., p. 46.(their italics)

⁸²Ibid., P. 72.

⁸³Hunter, I. (1957), Op. Cit., pp. 16-9.

⁸⁴Ibid., p. 21.

2.3 HOME AND IDENTITY

‘Home is demarcated territory with both physical and symbolic boundaries that ensure that dwellers can control access and behavior within. Although this center is clearly distinguished from its surroundings, it is also strongly oriented within it. This orientation is to the compass points, the celestial bodies, the surrounding geography, and the access routes. To be at home is to know where you are; its means to inhabit a secure center and to be oriented in space.’⁸⁵

This section deals with home as an environmental context that people use to express their individual and group identity. The following discussion tries to link the concept of home with the previous discussion about identity, its social and physical realms. As we have said, through the relationship between the physical object and people’s values, the built environment in general and the home in particular respond to human needs. However, human needs are many and they have no specific rank or order. They could have different meanings for different people, and their order may change according to the priorities of the individuals or the groups. Nevertheless, there are some essential needs, such as food and refuge or shelter to satisfy basic physiological needs. When a human being satisfies his/her physiological needs, (s)he then looks after psychological needs, such as identity, aesthetic needs, belonging, etc.

Psychological needs play an essential role in defining the meaning of the home and the objects inside it. Rapoport discusses the significance of human needs in defining the characteristics of any culture. He states ‘What is characteristic and significant about a culture is this choice, the specific solution to certain needs’..⁸⁶ In this sense, the basic needs, such as comfort, light, sitting, and sleeping, should have specific solutions to satisfy them, which are different from culture to culture and affect the house form differently.

2.3.1 THE CONCEPT OF HOME

‘Dwellings reflect the degree to which cultures and their members must cope with common dialectic oppositions, namely, individual needs, desires, and motives versus the demands and requirements of society at large.’⁸⁷

Home is a human phenomenon. As much as people feel at home so they belong to a deep and intimate place and group of objects. Home, as Heidegger described it, is ‘an overwhelming, inexchangeable something to which we were subordinate and from which our way of life was

⁸⁵Dovey, K. (1985), Op. Cit., p. 36.

⁸⁶Rapoport, A. (1969), Op. Cit., p. 61.

⁸⁷Altman and Gauvain, (1991), Op. Cit., p.287.

oriented and directed, even if we had left our home many years before'.⁸⁸ However, the concept of home is very ambiguous; some define it as merely a shelter and some attribute to it cultural and spiritual roles.

Rapoport discusses the cultural dimension and its impact on the house form. He presents five main cultural factors by which the house has attained its form. The first factor is human needs, which will influence the house form differently. The second factor is the family, where differences in the family structure play a significant role in relation to the house form. The third factor is the position of women, where the need to provide privacy for the women greatly influences the house form. The fourth factor is the need for privacy. However, privacy is different from culture to culture and the forms of the house will respond to these differences. For example, in some cultures houses are open and in others they are closed or subdivided, etc. The last factor is the social intercourse, where every culture has its own religious values, customs, conventions, and habits of social interaction.⁸⁹

Relph states that 'Home is the foundation of our identity as individuals and as members of a community, the dwelling-place of being. Home is not just a house to live in; it is not something that can be anywhere, that can be exchanged, but an irreplaceable centre of significance'.⁹⁰ Duncan explains how different groups view their houses. The first group, which has collectivistic structuring relations, sees the house as 'a container of women and goods', whereas the individualistic group views the house as 'a status symbol critical to one's social or personal identity'.⁹¹ Dovey supports this view when he mentions that home is different from house. Home is not self-contained but emerges from its social and spatial dialectics.⁹² Therefore, the 'house is static, but home is fundamentally dynamic and process oriented'.⁹³

Lawrence also differentiates between 'house' and 'home'. He defined house as 'a physical unit that defines and delimits space for the members of a household. It provides shelter and protection for domestic activities.' While he sees home as 'a complex entity that defines and is defined by cultural, sociodemographic, psychological, political, and economic factors'. In the cultural dimension, Lawrence presents home as a unit reflecting cultural and social values and conventions. In this situation a 'range of variables needs to be considered ... more than

⁸⁸Cited in Relph, E. (1976) Op. Cit., p. 39.

⁸⁹Rapoport, A. (1969), Op. Cit., pp. 46-103.

⁹⁰Relph, E. (1976), Op. Cit., p. 39.

⁹¹Duncan, J. (1981) (Ed) *Housing and Identity Cross-Cultural Perspectives*, London, Croom Helm Ltd., pp. 2-3

⁹²Dovey, K. (1985), Op. Cit., p. 44.

⁹³*Ibid.*, p. 48.

the explicit and manifest function of housing'. In the socio-demographic dimension, factors such as 'age, gender, household structure, and religion' have a direct impact on the design and use of home interiors. In the psychological dimension, 'the home serves as a means of communication with oneself, between members of the same household, friends, and strangers'.⁹⁴

Benswessi also argues that designing a house as merely shelter differs from designing a home. Because certain psychological needs should be maintained in the home, 'a home as a harmonious identifiable fabric requires a search for a meaningful form that involves a powerful mental image that extends beyond the functional and structural realities'.⁹⁵

In the Arabic-Islamic culture there are several differences between *bayt* (house) and *maskan* (home). House is related to the physical entity while home is related to people who live in the house. The difference here is between physical and human, between the products and the use and meaning of the product.⁹⁶ The differences between house and home have been indicated in the holy Qur'an on different occasions. In verse (24: 29) God says 'It is no fault on your part to enter houses not used for living in ...'⁹⁷ In this verse, the word houses is a translation for the Arabic word *boyout* Plural *bayt*, while the phrase 'living in' is a translation for the act of *sakan* or as mentioned in the Qur'an *miskounah*. This is a clear distinction between house, which could be any physical shelter, and home, which only exists if there are people living in it. In another verse, God said 'It is Allah who made your habitations [*boyoutikom*] homes [*sakana*]of rest and quiet ...' (16: 80).⁹⁸ This verse clearly indicates that sense of home is achieved through a 'home making process'.

⁹⁴Lawrence, R. (1987)'What Makes a House a Home', *Environment and Behaviour*, Vol. 19, No. 2, pp. 154-168.

⁹⁵Benswessi, (1987), Op. Cit., p. 81.

⁹⁶Al-Naim, M. (1997) 'Functional and Aesthetic Harmony in the Built Environment', *AlQafila*, Vol.46, No.1 (may), pp. 38-43) (Arabic).

⁹⁷Ali, A. Y. (1989) *The Holy Qur'an* Brentwood, Amana Corporation, p. 873.

⁹⁸*Ibid.*, p. 658

Dovey developed three approaches for understanding the concept of home including home as an order, home as an identity, and home as connectedness. Home as an order consists of spatial, temporal, and socio-cultural orders. In the spatial order, home finds its roots and its forms in the three 'universal structures of environmental experience and action'. Firstly, there is the 'triaxial structure of the human body' by which people distinguish between up/down, front/rear, and left/right. Secondly, there is the 'structure of our actions in space', which includes grasping, sitting, walking, manipulating, looking, hearing, smelling, etc. Finally, there is the 'structure of the world'. These three structures see home as a 'range that can include neighbourhood, town, and landscape'.⁹⁹

In the temporal order, home represents 'a kind of origin; we go "back" home even when our arrival is in the future.' It 'includes not only direct experience of place over time but also familiarity with certain spatial patterns from other places in the past experience'. Therefore, home can 'extend to a familiarity with the past process through which the forms of the environment have come into being'. In the socio-cultural order, people's values and social practices influence the form of the house. Therefore, home should adapt to changing social circumstances.¹⁰⁰

Home as an identity as Dovey explains 'is primarily affective and emotional, reflecting the adage *home is where the heart is*. Identity implies a certain bonding or merging of person and place such that place takes its identity from the dweller and the dweller takes his or her identity from the place'. For him, there are spatial and temporal identities. Home as spatial identity 'is not a matter of the representation of self-image', but 'it also entails an important component that is supplied by the site itself'. While temporal identity is manifested in the memory and past experience which help 'to create our current experience of home'.¹⁰¹

Home as connectedness is 'a schema of relationships that brings order, integrity, and meaning to experience in place - a series of connections between person and world'. In that sense there are 'connectedness with people', 'connectedness with the place', 'connectedness with the past', and 'connectedness with the future'.¹⁰²

Despres presents four interpretations for the meaning of home, including territorial, psychological, socio-psychological, and phenomenological. In the territorial interpretation, the concept of control and security determines the territorial satisfaction. In this sense,

⁹⁹ Dovey, K. (1985), Op. Cit., p.36.

¹⁰⁰ Ibid., pp. 37-39.

¹⁰¹ Ibid., pp. 39-43.

¹⁰² Ibid., pp. 43-4.

'dwellers are allowed to exert control over the space and behaviours which take place within it'. In the psychological interpretation, home is defined as a 'symbol of one's self'. In the socio-psychological interpretation, home represents the symbol of social identity. In this sense, it will play an essential role in the inhabitants' self identity and connect it with the larger community. And finally, in the phenomenological interpretation, home is seen as a dynamic process or 'a process that can only be experienced along time and that peoples' particular life events influence their experience of home'.¹⁰³

Sixsmith lists 20 categories for the meaning of home. These categories are happiness, belonging, responsibility, self-expression, critical experiences, permanence, privacy, time perspective, meaningful places, knowledge, preference to return, type of relationship, quality of relationships, friends and entertainment, emotional environment, physical structures, extent of services, architectural style, working environment, and spatiality. However, Sixsmith classified these categories into three modes of experiencing the meaning of home including the personal home, the social home, and the physical home.¹⁰⁴

In the personal home, home represents the 'centre of meaning and a central emotional and sometimes physical reference point in a person's life which is encapsulated in feelings of security, happiness and belonging'.¹⁰⁵ For him, there is a distinction between a sense of belonging and 'those aspects of home that contribute in some way to the person's self identity'. On the one hand, self expression can be created in the home through the structure, layout, home exterior, decoration, furniture, etc., where 'the home becomes a place where the person can just "be themselves"'. On the other hand, the understanding of home and experiencing it creates 'strong ties between that environment and the person. These can become integral parts of the person's history and sense of identity and continuity'.¹⁰⁶

In the social home, the relationship between people and home is characterised by 'the place being home'. In this sense, 'home is not only a place often shared with other people but is also a place allowing entertainment and enjoyment of other people's company, such as friends and relatives'.¹⁰⁷ In the physical home, the 'physical entity embraces not only the physical structure and style of architecture but also the human space available'. In this sense,

¹⁰³Despres, C. (1991), Op. Cit., pp. 99-101.

¹⁰⁴Sixsmith, J. (1986), Op. Cit., p. 287.

¹⁰⁵Ibid., p. 290.

¹⁰⁶Ibid., pp. 290-291.

¹⁰⁷Ibid., pp.291-292.

the physical home will 'act as a focus of the person's activities, memories and experiences, indeed their sense of identity'.¹⁰⁸

2.3.2 HOME AS AN EXPRESSION OF IDENTITY

'Home occupies a psychological role and is used to display aspects of identity. People enjoy the opportunity for self-expression. They attribute meanings to domestic space and show their values and creativity in decorating the front of their houses.'¹⁰⁹

Home can reflect a wide diversity of environmental and cultural experiences. The house form is generated gradually as a result of interactive forces between the dwellers and the physical environment. Individuals and groups tend to express their identity in their houses over time.

Altman and Gauvain understand the home as a dynamic dialectic process. They introduce two pairs of opposites to understand the meaning of home, the identity/communality dialectic and the accessibility/inaccessibility dialectic. They argue that the home not only serves to express the self, either as an individual or in relation to the community, but it also serves as an important device for the people to regulate their openness and closedness. Home, therefore, is seen as partially 'reflecting both the unique identity of its occupants as well as their communality with broader culture'.¹¹⁰

Dovey also sees home as a dynamic dialectic. He developed three dialectics, spatial, social, and appropriation. The spatial dialectic, for example, can be between inside and outside. In that sense home is seen as 'a room inside a house, a house within a neighborhood, a neighborhood within a city, and a city within a nation'. The social dialectic represents identity through the oppositions of self/other, identity/community, and private/public. Finally, appropriation is 'a dialectic process through which we take aspects of our world into our being and are in turn taken by our world'.¹¹¹

¹⁰⁸Ibid., pp. 292-293.

¹⁰⁹Jin, J. H. (1993) 'Home as Expression of Identity', In Marjorie Bulos & Necdet Teymur (Eds) *Housing: Design, Research, Education*, England, Avebury, pp. 181-192.

¹¹⁰Altman, I. & Gauvain, M. (1981), Op. Cit., p. 286.

¹¹¹ Dovey, K. (1985), Op. Cit., pp. 44-48.

3.3.2.1 Home as a Individual and Collective Medium

Cooper sees the house as symbol of self.¹¹² In that sense, Kron has written that:

‘Personalizing is the human way of adapting to environments. Making them fit us physically and psychologically and socially. It serves two important functions: one, to regulate the social system in a house - direct traffic, keep the peace (and the quiet), and thereby control privacy; and two, to express identity, tell the world - and ourselves - who we are.’¹¹³

Despres shares this view when she discusses three main needs that should be fulfilled in any home: physical security and health, privacy, and social status. Physical security is one of the fundamental needs of the human being, but this need is used psychologically to reflect certain meanings for users and to send messages to others. In that sense, ‘the experiential quality of home as spatial dialectic between the interior private world and the outside public world has been used to explain the meaning of home as refuge’.¹¹⁴ In that sense, houses in the past had functions more than shelters; they worked as symbols of the community status.

The family uniqueness and an identity will be reflected in the creation of individual homes. Accordingly, ‘home environment is integral to and reflects a variety of social and cultural values regarding individual and family identities’.¹¹⁵ Altman and Guavain state that ‘the uniqueness and identity of a family is often reflected in the construction of individual homes’. They add that ‘a family’s identity is often symbolized by the number and variety of rooms in its home’.¹¹⁶

Moreover, we can argue here that the families will strive to preserve their social and physical symbols in their home environment. Therefore, analysing the traditional kinship system will not only provide us with development of social structure in the contemporary residential settlements, but also it will enable us to understand the degree of persistence of the families to preserve their social and physical symbols. This view is supported by Duncan when he said that home ‘is an extremely important aspect of the built environment, embodying not only personal meanings but expressing and maintaining the ideology of the prevailing social order’.¹¹⁷

¹¹²Cooper, C. (1972) ‘The House as Symbol of Self’. *Design and Environment*, No. 3, pp. 30-37.

¹¹³Kron, J. (1983) *Home-Psych: the Social Psychology of Home Decoration*, New York, Clarkson N. Potter, p. 45.

¹¹⁴Despres, C. (1991).

¹¹⁵Jin, J. H. (1993), Op. Cit., p. 182

¹¹⁶Altman and Guavain (1981), Op. Cit., p. 296.

¹¹⁷Duncan, J. (1981), Op. Cit., p. 1.

The importance of social status stems from the desire of a human being to express her/himself and inform others about her/his socio-economic status. Throughout mankind's history, this psychological phenomenon was one of the most important mechanisms that influences the house form. However, every culture has its own customs and conventions regarding the social status and the meanings that individual and group give to the home were different from culture to culture.

The relationship among the individual, group and social identities, motivates individuals to express their identity by informing the new members in the society about their socio-economic status. In that sense, if an individual, on the one hand, belongs to a 'impermeable' social network and her/his socio-economic status is known to all members, there is no need to use the home decoration and furniture to display her/his social status. On the other hand, if the individual is a member in a 'permeable' social network and (s)he needs to interact with new member of the community, in this case home, decoration, furniture arrangement, etc., will be used to inform those new members about her/his social status.¹¹⁸ Jin shares this view when he says:

'... the form of houses varies between different socio-cultural groups. Different socio-cultural groups have different tastes, perceptions, and use of space. The categories to be use to describe self, personality, and social identity vary between the groups.'¹¹⁹

3.3.2.2 Home as a Physical and Social Image

The question that this part tries to discuss is why the house form is used to express individual and group image. From the previous discussion we find that the house is strongly connected with the everyday life and used to express individual and group identity. It is an ongoing process which refelects people values and taste over time. Habraken supports this view when he indicates that each period has its way of producing things and the process of production depends on the social structure.¹²⁰ Nasar shares this view; in his study of home styles in Los Angeles and Columbus, Ohio, he found that, in each city, the respondents showed consistent patterns of response towards home style. He argues that 'style is dynamic' in the sense that the interaction between the object characteristics and individual's representations of the past

¹¹⁸Bernarad, Y., Bonnes, M., and Giuliani, V. (1993) 'The Interior Use of Home: Behavior Principles Across and within European Culture', In E. G. Arias The Meaning and Use of Housing Aldershot, Avebury, pp. 81-101.

¹¹⁹Jin, J. H. (1993), Op. Cit., p.191.

¹²⁰Habraken, J. (1985)

experience create the individual experience of objects.¹²¹ The perceptual identity in the house, thus, can be seen as a process of representation of self through the house form.

Altman and Chemers have found that residents of the middle class suburban home tend to add the family initials to screen doors. Moreover, the identity themes reflect American suburbia, where the houses have similar designs. In these suburban areas, the residents tend to express their personal identity by repainting their houses in different colours.¹²² Habraken also found that tenants of the public housing in Chile tend to paint their parts of the large building facades, while in Cairo people tend to paint around their windows. The purpose of this painting is to express their identity in their territory.¹²³

This supports the argument by Rapoport that most people tend to express their perceptual identity by using the semi-fixed elements.¹²⁴ There are some fixed elements in the home facades, for example, reflecting the impact of socio-cultural values on the expression of certain uniqueness and identity. In this connection, Altman and Gauvain point out that homes in the Middle East have blank walls facing public streets. Also, they show that the windows of the upper floors in the Moslem communities in West Africa are placed so that they cannot see neighbouring homes.¹²⁵

Home decoration and furniture arrangements are widely used to reflect individual and social identities. People rarely participate in activities 'without meaning and without goals'. Therefore, Kron sees 'decoration' as 'personalization'. He says 'personalizing is marking your environment to let people know where your boundaries begin and end, and putting your personal stamp on a space and its contents'.¹²⁶

Despres says 'Placing objects with special meaning or specific aesthetic properties within or around the home, arranging the furniture, as well as maintaining the home are all territorial behaviours most often referred to as personalization'.¹²⁷ This will indicate that 'decorations can be symbolic of a state of mind in the same way that territorial marking is a symbolic of "ownership and intended use"'.¹²⁸ Altman and Gauvain find that, although the decor and

¹²¹Nasar, J. (1993) 'Connotative Meaning of House Style', In E. Arias *The Meaning and Use of Housing*, Aldershot, Avebury, pp. 143-67.

¹²²Altman, I. & Chemers, M. M. (1980) *Culture and Environment*, Monterey, CA, Brooks-Cole, pp. 143-167.

¹²³Habraken, N. J. (1982) *Transformations of the Site*, Cambridge, Massachusetts, Awater Press, plate I, c and b.

¹²⁴Rapoport, A. (1981), Op. Cit., p.14.

¹²⁵Altman and Gauvain (1981), Op. Cit., p. 308.

¹²⁶Kron, J. (1983), Op. Cit., p. 44.

¹²⁷Despres, C. (1991), Op. Cit., p. 99.

¹²⁸Kron, J. (1983), Op. Cit., p. 218.

furniture arrangements of American homes reflect and symbolise the desire of the dwellers to differ from others, the middle class homes have similar furniture arrangements.¹²⁹

Shared values influence the arrangement of the furniture and the interior decoration and reflect the identities of individual and community. Lawrence finds that the past experience plays an important role in the planning and decoration of home interiors. He states 'the position of some furniture in the future houses of the users has a relationship with the spatial organization of the present apartment of each family'.¹³⁰

In this sense Korn has written that 'the home and its decoration is not always a symbol of one's personality; it can also be a symbol of group membership, or a combination of personality and membership in varying proportions'.¹³¹ Jin found that the Society Hill residents in Philadelphia follow a typical way in their home decoration. He states that 'The individual home is considered and decorated as part of a whole neighborhood'.¹³²

Moreover, the classification of the home into front and back, requires a continuous care of the stage region, the front, where visitors enter. It is part of the process of reflection of social status. The living room, for example, is 'the center ring of symbolic interaction where the id is overruled by the superego - where "I" meets "them" more than halfway, where we show how well we have internalized the aesthetics and values of our class'.¹³³

3.3.2.3 Home, Use, and Identity

Francescato defines the word 'use' as 'any interaction of people with their residential environment, including perceptual, affective and symbolic processes that may not necessarily be related to actions'.¹³⁴ Arias states that 'use gives meaning to housing, and at the same time meaning guides how housing is used'.¹³⁵ Moreover, Studer elaborates on the definition of 'use' and he argues that 'use suggests overt behavior, the employment of objects or ideas to facilitate an action'.¹³⁶

Francescato has said that 'Housing is a system with multiple customers'. In that sense, home can reflect different meanings for different people. For example, home is understood by its users differently from planners, bankers, developers, etc. Therefore, we need to know

¹²⁹Altman and Gauvain (1981), Op. Cit., p. 293.

¹³⁰Lawrence, J. (1983), Op Cit., pp.20-23.

¹³¹Kron, J. (1983), Op. Cit., p. 73.

¹³²Jin, J. H. (1993), Op. Cit., p. 186.

¹³³Kron, J. (1983), Op. Cit., p. 92.

¹³⁴Francescato, G.(1993) 'Meaning and Use: A Conceptual Basis, In E. Arias The Meaning and Use of Housing, Aldershot, Avebury, pp. 35-49.

¹³⁵Arias, E (1993) The Meaning and Use of Housing, Aldershot, Avebury , p.1

customers in order to know the meaning of home. Home, thus, is 'bound to have a variety of meanings, depending on the goals it meets for different groups or people'.¹³⁷ In our case, the user is the customer. Accordingly, we need to investigate the relationship between the 'use' and the 'meaning' of home and how they generate individual and social identities.

The meaning of home stems from its users, because meaning is implicit in use. Therefore it is convenient to see 'use as manifesting *effective* behavior, and meaning as manifesting *affective* behavior'.¹³⁸ Meanings that users give to their home and the objects inside it, thus, reflect their preferences, images, and needs. In other words, they reflect their personal and group identities.

Therefore understanding the users' meaning becomes central in order to understand the meaning of home. Rapoport has written 'in the case of housing, giving meaning becomes particularly important because of the emotional, personal and symbolic connotation of the house and the primacy of these aspects in shaping its form as well as the important psychosocial consequences of the house'.¹³⁹ Habraken also has stated that 'The house ... can only be judged from inside. We must go in to use it'.¹⁴⁰

Goffman introduces the concepts of 'front region' and 'back region' to make a distinction between two domains in the home. The front region, on the one hand, is the area where the visitors are presented.¹⁴¹ It is like a stage 'where actors present images they wish to convey to an audience'.¹⁴² On the other hand, the back region is more private and it is unavailable to the guests.

Lawrence argues that, if spatial form and use of domestic space has a social meaning, then it is necessary to understand the constitutive rules or conventions, which make this meaning possible. He stresses the importance of the classification of spaces and their associated activities, the social conventions and customs that are associated with the use of the spaces, the social roles, routines, and rituals. He adds that the use of space influences the classification and grouping of the domestic spaces inside and outside the home.

¹³⁶Studer, R. (1993) 'Meaning and Use: A Basis of Understanding', In E. Arias (1993) The Meaning and Use of Housing, Aldershot, Avebury, pp. 29-34.

¹³⁷Francescato, G. (1993), Op. Cit., pp.37-9.

¹³⁸Studer, R. (1993), Op. Cit., p. 30

¹³⁹Rapoport, A. (1968) 'The Personal Element in Housing-an Argument for Open-Ended Design', *Journal of the Royal Institute of British Architects*, (July), pp. 300-307.

¹⁴⁰Habraken, J. (1985), Op. Cit., p. 90

¹⁴¹Goffman, E. (1959) The Presentation of Self in Everyday life, London, Penguin Books, pp. 109-140.

¹⁴²Altman and Gauvain, (1981), Op. Cit., p. 312.

For Lawrence, the classification of domestic spaces and the demarcation of activities inside them are defined by cultural, socio-demographic and psychological dimensions. These three dimensions determine the organisation of the spaces inside and outside the home and establish the relationships between different spaces and how and where they are located in the home environment. We can attribute the classification of domestic spaces to various factors such as privacy and preference. In the case of privacy, certain behaviour will influence the association or demarcation of specific spaces in the house. This can be attributed to the separation between the male and female spaces, which will classify the house into male and female spaces. The preference depends on the people's lifestyles, e.g., some people prefer to eat in the kitchen while others prefer to eat in the dining or living rooms. In this case, we can see the kitchen associated with or demarcated from the dining or the living rooms. In addition to privacy and preference, there are other criteria that can interpret the classification and usage of domestic spaces, such as social roles, routines and rituals.

Domestic space does not correspond to a specific function; rather its use is attributed to socio-cultural values and the role of male and female in the society. In this regard, Lawrence introduces four interrelated oppositions to enable us to classify the domestic spaces, 'front/back', 'public/private', 'day/night', and 'clean/dirty'. The oppositions front/back and public/private will imply that the house is classified into spaces overlooking the street, and other spaces which overlook the back yard. For example, those spaces which are exposed to the guests, public spaces, are located in the front, while those spaces which are hidden from the visitors, private spaces, are located at the back. However, the classification of domestic space either in the front or in the back depends on the social image and meanings that people attribute to that space.

The oppositions day/night and clean/dirty are also influenced by social images. For example, we notice that the dirty spaces, such as the laundry, are associated with certain spaces, such as the kitchen, and demarcated from others, such as the living room or reception areas. Moreover, we can see domestic spaces as intended for day activities, such as entertaining, talking, etc., or night activities, such as sleeping. This classification will determine the location of space either in the front or in the back, in the public domain or in the private domain. In addition, this will divide the house into groups of domestic spaces interrelated to each other and governed by socio-cultural values.¹⁴³

¹⁴³Lawrence, R. (1982) 'Domestic Space and Society: A Cross-Cultural Study', *Comparative Studies in Society and History*, Vol. 24, No. 1, pp. 104-130.

In this connection, Bernard discusses the flexible usage of space inside the dwelling. He argues that space cannot be fixed to one function because there are several semi-fixed elements, such as furniture, which 'would enable the change in usage of rooms in relation to life cycle, and allow for new choices'. For him, the usage of space can change for two reasons. The first reason is attributed to the design of the space, where space is exposed to change after its users' experience. The second reason is that space will lose its functional value at some point in its life cycle. The second reason is common and frequently occurs in the domestic spaces due to the changes in people's lifestyle and the changes that occur to the family such as growing children, divorce, marriage, etc.¹⁴⁴

Bernard discusses the importance of rituals in the preparation and eating of meals in France. He argues that the preparation and eating of meals indicates changes in lifestyle. Bernard found that a large number of people prefer to eat the mid-day meal at home, whatever the distance or difficulties. As we noticed, carrying out activities in domestic spaces is strongly governed by the implicit constraints, social values, conventions, social roles, rituals, and routine. However, there is another dimension which influences the usage of space. Technological development introduces several habits and changes in lifestyle which, in consequence, changes the usage of space and indeed introduces new domestic spaces.¹⁴⁵ In this sense, Kose found in his study of the Japanese house that the mechanisation of the household work and mass media and TV has changed the lifestyle of the Japanese family.¹⁴⁶

3.4 SUMMARY

The two main concepts of this thesis, identity and home, have been introduced in this chapter. We have found that these two concepts are interwoven and complement each other. While identity is a very subjective phenomenon, home has both subjective and objective aspects. The objective aspects of home deal with physiological need, while the subjective aspects are responsible for the psychological need. Identity in this sense represents the psychological side of home and deals with the home making process.

Identity has been discussed from its three main sides, physical, social, and temporal. As a philosophical, psychological, and physical concept, identity is a very wide issue. It was clear from the beginning that the notion 'identity' is an ambiguous concept. Therefore, to define its

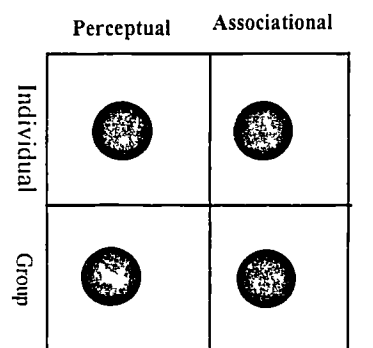
¹⁴⁴Bernard, Y. (1993) Op. Cit., p. 168.

¹⁴⁵Bernard, Y. (1991) 'Evolution of Lifestyles and dwelling Practices in France', The Journal of Architectural and Planning Research, Vol. 8, No. 3, (Autumn), pp. 193-201.

¹⁴⁶Kose, S. (1993) 'Changing Lifestyle, Changing Housing Form: Japanese Housing in Transition', In Marjorie Bulos & Necdet Teymur (Eds) Housing: Design, Research, Education, England, Avebury, pp. 193-206.

boundary was one of this chapter's main goals, and we have tried in it to develop a general boundary for identity. However, it will be defined and developed again in the next chapter to meet the goal of this study.

As with identity, home is a very wide concept. Although most literature has common conceptions about home, still it has no clear definition. Home as a physical entity is different from sense of home which could be felt in a very small room inside a house as well as in a whole city or country. This wide range of homes makes the subject difficult and ambiguous. What is important for this study is identity in the private homes in Hofuf. This will be discussed in more detail in the second part of this study. However, next chapter aims to find a theoretical link between the filtering model, which we discussed in Chapter I & II, and the concept of identity in the home environment.



Types of identity in the home environment

CHAPTER IV

PROCESS OF IDENTIFICATION IN THE HOME ENVIRONMENT: DEVELOPING AN OPERATIONAL MODEL

CONTENTS

- 4.1 Prologue
- 4.2 Identity and Meaning
- 4.3 The Dimensions of Identity
 - 4.3.1 Perceptual and Associational Dimension
 - 4.3.2 Individual and Group Dimension
- 4.4 Types of Identity in the Home Environment
- 4.5 Identity as a Dynamic Process
- 4.6 Growth of Identity in the Home Environment
- 4.7 Process of Identification in the Home Environment
 - 4.7.1 Re-Identification of Existing Identity
 - 4.7.1.1 Continuity of Existing Identity
 - 4.7.1.2 Partial Continuity of Existing Identity
 - 4.7.2 Identification of the New Forms
 - 4.7.2.1 Collective Action
 - 4.7.2.2 Personal Action
 - 4.7.2.3 Imposed Collective Action
- 4.8 Summary

4

PROCESS OF IDENTIFICATION IN THE HOME ENVIRONMENT: DEVELOPING AN OPERATIONAL MODEL

4.1 PROLOGUE

In the study of the continuity and change of identity in the home environment, several concepts and variables will intersect and overlap. This is because it is quite difficult to define clear boundaries for both identity and home. As we discussed in the previous chapters, identity and home are two interrelated concepts. They can be seen as processes rather than final products. Still, it is essential for this study to find a way to define these boundaries because we need to understand why identity as a phenomenon is interwoven with home environment, and how we can describe this phenomenon

This chapter aims to define the boundaries of identity in the home environment. Moreover, it looks to develop operational spatio-temporal paths for identity, its growth and re-growth in the home environment. These paths are seen by the researcher as very common and to be found in any home environment. However, the main goal behind the need for these paths is that they will help the researcher in gathering, classifying, and analysing the main data in this thesis. In other words, these paths are very important in delimiting the scope of this study because they will define the limits of the scope of identity in the home environment.

In general, six steps have been followed to develop the spatio-temporal paths. In the first step we have tried to narrow down the main concepts that may overlap with identity by establishing a relationship between identity and meaning. In the second step we have strengthened the relationship between identity and meaning by establishing two dimensions for identity. In the third step we have defined the boundary of identity further by introducing four types of identity in the home environment. The fourth and fifth steps see identity as a dynamic concept that can grow and re-grow over time, while the last step deals with the construction of spatio-temporal paths for the growing and re-growing of identity in the home environment.

4.2 IDENTITY AND MEANING

‘In human terms, the goal of communication is not merely the transmission of information, but also the interpretation of information, the elucidation of its meaning. In turn, interpretation implies a hermeneutic viewpoint, an acceptance of diversity of meanings. Different interpreters will find different meanings in the same information, depending on their experiences, intent, interests, goals and a number of other factors. So if we wish to define the meaning of housing we first must ask: Meaning for whom?’¹

In the previous chapter, we concluded that the concept of identity should be seen from three main aspects: physical aspects where the perceptual communications are manifested through objects which people make and use, social aspects by which people produce and mobilise meanings, and finally temporal aspects where the meanings of things continue in individual and collective memories. Nevertheless, we need to discuss another important aspect which has a major relationship with the concept of identity. This aspect is physical and spatial meaning of the home environment. It is obvious that without meaning no identity can be established. This why it is essential for this study to clarify the overlapping of these two concepts.

The meaning which we are after is what message identity seeks to send to others. In other words, if expressing identity is the goal, meaning is the mechanism of performing this goal. The three aspects of identity (physical, social, and temporal) can be considered as the aspects of generating, developing, and continuing meanings. This is because it is difficult to understand the purpose of meaning and how it was generated, developed, or continued without explaining the medium in which this meaning is mobilised.

It is, in fact, difficult to separate identity from meaning. In this sense, the following questions need to be discussed to understand how identity and meaning in reality are interwoven concepts. For whom is meaning generated? How is it developed? And by whom? And how is it understood by people?

Meaning in this thesis is seen as a process of identifying people, places, things, etc. It is linked completely with people’s values and their world view. Mankind throughout history has attempted to consolidate his existence by producing meaningful objects to expressing his beliefs, attitudes, and values. Therefore, meaning can be seen as ‘an attribute of an object or idea that makes it of emotional value or concern, arousing in a person or persons certain associations,

¹Francescato, G. (1993), *Op. Cit.*, p. 36.

cognitions or effects. Such elements stand for and communicate particular ideas or values of agents who present them in order to confirm an intention'.² Nevertheless, meaning is not something apart from function, and it is an important aspect of the function. It is important and central in the built environment. Therefore, it is used to express self and represent the collective identity. In this sense, meaning is:

‘A central mechanism linking people and environments. It may even influence perception, making it selective through the affective response to subliminal cues, greatly influences cognition ... and dominates evaluation, preference and choice, so that even “aesthetics” may be an aspect of meaning; meaning thus dominates action.’³

Rafael Moneo has written that ‘architectural form must support such meaning: that is, its meaning in the collective memory through which one may then understand work, assimilate it and situate it in the world of known objects’.⁴ Moreover, physical forms extract meanings by encoded information that people decode. Therefore, in the time of filtering and interpreting this information, the actual physical forms guide and channel people’s responses.⁵ Therefore, evaluating the built environment depends on people’s response to the meanings it has rather than detailed analysis of it. This evaluation is mostly implicit rather than explicit and depends on the individual and cultural images and ideals.

We can say that ‘meanings are in people, not in objects or things’.⁶ Bonta shares this view, he writes of ‘the meaning of things which are not in themselves meaningful, but which acquire meaning because of our familiarity with them; in other terms, because of social usage and convention’.⁷ Oliver indicates that similar forms in different cultures may denote different meanings. He states:

It is in the nature of the abstract symbol that any connotations attached to it are projected by man and not intrinsic to the figurative character of the symbol itself. As a result, many symbols may take on different meanings in different societies, though the motif may remain essentially the same.’⁸

²Studer, R. G..(1993), Op. Cit., p. 29.

³Rapoport, A. (1990) ‘Levels of Meaning and Types of Environment’, In Y. Yoshitake, R. Bechtel, T. Takahashi and M. Asai (Eds) Current Issues in Environmental-Behaviour, Tokyo, University of Tokyo, (see Rapoport A. (no date) Thirty Three Papers in Environment-Behaviour Research, Newcastle upon Tyne, The Urban International Press), pp. 513-528.

⁴Cited in Benswessi, A. (1987), Op. Cit. p. 78.

⁵Rapoport, A. (1982) The Meaning of the Built Environment: A Nonverbal Communication Approach Tucson, The University of Arizona Press.

⁶*Ibid.*, p. 19.

In this sense, we can argue that, despite the change which may have occurred in those objects which carry certain meanings, then provided they are strong enough, meanings will find a way to continue. In other words, our argument is that objects can be considered as a medium in which people mobilise certain meanings to identify themselves as individuals and groups. If this medium is exposed to change, a temporarily unstable situation will appear until strong meanings find another medium.

The question is, are we able to identify strong meanings from those weak and changeable ones? In general, meanings can be classified into three levels: denotative, connotative, and associational. Denotative meaning is instrumental and utilitarian. Connotative meaning refers to the symbolic and aesthetic meanings.⁹ Associational meaning implies those hidden aspects of meaning which develop from the deep relationship between people and objects. Association as Relph explained constitutes 'a vital source of both individual and cultural identity and security, a point of departure from which we orient ourselves in the world'.¹⁰

The aforementioned classification can be linked with the three levels of meanings which Rapoport introduced: 'high-level' meaning, which is related to cosmologies, cultural schemata, world views and philosophical systems; 'middle-level' meaning, which is related to those aspects communicating identity, status, wealth, power (it is related to the latent rather than instrumental aspects of activities, behaviours, and settings); 'low-level', which is related to everyday life and instrumental meanings.¹¹

To recapitulate, a connection between the levels of meanings, the three levels of socio-cultural values (religious values, conventions, and habits) and levels of memory is vital to understand why meaning can develop and why it has different strengths. For example, people tend to respond to religious values constantly and over time. They form people's world view and deepen their relationship with the surrounding environment. Thus, this type of value strives to establish high-level or associational meanings. Conventions are more related to the middle level or connotative meanings. While habit can be linked to the low level or denotative meanings. This

⁷ Cited in Benswesi, (1987), Op. Cit., p. 78

⁸ Oliver, P. (1975) *Shelter, Sign & Symbol* London, Barrie & Jenkins, p. 21.

⁹ Nasar, J. (1993), Op. Cit., pp. 144-149.

¹⁰ Relph, E. (1976), Op. Cit., p. 43.

¹¹ Rapoport, A. (1990), Op. Cit., pp. 520-521.

is to say that identity, with its high-level meaning, is more constant and has the ability to continue over time.

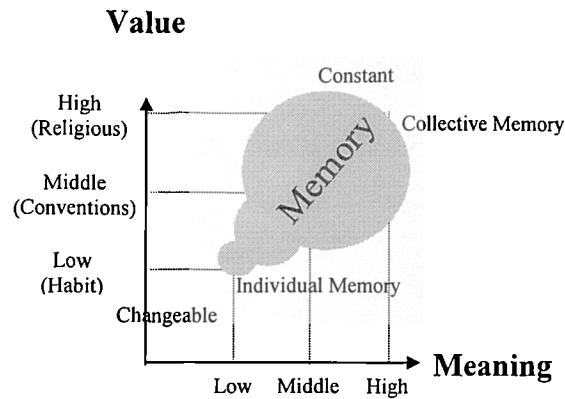


Fig. 4.1: Aspects of identity in the home environment

In the above diagram (Fig. 4.1), we can see that high meanings always have a strong connection with high values. This type of meaning is part of the collective memory and tends to continue over time. It has the ability to be mobilised in another medium if its original medium is changed. The low meanings, on the other hand, are connected with individual values. This type of meaning is not common and is usually developed by an individual or a sub-group (family). It is very dynamic and has the ability to adapt to changing life circumstances. What is really essential for our study is the third type of meaning, the middle-level, located between the other two meanings. The middle-level of meaning is strongly connected with what we called ‘conventions’. If we recall the meaning of conventions we will find that this type of meaning ranges from very strong meanings (almost similar to high-level meanings) to low-level meanings. This type of meaning, thus, is flexible in some cases and rigid in others. It is adaptable to changing life circumstances in certain times and unchanging in others.

The argument here is that identity and meaning are two concepts that have the same goal; that is sending messages and identifying individuals and groups from each other. In order to construct spatio-temporal paths for the continuity and change of identity in the home environment, it is necessary to see identity and meaning as having the same characteristics. However, meanings as we have seen have different levels and strengths. This requires us to search for those aspects which are inherited in the concept of identity and can be classified into levels and strengths.

4.3 THE DIMENSIONS OF IDENTITY

‘... self identity, or the knowledge of the self, is defined in relation to broader social entities rather than isolated subjects. It is a multi-level concept, that includes the personal self, which refers to the awareness of one’s body, thoughts, moods, emotions, perceptions, gestural expression and character of physical being; the social self, which refers to the process by which objects become objectified forms of consciousness and come to be embodied in the consciousness of others; and cosmic self, which refers to the human drive toward a large harmony of things in general’ .¹²

Our objective is to construct a clear view about identity in the home environment. The foregoing discussion concludes that identity consists of a complex of relationships among its physical, social, and temporal aspects. We found that there are strong and weak identities. There is strong identity in the sense it has the ability to mobilise strong meaning while weak identity always relates to isolated individual meanings. This ranking is what makes us see identity as a wide and dynamic concept. In the following discussion we will elaborate identity more and focus it down to two main dimensions. These two dimensions see identity as a dialectic phenomenon consisting of horizontal and vertical relationships.

While the horizontal dimension deals with perceptual and associational aspects of identity, the vertical dimension tries to understand how individuals and groups express their perceptual and associational identities. Group identity in this perspective could be extended to represent as small a group as an extended family or as large a one as a nation.

4.3.1 Perceptual and Associational Dimension

When we discussed physical objects, we mentioned that, if we depend on objects only as a source of understanding identity, two main problems might appear. One of these problems is the meaning of an object itself.¹³ This is because we have different levels of meanings, strong and weak. This means that some objects will resist the change more than other objects. However, it is necessary for this study to develop a way to describe this ranking of meanings. This will enable us to identify those resistible meanings as well as their associated physical elements in the home environment. The method that is used here to describe this rank of meanings is by classifying the home environment into perceptual and associational identities.¹⁴

¹² Despres, C. (1991), Op. Cit., p. 101.

¹³ See Chapter III.

¹⁴ See Rapoport, A. (1981) Op. Cit., pp. 19-28.

Perceptual identity deals with senses, by which we can feel the physical and non-physical aspect of the built environment. For Rapoport the term 'perception' is more than a mechanism of visualising things, rather it is a communicative mechanism by which we are able to describe how the perceived environment is constructed. He mentions three interrelated aspects in the built environment related to the term 'perception', including environmental perception, environmental cognition, and environmental evaluation. These three aspects should be understood as one process for recognising and using objects as communicative devices. The environmental perception is the 'direct sensory experience of the environment for those who are in it at a given time'. In the environmental cognition, perception is used to define, classify and categorise the built environment. Finally, in the environmental evaluation, perception is used to evaluate built environment. Perception, thus, 'deals with how information is gathered and obtained, cognition with how it is organised ... and preference deals with how it is ranked and evaluated'.¹⁵

In the case of perceptual identity, we are interested in those perceptual characteristics that distinguish any physical object from other objects. Habraken has explained the ability of physical forms to express the people's needs. He states that a 'physical system shared by society, is like a language. It has its limitation of grammar, but one can tell any tale in it'.¹⁶ By our perceptual ability, thus, we can communicate identity by making forms. Moreover, Habraken claims that forms enable us to know exactly what they mean without being able to say it in words. He introduces the concept of a 'thematic system', which enables us to distinguish between the physical configurations and the agreements that are implied in them. For him it is necessary to distinguish between the 'variants' or the artefacts and the 'structure' or the agreements that we read in the artefacts. He argues that the 'variants' are visible, while the 'structure' is hidden in the 'variants'.¹⁷

In the associational identity, on the other hand, we are interested in those social characteristics that distinguish individual and groups. Therefore 'identity tends to be less a concept which emphasises its reflective nature than a social interactionist concept which flourished in the human scene of cynicism and pretence'.¹⁸ Belief systems, objectification, rituals, and commitments have essential roles in the construction of associational identity. Therefore, 'one

¹⁵Rapoport, A. (1977), Op. Cit., p. 31.

¹⁶Habraken, (1985), Op. Cit., p. 41.

¹⁷Ibid., p. 79.

¹⁸Jones, R. K. (1978), Op. Cit., p. 75.

way of viewing identity is to think of it as consisting of a particular belief system and the mechanisms the individual has for maintaining the belief system'.¹⁹

Several psychologists and philosophers have discussed how society, through its individuals, subgroups and groups maintains its identity over time. Berger, for example, states 'Identity, with its appropriate attachments of psychological reality, is always identity with a specific, socially constructed world ... one identifies oneself, as one is identified by others, by being located in a common world'.²⁰ As we argued in the previous discussion a dynamic dialectic between different levels of identity is essential and continuous. This dynamism stems from the tendency of human beings to develop certain customary and acceptable values over time to enable them to socialise with others.

Associational identity can be linked with the concept of collective behaviour which is used by Smelser (1962). He stresses the importance of 'generalized beliefs' and values in directing social movements in the circumstances of rapid social change.²¹ Swinburne also argues that 'the essential properties which make the form of a person would include ... not merely shape and physiological properties, but a kind of way of behaving and a capacity for mental life of thought and feeling'.²²

Mead argues that a human has a nervous system capable of reacting in itself to symbols and signs which enable each one to communicate to others. In this sense, there is in the human creature an obvious distinction between body and self, between 'physique' and 'consciousness'. Mead (1934) states that:

'... there are two general stages in the full development of the self. At the first of these stages, the individual's self is constituted simply by an organisation of the particular attitudes of other individuals toward himself and toward one another in the specific social acts in which he participates with them. But at the second in the full development of the individual's self that self is constituted not only by an organisation of these particular individual attitudes, but also by an organisation of the social attitudes of the generalised other or the social group as a whole to which he belongs.'²³

¹⁹Hardin, B. & Kehrer, G. (1978), *OP. Cit.*, p. 85.

²⁰Cited in Jones, R. K. (1978), *Op. Cit.*, p. 65.

²¹Abercrombie, N. et al (1994) *The Penguin Dictionary of Sociology* London, Penguin Group.

²²Swinburne, (1984), *OP. Cit.*, p. 6.

²³Cited in Bloom, (1990), *OP. Cit.*, p.32.

Moreover, Rapoport states that 'in any given cultural realm there are some shared associations that could be reinforced through consistent use'.²⁴ Associational identity, thus, deals with the latent aspects of activities, their meanings and the specific ways they perform. In this way, identity can be communicated by those aspects, in the built environment, which support particular core values that are part of the shared values of a specific group.

However, the perceptual and associational aspects of identity complement each other. Identification is seen as 'the mechanism of internalising the attitude, mores and behaviour'.²⁵ It is also the mechanism by which people give meaning to things. Parsons argues that identity is 'the core system of meanings of an individual personality in the mode of object in the interaction systems of which he is part'.²⁶ Moreover, social relationships 'provide the meaning that is attached to a particular focus of identity'.²⁷ In this sense, it is important to know how the perceptual objects are connected to the associational domains.

4.3.2 Individual and Group Dimension

It is Erikson who gives the concept of identity its individual and collective dimension when he states 'The term "identity" expresses ... a mutual relation in that it connotes both a persistent sameness within oneself ... and a persistent sharing of some kind of characteristics with others'.²⁸ He says that identity refers to, firstly; 'a conscious *sense of individual identity*', secondly 'an unconscious striving for a *continuity of personal character*', thirdly 'as a criterion for the silent doings of *ego synthesis*', and finally can be seen 'as a maintenance of an inner *solidarity* with a group's ideals and identity'.²⁹

The horizontal dimension of identity concludes that interrelated relationships always appear between the physical and social aspects of identity. In this section we will focus on the concept further by discussing its vertical dimension, individual and group. In this sense, identity might be established by a range of social units. Mol lists three levels of identity, personal or individual identity, group identity and social identity.³⁰ Beals makes the circle wider by including cultural

²⁴Rapoport, A. (1982), Op. Cit., p. 45.

²⁵Bloom, (1990), Op. Cit., P.50.

²⁶Cited in Jones, R. K. (1978), Op. Cit., p. 64.

²⁷Gordon, D. F. (1978) 'Identity and Social Commitment', In Hans Mol (Ed) *Identity and Religion: International, cross-cultural Approaches*, London, SAGE Publication Ltd., 229-241.

²⁸ Erikson, E. (1980) *Identity and the Life Cycle* New York, W. W. Norton & Company (first published in 1959), p. 109.

²⁹ Ibid., p. 109.

³⁰Mol, H. (1978), Op. Cit., p. 10.

identity in addition to personal identity and social identity.³¹ It seems that he includes group identity in social identity. Morley and Robins discuss the concepts of 'nation', which implies social identity as a general idea that involves 'people in a common sense of identity and its capacity to work as an inclusive symbol which provides "integration" and "meaning" as it constructs and conscripts public images and interpretations of the past "to re-enchant a disenchanting everyday life"'.³²

Rapoport elaborates more on this subject. He argues that the social unit can range from all humanity to the individual. He says that human identity is established through opposition between culture (human) and nature (non-human). Group identity can be seen through different groups, for example, farmers vs. nomads. Sub-group identity can be examined in different scales, such as, men vs. women, kinship groups, etc. Finally, individual identity, which creates a limiting case of group identity, can be seen in terms of role, such as me vs. others.³³

This part focuses on the dialectic between the different levels of identity. For example, individual identity can be seen clearly in contemporary western culture; therefore, personal identity becomes very important. In traditional cultures, on the other hand, social structure is distinguished by the extended family. Therefore, individual identity is not important and the emphasis tends to be on group identity.³⁴ This means that there is always a dialectic between individual and group identity. A shift from one identity level to another is vital in coping with changes. Mol shares this view when he indicates that, in the time of great change, the emphasis will be shifted from social identity to group identity.³⁵

Beals goes further and points out that the appearance of a new social identity will reflect the individual's and group's commitments. Therefore, if the level of participation decreases, a new social identity will express this change. He states 'when the most general level of participation is below the societal level, alternative identity foci will arise which register, subsume and interpret the abstract or coercive societal relationship'.³⁶ Bloom argues that 'a personality acceptable to the

³¹Lewins, F. (1978), Op. Cit., 20.

³²Morely, David and Robin, Kevin (1993) 'No Place Like Heimat: Images of Home (Land) in European Culture', In Carter, Erica, Donald, James & Squires, Judith (Eds) *Spaces & Places: Theories of Identity and Location*, London, Lawrence & Wishart.

³³Rapoport, A. (1981), Op. Cit., pp. 14-19.

³⁴See Chapter VII.

³⁵Mol, H. (1978), Op. Cit., p. 10-14.

³⁶Cited in Lewins, F. (1978), Op. Cit., p. 20.

immediate social group is a simple necessity for social survival - social survival being synonymous with physical survival'.³⁷

The stability of any social system is not based purely on 'structural constraints and balances', but is based on social norms and conventions which characterise that society's members and which creates what Durkheim calls a 'collective conscience'.³⁸ For Durkheim the word 'conscience' refers to the moral attitude of the individual. The term 'collective conscience' refers to an 'external normative order or social fact'.³⁹ Durkheim states that 'the totality of beliefs and sentiments common to the average citizens of the same society forms a determinant system which has its own life; one may call it collective or common conscience'.⁴⁰

This collective conscience can be linked to what Bloom named 'common identification'. He says 'Insomuch as a group of individuals shares a common identification, there is the potential for that group to act together to enhance and protect that shared identity'.⁴¹ He explains how the individuals behave within the group frame when he states that 'through a shared identification, individuals are linked within the same psychological syndrome and will act together to preserve, defend and enhance their common identity'.⁴² He adds that people who share a common identity tend to work as one unit and 'mobilise as a coherent mass movement'.

Parsons defines identity in terms of social and cultural environment, he also implies that identity is a 'dynamic behavioural mechanism of the human organism'. Moreover, he stresses that identity is constrained by society, and he acknowledges the biological basis but not as a central concern of his theory. For him, identity moves from being mainly concerned with the formation of individual identity to its position as a fundamental base in any general theory of social structure and action.

Parsons introduced the term 'social dupe' in which human creatures were subject to society and society's need. He defined three major types of need. Firstly, those which mediate in person-to-person relationships, secondly, those which mediate between the person and cultural standards and thirdly, those which mediate between the person and society.⁴³ For him, certain control

³⁷Ibid., p. 33.

³⁸Ibid., P. 14

³⁹Abercrombie, N. et al (1984), Op. Cit., p. 82

⁴⁰Cited in Bloom, W. (1990) Op Cit., P 14

⁴¹Ibid., P.50

⁴²Ibid., p 26

⁴³Ibid., p 41

should be established by socialisation over the organic need system. He states that 'the *first* fundamental necessity of socialisation is to establish *control* through social interaction over significant organic need system'.⁴⁴

Habermas argues that humans and community seek, through the 'self-reflective' symbolism of identity, meaningfully to locate themselves in their profane and cosmic environment. In this sense, the central theme is that humans and society try actively to find both terms of locating and creating their 'proper and 'true' identity. He introduces the concept of an identity-securing interpretative system. For him, it is the match between the identity-securing interpretative system and the realities of social existence which legitimates the structure of any social system.

For Habermas, dynamism of identity is presented in his discussion of the identity-securing interpretative system, which acts as mediator between the individual or the group and social structures. Therefore, if the symbolic mediation is not appropriate, certain changes will occur to maintain psychological security. These changes will be manifested either in the changes of the interpretative system or change in the social structure.⁴⁵

As we noticed, collective identity has a strong influence on individual identity, yet the sum of the individual identities comprise the collective identity. This indicates that the individual is not a static entity, being completely determined by the society in which (s)he lives. In this sense, Goplan introduces the concept of dynamic-individual.⁴⁶ This concept explains that individuals possess internal mechanisms that enable them to modify themselves to the new circumstances. We can link these mechanisms with our previous discussion about values where a person's actions are controlled by religious, social, and personal values. Through these three levels of values which individuals possess, their belief system is constituted. While by the other three mechanisms, which are objectification, commitment and rituals, meaning will be generated and mobilised. This dynamic process occurs in the individual level but can be expressed collectively in the group and social levels.

Lewins discusses the view of Daniel Bell in the individual and group identity. He says that we can look at the individual identity as effective 'ties providing the subjective or individual basis

⁴⁴Parsons, Talcott & Bales, Robert F. (1968) (First Published in England in 1956) Family Socialization and Interaction Process, London, Lowe & Brydone (Printers) Ltd., p. 170.(his italic)

⁴⁵Habermas (1974), Op. Cit. See also Bloom, W. (1990), Op Cit., p. 47.

⁴⁶Goplan, (1978), OP. Cit., p. 124.

for emotional support', while the group identity refers to 'that quality which binds a group through a common set of material interests'.⁴⁷

Groups, thus, have various mechanisms to channel their members' images and make them feel they belong to a distinct group. These mechanisms include geographical isolation, specific dress, maintaining their own language, and cultural and social isolation.⁴⁸ For Duncan the relationship between individuals' consciousness and the social structure is what makes certain meanings in home environment collectively understandable. He states that:

'Whereas ... certain types of behaviour and attitudes towards the house are influenced by structural conditions in a society, it should become clear ... that social structure does not in itself determine the consciousness of individuals, but that the relationship between consciousness and structures is highly complex'.⁴⁹

The degree to which members of a group will respond as a whole to maintain their collective identity will depend upon certain 'historical and extential bonds within the group, length of time passed together, class, ethnicity, religion, ritual and the degree to which that particular identification is crucial to the general identity'.⁵⁰ Therefore, a group of individuals, in the same environmental circumstances, tend to follow the same process of identification to internalise the same identity. Similarly, they will act together to protect and enhance their shared identity.

The reasons behind the need to understand why individuals and groups express their identities in their home environment is our desire to understand the dynamic dialectic between individual and group or what we call individual and collective identities, individual identity in the sense that everybody has her/his own preferences and images. The uniqueness of house form and the spaces inside it is part of this identity. It deals with the question: why are private homes in Hofuf different from each other? While collective identity sees these preferences and images as part of a shared common identification. This identity deals with how private homes in Hofuf are similar

⁴⁷ Lewins, F. (1978), Op. Cit., p. 21.

⁴⁸ Shaffir, William (1978) 'Witnessing as Identity Consolidation: The Case of the Lubavitcher Chassidim', In Hans Mol (Ed) Identity and Religion: International, Cross-Cultural Approaches, London, SAGE Publication Ltd., pp. 38-57.

⁴⁹ Duncan, J. (1981), Op. Cit., p. 5.

⁵⁰ Bloom, (1990), Op. Cit., p. 40.

4.4 TYPES OF IDENTITY IN THE HOME ENVIRONMENT

‘The identity may occur at many levels from the physical to the spiritual and in different modes from the individual to the collective.’⁵¹

As we have seen, a continuous dialectic between identity dimensions is necessary for the continuity and change of identity in the home environment. In this part we need to go further by founding a set of identities that have different strengths. This set of identities is developed from the possible relationship between the identity dimensions. Four types of identity have been developed, and these are ‘individual perceptual identity’, ‘individual associational identity’, ‘collective perceptual identity’, and ‘collective associational identity’ (Fig. 4.2).

	Perceptual	Associational
Individual	Individual Perceptual Identity	Individual Associational Identity
Group	Collective Perceptual Identity	Collective Associational Identity

Fig. 4.2: Types of Identity

Individual perceptual identity is dynamic and can be changed easily. It is related to individual preferences and mainly associated with utilitarian forms. It deals with how a person sees the form of something and how he perceives its meaning. This identity is related more to low-level meaning. When a person builds a deep relationship with the surrounding objects and spaces, (s)he is in the process of creating his associational identity. Individual associational identity needs more time to exist because it assumes that a person has an intimate relationship with the surrounding objects and spaces. These objects and spaces, in this sense, reflect personal belief and attitude. This type of identity depends on how an individual sees the world and how he or

⁵¹ Blee, M. J. (1966), Op. Cit., p. 80.

she objectifies meanings to reflect his or her own belief. In general individual associational identity is influenced by collective associational identity (Fig.4.3).

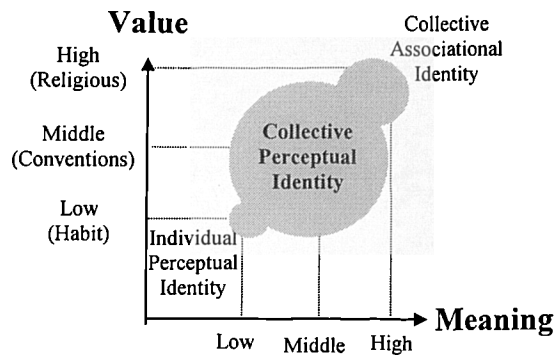


Fig. 4.3: The relationship between value, meaning, and types of Identity in the home environment

Collective perceptual identity in the home environment is usually represented by certain forms with the ability to send, as it were, collective meanings. These forms may be inherited from previous generations (for example, traditional forms). Also, new forms may find a common acceptance by a group of people. Then they will associate them with collective meanings. This type of identity usually contains connotative meanings and forms an important part of the identity of home environment.

Collective associational identity is less dynamic. This identity represents what we call the ‘cultural core’. It can be expressed by physical forms, but it will continue even if the physical form changes. This means that the new physical form will be modified to meet the collective associational requirements.

4.5 IDENTITY AS A DYNAMIC PROCESS

‘The concept of identity aiding the process by concretely visualizing the *personal* and *social* aspects of the dynamism.’⁵²

The preceding discussion aimed to establish a basic theoretical basis for studying identity in the home environment. However, the main challenge that faces anyone studying identity in the home environment is the dynamism of people’s preferences, judgements, etc. Human associational

⁵²Gopalan, S. (1978), OP. Cit., p. 124.

requirements are never fully accommodated by the built form. We create these forms to support our purposes. However, our 'sociophysical requirements generally change before they can be met'.⁵³

Therefore, we need to see identity in the home environment as a dynamic process, which mainly consists of different relationships that may occur between people's socio-cultural values and the possible physical forms. This is not to say that identity will change from time to time, but to say that identity, with its four types, will change from one level to another. It can be at a strong level. Then it can be changed to weaker or stronger levels according to the changes in life circumstances. This means that establishing an identity in the home environment is a gradual and continuous process.

While change in people's preferences and lifestyles will change the home environment, maintaining collective identity will consolidate it and will resist change and direct it to express the inhabitants' personalities. This view is supported by Mol who refers to change as differentiation and identity as integration. Therefore, he states, 'differentiation of function must be counterbalanced by integration or stabilization of function'.⁵⁴ For Mol, sign and symbol make for greater flexibility and more efficient change, which means that they have to be counterbalanced by other signs and symbols to represent stability, conformity and security.

However, some conflict may occur between the younger generation and the older generation in the case of frequent exposure to the surrounding cultures.⁵⁵ The younger generation will not share the older generation's perspective on how to organise their lives, which will weaken the collective identity of the community. On this point, Jones criticises the view that identity is static and fixed, and he stresses the importance of social interaction in the creation of identity. He states that the concept of identity is a result of various social experiences 'situated' within a series of social relations and 'placed' as social objects.⁵⁶

Cultural practices and codes cannot be understood without reference to change over time. The 'dynamic process' of the built environment refers to change in people's life cycle and modification in lifestyle over time. Time, thus, is 'not merely a component, but rather an

⁵³Studer, R. (1993), *Op. Cit.*, p. 31.

⁵⁴Mol, H. (1978), *Op. Cit.*, p. 5

⁵⁵Shaffir, W. (1978), *Op. Cit.*, p. 49

⁵⁶Jones, R. K. (1978), *Op. Cit.*, p. 60.

inherent aspect of human-environmental phenomena'.⁵⁷ Thus the study of the process of change in domestic spaces will shed light on the understanding the dynamic process of the home and enable us to grasp the new meanings that may be embodied in domestic spaces.

The process of change and adaptability, thus, is an essential mechanism that enables us to preserve our identity. This occurs because of the dynamism of the psychological mechanisms of human life. Therefore, unless we are able to adapt to changes, we can not reproduce our individual and collective identities. In this sense, identity can be seen as 'a dynamic adaptive mechanism'.⁵⁸ Similarly, the home environment can be seen as a dynamic adaptive mechanism by understanding the response of people to their built environment and the changes they have made to cope with new lifestyle.

The dynamic process in the home environment deals with how people relate to their physical forms and what are the particular meanings they attach to these forms. On this Rapoport states:

'The study of man-environment interaction ... needs to be approached, at least in part, through a study of symbols and imagery and, consequently, the study of popular design needs to be approached through a study of popular imagery and its sources. We need to study the variability and constancy of such images, synchronically and diachronically'⁵⁹

Two main characteristics, thus, are used to explain the dynamic relationship in the built environment. First, this relationship can be understood diachronically where the interactive actors, the socio-cultural values and possibilities of physical forms, build up changeable relationships through time. Second, the dynamic relationship can be understood synchronically where the interactive actors in the built environment will create a specific built form in every specific period of time.⁶⁰ This specific built form will be a result of the relationship between the continuous values and possible physical forms at that period of time.

Our argument is that searching for identity in the home environment will put some forms under continuous change because these forms are chosen to be the media for expressing the users' identity. Identity in this case implies that a certain degree of resistance towards the circumstances should preserve the continuity of the cultural core and strong experiences. This

⁵⁷ Francescato, G. (1993), Op. Cit., p.45

⁵⁸ Bloom, W. (1990) Op. Cit., p. 50

⁵⁹ Rapoport, A. (1973) 'Images, Symbols and Popular Design', *International Journal of Symbology* (USA), Vol. 4, No. 3 (November), pp. 1-12.

resistance can be explicit or implicit. However, in the previous discussion we mentioned the importance of bodily continuity and continuity of memory as mechanisms that indicate the continuity of identity over time. However, we cannot understand the continuity of identity unless we understand it as a dynamic phenomenon.

Hume discusses how the concept of duration plays an important role in the continuity of identity over time. The notion 'duration' implies either change or continuity over time. To understand the continuity of an object through time we need to know first whether the object is constant or changeable. The constancy of the object means that we cannot say that an object is the same as itself, unless we mean that the object existing at one time is the same as that existing at another.⁶¹

The physical object will respond to this change in order to be able to reflect new meanings. In this case, the transformation of the physical forms needs to be gradual. Hume states that 'the change of parts [need] be not sudden nor entire, in order to preserve the identity, yet where the objects are in their nature changeable and inconstant, we admit of more sudden transition'.⁶²

Hirsch sees continuity of identity as a mechanism for maintaining identity over time. He relates the concept of continuity to the 'unity-making relationship' which binds the 'successive stages' of a 'single persisting object'.⁶³ The unity-making relationship can be understood through two considerations. First, there is the 'continuity of qualitative change' or 'qualitative continuity'. Second, there is the 'continuity of locational change' or 'spatiotemporal continuity'.

Like Hume, Hirsch discusses the necessity of the gradual change of the physical object to identity. Therefore, in the case of change, the object should be related to the previous one. He said 'an object's qualitative changes are continuous if, at any given time, the object is very similar to the way that it is at neighboring times'.⁶⁴ He explains the qualitative continuity in the sense that an object is either qualitatively constant at all times or undergoes continuous qualitative changes over time. In this sense we can argue here that the continuous qualitative changes in the built environment mean that a series of small changes occurred in the physical

⁶⁰ 'Diachronic' and 'synchronic' had been used by the Swiss scholar Ferdinand de Saussure in linguistic studies. Many writers had used these terms in Art, Architecture and man-environment studies. Gombrich, for example, discussed the use of these two terms in his study of the decorative art. Gombrich, E. H. (1979, 1984), Op. Cit., p. 193.

⁶¹ Hume, D. (1978), Op. Cit., p. 201

⁶² Ibid., p. 258

⁶³ Hirsch, E. (1982), Op. Cit., p. 7.

⁶⁴ Ibid., p. 10

environment when people tried to select among the possible media to express their individual and collective identities over time.

The spatio-temporal continuity, on the other hand, means that the place that is occupied by the object changed over time. As in qualitative continuity, spatio-temporal continuity is distinguished by its continuous movement which is composed of a series of 'small movements'. In this sense, the object's overall location in space must suffer some degree of discontinuity.⁶⁵

In the foregoing discussions we have presented identity as a dynamic phenomenon at the same time as we have stressed the importance of its continuity. These two characteristics seem, at first, to contradict each other. However, what we would like to present here is that identity is both a changeable and enduring phenomenon. This is what we call growth and re-growth of identity in the home environment.

4.6 GROWTH OF IDENTITY IN THE HOME ENVIRONMENT

'Growth of identity is more than the search for a form that reflects a static self-image; it is dynamic and may indeed actively resist equilibrium ... The growth of identity requires a certain freedom of interaction between present and future, between our experiences and dreams.'⁶⁶

We hypothesised that people have two filters, personal and cultural. These two filters are used by people to modify new forms and localise them to convey personal and social meanings. Existing forms as well as new forms will pass through gradual transformation until they meet the existing traditions in the home environment.⁶⁷ This process of transformation in the home environment is called in this study the 'process of identification'. The following discussion aims to construct hypothetical spatio-temporal paths for the process of identification in the home environment.

These paths try to develop a way to describe and measure the four types of identity in the home environment and how identity grows from one level to another. We assume that every type of identity is found in the home environment. Expressing all the four types through one medium makes this medium a very localised form. However, most home environments contain these types of identity in part, especially collective associational identity, which needs a long time to

⁶⁵ *Ibid.*, pp. 15-22.

⁶⁶ Dovey, K. (1985), *Op. Cit.*, p. 43.

develop. Our argument here is that there is always a tendency to establish a strong identity in the home environment. This means that a move from low-level meaning to high-level meaning is vital to create a sense of home and belonging to the whole environment. It is thus necessary to trace how the four types of identity may be formed. Therefore, constructing possible paths for the formation of the four types of identity is very important if we are to describe the growth and re-growth of identity in the home environment.

In the home environment we have physical and social realms. What we have tried to construct in this chapter is a frame or model to enable the researcher to describe the process of identification in the home environment. We argue that we cannot understand this process unless we see the home environment as a process containing continuous physical and social dynamism. This means that it is difficult to find permanent identity in the home environment because identity will grow through the dynamic process of the home environment from a low-level to a high-level. This is not to say that every low-level identity will grow and become high-level, but that growth of identity is vital in seeing the home environment as dynamic human phenomenon.

In Fig. 4.4, we try to link the process of producing identity introduced by Mol, with the process of perceiving the built environment developed by Rapoport.⁶⁸ These two processes help the researcher to develop a mechanism to describe how people generate and grow their individual and collective identities in the home environment. Mol's mechanisms have enabled the researcher to simplify the complicated relationships that distinguish the generation and growth of identity in the social realm. By these mechanisms we have tried to understand how people use their levels of values, which include religious values, conventions, and habits, to establish different levels of meanings. This occurs through the interaction between these mechanisms and the physical realm.

We hypothesise that the more the physical object is associated with religious and strong social values, the more it becomes part of the collective memory, and the more it is able to endure over time. On the other hand, the more the physical object is associated with personal image and habits only, the more it is liable to change over time.

⁶⁷ See Chapter I.

⁶⁸ For more detail see chapter III, and the identity dimensions in this chapter.

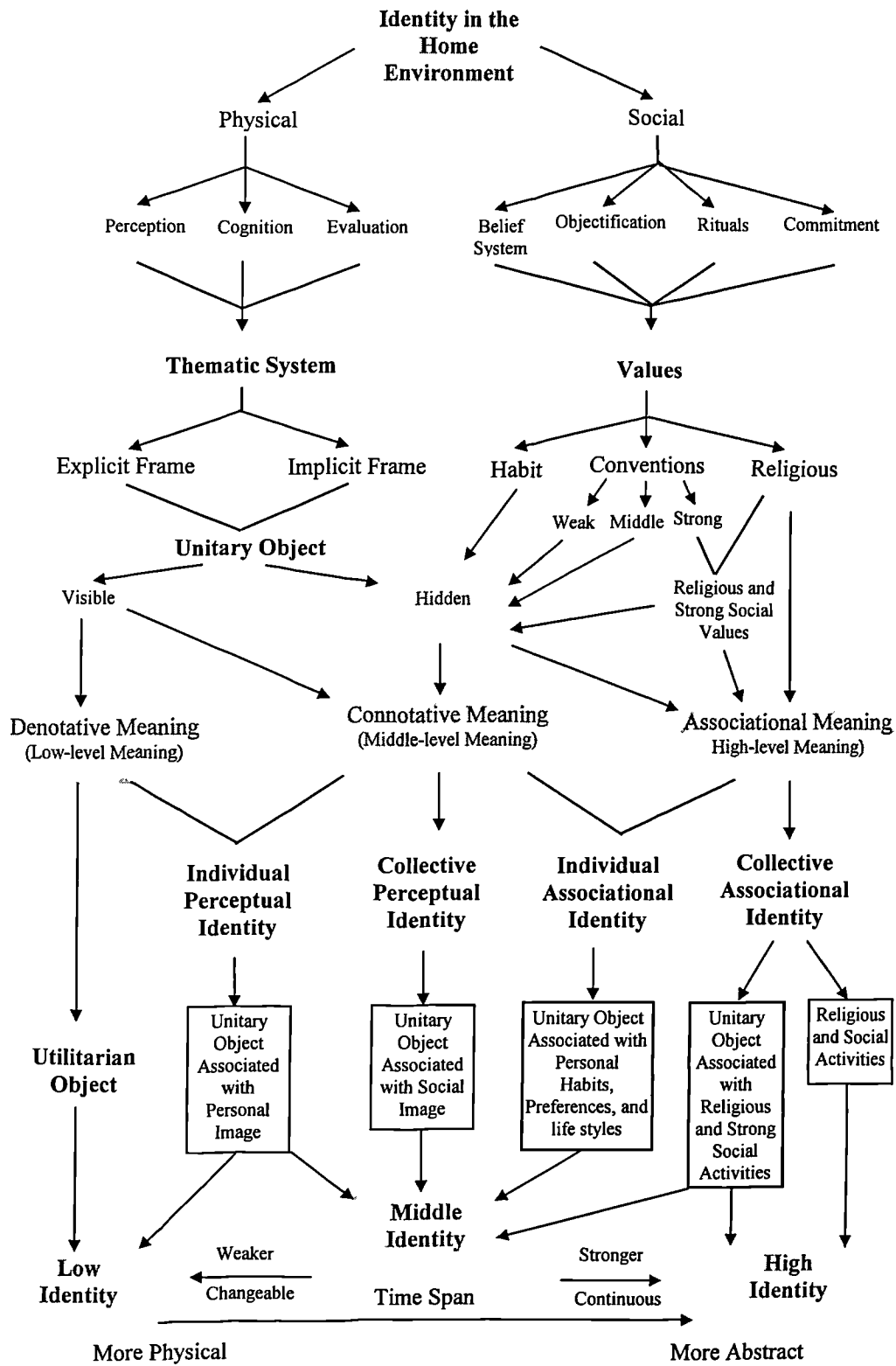


Fig. 4.4: Levels of Identity in the Home Environment

4.7 PROCESS OF IDENTIFICATION IN THE HOME ENVIRONMENT

‘The identities of cultural groups are achieved symbolically. There would be no culture without symbolic systems to represent that culture. ... culture not only seeks its identity in symbolic forms, but it also seeks to maintain itself through such forms.’⁶⁹

In the previous discussion we tried to enlighten those aspects which contribute directly to the growth and re-growth of identity in the home environment. We indicated that identity will grow from a lower level to a higher one. Each level has a range of strengths. Some of the collective identities, for example, are stronger than others. Despite that, identity will become less dynamic when it reaches its highest level, it will suffer from a relative movement over time because of the change in the evidences, beliefs, lifestyles, etc.

We admit that change in the home environment is vital for people to interact with it and adapt themselves to changing circumstances. Therefore, the gradual growth of identity types and levels is what we called ‘process of identification’ in the home environment. This term was used by Dovey when he discussed the home making process.⁷⁰ In our case, this term will be used to discuss the different ways that identity in the home environment is established, re-established, and grows over time. Moreover, it will be connected with the four mechanisms that were introduced by Parsons to bridge the gap between human nature and stability of social systems. These mechanisms are ‘primary adaptation’, the ‘mechanism of relative deprivation’, the ‘mechanism of internalisation’, and the ‘mechanism of reinforcement’.

For Parsons, ‘primary adaptation’ is the mechanism of perceiving changes or what he calls ‘perception of errors’. He states that:

After the imposed situational change which in its beginning marks the transition from the stable state of the old system ... into the new adaptive phase ... the primary ‘problem’ of the system is that of adapting to an altered situation and developing a meaningful cognitive orientation to the definition of *what* it is that has changed ... The primary cognitive starting points is what we will presently call the “perception of error” in the sense that the presumption of gratifying experience within a certain situation proves to be in error, and first this has to be ‘taken in’ as a “fact”. We may call these mechanisms in this phase those of “primary adaptation.”⁷¹

⁶⁹Bourassa, S. (1991) *The Aesthetics of Landscape* London, Belhaven Press, p. 91.

⁷⁰Dovey, K. (1985), *Op. Cit.*, p. 34.

⁷¹Parsons, T. (1964) *Social Structure and Personality*, USA, The Free Press of Glencoe: A Division of The Macmillan Company, p. 218.

In the second phase a positive help which he called ‘support’ is given to the ego to cope with the great change that occurred. ‘This consists in giving enhanced positive gratification to *part* of the old motivational system, which is allowed by a set of reactions to the selective character of this gratification within the personality system and in its relations to objects.’ In the third phase the new structure will become part of the personality. Finally, in the last phase, ‘the newly internalised is consolidated and reinforced’.⁷²

These four mechanisms can be used to understand the process of localising the new forms in home environment. In this sense, when a new form comes to the home environment, people will both evaluate the existing forms and try to adapt the new one. In general, if the circumstances change, two processes occur at the same time in the home environment. These two processes are identification of the new form and re-identification of the existing form (Fig.4.5).

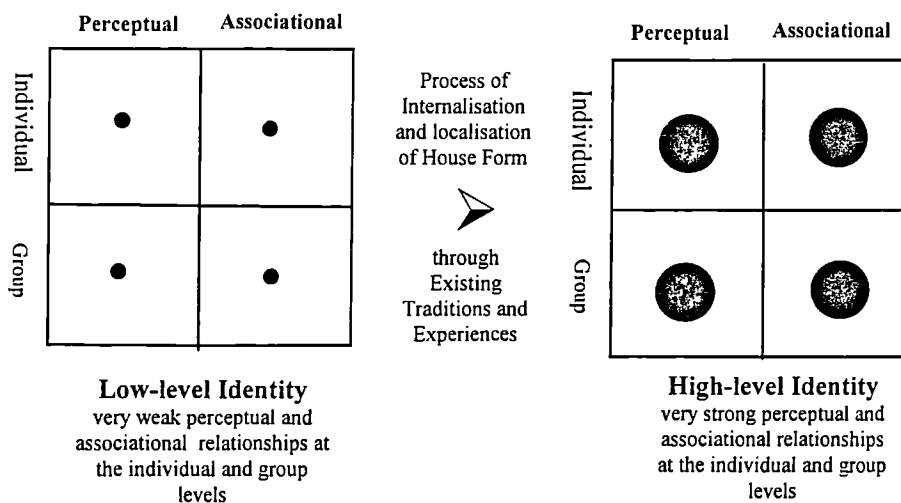


Fig. 4.5: Growth of Identity

In order to study these two processes, it is necessary to develop a number of criteria to provide the researcher with the ability to measure how identity grows and re-grows in the home environment. Therefore, three main criteria and two supplementary criteria have been developed (Fig. 4.6). The main criteria consist of three levels of identity including low, partially developed and high levels. In low-level identity, perceptual and associational relationships are very weak in both individuals and groups. Partially developed identity is where perceptual and associational

⁷²Ibid., p. 219.

identity are partially expressed by both individuals and groups. While high-level identity deals with very strong perceptual and associational relationships by both individuals and groups, the other two criteria deal with measuring how supplementary developments consolidate a new identity in the home environment. So we have partial development of new perceptual and associational identities and re-creation of a high level identity.

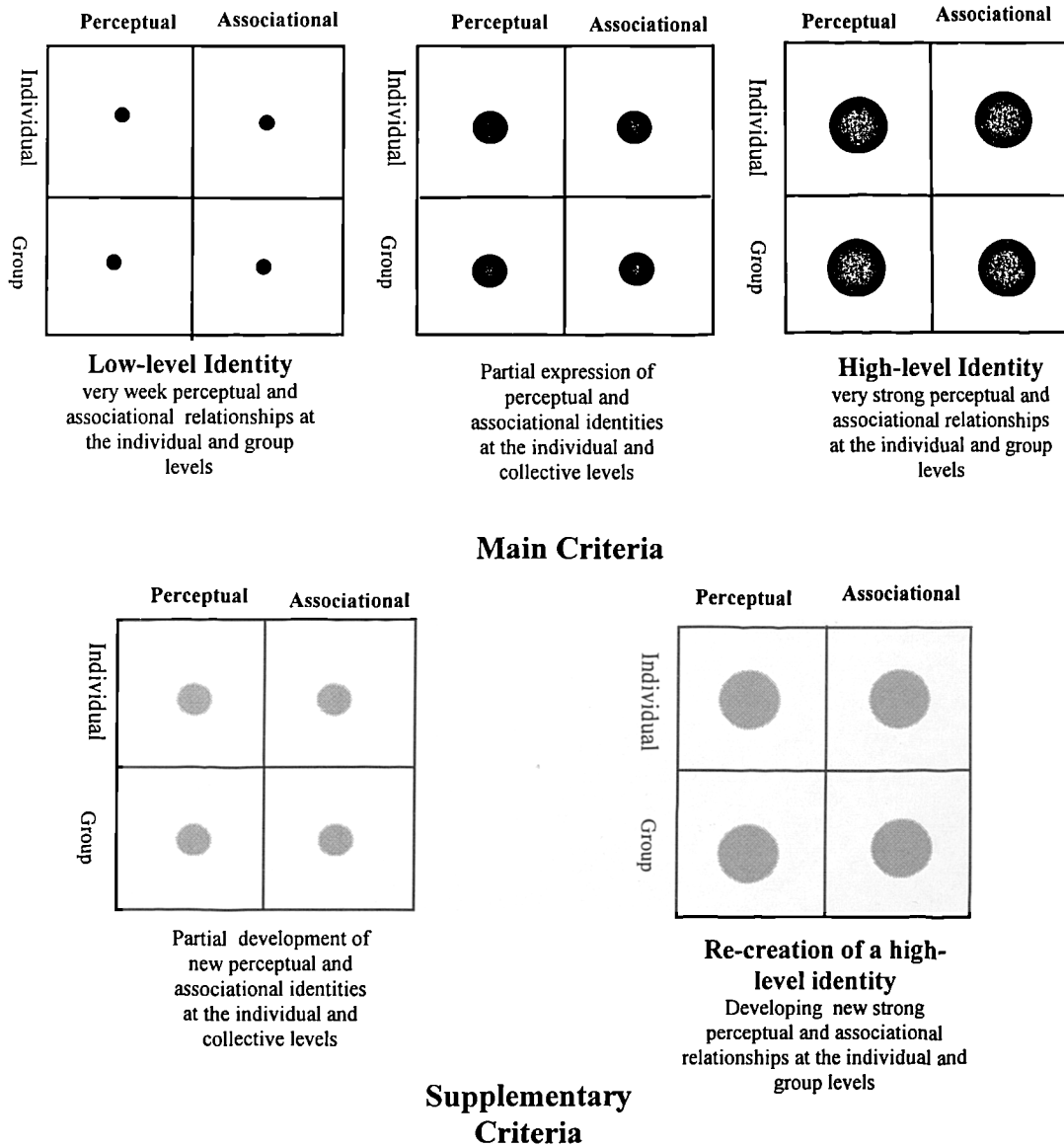


Fig. 4.6: Main and supplementary criteria of identity in the home environment

4.7.1 RE-IDENTIFICATION OF EXISTING IDENTITY

‘Since nothing is perfect, and, indeed, since even our ideas of perfection are not static, everything is subject to change over time.’⁷³

The existing forms in the home environment will respond immediately to new circumstances, such as technological changes, new images, new concepts, new lifestyles, etc. Existing identity will adapt to these changes, so that alteration to this identity will take place gradually. In general, two main paths can be developed to discuss how existing identity might respond to changes over time.

4.7.1.1 CONTINUITY OF EXISTING IDENTITY

Some of the existing forms which are associated with high-level meanings usually have the ability to continue over time. These forms have a strong resistance to change because they constitute an important part of people’s daily life (such as buildings for worship) (Fig. 4.7). Series of small changes may occur to these forms over a long time but still these small changes will not break the continuity of identity.

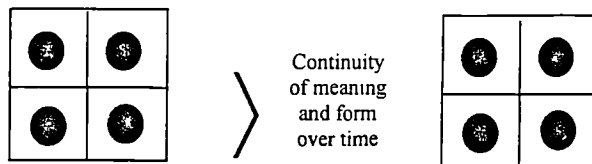


Fig. 4.7: Continuity of meaning and form of the existing identity

4.7.1.2 PARTIAL CONTINUITY OF EXISTING IDENTITY

In the case of change, many of the existing forms will suffer from partial or total transformations. Parts of perceptual and associational identities will continue in the transformed form. Later on, these partial meanings and forms may have the ability to interact with the new forms and meanings. This process can end up with a re-created high-level identity. In general we can find five cases of partial continuity of existing identity in the home environment.⁷⁴ Firstly, there is the

⁷³ Petroski, H. (1993) *The Evolution of Useful Things*, London, Pavilion Books Limited, p. 22.

⁷⁴ As a matter of fact, we can find endless cases in the home environment. However, we selected the common cases only.

continuity of associational and parts of perceptual identities. In this situation, the re-identified identity may consist of continued associational meanings and a mix of old and new perceptual meanings (Fig. 4.8, A).

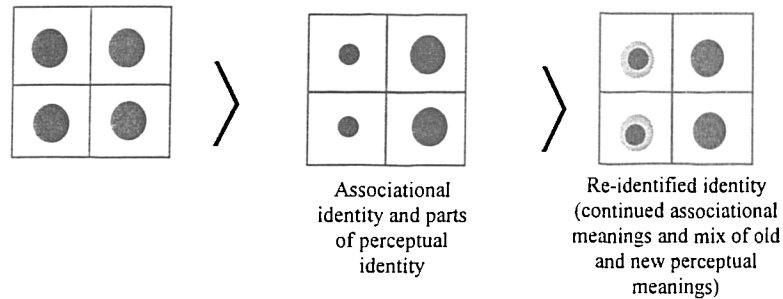


Fig. 4.8 (A) Continuity of associational identity and parts of perceptual identity

Secondly there is the continuity of perceptual identity and parts of associational identity. In this case, the re-identified identity may consist of a mix of old and new associational and perceptual meanings. This is because perceptual identity will transform to satisfy the new associational requirements (Fig. 4.8, B).

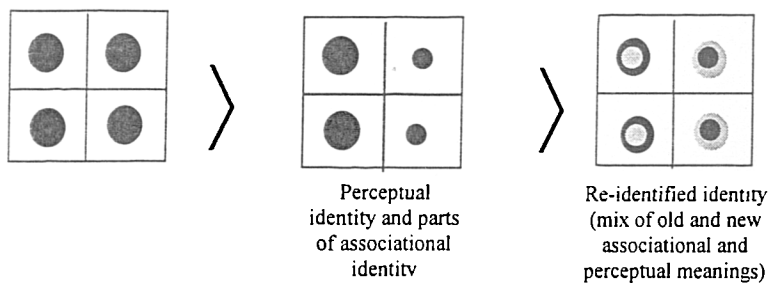


Fig. 4.8 (B) Continuity of perceptual identity and parts of associational identity

Thirdly, there is a possibility that parts of all identity types will continue. In this case, as in the previous case, a mix of old and new perceptual and associational meanings may interact and create a new identity. Still we assume that the continued perceptual parts will become weaker and may diminish over time (Fig. 4.8, C).

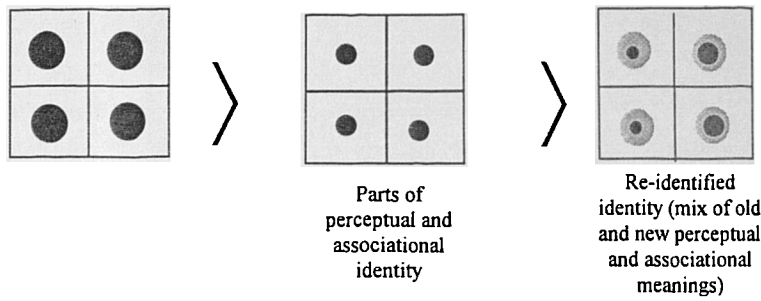


Fig. 4.8 (C) Continuity of parts of associational and perceptual identity

Fourthly, there are some cases where we can find the associational meanings while their original associated forms have completely disappeared. In this situation, the transformed form may develop an identity with continued associational meanings and dynamic perceptual identity (Fig. 4.8, D).

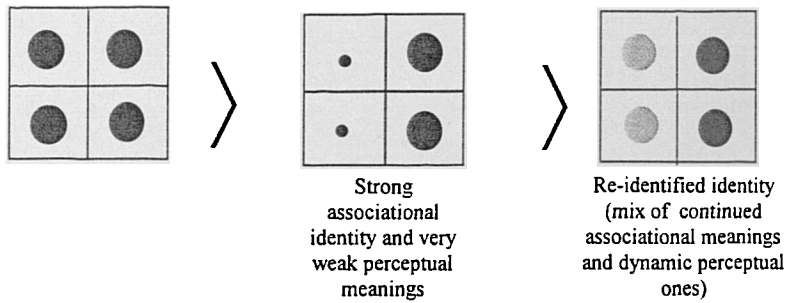


Fig. 4.8 (D) Continuity of Associational identity

The fifth situation deals with those cases where perceptual identity continues while the associated meanings change completely.⁷⁵ Usually the original identity has very weak associational meanings. (Maybe those meanings are associated with conventions that are not applicable any more.) In this case, the images and forms have very strong connections with people’s collective memory. They represent certain meanings, and they may be very sentimental or historical; therefore they continue over time. However, the transformed form may take two ways: either these forms and images continue and are associated with new associational meanings or they

⁷⁵ In many cases the form may continue but over a long period of time its original meaning may change completely. Oliver (1975) supports this phenomenon when he states: ‘There are many examples of specific motifs which have been diffused over many centuries and over thousands of miles, have assumed different meanings among different societies, and have sometimes lost their meanings or acquired new ones.’ (p. 21). Oliver also presents the example of the continuity of Pennsylvania Dutch signs as perceptual and decorative motifs in a contemporary house facade in Switzerland while their associational meanings have completely disappeared (p. 23).

change and mix with new forms and images and still they may be associated with new associational meanings (Fig. 4.8, E).

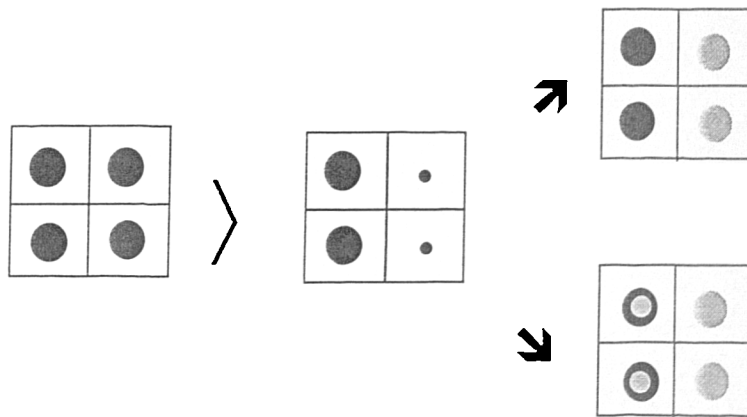


Fig. 4.8 (E) Continuity of perceptual identity

4.7.2 IDENTIFICATION OF THE NEW FORMS

In the case of a new form, the perceptual and associational relationships with both individual and group are very weak. People have still not yet build any relationship with it. The main question here is, how can forms move from the abstract form to the meaningful? To answer this question we need to develop a number of spatio-temporal paths for the process of localising forms in the home environment. In other words we will try to describe the possibilities that people have to build perceptual and associational relationships with the new forms at both individual and group levels.

4.7.2.1 COLLECTIVE ACTION

In some cases a collective action takes place in the home environment. People in this case will express their shared values and re-instate their communal physical images. Oliver support this concept when he writes:

‘The symbolic connotations of the building to the society take precedence over such considerations of resources or comfort. So a people that has moved from one region to another may take with it a building form that is inappropriate to the climatic context and cling to it because in terms of its symbol value, it is necessary to the community.’⁷⁶

⁷⁶ Oliver, P. (1975), Op. Cit., p 12.

When people move from one area to another and construct their houses collectively, the individual and collective perceptual identities work together to create the connotative meanings in the home environment. Still, people may not yet develop their associational identities. By the use of houses, people gradually attach associational meanings to the surrounding objects and spaces and build an intimate relationship with the whole environment. Oliver also shares this view when he indicates that ‘Only over the passing of generations may the adaptations of form and structure ... take place’.⁷⁷

In this case, people first will increase the strength of their individual associational identities in their private homes. To do this, people may transform their houses slightly to meet their associational requirements. We should admit here that following the establishment of the individual associational identity, the collective associational identity presumably developed partially. Eventually perhaps the new form will be associated with an associational meaning and become a medium for expressing associational identity (Fig.4.9).

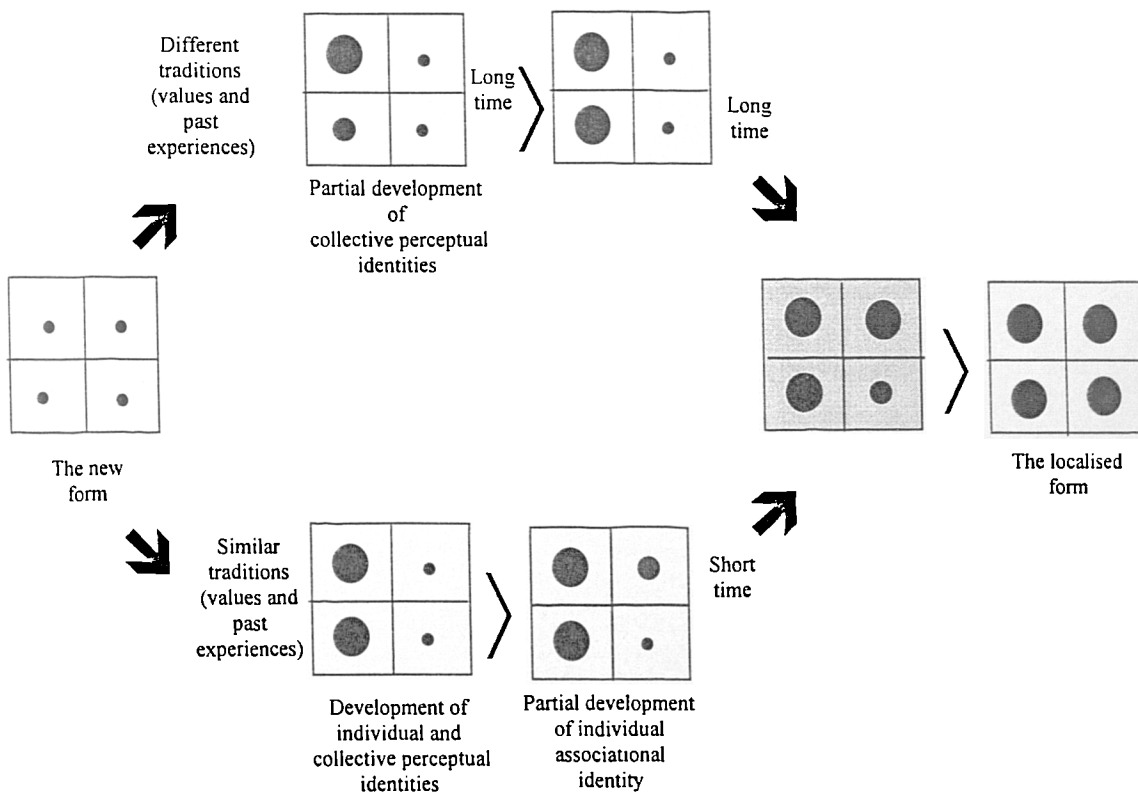


Fig. 4.9: Collective action path

⁷⁷ Ibid., p. 12.

The aforementioned scenario applies for those who moved from one area with a common background and past experiences. However, in some cases collective movements may occur by people from different backgrounds and with different past experiences. In these cases partial development of the collective perceptual identity may appear in the home environment, but it will take a longer time for people to express their collective associational identity.⁷⁸

4.7.2.2 PERSONAL ACTION

This situation assumes that the new form will be introduced at the individual level (for example, individual house design). In this case, individual perceptual identity will be established. This identity, as we have seen, is very dynamic and usually associated with low-level meaning. Usually the individual form will vanish unless other people find it suitable for them. In several cases people like other people's forms and try to imitate them in their own houses. If this happens, a collective perceptual identity may develop.⁷⁹ This is not applied to those forms which have collective perceptual meanings (such as traditional forms).

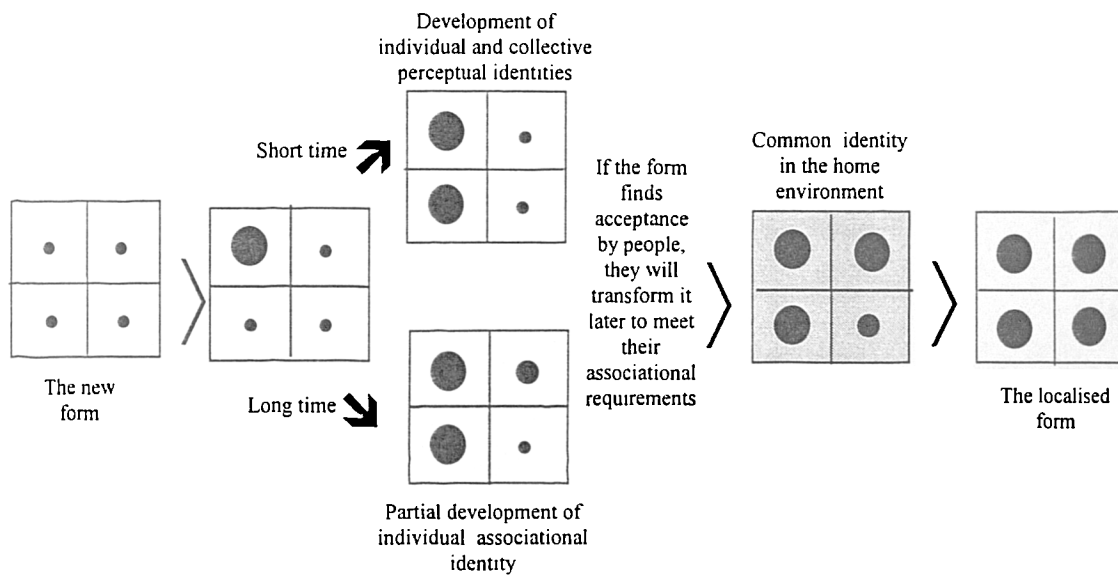


Fig. 4.10: Personal action

⁷⁸ For example Kellet in his study of two spontaneous settlements in Santa Marta in Colombia, South America, gives an account of how the people, in the construction of their homes, established their collective perceptual identity immediately. This can be attributed to the collective action that resulted from the collective move to the area. Kellet, P. (1995) Constructing Home: Production and Consumption of Popular Housing in Northern Colombia, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, Newcastle, University of Newcastle Upon Tyne. In such cases people usually construct their collective perceptual identity very quickly but it may take some time to develop their collective associational identity, especially if they originate from different places.

⁷⁹ For example, Gombrich discussed the development of the uniform which was transformed from 'a utilitarian outfit into a ritualistic object'. Usually this type of development starts as a personal action then it will find acceptance at the collective level. This is why 'Not all "phenotypes" which look similar are derived from a common ancestor'. Gombrich, E. H. (1979, 1984), Op. Cit., pp. 227-8. In fact when the form starts at the personal level it will take long time to develop. During this time past experience will modify it and bring it to the collective understanding. So, it is possible to find many similar forms with different origins.

Perceptual individual identity exists in each home environment because every one has his or her own preference, image, etc. For example, a person may see a house facade or a piece of furniture and then apply it in his or her own house. To develop a collective perceptual identity from this weak and isolated identity needs a long time and it may not necessarily succeed. This is because, as Oliver indicated, individual expression needs to be 'within the symbolic norms that the society recognises'.⁸⁰ However, in some cases the new forms finds acceptance by people and develops into a medium for a collective perceptual identity very quickly (Fig. 4.10).

4.7.2.3 Imposed Collective Action

This relationship is unstable because it assumes that collective perceptual identity has been formed before individual perceptual identity. In fact, in some cases in the home environment, a collective form may be imposed on a whole environment, such as a government housing project. This collective form is seen by outsiders as a collective identity while insiders may not share the same feeling. This form, on one hand, will not stand for a long time because people will try to alter it and express their own perceptual and associational meaning in it. Usually the transformation will take a long time but in some cases people will change their houses immediately.⁸¹ An alien form may be developed from this individual transformation. However, individual and collective associational meanings can be developed at this period. Later on, people may develop a new perceptual identity associated with their traditions and past experiences (Fig. 4.11). On the other hand, this form may be accepted by people. In this case individual perceptual identity will be developed in a very short time. Gradually, an individual and collective associational identity may be associated with this form.

⁸⁰Ibid., p. 12.

⁸¹ One of the best examples of this phenomenon is the study of Abu-Lughod for the transformation that has been made by the migrants in the city of Cairo. She said that migrants shared the same past experience of village life because they usually came from the same village and concentrated in one area in the city. Migrants tried to reproduce their village life in the city. It is common to find sheep in the street. Also, on many occasions the inhabitants built communal ovens, especially occasions such as Ramadan. Abu-Lughod, J. (1972) 'Migrant Adjustment to City Life: The Egyptian Case', In Gerald Breese (ed) *The City in Newly Developing Countries*, London, Prentice Hall International Inc., pp. 376-388. The researcher visited Al-Sharabiyya in 1991. He found that what Abu-Lughod mentioned was slightly changed because the government stopped people from building ovens in their houses. However, the communal oven still existed and virtually village life can be seen in the whole neighbourhood. This persistence of people in mobilising their past experiences can be considered as process of identification. Migrants in this case preferred to maintain their identity by transforming the whole environment in its macro and micro level to express their collective perceptual and associational identity.

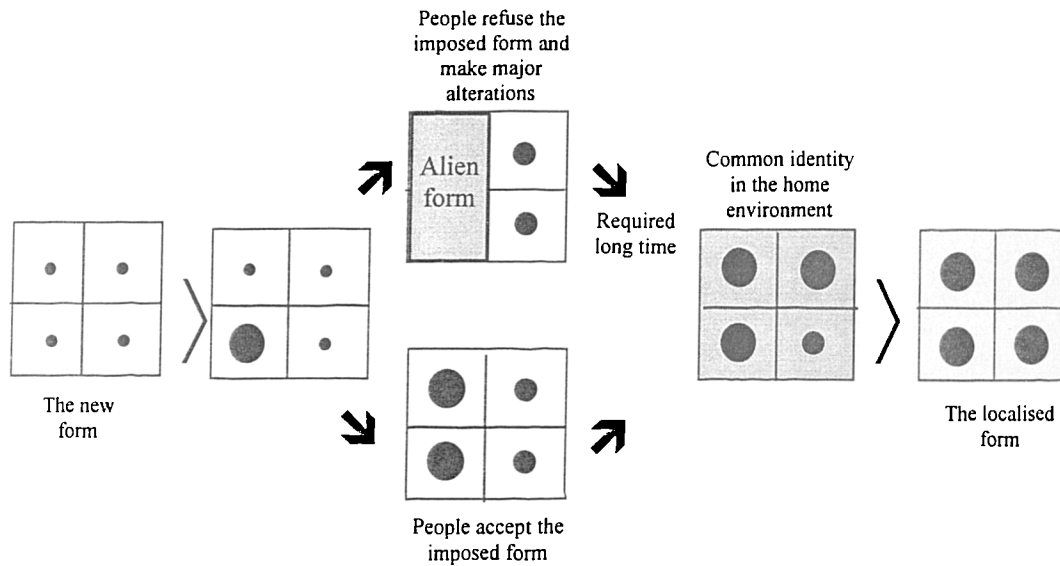


Fig. 4.11: Imposed collective action

4.8 SUMMARY

Identity as a very subjective concept always accompanied by some ambiguities and undefined boundaries. It was a challenge for this study to develop describable criteria with which to study and analyse the continuity and change of identity in the city of Hofuf. This is because there are always difficulties arising with any attempt to study identity and define its boundaries. Despite these difficulties, this chapter has aimed to establish a justifiable way for understanding identity in the home environment.

What was important for this study are those factors which make meanings take various levels and strengths. For this purpose, we found a link between meanings, values, and memory. We hypothesise that the more meaning is associated with strong values the more it becomes strong, and the more it expresses collective memory. Identity, sometime understood as a specific meaning, aims to express a specific individual and/or group. Therefore, this chapter tries to build a relationship between the concept of identity and the concept of meaning. However, meanings have different levels and strengths. This introduces another issue which needs to be clarified because we cannot build the relationship between meaning and identity unless they are equivalent.

To establish a relationship between meaning and identity, we searched for those aspects in the concept of identity which can be ranked and classified according to their strength. This objective was implemented by developing two dimensions for identity. The horizontal dimension constitutes perceptual and associational meanings and the vertical dimension, which deals with how individuals and groups evaluate and express perceptual and associational meanings in their home environment. These two dimensions have dynamic dialectic characteristics, which means that there is a dialectic between individual/group and perceptual/associational. Moreover, these two oppositions, or what we call dimensions, interrelate and overlap. This dialectic also helped us to see identity as a very dynamic phenomenon.

Still, it is essential for this study to understand how the dimension of identity can be linked with the level of meaning. For this purpose, we studied the possible relationships between identity dimensions and ended up with four types of identity. These types are **individual perceptual identity**, **collective perceptual identity**, **individual associational identity**, and **collective associational identity**. They have different strengths and can be **ranked in different levels**. As with meaning, we classified identity into three levels: **low identity**, which is mostly associated with low-level meanings and mainly concentrated in **individual perceptual identity**; **middle identity**, which is mostly associated with middle-level meanings; and **high identity**, which is associated with high-level meanings and mainly concentrated in **collective associational identity**. In general we can argue here that we can find middle identity as the common level in the home environment. This is not to say that the other two levels do not exist but that middle identity contains a wide range of identities starting from weak identity, if it is close to low level identity, to strong identity, if it is close to high identity.

Finally, this chapter has tried to furnish the way for the researcher to carry out the field work by establishing a number of spatio-temporal paths for growth and re-growth of identity in the home environment. Two directions have been developed to meet this objective. The first is re-identification of the existing identity, while the second direction deals with the identification of the new forms. These hypothetical directions and paths provide the researcher with the ability to organise the collected data and analyse them.



Existing urban boundary of Hofuf

CHAPTER V

METHODOLOGY AND FIELDWORK

CONTENTS

- 5.1 Prologue
- 5.2 Rationale of the Research Method
- 5.3 The Pilot Study
- 5.4 Fieldwork and Research Environment
 - 5.4.1 In-Depth Case Studies
 - 5.4.1.1 Traditional Home Environment
 - 5.4.1.2 Hybrid Home Environment
 - 5.4.1.3 Formal Home Environment
 - 5.4.2 House Measurements and Floor Plan Collections
 - 5.4.3 In-Depth Interviews
 - 5.4.3.1 Semi-Structured Interviews
 - 5.4.3.2 Focus Group Interviews
 - 5.4.3.3 Personal Interviews
 - 5.4.4 Observation
 - 5.4.5 Collecting Visual Data
 - 5.4.5.1 Home Exterior
 - 5.4.5.2 Home Interior
 - 5.4.6 Documents
- 5.5 Analysing the Data
 - 5.5.1 The Basic Analytical Work
 - 5.5.2 Spatial Analysis
 - 5.5.3 Visual Analysis
 - 5.5.4 Constructing Spatio-Temporal Images



METHODOLOGY AND FIELDWORK

5.1 PROLOGUE

The process of identification referred to the mechanism by which people establish a specific identity through the use and meaning of objects over a period of time. However, this process does not guarantee that a new or strong identity will develop. Developing a strong identity depends on the ability of individuals and groups to employ the objects that they use to reflect shared meanings. Moreover, it depends also on the flexibility of the object and its potentiality to cope with the change in people's use to reflect new meanings.

The process of identification in the home environment is a complicated phenomenon. What we have done in the previous chapters was an attempt to simplify this phenomenon. The operational frame, or what we called the 'analytical frame', attempts to construct the possible spatio-temporal paths for the existing and new forms in the home environment under change. This frame is general but crucial in this study. It guides the researcher in the fieldwork and clarifies which strategies for collecting data can be used.

Marshall & Rossman define research as 'a process of trying to gain a better understanding of the complexities of human interactions'.¹ Understanding the process of identification in the home environment is what this study aims at. This phenomenon, that of identification in the home environment, requires painstaking analysis to resolve its complexities. It is impossible to attribute the process to one or group of factors alone, because it has more than one dimension and may develop from countless factors. The analytical frame, thus, is an attempt to find a way through these numerous variables.

This chapter attempts to construct a research strategy able to examine the continuity and change of identity in the home environment. The required strategy in our case is not only deals with the

present situation in the home environment, but also it should dig into the past and reconstruct the use and meaning of domestic spaces in home environments no longer inhabited in Hofuf.

5.2 RATIONALE OF THE RESEARCH METHOD

‘Qualitative methods permit the evaluator to study selected issues in depth and detail. Approaching fieldwork without being constrained by predetermined categories of analysis contributes to the depth, openness, and detail of qualitative inquiry.’²

This research is guided by the goals and objectives introduced in the first chapter and elaborated in the theoretical discussion. An analytical frame was developed to operationalise the theory and examine it in real home environments. This frame suggested that the home environment is always under the pressure of change. The relationships between people and surrounding objects and space, hence, may change, and this will create new meanings and identity. This dynamism results mainly from new forms, images, lifestyles, and technology. The aim of this thesis is to describe these changes and to build spatio-temporal paths for the evolving of the present private home in Hofuf.

There are several factors influencing and determining the meanings that people associate with the forms around them. However, these factors are not constant and can change over time. Therefore, what the analytical frame attempts to demonstrate is how the new and existing meanings may interact and what are the possible ways that each one of them will take in the home environment. This means, on the one hand, that existing forms may lose their meanings and be modified to carry new meanings. On the other hand, new forms may adapted by existing traditions, meanings, and experiences to reflect existing or new meanings.

To communicate their identity people may pass through a long process of generating meanings. This process called in this study a ‘process of identification’. The study of this identification process requires in-depth investigation. This is because of numerous factors that define the ways and devices that people may use to express their identity. It is difficult to determine specific factors and attribute this process to them.

¹ Marshall, C. & Rossman, G. (1995) *Designing Qualitative Research* London, Sage Publications, p. 15.

² Patton, M. Q. (1990) *Qualitative Evaluation and Research Methods*, London, Sage Publication, p. 13.

This means that we need to develop an in-depth research model able to examine as many factors as possible in both synchronic and diachronic directions.³ We must investigate synchronically since the home environment tends to be in a stable situation at any specific time. This home environment may change from one stable situation to another at different periods of time. In each stable situation certain relationships among form, use and meaning are established. These relationships reflect the inhabitants' attempts to express personal and social identity. We also have to look at the situation diachronically, since present identity in the home environment is a result of continued, developed, and new traditions, meanings and experiences. Therefore seeing identity from a diachronic perspective will enable us to examine the persistence of people in their old identity as well as how they replace it by a new identity. Also it will provide us with the ability to examine how the form of the private home in Hofuf has responded to its continuity and change overtime.

Most of the social researchers stress the relationship between the number of cases to be investigated and the number of features in each case.⁴ If there are a large number of cases usually few features in each case will be investigated. On the other hand, if few cases are addressed, this will enable the researcher to go for in-depth investigation by including many features in each case. However, the decision to adopt a quantitative or qualitative method depends on the objectives of the study.

Besides the unlimited number of factors that may contribute to the process of identification in the home environment, the need to search for the beginning of change and reconstruct the physical and social characteristics of the early home environment has directed the study towards this in-depth method. For example, one of the main objectives of this study is searching and reconstructing the use and meanings of domestic spaces for some of the early home environments in Hofuf. But these environments are not inhabited any more. This is because we are interested

³ Marshall & Rossman listed several types of research for qualitative studies. Of these types, three are applicable for this study. First there is 'research that delves in depth into complexities and processes'. The second is the research which has 'little-known phenomena'. Finally there is 'research for which relevant variables have yet to be identified'. Marshall, C. Rossman, G. (1995), *Op Cit.* p. 43

⁴The three common types of social research approaches include quantitative, qualitative, and comparative. These types reflect certain differences in the relationship between the number of cases and the aspect or feature in each case. First, there is the quantitative approach, which deals with data such as percentages and frequencies. Second, there is the qualitative approach which deals with the experience and meaning which are represented best with words not data. However, there is another difference between quantitative and qualitative research. Quantitative researchers typically focus on the links among a smaller number of attributes across many cases when they construct representations of social life, while qualitative researchers focus on the links among a large number of attributes across relatively few cases in their representations. Ragin, C. C. 1994 *Constructing Social Research*, USA, Thousand Oaks, California, Pine Forge Press, p. xi. See also Patton, M. Q. (1990) *Op Cit.*, pp. 13-4. Finally, there is comparative research, which concentrates on the differences across cases and tries to make sense of these differences. Ragin argues 'comparative researchers examine patterns of similarities and differences across cases and try to come to terms with their diversity' (Ragin, C. C. 1994), *Op Cit.* p. 107)

in how the continuity and change of identity influenced the form of private homes. What is really important for this study, thus, is finding those case studies by which we can describe the changes that the private home in Hofuf has passed through.

Ragin states that ‘in-depth knowledge is ... achieved through the study of a single case. Often, however, it is best achieved by studying several instances of the same thing because different aspects may be more visible in different cases’.⁵ This approach is interested in commonalities and deeply examines many features of a relatively small number of cases. Qualitative analysis depends on selecting some case studies in order to understand the similarities between these cases. Ragin states that ‘even when qualitative researchers study many instances of the same thing ... they often describe the case as singular ... because of the focus on commonalities - features that the instances share’.⁶

In general the research method was adopted to deal with the diverse information needed for this study. A plan for the fieldwork was designed to achieve the following:

- To study the physical development of the private home, externally and internally.
- To reconstruct the life patterns and use and meanings of domestic spaces and how they change over time.
- To record the interaction of people as individuals and groups with the external and internal domestic spaces.
- To describe why and how people generate and use meanings in their private homes.

5.3 THE PILOT STUDY

‘The walk gave the researcher an initial picture of what life in that home was like: its design successes, some problems, exceptional situations, patterned wear and tear. At the beginning of a research project, such observations can be used to spark investigators to think about what the observed objects might mean.’⁷

The pilot study aims to provide the researcher with a clear view about the availability of data and the possibilities of accessibility to those data. To carry out the in-depth study and measurements, the job was directed toward discovering what the possibilities are to find suitable case studies.

⁵ Ibid., p. 86.

⁶ Ibid., p. 87.

These case studies should represent the diachronic development of the private home in Hofuf. This means that we need to measure and interview cases that can reflect this historical perspective.

Contemporary Hofuf contains many neighbourhoods; the old city has become a small neighbourhood surrounded by large and well-populated residential and commercial districts. To carry out the pilot study we tried to develop a systematic approach to build up a clear view about the formation of the home environments over time. Before we started the study a comparison between several aerial photographs was made. Aerial photographs for the city between 1935 and 1985 were collected.⁸ The sources of these photographs, 1935, 1960, 1967, and 1976 is Saudi ARAMCO, while Al-Hassa municipality gave the researcher aerial maps of Hofuf in 1985. In addition, reproduced maps for the land subdivision of the residential settlements for the last ten years were collected from the municipality and some real estate offices.

From the comparison between these different aerial photographs and maps a chronological classification for the home environment in Hofuf was developed. This classification contains main physical, social, economical, and technological changes that the house form has passed through.⁹ In this connection, the home environment in Hofuf can be divided into three main types, the traditional, hybrid and formal home environments (Tables 5.1, a, b, c).

We established theoretical boundaries between these home environments to understand the main factors that contribute to the development of the house form in Hofuf. In reality, there are overlaps in all periods and there are no definite boundaries between them. However, these periods worked as criteria for selecting the case studies and helped the researcher in identifying each case study and its importance for the study.

The chronological classification of the home environment was followed by site observation to record the main features in each home environment. The procedures that followed in this study were originally developed by Brunskill who divided the fieldwork into three stages including recording the features of the site (the pilot study), then surveying and measuring (gathering the

⁷ Zeisel, J. (1981) *Inquiry by Design: Tools for Environment-Behaviour Research*, Monterey, CA, Brook/Cole, p. 91.

⁸Collecting these aerial photographs was a long process. The researcher asked the dean of the College of Architecture and Planning at King Faisal University in Damman, to write a letter to public relations in ARAMCO. After three or four months, they replied by sending the aerial maps.

⁹ This classification also depends on reviewing several documents and literature.

data), and finally analysing the data.¹⁰ The pilot study focused on recording the main features of Hofuf and provided a data base for the researcher to carry out the survey.

Table 5.1 (A): Characteristics of the traditional home environment

General	-Represents the old city -Consists of three major quarters - <i>Al-Kut</i> , <i>Arrif'a</i> , and <i>Anna'athil</i> -The first municipality established in 1900 (Ottoman period).
Physical Features	-Irregular planning pattern -Streets and thoroughfares followed a clear hierarchical organisation (starting from the main public street which connected the three main quarters in the old city, through the semi-public streets inside each quarter, and finally to semi-private streets which led to a house or a cluster of houses)
Social Features	-Houses grouped and clustered to represent a social unit called the <i>fereej</i> . -Usually one or two main <i>hamolas</i> lived in the <i>fereej</i> .
Characteristics of the House Form	-Courtyard house -Similarities in external features -Similarities in building materials and techniques -Entirely constructed by people

Table 5.1 (B): Characteristics of the hybrid home environment

<i>Assalhiyyah</i>	General	-Planned by local people in 1904 -Located in the south east of the old city -Represents the period of indirect impact of Western culture
	Physical Features	-The neighbourhood is divided into large blocks planned in grid-iron pattern -Each block called <i>Hota</i> -The inner streets in each block followed irregular pattern (almost identical to the traditional one) -The lot shape is irregular and almost similar to traditional environment
	Social Features	-Some of those extended families who lived in the traditional quarter <i>Arrif'a</i> moved to <i>Assalhiyyah</i> . -Social clustering continued because each extended family gathered in one or more blocks.
	Characteristics of the House Form	-Courtyard house type -Similarities in external features -Similarities in building materials and techniques -Entirely built by inhabitants.
<i>Al-Howaidhiyyah</i> <i>Athulaithiyyah</i> <i>Al-Mazrou'yyah</i> <i>Al-Mansouryyah</i> <i>Al-Fadliyyah</i> 1940-1960	General	-Beginning of direct impact of Western culture (oil discovery and exporting in 1938) -Expansion of the old city from all directions -Introduction of new house image, building materials and techniques
	Physical Features	-Planning system is similar to <i>Assalhiyyah</i> . -Inner streets more regular -The lot shape more regular because the land subdivided and sold before the construction
	Social Features	-People of Hofuf were not enthusiastic to move to the new neighbourhoods at that time. They call these areas <i>al-bar</i> (the desert). However, groups of people moved in the early 1940's and they establish two <i>mahallas</i> <i>Al-Mazrou'yyah</i> and <i>Al-Mansouryyah</i> . Before this development there was an extension of the <i>Anna'athil</i> quarter which created the small neighbourhood of <i>Al-Howaidhiyyah</i> -Some of the extended families later on moved to these areas and established their clusters in the existed <i>mahallas</i> .
	Characteristics of the House Form	-Court yard house type -House facades contain old and new elements. -Both traditional and new building systems, materials, and techniques. - New names appears for the house such <i>Bait Arabi</i> and <i>Nuss-Mussallah</i> (half concrete house). -Some technical support was given to people.

¹⁰ Brunskill, R. (1971) *Illustrated Handbook of Vernacular Architecture*, London, Faber and Faber.

Table 5.1 (C): Characteristics of the formal home environment

Transitional Neighbourhoods 1960-75	General features	First Building Regulations in Saudi Arabia were issued in 1960 (introduction of set back) -First governmental planning for Hofuf in 1960.
	Physical Features	-Grid-Iron Pattern in both main and inner streets -Small neighbourhoods (most of these neighbourhoods occupied palm tree farms) -Beginning of setback system
	Social Features	-Transitional neighbourhoods were occupied by those families who moved from the traditional home environment especially from <i>Anna'athil</i> quarter. -A complete neighbourhood, for example occupied by one extended family, such as <i>Al-Bugsha</i> .
	Characteristics of the House Form	- House type (some with setbacks; some with air shafts; some with courtyards) -Reinforced concrete as only building material and technique. -Wide technical support was provided
Contemporary Neighbourhoods 1975-present time	General Features	-First master plan for Hofuf was initiated in 1976 (by Candilis) -Real Estate Development Fund was established in 1974. -Ministry of Municipal and Rural Affairs was established in 1975
	Physical Features	-Several forms of grid pattern were applied. -large neighbourhoods (for example more than 20000 people lived in <i>Al-Khaldiyyah</i> neighbourhood)
	Social Features	-Form of social clustering found in some neighbourhoods such as <i>Assalmanyyah</i> . -Families who lived in <i>Al-Kut</i> and <i>Anna'athil</i> mainly moved to the southern and western neighbourhoods while those who lived in <i>Arrifa'a</i> moved to eastern neighbourhoods, and those who lived in northern part of <i>Arrifa'a</i> moved to north east neighbourhoods.
	Characteristics of the House Form	-Villa-type dwelling -Wide range of house facades but can be classified by the plastering materials such as texture facade, stone facades, granite facades, and white plastic painting facades (each material represents a specific period) -Houses required to be designed and approved by professional architects.

The researcher spent two weeks in each home environment to identify its main characteristics.¹¹ This was done by visiting the neighbourhoods that constitute each type and strolling through the houses, photographing them, and asking the old people about their houses. Some of old men allowed the investigator to take photographs of them. Usually those old men gather in the afternoon time and sit on a bench called *daka*.¹²

The researcher developed a recording sheet to record the main external features.¹³ Observing old men and discussing general matters about their houses and the history of their home environment helped the researcher to refine the chronological classification. Also, by recording the external feature of each home environment, general findings were generated. Some of these findings were very crucial in identifying the in-depth case studies. In each home environment looked in this study there was always an element of change. In the hybrid home environment, for instance, the house facades were similar to the traditional ones at the beginning of change, whereas a

¹¹The researcher spent six week to perform the pilot study (September and October 1996).

¹² This is common in the traditional and hybrid home environments. In fact, most Saudi families moved from these areas. However, some families demolished their old houses and built new ones in reinforced concrete. The researcher noticed that even if old people left their old neighborhood they usually visit their old friends and sit with them in the afternoon (see Appendix II).

mixture of new and old elements appeared in the house facades in the later houses in this home environment. This shift was used as a criterion for representing the change. This criterion was also employed to select the in-depth case studies.

5.4 FIELDWORK AND RESEARCH ENVIRONMENT

From the pilot study, the researcher found that those neighbourhoods which were built in the same time has a specific characteristics in terms of the house facades, colour, and materials. This is not to say that those neighbourhoods which were built earlier or later are totally different, but that there were some characteristics which dominated the home environment at a specific time. Some of those characteristics were continued and some disappeared. To discover the continuity and change of those characteristics a full systematic study is needed.

It has been essential to construct a plan for each home environment in Hofuf. This is because each home environment has its own research circumstances. For example, exploring the traditional home environment is different from exploring the formal home environment. In the former environment most of the original inhabitants have moved out to new neighbourhoods leaving the original area almost deserted. Formal settlements are almost all occupied by native families. Thus different strategies were followed to collect the data from different home environments.

It was necessary also for this study to reconstruct the life pattern in those home environments which were built before 1960. This is because it is rarely found now in Hofuf that native families continuously lived in those settlements. We are interested in those settlements because, as we mentioned, we are looking at the process of identification in the home environment. Simply, we need to answer what was the impact of continued traditions and past experiences on the growth and re-growth of identity in the home environment.

Zelditch (1962) introduced two criteria to judge qualitative research. The first is 'informational adequacy', which mainly deals with the question, 'Does the research design maximize the possibilities so that the researcher will be able to respond to the questions thoroughly and thoughtfully?' The second criterion is 'efficiency', which deals with the question, 'Does the plan allow adequate data to be collected at the least cost in terms of time, access, and cost to

¹⁵ The contents of table 5.1a, b, c generated from an extensive record for the three home environments.

participants?’ Marshall & Rossman added one more criterion, that is ‘ethical considerations’, which deals with participants’ privacy, security, and rights.¹⁴ The above mentioned criteria were addressed while drafting the fieldwork plan. For example, the researcher made every possible connection before he decided on those people who would be interviewed. Those connections had been made while the researcher was in UK. This makes the plan more efficient, and once the researcher reached the site he could start the fieldwork.

To carry out the fieldwork, the researcher divided the work into two phases. Both of these phases were planned to fulfil the study requirements. The first phase accomplished between 1st November 1996 and 31st January 1997. In this phase the researcher identified the case studies in the three home environments and carried out the home measurements and semi-structured interviews with the home owners. The second phase, accomplished between 25th June 1997 and 15th September 1997, was mainly planned to fill any gaps found in the first one. The researcher spent the intervening period classifying and testing the data. The classification of the data showed some gaps, especially in the *Assalhiyyah* and transitional neighbourhoods, for which more data was subsequently collected.¹⁵

In such explanatory study the aim is directed towards explaining the events, beliefs, attitudes, and policies that shaped the phenomenon of identification in the home environment. The question which the data should explain is how these forces interact to produce this phenomenon, an answer which requires data from a variety of sources. Patton suggests that qualitative research can be conducted by three techniques, participant observation, in-depth interviewing, and document analysis.¹⁶ However, for the purpose of this study we need to add two more techniques, namely house measurements and systematic photography. These two techniques are vital for any architectural study.

¹⁴Marshall, C. & Rossman, G. (1995), Op Cit., p 42

¹⁵In fact the researcher tried in the first phase to cover all home environments but there was an accessibility problem to the case studies in the *Assalhiyyah* and transitional neighborhoods. Therefore, when the researcher return to UK, he tried to contact many people in Hofuf to find suitable case studies

¹⁶Patton, M. Q. 1990 , Op Cit., p 10 Also Marshall, C. & Rossman, G. 1995), Op Cit. p 41

5.4.1 IN-DEPTH CASE STUDIES

'Information-rich cases are those from which one can learn a great deal about issues of central importance for the purpose of the evaluation ...'¹⁷

The house form in Hofuf remained with minimum change until 1940, when the economy of Saudi Arabia flourished after the discovery and exportation of oil in 1938. Between 1940 and 1960 the changes were limited, but the city was preparing itself for major changes in the later years. In the late hybrid period, new forms of residential units were introduced and developed in the subsequent periods.

The aim of the study is to understand the continuity and change of identity of the present private home in Hofuf. One of the main criteria that determined what case to investigate was that the house should be owned by the family. The ability to afford to build a house, thus, was a necessary criterion in selecting the case.¹⁸ The study in fact concentrates more on average people who can be classified as belonging to the middle income group.¹⁹ This is not to say that the 'business elite' group are completely eliminated; indeed on some occasions an indication of their impact on mobilising and escalating certain images in the home environment will be indicated.²⁰

Selecting the in-depth case studies depends on the typology of the home environment which was developed in the pilot study. This criterion was used to ensure that we cover all stages of the development of house form in Hofuf. In this sense, twenty-five case studies were chosen to cover the growth of the house form in Hofuf throughout this century. This technique is supported by Patton when he describes the 'homogeneous samples' which mainly aim 'to describe some particular subgroup in depth'.²¹ This can be linked to what Gold calls 'sociological sampling'. Gold states:

¹⁷ Patton, M. Q. (1987) *How to Use Qualitative Methods in Evaluation* London, Sage Publications, p. 52.

¹⁸ In this study the concern is mainly on how people express themselves in their private homes. In this sense, either people use expensive furniture or modest furniture; the importance lies in how and why they got to be the way it appears.

¹⁹ It is difficult to classify people according to their income because this subject is sensitive to people and no other information is available. Katakura (1977) noted in her study about Wadi Fatima that 'people shied away from talking about their financial situation'. Al-Saati, A. (1987) *Resident Satisfaction in Subsidized Housing: An Evaluation Study of* Unpublished Ph.D., University of Michigan., p. 21.

²⁰ The impact of the business elite group on the Saudi home environment is indicated by some researchers. For example, Adu-Gazzeah has said that members of this group tend to 'express themselves in the built environment with images of progress that are borrowed from foreign, mainly Western, societies. The middle class desire to build houses and construct buildings that are comparable to those built by the business elite.' Adu-Gazzeah, T. (1997) *Op. Cit.*, p. 229. In the city of Hofuf it is hard to provide strong evidence supporting this argument because business group in Hofuf is very small compared to Riyadh, Jeddah, and Dammam.

²¹ Patton, M. Q. (1987), *Op. Cit.*, p. 54.

‘Sociological sampling’s overarching assumption is that the people whose society is to be studied are the very best source of information on how to put together an empirically grounded, representative sample of that society.²²

The case studies are divided into subgroups according to the main residential settlements. Each subgroup contains a number of case studies from the same type. This technique supports the objective of the study in the sense that it provides insight about the development of the private home in the city. That is why the researcher tried to intensify the number of case studies in the later periods because, in those home environments, the house form passed thorough radical and rapid changes. For this purpose, thirteen cases were selected to cover those home environments which were built between 1960 and the present time, while those home environments which were built in the first half of this century, in addition to traditional home environments, are represented by only twelve cases, six from each home environment (Table: 5.2).

Table 5.2: The in-depth case studies

Home Environment	Number of Cases
Traditional Home Environment	6
Hybrid Home Environment	6 2 cases in the <i>Assalhiyyah</i> neighbourhood and 4 cases in the neighbourhoods that were constructed between 1940 and 1960
Formal Home Environment	13 3 in transitional neighbourhoods and 10 in contemporary neighbourhoods

The selected cases in each period have been determined by suitability, availability, and accessibility. In reality, there are some difficulties in finding cases of the early changes because many of them have already disappeared and been replaced by new houses. Few cases, then, were

²² He also discusses two types of sampling that have been used in this type of research. The first type is ‘theoretical sampling’ which aims ‘to generate new knowledge of theoretical importance through describing and explaining the basic processes at work in the members’ situations’ The second type is ‘substantive sampling’ which is ‘relatively more oriented to generating informants’ natural r folk accounts of their observations, experiences, and reflections’. He added that two samplings occur together, but the researcher ‘place[s] emphasis on one or the other in the light of having relatively theoretical or substantive research objectives’ Gold, R. L. (1997) ‘The Ethnographic Method in Sociology’ *Qualitative Inquiry*, Vol. 3, No.4 (December), pp 388-402.

identified and measured. Another problem regarding those case studies is that, even when the researcher found some cases, their original inhabitants were unknown.²³

The main obstacle, thus, centred on finding the original owners for the in-depth cases studies. The original residents of the traditional home environment, for example, had started their collective move from the area between the late 1970's and early 1980's. This makes the work more difficult, because firstly we need to identify the cases, and then we need to be sure that we have access to the original owners to interview them.

Patton argues that 'in qualitative inquiry *the researcher is the instrument*. Validity in qualitative methods, therefore, hinged to a great extent on the skill, competence, and rigor of the person doing fieldwork'.²⁴ In fact the researcher used his previous experience of measuring the traditional houses in his Master's work (about the traditional home in Hofuf) to develop a combined technique for the in-depth case studies. This technique encompasses house measurements, systematic photography, participant observations (only in the case studies between 1975 and the present time), and semi-structured interviews. This combined technique was adopted because it was essential for this study to build up a deep understanding of how people gave the external and internal domestic spaces and the objects they use identifiable meanings.

5.4.1.1. Traditional Home Environment

Reconstructing the traditional daily life and use and meaning of domestic space are constituent steps in studying the continuity and change of identity in Hofuf's home environment. In order to do that, the researcher tried to collect data from those people who lived in the traditional home environment. The in-depth case studies have been selected according to the typology of traditional houses.

From the pilot study, three main house types were found in the traditional home environment. Our criterion for developing this typology was the men's reception space, the *majlis*. The *majlis* in traditional Hofuf took three forms. Firstly there is the oldest type which was a covered space associated with an open courtyard. The second type is the double storey hall which was

²³For example, the researcher measured a house in the hybrid home environment (it was empty and difficult to enter, but one of the neighbours helped the researcher to enter the house and he stayed until the measurement was completed). The researcher found the name of the owner on one of the old electricity bills. Later he made some contacts to find the owner. Fortunately, the owner was found and he agreed to do the interview.

developed from the first type. Both the first and second types are located in the ground floor. Finally there is the latest traditional *majlis* located on the first floor.²⁵

Six cases were measured and interviewed, two cases for each house type. To research each case, the researcher went through a long process starting from selecting appropriate cases, through finding the original owners, and ending with persuading the owner to make the interview. In general each case study passed through four steps. First step was identifying the case according to the house type.²⁶ The second was searching for the original owner and asking him if he was willing to do the interview. The third was measuring and drawing the house and reviewing the drawing in the site. The fourth step was interviewing the owner.²⁷

5.4.1.2 Hybrid Home Environment:

In the hybrid home environment, the situation was slightly different from the traditional home environment. In *Assalhiyyah* neighbourhood, for example, very few cases were available because many people were tempted by the interest-free loans which were provided by the Real Estate Development Fund to demolish their original houses and build a new one.²⁸ This made the situation more difficult; however, two cases were measured and interviewed. Through the connections of several relatives and friends the researcher found accessibility to one house while the other house was drawn by its owner.²⁹

Of those settlements which were constructed between 1940 and 1960, four cases were selected and interviewed. From the pilot study, the researcher noticed that the early houses which were built in the 1940s had facades very similar to those in the traditional settlements, while those which were built in 1950s had a mix of new and traditional elements coexisting in the same facade. This factor was used as a criterion for selecting the in-depth case studies. Therefore, two cases were selected from the early houses and another two selected from the other 1950's houses.

²⁴Patton, M. Q. (1990), Op. Cit., p. 14.

²⁵ See Chapter VII.

²⁶We should admit here that there were difficulties in finding some cases, especially the first type, because many traditional houses passed through large transformations in the last four decades.

²⁷ See Appendix V.

²⁸Especially since *Assalhiyyah* neighborhood is planned and has no transportation difficulties such as those in the traditional home environment.

²⁹The first house owned by Shiekh Mubarak Al-Mubarak (deceased). The interview was conducted with his son Dr. Abdulhamid Al-Mubarak (40 years). The researcher took the house key for one week to carry out the measurements; then he conducted the interview. The owner redrew the original plan of the house and provided the researcher with full details about the transformation of the house (See Appendix V). The second house was owned by Al-Jabar.

5.4.1.3 Formal Home Environment

This home environment can be classified into two periods. First is the transitional period which is represented by the neighbourhoods built between 1960 and 1975. The second is the contemporary period represented by those neighbourhoods built after 1975. The transitional period can be seen as the pre-villa period. Study of this period is essential for this thesis because it enables the researcher to understand people's position in regard to the first building regulations that applied in Saudi Arabia. Those regulations were interpreted and applied by people in this period with the absence of governmental institutions that could force them to carry them out.

In the transitional period, there were few cases available, firstly because transitional neighbourhoods were very small and secondly because most of the original families who lived in those areas in the 1960s and 70s moved to the new neighbourhoods that were constructed in the 1980s and 1990s. However, three cases were selected to represent this period. These cases were chosen on a time basis, one case for every five years.

As for the contemporary period, the situation was easier because the floor plans were available either with the owner of the house or in the design office. Ten cases were selected from three neighbourhoods only. Two cases were selected from *Alwesyta* neighbourhood. This neighbourhood is considered one of the first contemporary residential settlements in Hofuf; construction started in the mid-seventies. Moreover, the houses in this settlement represent the early villa-type in Hofuf.

The other eight cases were selected from *Al-Khaldiyyah* and *Assalmaniyyah* neighbourhoods. These two neighbourhoods represent the common grid-iron pattern that applies in the contemporary residential settlements in Hofuf. Moreover, they are considered the largest neighbourhoods in the city. Construction in *Al-Khaldiyyah* started in the late seventies, and in *Assalmaniyyah* in the early eighties. There are some new houses in these two settlements still under construction, which enabled the researcher to select cases from different periods. Therefore, three houses were chosen from each settlement to represent the early, middle, and late eighties and one house was chosen from the nineties.

5.4.2 HOUSE MEASUREMENTS AND FLOOR PLAN COLLECTIONS

It was necessary for this study to collect a number of examples, especially from the traditional and contemporary environments. These examples are very important for the study and they can fill the gaps that may be found in the main case studies. Despite their physical accessibility, some of the measured and collected floor plans are excluded from the in-depth case studies, either because their owners were unknown, or because we had already interviewed similar cases. We need more examples, however, to show how forms and spaces changed over time.³⁰ The need for more examples remains essential because they will be used in both the graphical analysis and the discussion of the evolution of house form and spatial relationships.

In the traditional home environment, twenty cases were collected. These cases were either measured by the researcher or collected from different resources.³¹ In fact the researcher tried to make use of the available floor plans of traditional homes because measuring old houses consumed time.³² However, some cases were measured by the researcher because of their originality. For example, a group of houses was measured by the researcher because they represent how the traditional house in Hofuf responded to changing life circumstances. These houses were originally one house and became divided over time.³³

For the contemporary home environment the researcher contacted several design offices in Hofuf and he asked them to select two examples from each year of their work from the time they started the profession. Five design offices responded and gave the researcher examples from their work. These examples covered almost two decades from 1977 to 1997 and represented one hundred and fifty floor plans. Of this number, the researcher selected a number of examples representing the development of the house form in Hofuf in the last two decades.

³⁰ This was the case in the measured and collected floor plans in the traditional home environment.

³¹ These resources are: Winterhalter, C. (1981) Indigenous Housing and Design Principles in the Eastern Province of Saudi Arabia, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, Swiss Federal Institute of Technology, Zurich; Earls, M. (1989) Architecture: The Sources of the Traditional Architecture of the Eastern Province of Saudi Arabia, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, University of Newcastle Upon Tyne; Alp, A. (199) The Architectural Heritage of Saudi Arabia's Eastern Province, Unpublished Report, Dhahran, King Fahad University of Petroleum & Minerals, Aloweid, A. M. 1991 An Evaluation of Urban Housing in the Kingdom of Saudi Arabia, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, University of Queensland, Queensland Australia , Al-Naim, M. (1993) Potentiality of the Traditional House: A Case Study of Hofuf, AlHasa, Unpublished MA Thesis, King Faisal University, Dammam; Al-Musallam, A. (1995) Al-Hasa Traditional House: A Case Study of Al-Kut District, Special Work-Shop in Architectural Design (Unpublished), King Faisal University, Dammam.

³² The researcher usually first drew a sketch of the house, then measured every space, then measured the whole area of the house by measuring its roof, then drew the floor plans, and finally went back to the house and reviewed the drawings. This process usually took 3 days to one week (according to the size of the house).

³³ See Chapter VI.

5.4.3 IN-DEPTH INTERVIEWS

‘People who live or work together or have similar racial, ethnic, or religious backgrounds develop shared understandings that are communicated to others in their group and constitute their culture. In-depth qualitative interviewing helps explain how and why culture is created, evolves, and is maintained. Qualitative interviews also explore specific topics, events, or happenings.’³⁴

The strength of the interview as a data collection technique stems from the fact that it can provide a large amount of data in a short time. Rubin and Rubin state that ‘qualitative in-depth interviews are much more like conversations than formal events with predetermined response categories’. They add that, combined with observation, ‘interviews allow the researcher to understand the meanings people hold for their everyday activities’.³⁵ However, in ethnographical studies, ‘even when we are able to question informants, we do not always get straightforward replies’.⁶ This study tries to understand the hidden meanings that people embody in their home environment. We realise that people do many things without able to describe them. consequently, this technique was used to support the multi-sources data collection that has been used in this research.

Marshall & Rossman propose that the interview can be classified into four forms. Firstly there is ‘ethnographic interviewing’; the value of this form of interview stems from ‘its focus on culture through the participant’s perspective’. The second form is ‘phenomenological interviewing’, which assumes that ‘there is a “structure and essence” to shared experiences that can be determined’. ‘Its goal is to enable the researcher to identify the phenomenon in its “pure form, uncontaminated by extraneous intrusions”’. Thirdly there is ‘elite interviewing’, which mainly focuses on special types of interviewee. ‘Elite individuals are considered to be the influential, the prominent, and the well-informed people in an organization or community and are selected for interview on the basis of their expertise in areas relevant to the research.’ The fourth form is ‘focus group interviewing’ which assumes that ‘an individual’s attitudes and beliefs do not form in a vacuum: people often need to listen to others’ opinion and understandings in order to form their own’. This type of interview can be ‘conducted several times with several individuals so that the researcher can identify trends in the perceptions and opinions expressed’.³⁷

³⁴ Rubin, H. J. & Rubin, I. S. (1995) *Qualitative Interviewing: The Art of Hearing Data* London, Sage Publication, p. 3

³⁵ Marshall, C. Rossman, G. (1995), *OP. Cit.*, pp. 80-1.

³⁶ Douglas, M. (1972) ‘Symbolism Orders in the Use of Domestic Space’ In Ucko, P, Tringham, R and Dimbleby, G. W *Man, Settlement and Urbanism*, England, Duckworth Co. Ltd, pp. 513-21.

³⁷ Marshall, C. Rossman, G. (1995), *OP. Cit.*, pp. 81-5. They also discuss the advantages and disadvantages of these forms of interview Ethnographic interviewing is ‘especially useful for eliciting participant’s meanings for events and behaviors, and generate a typology of cultural

In general three forms of interviews have been used including semi-structured interview, personal interview, and focus group interview. In the first form a combined technique was used to provide the participants with visual data. Each interview form was accompanied by the floor plans of the participant's house. In the second type of interview a number of elite and old people were chosen for the interviews. For the last type of interview, the researcher conducted interviews with three groups of people.

Regarding the group and personal interviews, some difficulties faced the researcher. These obstacles were found to be due to the need to find proper people who lived in the traditional home environment and practiced a traditional lifestyle. Many people refused to give interviews. This was expected from the beginning, so that the researcher tried to contact many people through their relatives and friends to persuade them to give interviews. Also, he asked them to nominate those people who knew more about Hofuf.³⁸ Another important issue faced the researcher, that is interviewing old women. In the society of Hofuf, it is prohibited to see women except one's closest relatives. On the other hand, reconstructing the life pattern in Hofuf required accessibility to old and young women. Several interviews were therefore carried out by the researcher's wife, sisters, and friends.³⁹

In all interviews, the researcher was aware of people's customs and conventions. For example, it is a must that the guest drink coffee or tea, unless he has some medical problems. The researcher cannot refuse the hospitality of the interviewee otherwise they will consider this as insulting. Also, in some cases, people like to talk about themselves, and in such cases, the researcher indirectly tried to bring the interviewee back to the questions under study. It is difficult to force people to talk only about one topic.

classification schemes'. The most important weaknesses of this method is that values may be imposed by the ethnographer. Elite interviews have many advantages, such as: 1) Valuable information can be gained from these participants because of the positions they hold in social, political, financial, or administrative realms; 2) The elite can usually provide an overall view of an organisation or its relationship to other organisations; 3) They are more likely than other participants to be familiar with the legal and financial structures of the organisation; 4) They are also able to report on an organisation's policies, past histories, and future plans, from a particular perspective. However, there are some disadvantages for this method mainly concentrated in the difficulty of accessing elite people. The results of the focused group method have 'high face validity- because the method is readily understood, the findings appear believable; it is relatively low cost; it provides quick results and it can increase the sample size of qualitative studies by interviewing more people at one time'. This method has some disadvantages such as: 1) The interviewer has less control over a group interview than individual one, which can result in lost time as dead-end or irrelevant issues are discussed; 2) The data are difficult to analyse; 3) The method requires the use a highly trained observer; 4) There are logistic problems arising from the need to conduct the discussion as conducive to a conversation.

³⁸ This technique is supported by Gold when he discusses the theoretical and substantive sampling. He argues that the researcher can start by selecting the 'initial informants'. The initial informants can be known from the previous fieldwork for the case study. Those informants are likely to be able to give the researcher a good overview of the community. 'These persons are then asked to identify those who are generally thought to be representative of various social categories and points of view of interest to the research.' Gold, R. L. (1997), *Op. Cit.*, p. 392.

³⁹ The difficulty of interviewing women in Saudi society has been indicated by many researchers. See Al-Saati, A. (1987), *Op. Cit.*, pp. 21-2.

5.4.3.1 Semi-Structured Interviews

‘Many qualitative interviews have both more structured and less structured parts but vary in the balance between them. In the less structured parts, the interviewee does most of the talking, perhaps explaining what an idea, event, or bit of background means; in the more structured portions of the interview, the interviewer poses specific questions to get detail, example, and context.’⁴⁰

Semi-structured interviews were developed to be combined with the in-depth case studies. In this sense, a question form was combined with the drawings and photographs of the house. This is because asking people about their houses, especially their previous houses, required some help to sharpen people’s memories. The researcher developed this combined technique to help the interviewees to remember their daily activities and the objects they used in their houses. In some interviews, especially in the traditional and hybrid homes, the researcher presented several photographs for the interviewees about objects in common daily use that time, and asked them if they had these objects, how they used them, and where.

Although we are dealing with different historical periods, similar questions were asked for all twenty five case studies. This is because we are interested in the continuity and change of meanings in the home environment, how the people of Hofuf carried the old meanings over time and how they developed new ones. This similarities will give us some clarification about the continuity and change of the house form and life pattern in the residential settlements in Hofuf. These questions were tested and refined by making two different cases, one from the traditional home environment and the other from the contemporary villa-type dwelling. After each interview, the questions were refined and improved.

From the test it becomes necessary to develop flexible questions. This is because some questions are suitable for one home environment more than another. Therefore, the questions concentrate on the activities that may take place in the domestic spaces. For example, in the traditional house the family activities were mainly carried on in the courtyard in the summer or in the *alliwan ashshamaly* (the north room) in the winter, while in the villa type they were mainly carried on in the living room and/or the multi-purpose room. The questions in this case were as follows: ‘Which spaces were used for family activities?’ ‘Can you explain these activities?’ ‘Why did

⁴⁰Rubin, H. J. & Rubin, I. S. (1995), Op. Cit., p. 5.

you choose these places for family activities?’ ‘In the drawing attached, can you describe how you organised the furniture in this space?’ Why did you organise it in this way?’

Some of the questions were eliminated, after the test, because they were not useful, especially those questions about the bedrooms, because they were sensitive to the people and not of great value to the purpose of the study.⁴¹ Still a general question regarding bedrooms was asked, especially about the master bedroom in the villa-type dwelling.⁴² This question was asked in the other cases too, but in a different way. For example, in the traditional cases, the researcher asked the owner about the use of the multi-purpose rooms. The answers mainly included how the parents and children used these rooms as bedrooms.

The researcher asked each owner about his original house – what it had been like and what changes had been made to it.⁴³ In some cases the owners placed another sheet over the researcher’s drawings and re-drew their original houses. The questions were also developed to investigate both the quality and use of domestic spaces. The interviews were done in sequence and linked together to provide a clear perspective about the house and its relationship with the surrounding houses and open spaces.⁴⁴ The questions were classified into five categories: external domestic space, the men’s reception area, the women’s reception area, family spaces, and services. In general the questions concentrated on the reception areas, family areas, and kitchen because these areas passed through extensive changes over time and have been used by people to express their personal and social identities.

Moreover, the drawings included in each interview helped the researcher to reduce the number of questions and helped the interviewee to remember many details. For the interviewees, explaining the house from a floor plan was very helpful. Some of them drew figures and sketches for how they used the spaces and identified the changes they made in the drawing.

⁴¹The researcher tried to ask some questions about the bedrooms to understand how people in Hofuf organise and use their most private spaces. The responses were very common and not clear; for example, most of the responses regarding those activities other than sleeping that may occur in bedrooms were expressed by this phrase ‘*mithl ennas*’ which mean similar to other people. The researcher also faced many difficulties in persuading people to take photographs of the bedrooms in their houses. In fact just two people agreed to take photographs.

⁴²The researcher depends more in this subject on his experience in designing private villa-types dwellings in Hofuf. After graduation, the researcher worked in his brother’s office as a designer. He shared in several designs and discussed several issue with his clients. Also the collected floor plans will give some hints about the development of the bedrooms in private homes in Hofuf.

⁴³ All interviews were done with the father of the family except two cases in the traditional home environment, where the father either was deceased or very old. In some questions the researcher asked the householder to ask his wife’s opinion, especially those questions related to the use and meaning of the kitchen and the female reception spaces.

⁴⁴ See Appendix V.

5.4.3.2 Focus Group Interviews

'Groups are not just a convenient way to accumulate the individual knowledge of their members. They give rise synergistically to insights and solutions that would not come about without them (Brown et al., 1989).'⁴⁵

In Hofuf groups of people usually gathered in farms or well known people's houses.⁴⁶ The researcher tried to contact some of his friends and relatives to persuade people to grant interviews. Among those who had been contacted, three groups agreed to grant interviews.⁴⁷ These groups consisted of three generations, the older generation (50-70 years), the middle generation (30-50 years), and the younger generation (under thirty). Most of the participants experienced the traditional home environment and the radical changes that happened to Hofuf in the last three decades.

A set of open-ended questions was developed by the researcher. These questions concentrated on the life pattern and meaning of spaces in the traditional home environment and how things had changed in Hofuf. The researcher tried to ask the participants more questions about their feelings when things begin to change. Some of the responses were very interesting. For example, one participant made a comparison between his traditional house and his contemporary villa. He described the differences and similarities and ended up with a very interesting conclusion. That is, segregation between male and female still influences the spatial organisation of private homes in Hofuf.

The younger participants were very excited and listened to what the older participants were saying. This is because some of younger generation never experienced the traditional home environment and knew very little about it. The group discussion was very informative from the younger point of view. Some of them asked questions and enriched the discussion by their questions aimed at further clarification.

One of the interesting things about the group interviews was that people were very enthusiastic when they talked about their home environment. The interviewer noticed that some of them

⁴⁵Cited in Patton, M. Q. (1990), Op. Cit., p. 17.

⁴⁶This convention is very old. The contemporary form of this custom is limited to interest groups. For example some of the old *majlises* (the word *majlis* refers to either the men's reception space or to well known persons who have an open *majlis*) are still opened, not in traditional houses, but in those well known peoples' contemporary houses or farms (see Appendix II).

⁴⁷These interviews were done firstly in the farm of Mohammed Ibrahim Al-Hashim (25/10/1996), secondly in the house of Abdulla Mohammed Al-Jughaiman (Friday 8/11/1996), and finally in the house of Ibrahim Al-Shu'aibi (19/11/1996).

always liked to hear other peoples' opinions about what they did in their houses. For example, some of the participants tried to talk about what they did in their new houses (villa-type dwellings). Their interest in hearing from others about what they did was very high. The researcher, in this case, played the role of one of the participants and tried to encourage others to give their comments.⁴⁸

The interviewer noticed that people in the group interview reminded each other about many details that one person may have forgotten. Clarification was often given while one of the participants explained a space or activity. This extended the discussion, in some cases, which provided the researcher with more details about a particular event.

5.4.3.3. Personal Interviews

It was essential for this study to collect detailed data about the home environment in Hofuf, its characteristics and how it changed. Although the aforementioned techniques supported this aim, the need to hear from those people who lived through and experienced the different stages that the home environment in Hofuf passed through was essential. Also, the techniques were limited to specific cases and groups, while there were important people who could clarify many events and meanings not covered by the previous techniques.

The researcher first tried to identify those people who had knowledge and experience about the home environment in Hofuf. However, there are always difficulties in convincing people about the importance of what you are doing. Also there are difficulties in finding and contacting those suitable people in order to interview them. Prior to the fieldwork, the researcher made several connections with friends and relatives to introduce him to those needed for interviews. Some of the important people were contacted directly by the researcher and their willingness to take part in interviews was noted.

The researcher was curious about conducting interviews with those people who had knowledge and experience of more than one home environment in Hofuf. It is obvious that many people had experienced the contemporary villa-type dwellings in Hofuf. However, finding people with experience of more than one home environment was not an easy job.

⁴⁸ In order to direct the interview and get it beyond ordinary listening, the interviewer should 'focus the discussion to obtain more depth and detail on a narrower range of topics'. He needs, in this case, to 'encourage people to elaborate, provide incidents and clarifications'. Rubin, H. J. & Rubin, I. S. (1995), Op. Cit., p. 8.

In the case of the traditional home environment, several in-depth interviews were done with well known people. The researcher visited them at their homes and asked them to give interviews about their experience of the traditional home environment and specifically about their homes. In most of the cases the researcher was accompanied by a friend or relative of the interviewee.⁴⁹

In *Assalhiyyah*, the interviewer had experience with some important people who lived there. Two interviews were conducted with Ashshaikh Ahmed ben Ali Al-Mubarak in 1992. These two interviews were very general about *Assalhiyyah*, its planning and growth. However, the researcher was interested more in the life pattern and the house components in this neighbourhood. Thus another interview with the same person was conducted on 19/7/1997. This interview concentrated mainly on the house form in *Assalhiyyah* in general and his house in particular. Two days later, the researcher, went with him to *Assalhiyyah*, and he described in the field how the neighbourhood was planned and he identified the first blocks that were constructed in the neighbourhood. Also, he asked the researcher to go to the adjacent old quarter, the *Arrif'a* (most of the residents of *Assalhiyyah* moved from the *Arrif'a*). In this traditional quarter, he identified the spaces which were occupied by those families who moved to *Assalhiyyah* (most of the houses were demolished by the municipality in the 1980's).⁵⁰

Traditional builders and craftsmen

Fortunately, the researcher was interested in traditional architecture; therefore, he carried out an interview with one of the traditional builders in Hofuf in 1992.⁵¹ This interview was about the techniques and rituals of the construction process in the traditional home environment.

Two interviews were also conducted with a traditional builder in November 1996 and a traditional carpenter in July 1997. People were very suspicious when they were asked questions if they did not know the interviewer. The interviewer met the traditional builder (his name is Mohammed Al-Hamad) coincidentally. Therefore, when the interviewer ask him to grant an interview he refused. The researcher volunteered to drive him to his house and on the way he asked him questions. The response was not fulsome, but some answers were very useful. In the

⁴⁹In two cases, the researcher was accompanied by Mr. Ahmed Al-Mulla. The first interview was in 3/11/1996. He introduced the researcher to a known man in *Al-Kut* quarter (he was still living in the old quarter but he was considered one of the first people in Hofuf to replace his traditional house with a new concrete one). His name is Al-Sayed Abdulla Al-Sayed Hashim Al-Hashim. The second interview was in 15/7/1997, when he introduced the researcher to his relative Ashsheikh Abdulrahman ben Ahmed ben Abdullatif Al-Mulla.

⁵⁰ Two personal interviews were carried out also with people lived in *Assalhiyyah*. The first interview was in 26/7/1997 with Dr. Mohammed Al-Jaber (he is a geographer). The second interview was in 21/8/1997 with Dr. Abdulhamid Al-Mubarak.

⁵¹This interview is recorded on a cassette. It was with Abdulrahman Al-Humadi (who died in 1994) in his son's house in Dammam.

case of the traditional carpenter (his name is Saleh Al-Hassan), he was willing to take part in the interview. Usually there are some traditional carpenters gathered to work in one of the main streets in Hofuf. The researcher decided to go there and interview them. When he introduced himself, most of the carpenters disappeared. They were very suspicious and the only one who agreed to grant an interview was Mr. Al-Hassan.

Architects

This study aims to understand those traditions, meanings, and experiences that constitute the identity of the present home in Hofuf. Nobody can deny the role of architects in escalating this identity, especially after 1975 when the government established the ministry of municipal and rural affairs. This government institution, in order to give people a licence to build a house, requested from them a design for the house produced by a professional architect. Since then people have had to pass through professional and government procedures to build their houses.

What is important for this study is to understand the relationship between architects and people. That is why the researcher carried out personal interviews with three architects who have designed private homes in the city since the early 1980's. Those architects participated in and experienced the development of private homes in the last two decades. The questions which were mainly asked were divided into two groups.

The first group of questions concentrated on the relationship between the architect and the designer by asking the architects whether their clients guided them when they started designing their houses. The answers clarified many details. For example, although people passed through this design process, they spent a lot of time in dealing with the spatial relationships. The whole family contributed to the design process because the client usually took the sketch design and discussed it with his family members. Sometimes he came up with a complete new relationship. This is not the case when the facades of the houses are designed. At this stage the clients accept what architects do for them, and sometimes they bring photographs of existing houses and ask the designer to apply what they show to their houses.

In the second group of questions, the architects were asked to describe the main changes that had taken place in the private home in the city in recent decades. Also they were asked about the reasons behind these changes. This part of the interview was very important because interviewees had very long experience of private home design and had worked with many people.

This provided the researcher with rich data about how the design process contributed to the physical development of the private home in the city in the last two decades.⁵²

Women

It was essential for this study to understand women's daily activities in Hofuf, their use of domestic spaces, and the meaning that they associated with the surrounding spaces and objects. As we mentioned, interviewing women in Saudi society may be considered one of the most difficult tasks. In this case, the researcher developed a set of questions to train his wife, sisters, and friends to conduct the interviews. These questions were: 'Can you describe your daily activities?' 'How long do you stay in the kitchen?' 'Is the form of the kitchen important for you?' 'Why?' 'Do you visit your friends?' 'Do you have a specific space in your house to receive your friends?' 'Please specify this space.' 'Is it important for you to keep this place nice and clean?' 'Why?' 'Which spaces in your house can you let your friends see?' 'Why?'

Prior to the real interviews, the researcher spent some time in training assistant interviewers. Also, he asked them to concentrate on those women who had experienced more than one home environment. Eight interviews were carried out. Six of these interviews contained comparisons between the life pattern in the traditional and that in the contemporary home environment, while two interviews mainly concentrated on the beginning of change in Hofuf.

Moreover, three detailed interviews about the traditional home environment were conducted with three old women. These interviews were not limited to the questions developed for the previous interviews. This is because these interviews were conducted by the researcher (with his mother) and his friend Ahmad Al-Mulla (with his mother and grandmother). In this case time was available for these interviews to be reviewed and new information was sought from the interviewees.

⁵² See Chapter IX.

5.4.4 OBSERVATION

‘Observing behavior is both empathetic and direct, deals with a dynamic subject, and allows observers to be variably intrusive. These qualities make the method useful at the beginning of research to generate hunches, in the middle to document regularities, and late in the research project to locate key explanatory information.’⁵³

Observation as a technique for data collection is widely used in this study. It was the main device that was utilised to develop a plan for the fieldwork. The basic observational information which was gathered in the pilot study enabled the researcher to develop a typology for the home environment in Hofuf. As we discussed, this technique was utilised in the beginning of the fieldwork to record the external feature of each home environment

Zeisel defined ‘observing physical traces’, as ‘systematically looking at physical surroundings to find reflections of previous activity not produced in order to be measured by researchers’.⁵⁴ One of the main issues in this dissertation is the reconstruction of the physical and social characteristics of traditional and hybrid home environments. Observing the physical traces of these home environments was not problematic because physical traces ‘have the advantage for researchers that they do not quickly disappear’.⁵⁵ In that sense, Zeisel argues that

‘observing or measuring traces does not require being present when the traces are created. The method is therefore particularly useful to find out about rare events, hard-to-see events, private behaviors, and the behavior of groups who cannot be interviewed.’⁵⁶

Observing the remaining parts in those home environments provides the researcher with valuable information about the responses of their inhabitants towards the images introduced. For example, several physical transformations were noticed on the house facades and specifically on the house gate. These changes clearly indicate how people understood the new images and how they adapted to them.⁵⁷

This technique was not limited only to early home environments, but also it was used to observe what people did in their present houses. For example, by observing the external features of

⁵³ Zeisel, J. (1984), *Op. Cit.*, p. 116.

⁵⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 89.

⁵⁵ *Ibid.*, p. 93.

⁵⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 93.

⁵⁷ Zeisel called these changes ‘adaptations for use’. This phenomenon occurs ‘when some people find that their physical environment does not accommodate something they want to do’. (p. 103).

contemporary neighbourhoods, the researcher found that the balconies had disappeared from most of those houses which originally had them. Also, he found that many people had increased their fence height by adding corrugated metal sheets.

What is important for this study is how people change existing and new forms to express their individual and collective identities. Zeisel has indicated that 'residents change environments to put their stamp on them - to say, "This is mine and it says something about me" '.⁵⁸ He calls this action 'displays of self' which 'help others identify a person's environment ... or may tell people about a person by announcing what groups she is a member of.'⁵⁹ In this study, it was essential to observe those objects which are used mainly to express individual and group identities, such as a style of furniture, decorations, and displayed objects. This observation was mainly associated with the combined technique used in the in-depth case studies. The target here was to show the similarities and differences in using these elements in the private homes in Hofuf and also to explain how they had been adopted as symbols for non-verbal communication.

Nevertheless, observation in this study was used beyond mere physical recording. It was observed how people interact with each other and with their physical and spatial contexts.⁶⁰ 'Observing environmental behaviour' defined by Zeisel as 'systematically watching people use the environment: individuals, pairs of people, small groups, and large groups. What do they do? How do activities relate to another spatiality? And how do spatial relations effect participants?'⁶¹ Marshall & Rossman share this view when they state that throughout observation 'the researcher learns about behaviors and the meanings attached to those behaviors. This method assumes that behavior is purposive and expressive of deeper values and beliefs'.⁶²

In this thesis, a large part of the environmental behaviour observations goes hand in hand with the in-depth case studies. In these cases, the researcher observed how the internal domestic spaces were used by people. He shared in their activities and conducted himself as a member of the community. For example, the researcher was invited to a lunch in one of the cases and to a dinner in another one. In the former case, food was presented on ground, while in the latter one,

⁵⁸ Ibid., p. 105.

⁵⁹ Ibid., p. 105.

⁶⁰ It was very important for the researcher to share people's everyday activities and observe them without informing them that they were under observation. This technique is supported by Stoddart who states that 'the invisible researcher is the ideal researcher who sees without being observed and, consequently, captures the natural field without tainting it'. Stoddart, K. (1986) 'The Presentation of Everyday Life: Some Textual Strategies for "Adequate Ethnography"', *Urban Life*, Vol. 15, pp. 103-121.

⁶¹ Zeisel, J. (1984), Op. Cit., p. 111.

⁶² Marshall, C. Rossman, G. (1995), OP. Cit., p. 79.

the dinner was presented on a dining table. This was a very good opportunity to see and record how people present and organise their food and how they treat their guests.

In fact one of the major spaces that this study is concerned about is reception space in the private home. Observing this space was easier than observing other spaces in the house. This is because people easily let him enter this space and photograph it. The researcher used this flexibility by recording several rituals associated with the use and meaning of this space. It happened many times, for example, that while the researcher was interviewing with a household, guests arrived. The owners, in those cases, asked the researcher to wait until his guests left. This was an opportunity to observe how people treated their guests (other than on occasions when food was offered). For example, people always provided their guests with two hot drinks, coffee and tea. They did not even ask them what they wished to drink because everybody knows that these will be the drinks that are served.

To understand spatial behaviour, it was necessary for the researcher to share some of people's activities.⁶³ The above-mentioned observations were only examples of many occasions that the observer experienced and recorded.⁶⁴ The observer also recorded life patterns in the external domestic spaces. Observation, in the pilot study, was directed at the physical features as well as at those old people who gathered and sat on benches adjacent to their houses. This technique was carried on by observing how and where people gathered and entertained. For example, the researcher found that most of the old people who left their previous houses still preferred to gather with their old friends on the same benches. Therefore, they had an almost daily trip to their previous neighbourhoods.

⁶³ Zeisel (1984) indicated that 'observation, especially participant observation, allows researchers to "get into" a setting: to understand nuances that users of that setting feel'. (p. 113).

⁶⁴ The researcher originally was born and lived in the city for more than seventeen years (1967-84). His family house still exists in the city. However, in order to do the fieldwork, he spent seven months in the city (23 September 1996-13 February 1997) (23 Jun 1997-15 September 1997). This enabled him to participate in many occasions and share life with the people.

5.4.5 COLLECTING VISUAL DATA

‘Photographs of people and things stand as evidence in a way that pure narrative cannot. In many senses, visual information of what the people and their world looks like provides harder and more immediate evidence than the written word; photographs can authenticate a researcher’s report in a way that words alone cannot.’⁶⁵

Ball & Smith argue that in ethnographic studies, photographs are an important source of data. There are some ethnographic studies ‘in which the phenomenon investigated is itself clearly a visual one that benefits from visual representation: the cross-cultural study of the visual arts, plastic and graphic, costume, self decoration, masks, architecture, religious iconography ...’ They added that photographs can be used ‘as a source for the examination of visual phenomena’.⁶⁶

Berger argues that ‘photographs do not translate from appearances. They quote them’.⁶⁷ However, Ball & Smith suggest that when they say ‘if a picture is to be regarded as “true,” then the circumstances of its production and the conclusions we wish to draw from it must be taken into account’.⁶⁸ Zeisel argues that photographs ‘are particularly valuable if a research site is not easily accessible’.⁶⁹ He stresses the importance of visual data when he states:

‘Visual trace records can be used as illustrations of research concepts. This can prove useful to investigators who want to follow up on trace observations with interviews to test their hypotheses’.⁷⁰

The visual materials which have been gathered in this study can be classified into three main categories. These are home exterior, home interior, and daily use objects. These categories contain both physical and environmental behaviour observations.

5.4.5.1. Home Exterior

The investigator tried to record the continuity and change of the external features of private homes in Hofuf. In this sense, a list for the main elements of house facades was developed. The target was studying those elements in the house facades individually and together. These

⁶⁵Ball, M. & Smith, G. (1992) *Analyzing Visual Data*, Qualitative Research Methods Series 24, London, Sage Publications, p. 9.

⁶⁶Ibid., p. 11.

⁶⁷Cited in *Ibid.*, p. 16.

⁶⁸Ibid., p. 17.

⁶⁹Zeisel, J. (1981), *Op. Cit.*, p. 98.

⁷⁰Ibid., p. 92.

elements include gates, fences, balconies, symbols, colour and materials, and whole facade composition.

When we discussed the personal interview, we mentioned that architects indicated that people in Hofuf concentrate on spatial concerns rather than the facades when they design their houses. This can be attributed to the fact that the municipality in the city is more flexible than the neighbouring cities, Dammam for example. In Hofuf, the municipality does require designs for houses, but it affords some flexibility in the form and organisation of the house if the design meets the regulations, while in Dammam, the municipality forces people to design the facades of their houses and follow the construction regulations. This provide freedom for people in Hofuf to make some changes in the external features as they construct their houses.

This encouraged the researcher to apply one visual technique to survey the continuity and change of the external elements in the home environment. However, recording those elements consisted of two methods. The first concentrated on those elements in each home environment. The second method was to record each element over time, its continuity and change. For example, types and forms of the house gate were recorded in every home environment; then they was seen over time by recording the similarities and differences in form. This technique enabled the researcher to identify those new elements as well as those elements which had disappeared from the house facade in Hofuf.

It was very important for the researcher to decide when to stop sampling for each category. In fact this was guided by the observational criteria which mainly concentrated on the similarities and differences of the external elements. Therefore, several photographs were taken for each category to clarify the similarities and differences for each element over time. The researcher was selective and tried to address those cases which widen the diversity or support the similarity in each category.

5.4.5.2 Home Interior

Visual recording of the home interior is mainly associated with the combined technique by which the in-depth cases were studied. The researcher asked the owner of every house to let him photograph the internal spaces. In fact people were very sensitive about their houses being photograhped. Awkward situations always arose when the researcher asked people to let him take some photographs. In most cases, people let the researcher take photographs of the male

and female reception spaces, living rooms, and sometimes the kitchen. However, in the case of bedrooms, people, with few exceptions, refused to let the researcher enter these spaces.

Daily Use Object in the Traditional House:

‘The appearance of the built environment, artefacts, persons, and courses of social action plays an indispensable role in the conduct of our daily lives, for these appearances have a variety of beliefs and expectations about the nature and workings of the world associated with them.’⁷¹

There is no literature documenting objects in daily use in the traditional house in Hofuf. Therefore, the researcher visited the museum of Hofuf to ask them if they had photographs or accounts of these objects. Unfortunately, they did not have any photographs or literature, but they had many of these objects in their store. To photograph these objects permission had been received from the Educational Department. The researcher spent one day on this job because the objects in the store were not classified and needed to be documented one by one.

Some private collectors were also contacted. These people collected everyday objects from the traditional home environment and those early objects that were introduced to Hofuf at the beginning of change and they had their own private museums in their private homes. Of those contacted, two let the researcher photograph the objects they had.⁷² The researcher also tried to question those collectors about the names and uses of the objects they had. In some cases, people collect things without knowing their uses or names. To overcome this problem, the researcher showed the photographs to old people who lived in traditional houses and asked them about the names and uses of these objects.

5.4.6 DOCUMENTS

Collecting written literature and documents about the city aims to support the empirical data gathered through the aforementioned techniques as well as to provide those interested in the city in the future with a bibliography about the history, society and home environments of Hofuf. This objective was fulfilled by searching for every single piece of written material that may be informative about the city. The search was divided into sub areas and carried out throughout the

⁷¹Ball, M. & Smith, G. (1992), Op. Cit., p. 1.

⁷²The researcher tried to persuade one of those collectors to photograph his collections, but he refused. During the discussion there was a person who knew one of the researcher's relatives. He took the researcher later to another person who has a private museum (Saleh ben Abdullatif Aldhufar). The latter collector let the researcher photograph what he had.

study. Those areas include travel and historical books and articles, newspapers and magazines, reports, and private historical documents.

Some of the most important documents that the researcher tried to gather were those manuscripts written by people in Hofuf in the past two or three centuries. These manuscripts contain some descriptions about social events and record people's private properties, daily life, and social conventions. These documents coupled with other resources to establish a lucid picture of the traditional house and the social characteristics of the traditional home environment in Hofuf.⁷³

The researcher also found access to the draft reports of the master plan of Al-Hassa (which includes Hofuf). This master plan is not yet completed, but the main work was finished.⁷⁴ These reports are full of general and recent statistical data about the demographic, economical, and physical characteristics of Hofuf. They are supported by another report about the master plan of the city from 1976. In fact this last document was very important evidence that made the classification of home environment in Hofuf more reliable. This is because the city after the 1976 plan experienced large residential neighbourhoods, and villa-type dwellings became the only house type built in the city.

5.5 ANALYSING THE DATA

'Qualitative findings are longer, more detailed, and variable in content; analysis is difficult because responses are neither systematic nor standardized. Yet, the open-ended responses permit one to understand the world as seen by the respondents.'⁷⁵

Although the researcher was guided by the analytical frame, different types of information were gathered from different resources. This is because we did not have preconceived factors that phenomenon of identification could be associated with. Therefore, it was necessary to adopt a research strategy with the potential to inform us as fully as possible about the home environment. However, the diverse information that has been gathered requires a very careful elaboration. A further step should be taken to focus the data by classifying it into main data, which constitute the main theme of this thesis, and secondary data, which support and illuminate certain parts in this

⁷³ The Individuals who let me photocopy some of their Manuscripts are:

-Sheikh : Ahmed Al-Khateeb

-Mr. Abdulaziz Al-Isfour

-Mr. Ahmed Al-Naim

-Mr. Abdulaziz Al-Doghan

-Mr. Abdulrahman Al-Najjar

⁷⁴ The documents were collected in 1996.

⁷⁵ Patton, M. Q. (1990), OP. Cit., p. 24.

theme.

It is important to mention that the analytical frame still plays its main role in selecting an appropriate analytical approach. This is because the framework is a main link between the theory and the data. We can clearly understand the relationships between the analytical frame and the data from the model developed by Ragin. In this model, the analytical frame is seen as ‘a detailed sketch or outline of an idea about some phenomenon’. It constitutes, in this sense, a way of seeing things (Fig. 5.1).⁷⁶

Analysing the data, then, should be tested by the analytical frame. What Ragin called ‘images’ are mainly a process of synthesising the data to construct a readable image from the different pieces of data. ‘This process of synthesising an image from evidence and refining it goes hand in hand with the process of analyzing the evidence using an analytical frame.’⁷⁷ The interaction between the analytical frame and the images will lead to a refining of both the frame and the image.

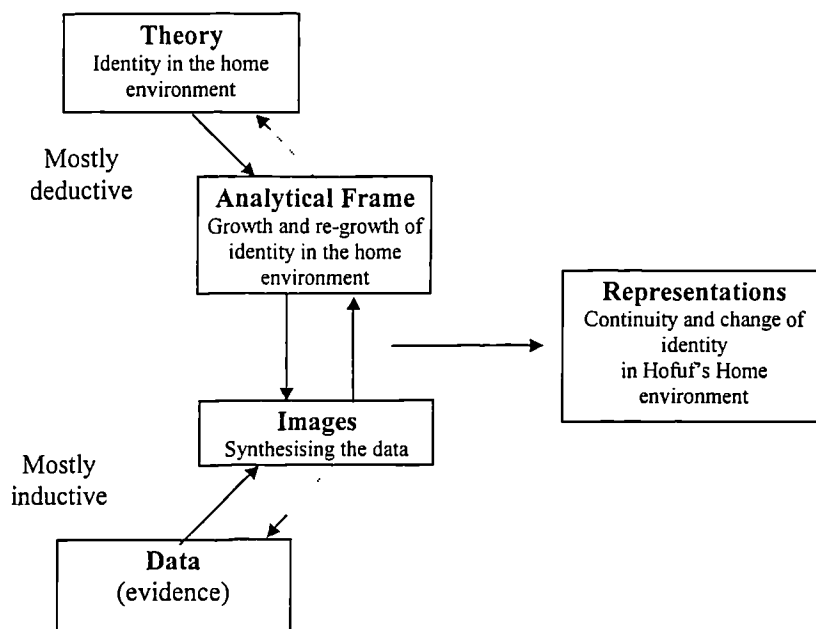


Fig. 5.1: The Interaction between the analytical frame and the data. Source: Developed from Ragin, C. (1994), Op. Cit., p. 57.

⁷⁶Ragin, C. (1994), Op. Cit., p. 58.

⁷⁷Ibid., p. 59.

Basically, the analytical frame will direct the data to construct spatio-temporal images. In relation to the goal of this thesis, we need to know how things changed over time. Therefore, by constructing spatio-temporal images for existing and new forms in the home environment, the analytical frame can be examined and refined. The target here is to construct a clear picture about how individual and collective identities have grown and re-grown in Hofuf's home environment.

5.5.1 THE BASIC ANALYTICAL WORK

'Analysis means breaking phenomena into their constituent parts and viewing them in relation to the whole they form.'⁷⁸ These elements can be investigated in isolation from one another, and can be understood in the context of other parts. To construct images from multi-sources data, these data need firstly to be classified into distinctive categories. In fact classifying the data begins with the pilot study when the home environment in Hofuf is classified into traditional, hybrid, and formal. This initial classification was completely guided by the analytical frame, which mainly sees identity as a diachronic phenomenon.

This diachronic frame is designed to describe the degree of the displacement that may occur to existing identity in the home environment. Each spatio-temporal path in this frame consists of a series of synchronic images connected together in a historical sense. This will end up firstly with a historical description of how people through their interactions with objects shaped the physical characteristics of their private homes. Secondly, it will explain those mechanisms by which people maintain, generate, and replace meanings in their home environment.

In relation to this frame, another classification for the data is needed. To construct the historical link we need to classify the data into smaller categories, then link these categories to build spatio-temporal images. As we did when we collected visual data, the house facades had been categorised into sets of elements recorded synchronically and diachronically. This approach can be applied to other data, therefore, the home environment and the house are divided into elements, such as home clustering, external domestic spaces, doorways, spatial organisation, male reception spaces, female reception spaces, and family living spaces.

⁷⁸ Ragin, C. (1994), *Op. Cit.*, p. 55.

5.5.2 SPATIAL ANALYSIS

The technique of spatial analysis is of utmost importance in our investigation of meaning and identity in the private house in Hofuf. According to this technique, the house can be seen as certain ordering of categories, to which is added a certain system of controls, the two conjointly constructing an interface between the inhabitants, with their own special relations to the categories, and the visitors whose relations with them are controlled by the building.⁷⁹

Mention should also be made, in this context of spatial analysis, of the categorisation by Goffman of spaces into front and back stages, and of Lawrence's classification of cultural and utilitarian spaces, which has been already discussed in Chapter III.

The method used in this study is a combination of all these techniques in such a way as to enable the researcher to understand the development of private house space in the city of Hofuf in the 19th and 20th centuries. This was carried out by analysing the private home in each type of home environment. For example, by analysing the traditional house, the base was established to carry on the diachronic analysis (since of course the traditional house takes chronological precedence). This is because we need to refer to the original forms and their associated meanings when we indicate that change has been occurred.

5.5.3 VISUAL ANALYSIS

It is important to develop a reliable way to analyse the visual materials. In the case of this study this means mainly analysing the content of photographs. The external features of the private home, for example, have been investigated by choosing and photographing those elements which constitute the house facades. Visual analysis has been developed in two directions. The first direction is analysing each category, such as the house gate, in a specific period, such as that of the traditional home environment. This direction enables the researcher to grasp the main characteristics of this element, its principles, how it was used as visual symbol and why. The second direction is analysing the same element over time by tracing its similarities and differences through all periods. Using the example of the house gate, thus, if we have already analysed it in each home environment, the second direction will illustrate the continuity and change of its visual characteristics.

5.5.4 CONSTRUCTING SPATIO-TEMPORAL IMAGES

The above mentioned analytical techniques allowed us to synthesise the data and link it to the main theme of the study. By constructing spatio-temporal images, we reach the stage of interpreting how the identity continued and changed in Hofuf's home environment. The constructed image stands for a single element or group of elements in the home environment. It describes their spatial and visual characteristics, their continuity and change, their use and meanings, their relationships with other elements in the home environment. In fact, the home environment consists of endless elements; therefore, it is beyond the scope of this study to address every element. In this sense, only those relevant elements which are mainly related to the goals and objectives of this dissertation have been considered.

Lawrence suggests two approaches to understanding the use and meaning of domestic spaces, including the historical and ethnographic. The former approach concentrates mainly on how domestic spaces developed over a period of time, while the latter approach 'provide[s] detailed information about the ways in which respondents have classified and used spaces inside and just outside their houses'.⁸⁰ These two approaches are suitable for constructing spatio-temporal images because, firstly, they see domestic spaces from diachronic and synchronic perspectives, and secondly they make use of the collected data and the classification made of them.

The Historical Approach

The data which have been collected in this study are mainly directed to fulfilling the diachronic perspective. This perspective sees identity as a phenomenon with a historical dimension. Several case studies cover the private house form in Hofuf from the traditional to contemporary period. These case studies describe, for the first time, the evolving of private house form in the city. Through the historical interpretations, we are looking at how and why the spatial organisations in the private home in Hofuf have developed. Which spaces have disappeared and which have been introduced? The studies also illuminate the reasons behind the association or demarcation of domestic spaces over time. In general the historical approach will support the ethnographic interpretations and go hand in hand with them to interpret the continuity and change of the use and meaning of domestic spaces in the home environment.

⁷⁹ Hillier, B. & Hanson, J. (1984) *The Social Logic of Space* Cambridge, Cambridge University Press. See pp. 143-75.

⁸⁰ Lawrence, R. (1982) 'Domestic Space and Society: A Cross-Cultural Study', *Comparative Studies in Society and History*, Vol. 24, No. 1, pp. 104-130; Lawrence, R. (1985) 'A More Humane History of Homes: Research Method and Application', In Irwin Altman & Carol M. Werner, *Home Environments*, New York, A Division of Plenum Publishing Corporation, pp. 113-132.

The Ethnographic Approach

The ethnographic approach in this study has primarily been concerned with how the residents of Hofuf used their homes and how they generated meanings in their home environment. It will explain how meanings are generated in a specific time (synchronic) and how they changed over time (diachronic). The analytical frame mainly concentrates on how identity can grow and re-grow in the home environment, from a general perspective. Still our main concern here is how we can define and describe the meanings that people have in their home environment. In relation to this issue, three approaches have been elaborated by Rapoport. These approaches try to construct interpretation devices to trace and describe the meanings that may exist in the built environment. These approaches are, semiotic, symbolic, and non-verbal communication.⁸¹

The semiotic model is widely used in the linguistic field. Fisk discussed two methods by which communication occurred between people. The first method sees communication as a 'process' in which one person influences the image and behaviour of others. While the second, 'semiotic', method deals with producing and changing of meanings. Both methods agree on the importance of communication as a social interaction process but each one has its own interpretation of how this interaction occurs. The former method sees social interaction as a relationship between one person and others, while the later method sees the interaction as phenomenon that exists between individuals in a particular culture.⁸²

C. S. Peirce mentioned three interrelated elements in a semiotic model: sign, interpretant and object. He explained the sign as something related to something other than itself, the object, and understood by somebody, the 'interpretant'. Saussure is interested in the way signs relate to each other rather than how signs relate to objects, because the sign for him is a physical object with a specific meaning. The sign for Saussure is composed of the 'signifier', which is the image of the sign as we perceive it, while the 'signified' is the mental concept that the sign implies.⁸³

Semiotic methods have been used to study the meaning of physical forms by quite a number of researchers in architecture.⁸⁴ For example, Umberto Eco discusses the importance of semiotics models and stresses that culture is a system of signs. He said 'If semiotics, beyond being the

⁸¹Rapoport, A. (1982), *OP. Cit.*, p. 35

⁸²Fisk, J. (1990) *Introduction to Communication Studies*, London, Routledge, p. 39.

⁸³ *Ibid.*, p. 44.

⁸⁴ See Broadbent, G., Bunt, R. & Jencks, C. (Eds) (1980) *Signs, Symbols, and Architecture* Chichester, John Wiley & Sons.

science of recognized systems of signs, is really to be a science studying *all* cultural phenomena *as if* they were a system of signs - on the hypothesis that all cultural phenomena *are*, in reality, systems of signs, or that culture can be understood as *communication ...*'.⁸⁵

This model consists of three parts including 'syntactics', which is 'the relationship of sign to sign within a system of signs', 'semantics', which is 'the relation of signs to things signified, that is, how signs carry meanings', and finally the 'pragmatic', which is 'the relation of signs to the behavioral responses of people'.⁸⁶ However, Rapoport criticised the semiotic analysis of the built environment due to its high level of abstraction which make it unreadable.⁸⁷ He argued that most of the semiotic studies ignored the pragmatic, which is the most important part of understanding meaning in the built environment because it deals with the effect of signs on those who interpret them as part of their total behaviour.⁸⁸

In the symbolic approach, interpretation of the meaning of the physical form requires some cultural knowledge. Most definitions agree on the communicative nature of the symbols and their importance in thought. Langer (1953) defines the symbol as 'any device whereby we are enabled to make an abstraction'.⁸⁹ Moreover, the symbol is defined by Geertz (1966) as 'any object, act, event, quality or relation which serves as a vehicle for conception', and also as any 'object in experience upon which man has impressed meaning'.⁹⁰ Lang (1987), defined the symbolic meaning as a result of 'a cognitive process whereby an object acquires a connotation beyond its instrumental use'.⁹¹ Rapoport confirms that symbol is 'one of the most important way of changing the world of signals into a world of meanings and values'. Symbols, therefore, help people to 'understand the world and form it into a meaningful cultural pattern'. In that sense, symbol structure has the ability to influence our perception of the built environment and our reaction to it.⁹²

Rapoport argues that 'if culture is ... a system of symbols and meanings that form important determinants of action and social action as meaningful activity of human beings, this implies a

⁸⁵ Eco, U. (1980) 'Function and Sign: The Semiotics of Architecture' in G. Broadbent, R. Bunt, & C. Jencks, (1980) *Signs, Symbols, and Architecture* Chichester, John Wiley & Sons, p. 11. (his Italic).

⁸⁶ Rapoport A. (1982), Op. Cit., p. 39

⁸⁷ Ibid., P. 37.

⁸⁸ Ibid., P. 39.

⁸⁹ Cited in Rapoport, A. (1970) 'Symbolism and Environmental Design', *International Journal of Symbology* (USA), Vol. 1, No. 3 (April), pp. 1-10.

⁹⁰ Cited in Rapoport, A. (1982), Op. Cit., p.48.

⁹¹ Cited in Nasar, (1993), Op. Cit., p.145.

⁹² Rapoport A. (1970), Op. Cit., p. 1-10.

commonality of understanding'. The question, thus, is 'how can we best decode this process of communication'.⁹³ The problem of the symbolic approach is that it is difficult to differentiate between the symbol and the sign.⁹⁴

Rapoport suggests a third model which is 'non-verbal communication'. It deals with non-verbal behaviour, which is perceived by visual and other sensory cues. Non-verbal behaviour is different from verbal behaviour, in the sense that the latter is perceived by the auditory sense. For Rapoport, the non-verbal communication approach in the built environment can be studied in two ways. The first is the 'sense of analogy or metaphor', where the environment provides non-verbal cues for behaviour. The second is that non-verbal cues not only themselves communicate, but they help other, mainly verbal, communication. Therefore, the built environment communicates meaning directly and also encourages other forms of meanings.⁹⁵

This view is supported by Fletcher when he states that 'there is clearly a difference of scale and process in the relationship between what people actually do, the spatial milieu that they create, and the verbal declarations and expressions which are used to describe social life'.⁹⁶ He suggests that material culture can be analysed 'without necessary reference to the short timescale functioning of verbal meaning'.⁹⁷

The above-mentioned approaches complement each other and can be used as one approach to study the meaning in the home environment. In fact all these three approaches have a common perspective, and that is that the home environment, its material objects, use of spaces, and relationships between its users can be seen as a medium with encoded meanings. We are interested more in the long-term meanings of the material culture, use, and relationships in the home environment. In this sense, the ethnographic approach we followed in this study is concerned with the meanings in the home environment, how they are decoded and used, and by which medium they have been encoded.

Turner develops three levels of understanding meanings. Firstly there is the indigenous interpretation or 'the exegetical meaning'. This meaning can be obtained directly from the direct responses in the home environment. Second there is the 'operational meaning', which is mainly

⁹³ Rapoport, A. (1982), Op. Cit., p.48

⁹⁴ Ibid., p. 46.

⁹⁵ Ibid., p. 50.

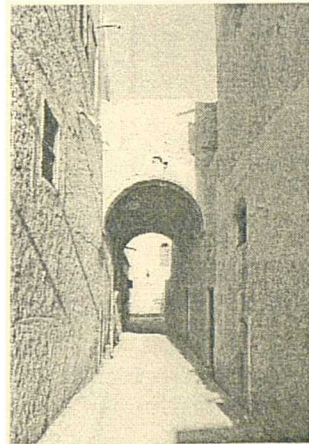
⁹⁶ Fletcher, R. (1989) 'The Messages of Material Behaviour: A Preliminary Discussion of non-verbal Meaning', In I. Hodder (Ed) The Meanings of Things: Material Culture and Symbolic Expression, London, Harper Collins Academic, pp. 33-40.

concerned with how the symbol is used in its the context. Finally, there is the 'positional meaning', which can be derived from the relationship between the symbol and other symbols.⁹⁸

The above mentioned levels of analysing and describing meaning are suitable for understanding the meanings in the home environment, provided that any home environment consists of very complicated relationships and each space or action has multi-dimensional relationships with other spaces and actions. For example, understanding the historical development of the men's reception spaces provides an exegetical meaning, while understanding how these spaces have been used over time will let us know the operational meaning. Still, reception spaces are part of a house; thus the relationships between the reception spaces as a symbol and other symbols in the house and home environment may explain the positional meaning.

⁹⁷Ibid., p. 38.

⁹⁸Turner, V. (1967) The Forest of Symbols: Aspects of Nedembu Rituals London, Cornell University Press, pp. 50-1.



Sabat in traditional Hofuf

CHAPTER VI

THE CONCEPT OF *FEREEJ*: MAKING AN IDENTITY IN THE TRADITIONAL HOME ENVIRONMENT

CONTENTS

- 6.1 Prologue
- 6.2 The Concept of *Fereej* in the Traditional Home Environment
 - 6.2.1 The Family's Environmental Behaviour in the *Fereej* System
 - 6.2.2 The Social Spectrum of the *Fereej* System
- 6.3 *Fereej* System: From Social Organisation to Place Making
 - 6.3.1 Physical Formation of the *Fereej* System
- 6.4 Continuity of the *Fereej* System in the Traditional Home Environment
- 6.5 The *Fereej* as a Territorial System
- 6.6 The Use and Meaning of the Physical Environment in the *Fereej* System
 - 6.6.1 The Use and Meaning of External Domestic Space
 - 6.6.2 Use and Meaning of the *Sabat*
 - 6.6.3 Consistency of Physical Morphology
 - 6.6.4 The Use and Meaning of the House Facade
- 6.7 Summary



THE CONCEPT OF *FEREEJ*: MAKING AN IDENTITY IN THE TRADITIONAL HOME ENVIRONMENT

6.1 PROLOGUE

Traditional home environment needs to be seen from its external and internal domains. The external domain, on the one hand, deals with the location of the house and its relation to other houses in the home environment. This domain is always organised with hierarchical spaces to balance between the private and public, inside and outside. On the other hand the internal domain deals with the interior of homes, their fabric, use, objects, and decoration. It provides a clear picture of the lifestyle of people. There is still in Hofuf's traditional home environment a transitional domain where semi-private activities are held. This domain embodies very deep meanings and is associated with symbolic messages.

It is difficult to understand how people express their identities in their physical home environment without understanding their social and cultural frames, grasping the belief systems, and exploring the devices used to communicate those beliefs. This study tries to explore those hidden frames and beliefs that constitute identity in the traditional home environment. As Duncan states:

‘The environment serves as a vast repository out of which symbols of order and social relationships can be fashioned. It serves ... not only to represent meaning to the individual creator but also to others who share a common perspective or who at least can understand the meaning that is encoded...’¹

One way to analyse the physical environment is to explain why and how this environment took its form. This can be achieved by seeing the traditional home environment in Hofuf as a series of social systems translated over time into spaces and territories, arranged in a certain organisation and related to each other in a specific way. These social systems consisted of

¹ Duncan, J. (1985) ‘The House as Symbol of Social Structure’, In Irvin Altman & Carol M. Werner, *Home Environments*, New York, A Division of Plenum Publishing Corporation, pp. 133-151.

several beliefs and traditions developed over time to define people's lifestyle. They worked as a non-written law to control social interaction.

The hierarchy of the social system was the main source for understanding the dominance of certain traditions over others. This is clearly observed when these traditions which were related to the communal social system dominated most of the traditions in the other individual and sub-group systems. In this sense, defining those social systems as what we call in this study 'kinship levels' was one of the main steps to analysing the traditional physical environment.

As we argued in the previous chapters, the concept of identity is very dynamic and people tend to express their identity by different physical means. In the case of change local society, through its shared values, will strive to produce new meanings to maintain a specific identity. The interest here is to understand the mechanisms by which the shared socio-cultural values of the people of Hofuf worked to construct particular identity in the past. This step is very crucial for the next part of this study (the contemporary home environment) where the identity of the home environment is discussed in a very transitional context. By understanding how people in Hofuf established their identity in their traditional home environment, a base can be found to evaluate the continuity and change of identity in the contemporary residential settlements. This chapter tries mainly to analyse the concept of *fereej*, and its social and physical impact on the traditional home environment in Hofuf. A special concern is given to the question of how this concept existed and why.

6.2 THE CONCEPT OF *FEREEJ* IN THE TRADITIONAL HOME ENVIRONMENT

The concept of *fereej* in Hofuf encompasses the basic structure of social interrelationships that we might call extended clans. This concept expresses the intimate relationship between people and their physical environment. Also, it expresses their collective identity as well as their individual membership of a group and the whole society. Being a member of a *fereej* means that a link with both people and place has been developed; the sense of home in this sense stems first from the feeling of being part of a social and physical place called *fereej*.

Fereej as an environmental and social concept implies the sense of grouping and is considered as a reference for individuals and groups and links them with the whole community. In many cases it carries the family name of the group living in it. This system expresses the idea of 'lineage',

where many generations from the same clan maintain a certain continuity over time by defining their territory with it and keeping it as part of the community's shared image. It also embodies the norms, customs, and values that people developed over centuries to organise themselves in their home environment. When we say 'this is a *fereej*' we mean that homogeneous relationships have been found in the place, homogeneous in the sense that the concept of *fereej* cannot be found unless a minimum of shared values, norms, and habits already exists and these are being practised by those who live there.

6.2.1 THE FAMILY'S ENVIRONMENTAL BEHAVIOUR IN THE *FEREEJ* SYSTEM

Prior to analysing the *fereej* system in the traditional home environment in Hofuf it is useful to give a brief description of society. This is because, as Werner said, 'it is important to link interpersonal relationships to their physical context'.² In Hofuf the family represents the basic unit that all social institutions revolve around. The family as a social unit holds the major social functions and is responsible for maintaining and reproducing core values over time. Interactions among families were what gave the traditional community in Hofuf its uniqueness. Through such interaction new generations internalised and practised the social values and conventions and developed their own individual and group identities.

It was common in old Hofuf to live within an extended family. The nuclear family, which is composed of the parents and their children, was rarely found unless as part of an extended family. The extended family in traditional Hofuf consisted of a number of nuclear families living together in one dwelling or several dwellings close to one another. The members of the extended family usually maintained an intimate relationship and interacted within the limits of mutual and interdependent bonds. These limits were imposed by the family norms and customs and mainly determined within the frame of the rights and obligations of individuals and the type of relationship they had with other members of the extended family.

Usually the extended family consisted of more than one generation, and in many cases consisted of three generations. The members of these generations were socially and economically integrated. This type of relationship is what we name in this study 'primary relationship'. This relationship existed among the nuclear families that constituted the extended family in the

² Werner, C. M. (1987), Op. Cit., p. 173.

locally by the response to certain circumstances or changes in the environment. Hakim differentiates between two types of conventions, public and private. On the one hand, public conventions are established and followed by a large community or many communities. Private conventions, on the other hand, are followed locally by one small community or group of people.⁶¹

Habits

There are several individual values that determine people's daily lives. These values create kinds of rituals in the daily life of individuals and subgroups (families). In this regard, Hakim explains the meaning of habits and stresses the place of the motive in conceiving the habits. He states:

‘The origin of habit ... is initiated at the individual level. For every act there must be an impetus or reason. This impetus could be external to the individual, or it could emanate from within. So if the person feels content with his act in response to the impetus (whether it is external or internal), and it is repeated, then it becomes a habit...’⁶²

For Hakim, the habits are different from customs or conventions, because the custom emerges when the individual action, or habit, is spread and repeated by the community. He stated that every convention is a habit, while not every habit is a convention.⁶³ However, unless the habits find their way to become conventions, they will be more exposed to change over time. This is because ‘the evolution of values and attitudes is slower than the evolution of behaviour’.⁶⁴

One important point should be mentioned: that is that habit is controlled by religious and cultural values. Therefore, if we attribute individual identity to habits, we mean those specific characteristics such as taste, preference and daily routines which can be different from one to another. But shared values, religious and conventional, control the individual values.⁶⁵

⁶⁰Hakim, B. (1994), Op. Cit., p. 110.

⁶¹Ibid., p. 111.

⁶²Ibid., p. 110.

⁶³Ibid., p. 110.

⁶⁴Bernard, Y. (1993) ‘Flexibility in the Usage of Dwelling’, In Marjorie Bulos & Necdet Teymur (Eds) *Housing: Design, Research, Education*, England, Avebury.

⁶⁵For example, the way we dress in Saudi Arabia is a public convention. In this sense, we use dress to express our social identity. However, society stresses using this dress and forces the individual to dress similarly to all community members. On one occasion my father was angry with me because he saw me wearing a different style outside the house. He told me that I should follow tradition in my dress. In this case, individual and subgroup identity is controlled by group and social identity. Moreover, physical aspects (the form of dress in this case) that are used to reflect certain traditional socio-cultural values still have their importance in contemporary Saudi society. One important point should be clarified regarding this example. That is, the dress (in term of its form) was developed and several

The fourth factor, as Palgrave indicated in the last century, is that the people of Al-Hasa were deeply influenced by their agricultural land.⁵ They developed their own industry and rituals that are related to this geographical and economical feature. For example, society was divided into two groups, those who worked on the farms and those who owned the farms. The relationship between these two groups influenced, for example, the spatial organisation of the male reception spaces. Usually when the workers visited the owners they came on their donkeys. Therefore an animal court developed, associated with the reception spaces in the owner's houses.

As has been indicated earlier, the daily life pattern was shaped by the above four factors. In this section we will go further by highlighting some daily activities that were influenced by these factors. We need, however, to mention that it is difficult to separate these factors from each other because every activity in the traditional environment was influenced by one or more factors.

In the traditional environment, an extended family lived in the same house. The oldest man in the house had the power and control over his sons, grandsons and their wives.⁶ He organised things and gave orders to everybody who lived in the house. The youngest men in the family could not be separated from the family house until their father died. In many cases they continued to live together for a long time even after their fathers died (the oldest son would replace him), but in the end either they divided the house or sold it and moved to separate houses to create new extended families.

Daily life in the traditional environment started before sunrise when the *najmat assebh* was seen by people (a group of stars appear in the east before sunrise, an occurrence used by people in Hofuf as an indicator for the time of the *Fajar* prayer).⁷ This was the first indication of the impact of nature on people's daily life. People in the traditional home environment slept in open spaces, such as on the roof and in the courtyard, in the summer. Even if they moved inside in the winter, they still had the link with the sky through the courtyard which connected most of the internal rooms and provided them with ventilation and light.

⁵ Palgrave, W.G. (1866) *Narrative of Year's Journey Through Central and Eastern Arabia (1862-3)*, London, Vol. 2, p. 146.

⁶ In fact this phenomenon was found in most Arabian societies. In Saudi Arabia, for example, Salah states that the 'family is usually headed by the oldest male member. When sons marry, they often continue to live at home or in an adjoining or adjacent home. Consequently it is not unusual for several generations to live together. Salah, S. (1978) *Panorama of Saudi Arabia*, Dhahran, IPA, p. 11.

⁷ Interview with a women. She also indicated that nowadays people cannot see the sky because they live in closed houses.

In the traditional home environment, men should attend the mosque to perform the *Fajar* prayer (5-6 a.m. in the winter; 3-4 a.m. in the summer). It is rare that a man did not attend the prayer. If he did, people in the same *fereej* would ask about him. This obligation made daily life start one hour before sunrise because men had to prepare themselves to go to the mosque to attend the prayer. During the prayer period, women perform their prayers at home and then prepared the breakfast by milking the cow and preparing the coffee. When the men returned from the mosque they had their coffee either with the family or with guests.

People usually expected some guests immediately after the *Fajar* prayer.⁸ In some houses, this was considered a daily routine. The men's reception spaces in these houses were usually open all day. The women usually prepared the fire while her husband was in the mosque because she knew that he would be accompanied by some guests.⁹ The visit rituals in Hofuf were a very important part of traditional daily life. This is why some men spent their whole daytime in the men's reception spaces and received guests. They also practised some of their business in these spaces. For example some merchant families used the men's reception spaces as commercial offices. The father of the family stayed in the *majlis* and entertained his visitors and clients. If he needed to do some private business usually he had a room for that.¹⁰ Some old men had no work; they just stayed in their *majlises* and entertained their visitors while their sons worked.

After breakfast, usually dates and coffee and sometimes milk, people went to their work. Some people, especially the elderly, stayed in the open *majlises* or sat on a mud benches called *daka* (Fig.6.1). These benches were usually located in the entrance of the house or in the *sabats*, the shaded areas around the house. The outside domain was mainly for men. This was why men could sit and enjoy their time in the external domestic spaces without getting in the way of their neighbours. In the meantime, women did their work at home. It is important to mention that the use of spaces in the traditional home environment was strongly connected with the role of men and women in the community. As we noticed men could sit outside home without trespassing on the women's domain. Similarly with the women's *majlis*, the women worked or entertained their neighbours in the roof without being interfered with by men.

⁸ This convention still exists in Hofuf in a few houses. The researcher attended several *Majlises* early in the morning immediately after the *Fajar* prayer (one of them in the house of Sheikh Abdulrahman ben Ahmed ben abdullatif Al-Mulla). Coffee and dates are usually offered on such occasions.

⁹ For more detail see chapter viii.

¹⁰ Usually a merchant has a box called *bushtakhtah*. This box is usually used as an office drawer to keep the business papers.

Usually lunch would be presented by ten o'clock in the morning because daily life in the traditional city was very short.¹¹ The dinner was also prepared very early, immediately after *Asr* prayer (around 4 p.m.). Before 1913 there was a virtual curfew in the city at night. This is why people got to bed after the *Isha* prayer (around 8 p.m.). Between the *Maghreb* prayer and the *Isha* prayer (5-6 p.m. in the winter; 6-8 p.m. in the summer), women could visit their families because it was dark so that no men could see them. Also by this time, men had no obligations so they could join their wives and visit their families together.

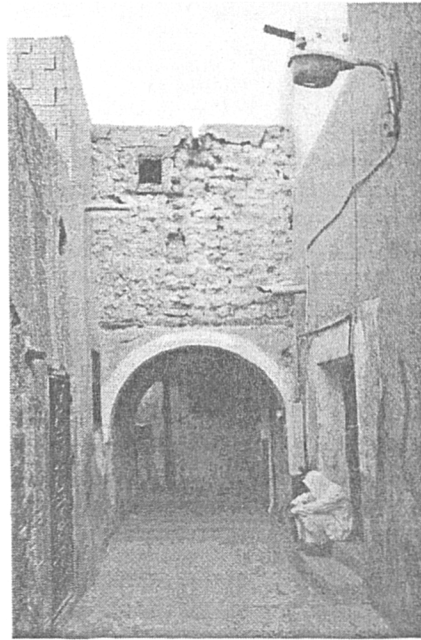


Fig.6.1 : Old man sitting on *daka* in *Alkut*, source: Fieldwork

The oldest woman in the house (the wife of the head of family) was the only women who could answer the door if a woman visitor came. Usually, her daughters-in-law could not entertain any female guests unless her mother-in-law is not in the house or unless she gave permission.

Every woman in the house had a job. These jobs was decided and distributed by the oldest woman in the house. The housework was mainly done by the younger women, while the oldest woman usually entertained herself with her friends in *duha* time (between 10 a.m. and midday). In the afternoon every woman in the house prepared the sleeping area for her husband and children. This routine work changed slightly according to the seasons. For example, in the summer women went upstairs to the roof and cleaned the mattresses of dust; then they spread some water on the roof surface to cool it down. Also they filled a few water bottles to have cold water at night. The whole family also took their dinner in the roof and spent some time talking and telling stories before going to sleep.

¹¹ Some people had their lunch earlier than this time. If the householder needed to go to the farm he had to take his lunch by seven o'clock in the morning. He would take his dinner after *Asr* prayer (around 4 p.m.).

The most restrictive values in the traditional Hofuf were those which dealt with the role of women in society. The women's domain was, and still is, the most prohibited domain for men.¹² If any woman wished to visit her neighbour she would use the opening between the roof parapets. It was prohibited for women to go outside in the daytime. One interviewee from *Assalhiyyah*, which had a life pattern completely similar to that in the old quarters, informed the researcher that if a women wanted to visit her father's house she would do so at night. Also, she would be accompanied by her husband or her family maid. All these precautions were needed even if her father's house's faced her house.

A woman could not show her face to unrelated men but only to her closest relatives the *mahrms* (such as her father, sons, brothers, grandfathers, nephews and husband). In fact the unmarried young women could not even show their faces to an unrelated women. In 1924 Mackie indicated that:

'... during the whole of my stay there [in Hofuf] I never saw a women's face... It is rare that one sees little girls unveiled after they have reached the age of six or seven. Even when they are working in the gardens cutting barley or lucerne or gathering firewood they still retain it.'¹³

This full separation between male and female domains divided the activities in society into two main groups, those activities related to men and those related to women. This distinction was not parallel because women's activities mainly occurred at home and they rarely had any public activities.¹⁴

The position of women in society influenced the whole home environment in Hofuf and forced the house to follow certain organisation to meet the need to segregate males and females inside the house. As we have noticed, women mainly lived in very private spaces. They were separated from outside by a very complicated circulation network starting from the bent entrance in the house to the opening in the roof parapets to minimise outside interactions.

¹² In fact this attitude is not only in Hofuf. In many tribal and peasant Arabic societies the women's domain is considered the most restricted for men. See Dodd, P. (1973) 'Family Honor and the Forces of Change in Arab Society', *International Journal of Middle East Studies*, No. 4, pp. 40-54. Also, Sweet, E. (ed) (1970) *People and Cultures of the Middle East*, New York, The Natural History Press (two volumes).

¹³ Mackie (1924), Op. Cit., pp. 205-6.

¹⁴ Most of the women practiced their activities in their houses except those poor families and widows who had to carry out some commercial activities. Also, on occasions a group of women went swimming together. There was a public spring called *ummikhrisan*. This spring was divided into two zones, one for men and the other for women. The women's part was walled on all sides to maintain full privacy for women. Cheesman (1924) noticed this spring. He said 'The spring itself rises in a large pool about 150 yards across, from which the distributing channels radiate ... On the north side is an enclosed bath-house for women' (p. 74).

It is still the case that women in the traditional home environment have their own activities. For example, usually a group of women gather in one house, normally a widow's house or the house of the oldest woman if her husband is not in. They visit each other through the roof routes and spend the whole morning working together, mainly sewing. They call this meeting *duha* tea. Every woman comes with her basket and they sit in a circle. They work and chat, and sometimes they sing and tell stories.¹⁵ This time is considered the principle time for women to socialise with their neighbours because all men are either at their work or sitting in their *majlises*.

If a woman needs support income and she cannot sew, usually she will work in trade from her house. Many widows have a room in their house used as a mini shop to sell women's clothes and cosmetics.¹⁶ Usually old women visit her at the *duha* or *zuher* times to buy what they need. In most cases they spend a long time there because, firstly, there is no man in the house and secondly, because more than one woman usually meets in this house.¹⁷ It seems that women in the traditional home environment have tried very hard to create their own realm and their own social world by using every single opportunity to socialise with other women in the *fereej*.

People in the traditional environment depend on each other to do many things. For example, only large houses in the *fereej* contain an oven or a grinder. Women usually gather in one or two houses to bake collectively. When grinding rice or wheat, usually two women sit facing each other and each one of them uses a wooden stick called a *maigana*. They create a rhythm because each one of them follows the other in pounding with the wooden stick. These activities described above are considered the main entertainment and socialising activities for women in the traditional home environment. This exclude the marriage ceremonies where women celebrate and gather for seven days in some cases.¹⁸

¹⁵ The researcher recorded some of these stories. In fact most old people know these stories because men and women usually tell them for amusement, especially when they include poems and songs.

¹⁶ This is also found in the traditional home environment in central Arabia. Al-Hussayen, A. (1996), Op. Cit. p 120

¹⁷ The researcher remembered that when he was a child he visited a widows house with his mother in *Anna athil* quarter. Usually many women gather in that house though most of them did not need to buy anything; rather than they wanted to socialise with other women

¹⁸ See Appendix II.

6.2.2 THE SOCIAL SPECTRUM OF THE *FEREEJ* SYSTEM

Traditional home environments in Hofuf as seen in an aerial photograph form three large masses. It is difficult to notice any physical difference between the three old quarters that formed the traditional Hofuf, *Alkut*, *Arrif'a*, and *Anna'athil*, except that every mass has its distinctive shape (Fig. 6.2).¹⁹ In the physical sense every quarter forms one large mass where houses, streets, and open spaces mixed together to create irregular shapes and patterns (Fig.6.3). Still, this physical unity hides very diverse social relationships. What we mean by the word 'diverse' here is the desire to display a discrete identity, which is the main goal behind the concept of *fereej*. This word nothing to do with 'heterogeneity' because the traditional society of Hofuf was very homogeneous, but there was a desire by every clan or group of related clans to be identified as distinct from the other clans in the society.

The concept of *fereej* in its innate characteristics implies both homogeneity and diversity. It has homogeneity in the sense that individuals who live in the physical place form one unified group. Diversity refers to the desire to be different from other groups. The *fereej* is a homogeneous system because it binds its members to one internal frame. Every member in the *fereej* has the ability to define people and the places that belong to the *fereej*. The *fereej* in its physical characteristics is similar to any other *fereej* in the traditional home environment in Hofuf, but its social and territorial meanings are different from others.

The desire to be identified developed hidden boundaries, by which the masses of the traditional quarters were divided into smaller units (Fig.6.4). Every unit was called by the local people of Hofuf a *fereej*. This means that the *fereej* system is a social mechanism more than a physical one. However, the physical representation of the traditional home environment was strongly influenced by the requirements of this system

¹⁹ See Appendix I.



Fig. 6.2: Traditional home environment in Hofuf. Source: Modified from Aerial photograph 1935 . Aramco



Fig. 6.3 Unitary physical mass of the traditional neighbourhood (*Alkut* and part of the northern *Arrifa* . It is impossible to define the hidden boundary of the *fereej* system. Source: Aramco.

The concept of *fereej* in its social connotation can be seen as a synonym of the notion of *ham la* which was used by local people in Hofuf to identify those families who carried the same name and lived together as group in one place. It is sometimes called *Bayt* 'house', which is always used to define the name of the whole clan. The *hamola*, in this sense, denotes the relationships which existed within, and to some extent between, the extended families from the same clan in traditional Hofuf. It implies the basic organisation principles around which traditional clan life has evolved. The main essential quality of the *hamola* was the fact that it had continuously lived as a group in the same place. It means a domestic social unit consisting of individual families, mainly extended, related by blood and inter-marriage. The *hamola* embodies the concept of 'genealogical' line extending from the past, through the present, and into the future.²⁹ Individuals and families have a clear picture of the *hamola*'s norms and beliefs, which is mainly

²⁹ The notion 'genealogical' is defined by the American Heritage Dictionary as a 'record or table of the descent of a person, family, or group from an ancestor or ancestors; a family tree'. In Hofuf, *hamola* refers to the concept of continuity of the family name

compatible with communal beliefs, and worked out quite clearly in the matter of daily routine and expected behaviour.

The *hamola* is considered the basic concept of the intermediate kinship in the traditional community of Hofuf. Each clan prefers to live as a group (one *hamola*) and creates its own *fereej*. *Fereej* in this context is a group reference. The *fereej* system derived its continuity in the traditional home environment from the inter-family marriages which tended to bind an individual to his clan by more than one bond.



Fig. 6.4 In the traditional home environment it is difficult to find physical boundaries between the different *fereej*s,
Source: Developed from Al-Musallam, A. (1995), Op. Cit., pp.3-4 & 11-12.

the physical home will 'act as a focus of the person's activities, memories and experiences, indeed their sense of identity'.¹⁰⁸

2.3.2 HOME AS AN EXPRESSION OF IDENTITY

'Home occupies a psychological role and is used to display aspects of identity. People enjoy the opportunity for self-expression. They attribute meanings to domestic space and show their values and creativity in decorating the front of their houses.'¹⁰⁹

Home can reflect a wide diversity of environmental and cultural experiences. The house form is generated gradually as a result of interactive forces between the dwellers and the physical environment. Individuals and groups tend to express their identity in their houses over time.

Altman and Gauvain understand the home as a dynamic dialectic process. They introduce two pairs of opposites to understand the meaning of home, the identity/communality dialectic and the accessibility/inaccessibility dialectic. They argue that the home not only serves to express the self, either as an individual or in relation to the community, but it also serves as an important device for the people to regulate their openness and closedness. Home, therefore, is seen as partially 'reflecting both the unique identity of its occupants as well as their communality with broader culture'.¹¹⁰

Dovey also sees home as a dynamic dialectic. He developed three dialectics, spatial, social, and appropriation. The spatial dialectic, for example, can be between inside and outside. In that sense home is seen as 'a room inside a house, a house within a neighborhood, a neighborhood within a city, and a city within a nation'. The social dialectic represents identity through the oppositions of self/other, identity/community, and private/public. Finally, appropriation is 'a dialectic process through which we take aspects of our world into our being and are in turn taken by our world'.¹¹¹

¹⁰⁸ *Ibid.*, pp. 292-293.

¹⁰⁹ Jin, J. H. (1993) 'Home as Expression of Identity', In Marjorie Bulos & Necdet Teymur (Eds) Housing: Design, Research, Education, England, Avebury, pp. 181-192.

¹¹⁰ Altman, I. & Gauvain, M. (1981), *Op. Cit.*, p. 286.

¹¹¹ Dovey, K. (1985), *Op. Cit.*, pp. 44-48.

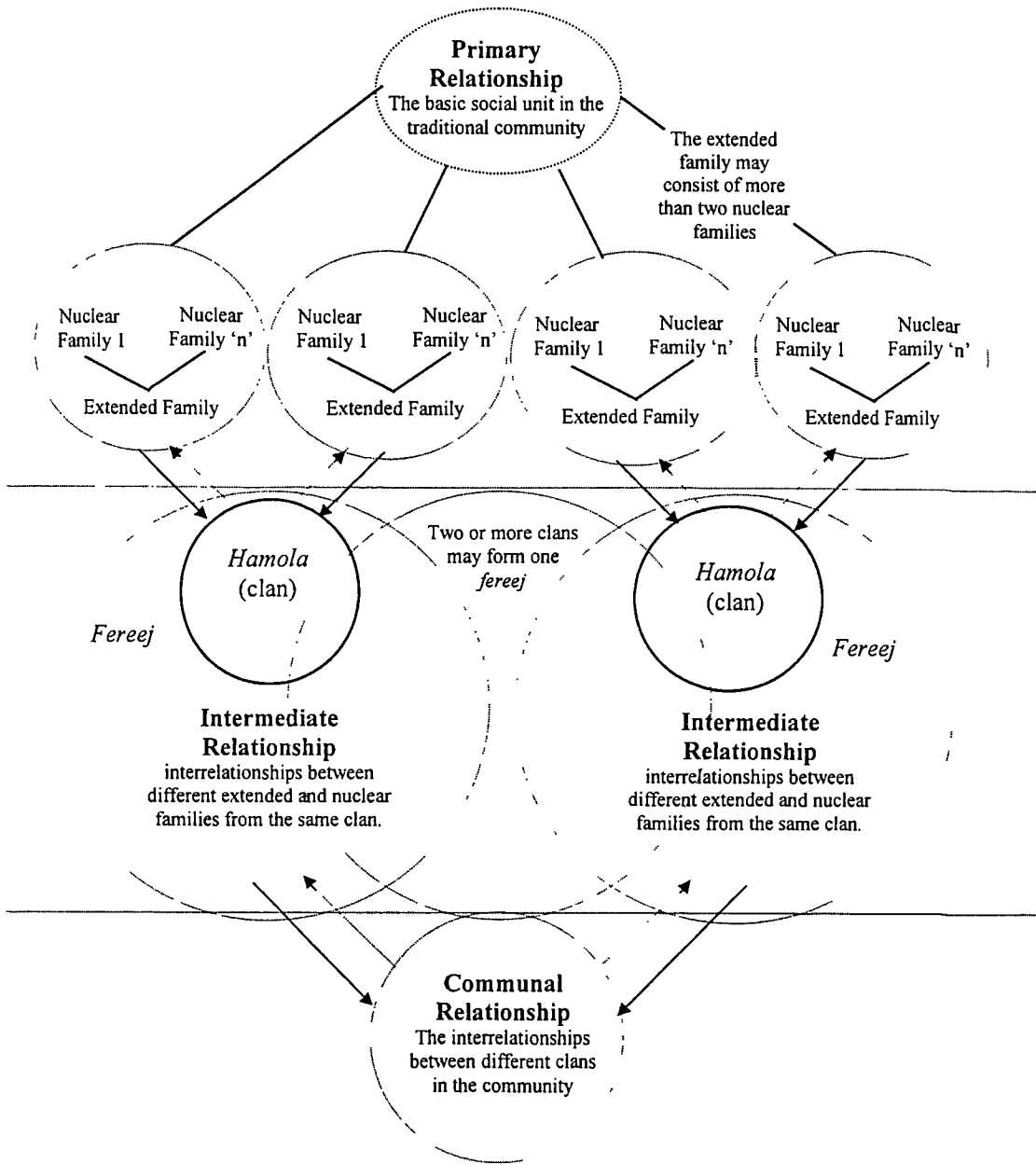


Fig. 6.5: The social system in the traditional home environment in Hofuf

6.3 FEREEJ SYSTEM: FROM SOCIAL ORGANISATION TO A PLACE MAKING

The foregoing discussion explored the basic mechanism of socialisation in the traditional community of Hofuf. A distinguishing social character has been presented, that is the interpersonal relationship of the family members or what we called 'primary relationship'. This relationship was responsible for family cohesiveness and identity. Its impact on the physical environment is seen from its micro level where changeable social and physical aspects mutually co-exist to produce the dwelling and its intimate spaces. As we noticed, the primary relationship worked as a mechanism to balance the dynamism of social and physical environments with the need for stability and a sense of identity.

The kinship relationships in traditional Hofuf had classified the community and categorised the individuals and groups. The residential unit, in many cases, emerged as the physical symbol of the family's origin.²² We can argue here that families and groups in the traditional home environment in Hofuf developed several symbols and cues to preserve their identity within the community. Rapoport discusses the process of clustering. He attributes this phenomenon to the 'selection and choice of particular environmental quality, so that the city becomes a set of areas of different groups which tend to define themselves in terms of "us" and "them". There is a process of inclusion and exclusion, of establishing boundaries and stressing social identity by use of cues and symbols'.²³

The question which this part of the study aims to address is why there was a need for aggregation in the traditional home environment. As we have mentioned, life circumstances may change: people die and move from one place to another. A sense of continuity, therefore, may be threatened if these circumstances are not absorbed. In the traditional community, there was an internal mechanism to overcome the change in life circumstances. This mechanism, as we mentioned, is the inter-family relationships or what local people in Hofuf call *hamola*.

The degree of aggregation or separation of the spatial formation of the traditional home environment in Hofuf was strongly influenced by the clan arrangements, by communal shared beliefs, and by women's role in society. Society, as Hillier and Hanson argue, follows two ways

²² Oliver, P. 1975, Op Cit., p 13 Shetty, Rajmohan 1990 "The Impact of Kinship Systems on the Generation of House-Types" *TDSR*, Vol. I, No. 11, pp 49-60

²³ Rapoport, A. 1977 Op Cit., p 248

of establishing 'definite spatial form'. The first way is that 'it arranges people in space in that it locates them in relation to each other'. The second way mainly deals with the physical responses of the social arrangement. Society 'arranges space itself by means of buildings, boundaries, paths, marks, zones, and so on'. By these two arrangements a society 'acquires a definite and recognisable spatial order', which enables us to recognise the ways in which members of any society 'live out and reproduce their social existence'.²⁴

Many people in Hofuf attributed the origin of the word *fereej* to the Arabic word '*furja*' plural '*furaj*' which means the small opening in a wall. This small opening was usually found in the party walls between houses to connect different houses in the *fereej* by roof footways. Some of openings have doors and other do not. Vidal supported this observation when he notices this phenomenon in Hofuf in 1955. He finds

'...that one street door gives access not to one house but to a small yard around which clusters a whole compound of several three or four-storied houses. These houses are inhabited by members of the same extended family and are usually mutually accessible from the roof level, although they have separate ground floor entrances.'²⁵

This roof footway is used by women only because they were not allowed to go outside in the day time.²⁶ If a woman wanted to visit her neighbour, she could use the roof route.²⁷ The role of women in society required them to be out of men's sight. This translated into a physical configuration involving houses becoming more aggregated. Moreover, this footway defined the boundary of the *fereej* both socially and physically.²⁸ Those houses connected by the footways formed the *fereej*, which might over time include new members or exclude others.

This tradition stemmed from the basic communal system of traditional society in Hofuf where men represented the dominant party. However, it was very important to satisfy the women's needs for socialising at the same time as protecting them from men's eyes. This was fulfilled by the roof routes, which extended the domain of the women to include whole *fereej*. This provided

²⁴ Hiller, R. & Hanson, J. (1984), *Op. Cip.*, pp. 26-7.

²⁵ Vidal, F. (1955) *The Oasis of Al-Hasa*, Dhahran, Arabian American Oil Company, p. 82. This was noticed by Vidal at the time where the home environment in Hofuf had already experienced change. This shows that people in traditional home environments in Hofuf kept the closest relationship in their houses and the footway was still working at a primary social system even when the traditional environment experience changed. In fact the *fereej* completely declined in the traditional areas later on (see Chapter VIII).

²⁶ The dominance of men in the public domain is not only a feature of the traditional home environment in Hofuf but it is in most traditional Arabic Societies. Al-Shahi, A. (1986) "'Welcome, my House is Yours": Values Related to the Arab House', In A. Hyland & Ahmed Al-Shahi *The Arab House*, Proceedings of the Colloquium held in the University of Newcastle upon Tyne, 15/16 March 1984, pp. 25-32.

²⁷ Group interview in Mr. Ibrahim Al-Shu'aiby's house, 19-11-1996; Personal interview with Mrs. Latifa Al-Najjar, 25-11-1996; Personal interview (conducted by Ahmed Al-Mulla) with Mrs. Mariam Abdullah Al-Mulla, 10-7-1996.

²⁸ See Appendix II.

full separation between men's domain and the women's domain and enabled women to create their own community. Conventionally people respected these roof footways and did not disturb the privacy of neighbours. This is why there was no need to use doors for the openings in the roof routes.

6.3.1 PHYSICAL FORMATION OF THE *FEREJ* SYSTEM

Every extended family lived in a single house. After the death of the head of the family, the sons usually divided the house into a number of houses (Fig.6.6). This created another type of extended family which was usually expressed physically by a small private cluster within the *fereej*. This close relationship was then considered more private than other parts of the territory that were occupied by the same *hamola*. This type of relationship was characterised by more roof footway connections, and houses usually clustered around a cul-de-sac and sometimes around an open space called a *baraha*. Vidal notices this phenomenon and states:

‘As rule, the houses are built around a central courtyard, which in old times apparently was quite spacious. It seems that living spaces eventually got to be at a premium in Hofuf, regional insecurity forcing people to live inside the walled area and the town being forced to accommodate the population increase without enlarging its limits. Another house, and later two or three of them, would be built around the same courtyard to accommodate the sons of the owner of the original house and their families.’²⁹

This clustering expresses the desire of a family to be defined from the surrounding families. In most cases the division of the main house created a *sikka sad* (cul-de-sac) to provide accessibility to the deepest houses. In many cases these clusters form new *fereej*s. However, it is difficult to attribute the origin of the *fereej* system to this phenomenon only because in many cases groups of people collectively move from one place to another and create a *fereej*. Still, in traditional Hofuf the division of houses due to the expansion of the extended family was one of the main mechanisms that created this system.

²⁹ Vidal, F. S. (1955) Op. Cit., pp. 81-2. In reality this phenomenon cannot be attributed only to regional insecurity. The interpersonal relationship between the family members and their social and economic interdependency are the main factors that made them assess social and physical clustering as of high social value.

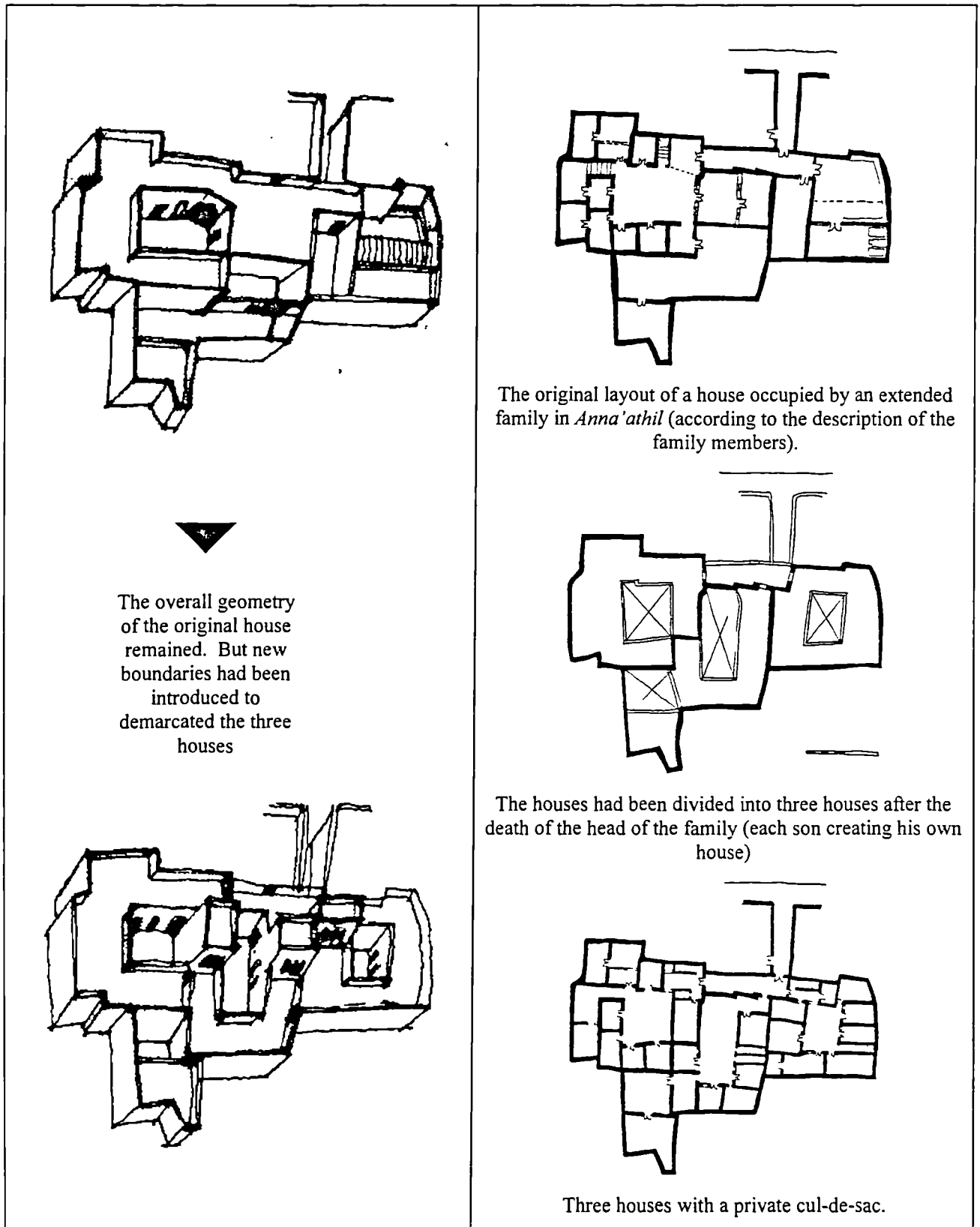


Fig.6.6 Division of the traditional house (a mechanism for producing the physical entity of the *fereej* system). Source: Fieldwork.

Cul-de-sacs were the end of the circulation network. Many *sikkas* narrowed or tapered into smaller ones and ended up with a cul-de-sac, which usually led to a cluster of houses owned by one extended family or families from the same *hamola*. The cul-de-sacs were considered more private than *sikkas*. People in traditional Hofuf preferred houses which were located in cul-de-sacs for security and privacy reasons.³⁰ One of the interviewees, for example, said ‘Our old house was located in a *sikka sad* (cul-de-sac). It was very secured and nobody can enter our private street unless he needs to visit us.’

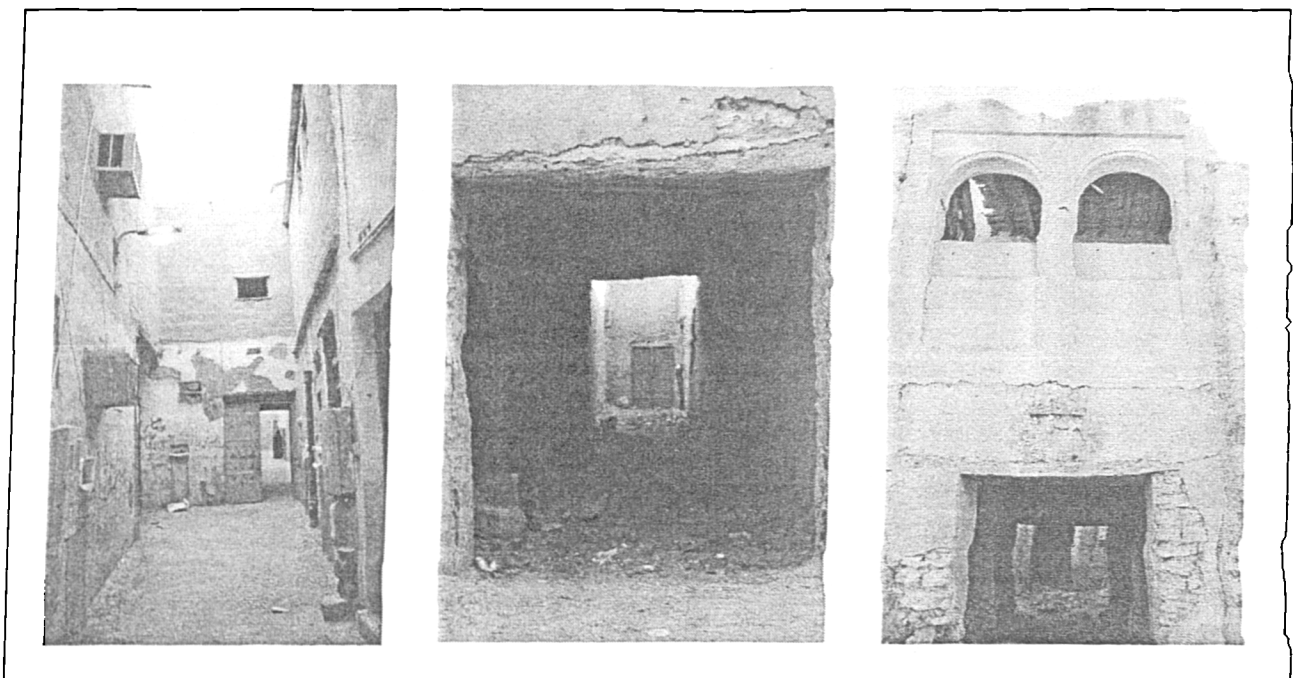


Fig.6.7: private cul-de-sacs connecting a group of houses from the same family in *Anna'athil*. Source: Field work.

They call those houses which were located in cul-de-sacs ‘*sindouq*’ which means box. In the traditional home environment, people use the *sindouq* to keep their private and valuable belongings. This name reflects the importance of privacy and security for people where women and children can transfer from one house to another by using this secured and private place. It is clear that this collective behaviour influenced the physical morphology of the traditional environment by increasing the number of cul-de-sacs. Also, it encouraged people to live in more aggregated places.

³⁰ Interview with Sheikh Ahmed ben Ali Al-Mubarak and Mr. Ibrahim Ben Abdulrahman Al-Shuaibi.

Most of these cul-de-sacs had a door to give the inhabitants, especially the women, more flexibility to visit each other (Fig.6.7). For example, women could visit each other without covering their head or face. The door was usually closed in the absence of men to provide the women with maximum freedom. This physical representation can be seen as a symbol of identity by saying to other members in the *fereej* 'this is our place'.

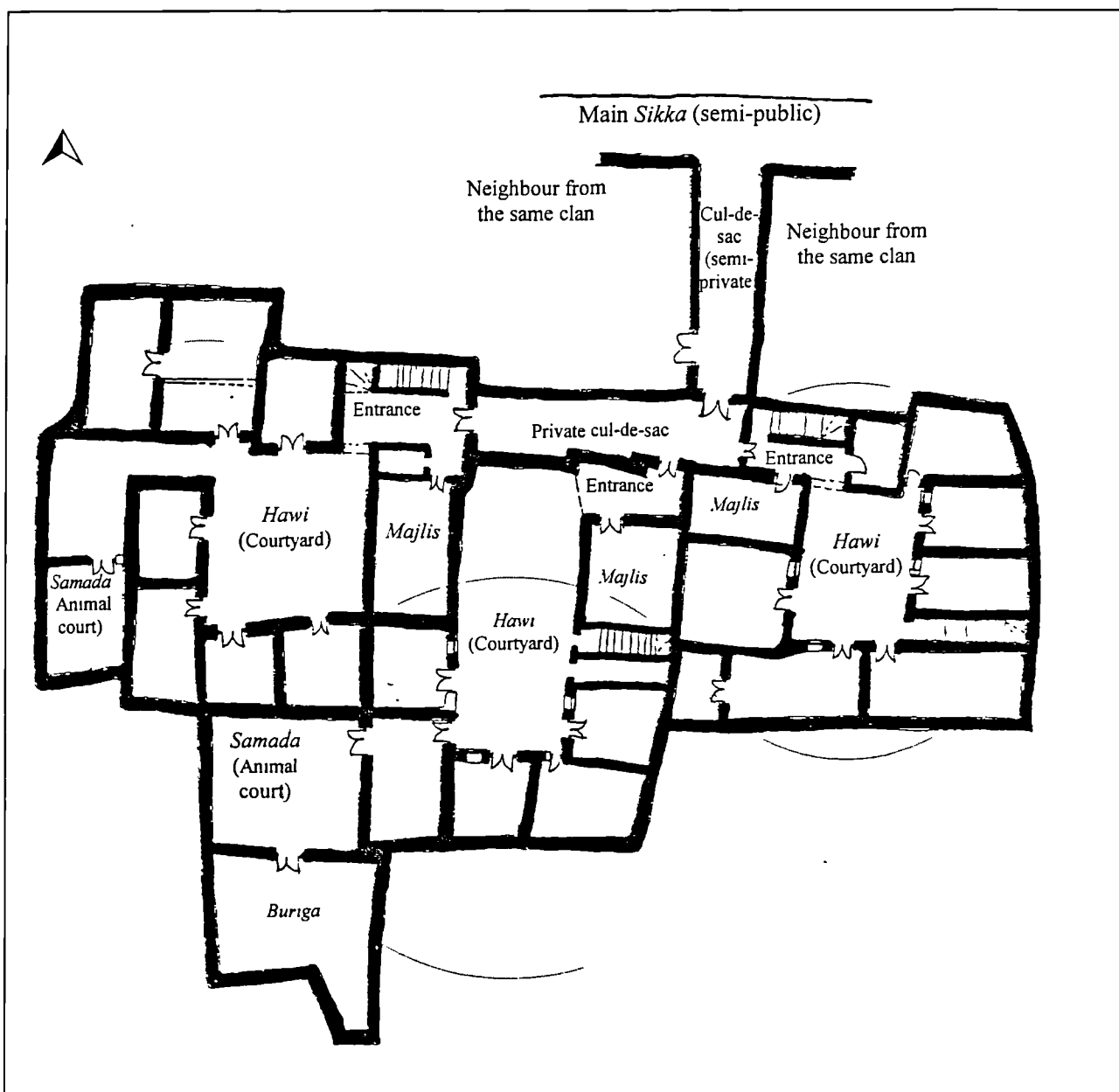


Fig.6.8: The dynamism of the traditional home environment at its micro level, where new cul-de-sacs may appear and others may disappear. Source: Fieldwork.

Moreover, the shape of the cul-de-sac is very dynamic to reflect the dynamism of the family circumstances which may change any time. The dynamic form of the cul-de-sac is mostly due to two mechanisms in traditional settlements (Fig.6.8). Firstly, the 'easement right'³¹ where others have the right to pass to their properties through the cul-de-sac, which means that if a house has been divided into two or more dwellings, the right to pass into all the new houses was reserved, which in many cases creates a new cul-de-sac. Secondly, in many cases, the cul-de-sac is considered part of the surrounding house; therefore, changes in the house strongly influence the shape of the cul-de-sac. For example, if anybody buys these houses and decides to connect them or demolish them to build a new house, the cul-de-sac may disappear.

6.4 CONTINUITY OF THE *FEREEJ* SYSTEM IN THE TRADITIONAL HOME ENVIRONMENT

The question of continuity of the *fereej* system in the traditional home environment has still not yet been explored. If the social and physical entities of the *fereej* have been established how will they continue over time? In the natural course of things people die or move from one place to another; families divide into smaller units or aggregate into large extended units. So has the *fereej* system adapted with these changes? How has it maintained its identity? The following discussion tries to give an example of how this system has retained its existence over time in the traditional home environment in Hofuf.

We already mentioned that the extended family may have divided into a group of families so that the original house also may have been divided to accommodate those families. Moreover, people may move to another place if the number of the family members increases. In this case, the identity of every *fereej* has maintained over time by a communal religious principle: that is the mechanism of *shufa* (pre-emption).³² Generations over time cannot break the homogeneity of the *fereej* because this principle has given the members of the *hamola* authority over those who want to sell their houses to outsiders. It is based on religious and legal rights. Akbar defined this principle as:

'...the right of the co-owner to substitute himself for the purchaser if the other co-owner(s) decide to sell his or their share. The pre-emptor stands in the shoes of the

³¹ The term easement right in Arabic is called '*Haq Al-Irtifaq*'. It means, as Al Ba'ly (1985) said 'the ability of the individual alone or with herds) to pass through other's property in order to arrive at his property'. Cited in Al-Said, F. 1992, Op Cit., p 114

³² Akbar, J. 1988, Op Cit., p 258

purchaser and takes the property subject to prior equities, thus reducing the number of owners in the owning party.’³³

The *shuf’a* as basic religious principle is a communal shared value used to control the dynamism at the micro level which was associated with the primary relationship. Because the family as a social unit is in fact changeable the physical associations of the extended family may change over time. Therefore, as we noticed, the *shuf’a* worked in the traditional home environment to maintain group continuity by giving the *hamola*’s members the authority to prevent strangers to break down the homogeneity of their *fereej* throughout generations.

What is really interesting about this mechanism is the ability of the community (macro level) to maintain social identity by regulating the dynamic relationships which may occur in the primary and intermediate kinship (the micro level). To some extent we can argue that, at the communal level, the traditional home environment was constant over time. This principle maintained the homogeneity of the use and meaning of the *fereej* system over a long period of time and kept its identity consistent even through changing life circumstances.

In most cases the neighbours (who were usually from the same *hamola*) will buy the dwelling if any one in the *fereej* decides to move to another place or change his house for a bigger one. Even if they do not need the house, they will look for another close relative to move in. The only change which may occur is that the private cul-de-sac becomes less private if any one from the *hamola* (outside the extended family which has been divided) buys a house in it. The cul-de-sac may keep its door but the level of privacy need some time to be recover its previous quality.

The *fereej* system was associated with high-level meanings which have the ability to continue over time. This system showed very strong resistance to change in the traditional home environment because it constituted an important part of people’s values and ideas. Despite the series of small changes that were continually occurring at its micro level, still these small changes did not break the continuity of its perceptual and associational identity. It is very important to emphasise that individual identity was replaced by the *hamola* identity or group identity. Nevertheless at the house level, individual identity, as we will see in the next chapter, has been expressed, but within a communal frame (Fig.6.9).

³³ Ibid., p. 131. He added that ‘*Suf’ah* derives from the Prophet’s tradition that “the right of pre-emption is valid in every joint property, but when the property is divided and the way is demarcated, then there is no right of pre-emption.” ’

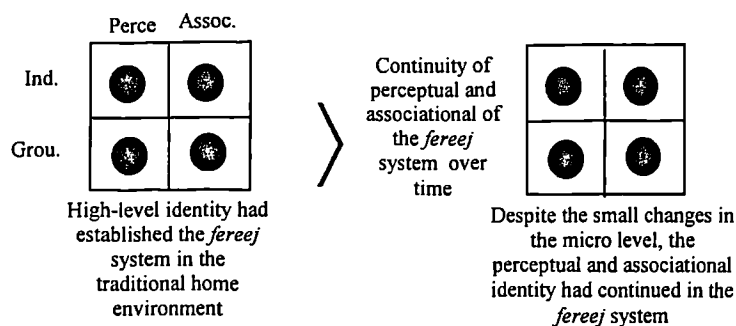


Fig. 6.9: The perceptual and associational identity of the *fereej* system had continued for long time in the traditional home environment

6.5 THE *FEREEJ* AS A TERRITORIAL SYSTEM

In the foregoing discussion we have tried to explore the concept of *fereej*, its meaning and use and its continuity and change in the traditional home environment. We concluded that there was a high-level of identity expressed by the members of the *fereej*. This identity was maintained over time because it expressed the identity of the *hamola*, the genealogical line, the roots that extend from the past and strive to continue in the future. The *fereej* system symbolically was an expression of the continuity of its authenticity.

However, we need to understand how this system had worked in the traditional home environment. So far we have mentioned that the traditional home environment of Hofuf consisted of three main quarters, each quarter containing a number of *fereej*s. It is very important in this respect to understand how the members of different *fereej*s interacted. What was the mechanism used to delimit the *fereej* as a defined territory? We have already discussed the importance of the roof routes to define the members of the *fereej*, to include and exclude members.

One *fereej* in *Anna'athil* quarter has been selected to enable us to analyse the concept of territoriality in the *fereej* system. The emphasis was on how this system existed and how it was continued over time. The *fereej* selected was occupied by two *hamolas* living adjacent to each other and forming one *fereej* called *fereej Annu'aim wa Almulhim*.³⁴ The name is derived from

³⁴ It was significant for this study to investigate the fabric of the *fereej* system and the way of living of its users. Therefore, this particular *fereej* was selected to enable us to carry out the physical and social analysis of this system because it is more accessible and the researcher has more data about it. It is the place where the researcher of this study was born, and he lived in it for more than sixteen years (1967-83). As member of the community, the researcher witnessed the end stage of this system in the traditional home environment and practised some of its traditions. This is not to say that this part of the study fully depends only on the experience of the author about the selected *fereej*. It also depends on a very deep study carried out by applying a multi-sources strategy for data collection to reconstruct the social and physical environment in the selected

the two *hamolas* who lived in it.³⁵ The name of the *fereej* actually was part of the *hamola* status in the community. It was possible to find small families living in the large *hamola's fereej*, because the traditional community in Hofuf was egalitarian. Many interviewees said that small and poor families had lived with large ones and socialised with them without feeling that they were outsiders. Still, the name of the *fereej* reflects the dominant *hamola*. The *fereej's* name became part of the large *hamola's* identity because the *fereej* itself was used by the community as symbol of communication and a way of communal interaction.

The selected *fereej* can be considered an example of the territorial mechanisms at work in the traditional home environment in Hofuf. It consisted of group of houses, a mosque and *Madrassa* (not every *fereej* has *Madrassa*).³⁶ It had a main spine, oriented east-west, by which the *fereej* is divided into two territories, north and south. The main spine intersected with another spine oriented north-south, so that the *fereej* was divided into four main territories. In the eastern part the northern territory occupied by *hamolat Annu'aim* and the southern territory was occupied by *hamolat Almulhim*. In the western part, the northern territory was occupied by *Almulhim* and the southern territory by *Annu'aim*.

Despite both *hamolas* having intermarriage relationships, each one of them tried to define itself within the *fereej* by delimiting its territories. It is important to explain this behaviour because this attitude supports the idea that the process of identification is a main facet of social behaviour with a very deep impact on the spatial and physical environment. One of the interpretations of this attitude is that these two *hamolas* occupied this land and formed this *fereej* at the beginning of the *Anna'athil* quarter. It appears to be the origin of this quarter because this *fereej* is adjacent to *Alkut*, which existed before *Anna'athil*. When they moved to the new area each one occupied a piece of land and constructed the houses of the *hamola's* members in it.³⁷ Later when the number of families increased the area of the *fereej* expanded by including new areas or houses and expanding the *fereej* territory (Fig. 6.10).

area. This was done by carrying out three case studies in depth. This involved measuring the houses and interviewing the original residents. Moreover, measurement of the group of houses, including the three selected cases, was carried out in order to understand the relation between houses in more detail. The researcher also interviewed many of the *fereej's* former inhabitants, especially old men and women.

³⁵ The name of the *fereej* is almost always derived from the family or families who occupy it, but with some *fereej's* occupied by artisans, the name may be derived from a trade such as *Annjajee,r* which means the carpenters. However, from the historical documents, the researcher found that in most cases name of the *fereej* was derived from the *hamola* who live in it. For example, in *Alkut* quarter there were *Al-Jugaiman, Al-Bobaker*, etc. In *Anna'athil* quarter they were *Al-Shuabi, Al-Mazrou'*, etc.

³⁶ The Arabic word *madrassa* means a school.

³⁷ This division may be related to the tribal system in Arabia which influenced the early Arab-Muslim towns such as Basra and Kufa, where every tribe selected territory to build houses for its members. Al-Hathloul, S. (1981), Op. Cit., p. 36. In fact, we can attribute the emergence of the *fereej* system to this old convention which may have dominated the construction of the early quarters in the sixteenth century, but there were many *fereej's* in traditional Hofuf that emerged from the expansion and division of the extended families of one *hamola*.

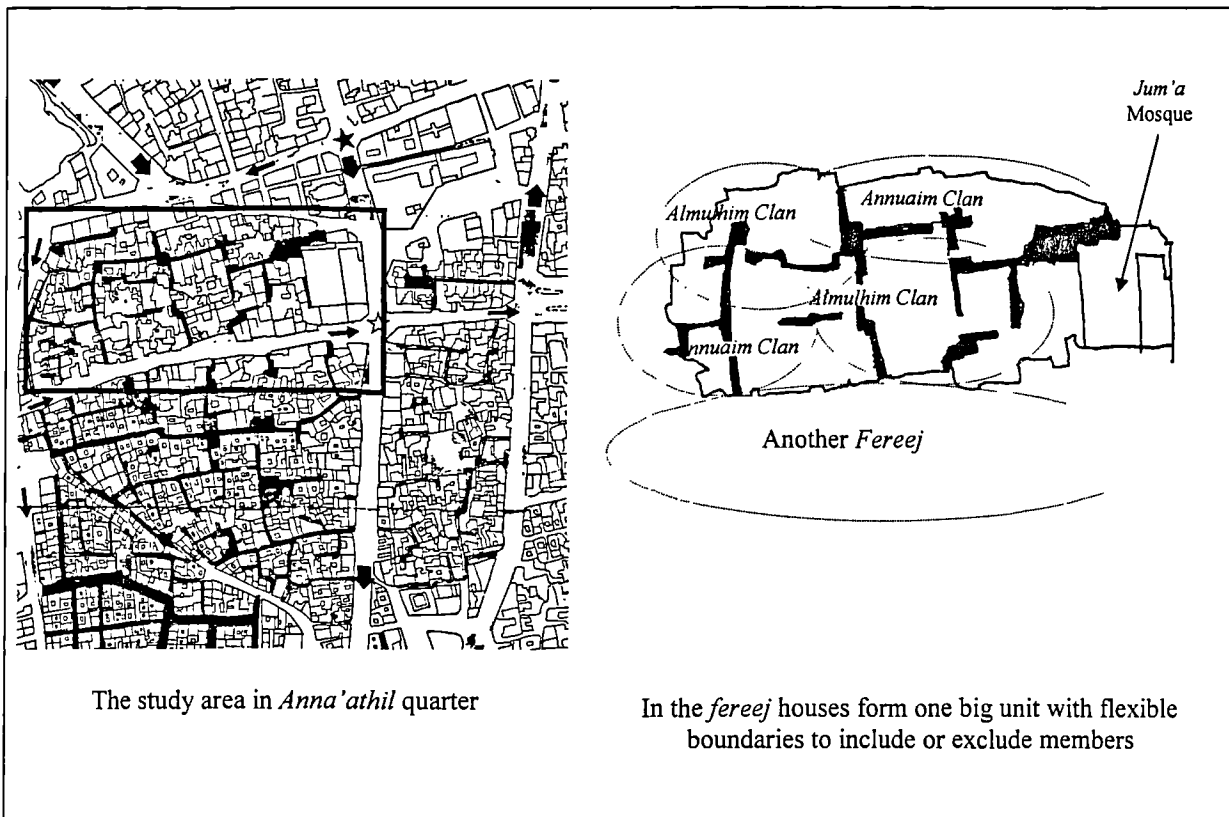


Fig.6.10: The selected *fereej* in *Anna'athil*. Source: Fieldwork.

The *shufa'a* was one of the main supporting mechanisms that helped both *hamolas* to continue over time in their locations without any interruption. For example, one of the old men who lived and constructed his house in this *fereej* said, 'When I decided to build a new house for my family I bought group of small adjacent houses in my *fereej*. Then I re-connected them as one big house.' This indicates that there was a life cycle for the houses in the traditional community. The larger houses were divided until they became very small; then, they might be re-connected or completely rebuilt as one large house. Another man said:

'For me the situation was different. I bought a group of small houses in my *fereej* and some from another *fereej* which was adjacent to my houses at the back. They let me buy these houses from their *fereej* because they knew that I would include them in my *fereej*. It was almost an unwritten agreement. This group of houses were excluded from that *fereej* and included in mine. They became part of my house, which was connected at ground and roof level with my *fereej*'s houses and *sikkas*.'

By this mechanism the *fereej* system maintained its identity and homogeneity, and also permitted the *fereej*'s members to expand or shrink their territory by including or excluding new members.

It prevented the strangers from breaking down the social and physical solidarity of the *hamola*, and it supplied the intermediate relationship with basic values and conventions that helped every *hamola* in the traditional community to continue as one group.

The above example shows that an interaction between any *fereej's* member and members from other *fereej's* could happen any time. We can divide the traditional home environment into three territorial levels. Firstly the *fereej*, which consists of members of the 'home group', secondly the quarter, which consists of a number of adjacent *fereej's*. (The members of the *fereej* are considered, in the case, members of an 'adjacent group'.), and thirdly there are the members of the communal group, which includes the whole traditional home environment (Fig.6.11).³⁸

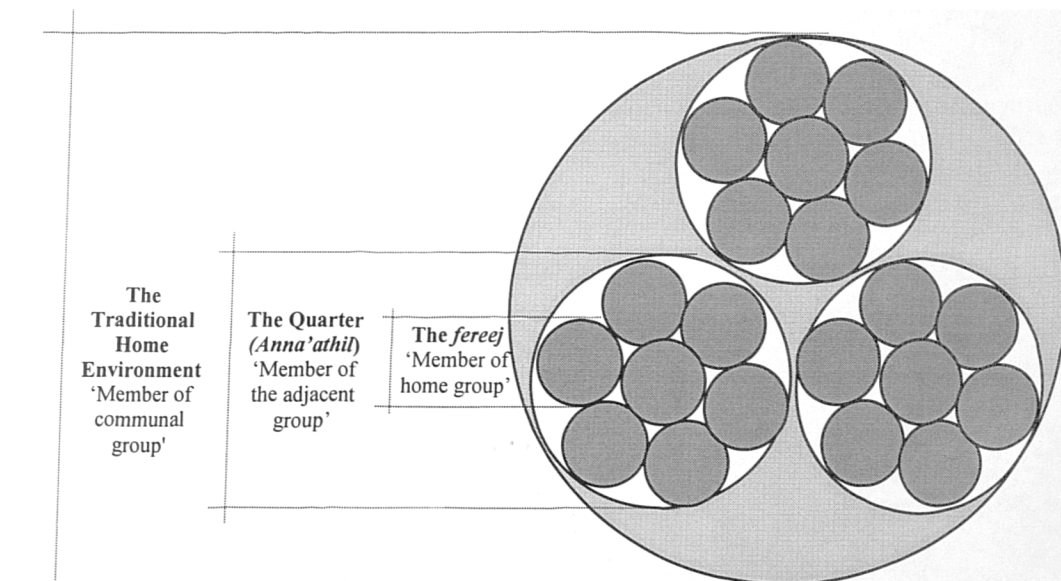


Fig.6.11: Territorial demarcation of the traditional home environment in Hofuf

³⁸ This analysis is based on the three territorial demarcation levels that are mentioned by Martin, R. D. (1972) 'Territoriality and Demarcation of Land' In Ucko, P., Tringham, R. & Dimbleby, G. (eds.) *Man, Settlement and Urbanism*, England, Duckworth Co. Ltd, pp. 427-445. He states 'Full social groups tend to live in increasing proximity, with the consequent development of some kind of acceptance behaviour between adjacent groups. This would lead to three levels of distinction among conspecifics: "member of home group", "member of adjacent group", "member of foreign group".' (p. 442).

This territorial demarcation is seen clearly in the way that members of the community interacted with each other. At the *fereej* level members interacted as one group. Several kinship bonds tied them together and made them one unified group. In some cases, the members of the adjacent group behaved as one group, especially in special occasions. For example, there was a well-known custom of communal visiting in traditional Hofuf especially on the *Eid* festival.³⁹ On the first day *hamolas* in each quarter would greet each other, with, for example, the northern *fereej*s in *Alkut* visiting the southern ones. On the second day, the inhabitants of *Arrif'a*, *Anna'athil*, and *Assalhiyyah* visited the inhabitants of *Alkut*. On the third day the inhabitants of *Alkut* returned the visit. The adjacent group, in this situation, represented the members of the whole quarter. They behaved as one group, which means that people of every quarter felt that they belonged to one large territory.

The *fereej* system, which was a product of the intermediate relationships among different extended and nuclear families from same *hamola* or relative *hamolas*, aimed firstly to identify every group from other groups in the community; and secondly to identify the public and private spaces in the home environment (Fig.6.12). In reality this classification was expressed through interaction between people and their environment. Every member of society knew the rules and followed them.

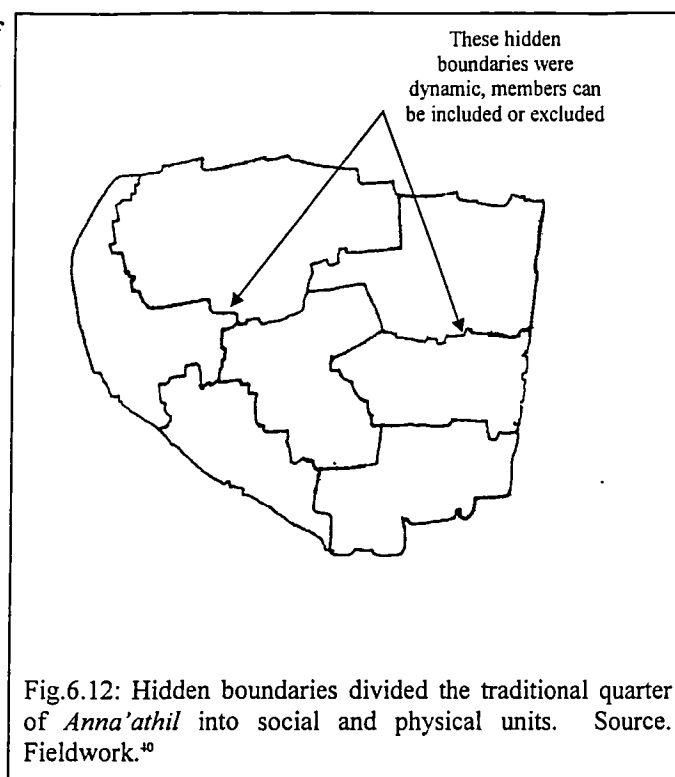


Fig.6.12: Hidden boundaries divided the traditional quarter of *Anna'athil* into social and physical units. Source: Fieldwork.⁴⁰

The communal relationship is seen through the consistency in the traditional home environment. The whole environment expressed one identity. Outsiders cannot see the internal clustering or the

³⁹ See Appendix II.

⁴⁰ The boundaries here are identified according to information from a number of in-depth interviews with old people who used to live in *Anna'athil*. It was impossible for the researcher to identify the exact boundaries because firstly these boundaries were dynamic and could change from time to time, and secondly the exact boundaries needed surveying for every house in the quarter, which is impossible now because traditional areas have already been exposed to drastic transformation and their original inhabitants have already left them for other areas.

dynamism that occurred at the family level, but they can see similar physical and social characteristics. This means communal relationship dominated the other relationships and regulated them to follow the shared values and conventions of the whole community. At the family level a mix of individual habits and social and religious values worked together to produce family identity. However, family identity was part of the group associational and perceptual identity because primary and intermediate kinship levels adapted and worked within this frame of communal beliefs (Fig.6.13).

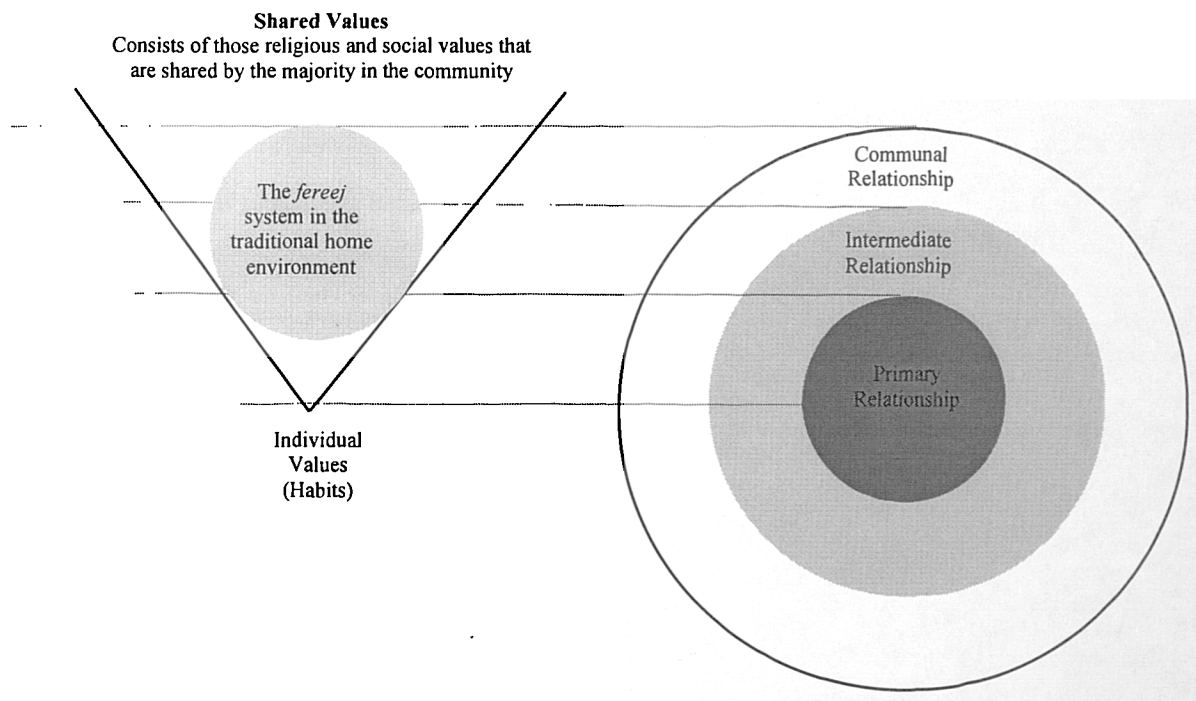


Fig.6.13: The *fereej* system in the traditional home environment is mainly located at the intermediate kinship level but it adapted to the frame of communal beliefs.

It is clear that the conventions associated with the *fereej* system in traditional Hofuf encouraged people to develop solutions to express their group and subgroup identities. As has been mentioned, the whole quarter was considered one mass and the *fereej* were not usually precisely defined. Still, people reorganised themselves and defined their territories through their interaction with the physical spaces. The spatial order that developed in the traditional home

However, what is presented in this figure is more or less the zoning of the old *fereej*s in the quarter, identified by the researcher through showing

environment was dynamic enough to absorb the social changes that occurred at the micro level. In this sense, the *fereej* may extend or shrink according to the extension or shrinkage of the roof footway. This reflects how people developed their own mechanisms to include or exclude members in the physical territory.

The concept of 'control' will determine the hierarchy of territories in the home. In this connection we can see that private spaces in the home were controlled by their users and accessibility to those spaces needed the permission of the controller in most cases. The public spaces, on the other hand, were controlled by the whole *hamola*, which means no restriction in using them by members. In this case we can argue here that the territory 'gives the controller a space to use at his discretion. It gives him freedom within its boundaries to arrange forms as he pleased'.⁴¹

The concept of *fereej*, in its physical sense, worked as a mediator between the most private part in the home environment, the dwelling, and the whole community. In its social meaning, it had been employed to define the different groups in society as well as to provide them with a certain level of security. This reflects the persistent need to maintain clan identity by defining its territory socially and physically. Territoriality, therefore, can be understood as a 'self/other boundary mechanism that involves personalisation or marking of a place or object, and communication that it is "owned" by a person or group'.⁴² The whole home environment, in this sense, was marked by hidden boundaries into definite group territories.

Those boundaries were used by groups to communicate with each other by saying 'This is our territory'. It was a process of making places where individuals and groups in the community used physical spaces to express their values, their own way of living. It is important for this study to understand how the physical spaces in the traditional home environment were used as a means to mobilise peoples values and communicate people's identity.

people maps of the quarter and discussing with them how the boundaries were.

⁴¹ Habraken, N. J. (1985), Op. Cit., p. 130.

⁴² Altman, I. (1975) *The Environment and Social Behavior: Privacy, Personal Space, Territory, Crowding*, California, Brooks/Cole Publishing Company, p 107.

6.6 THE USE AND MEANING OF THE PHYSICAL ENVIRONMENT IN THE *FEREEJ* SYSTEM

This subject will be discussed partially in this chapter and partially in the next chapter, when we analyse the dwelling in the *fereej* system. Understanding the hidden meanings that people embodied in the physical forms around them can be understood from the use of these physical objects. As we discussed in the previous chapter (Chapter v), meanings can be understood at three levels. There are direct meanings, which can be understood through the form of the physical object. There are meanings that cannot be understood unless a physical object has been used and interacted with in people's daily routines. This type of meaning is usually hidden, and people use it to communicate with each other although they cannot describe it. Finally, there are those meanings which can be understood only in relation to other meanings in the context.

It was very important here to discuss the concepts associated with the *fereej* system in the traditional house. Although we will discuss the traditional dwelling in a separate chapter, those transitional spaces which had dual functions in the traditional home will be introduced in this chapter. This is because they functioned as a link between inside and outside. Their symbolic meanings were directed to outside more than inside.

6.6.1 THE USE AND MEANING OF EXTERNAL DOMESTIC SPACE

Rapoport discusses the concept of home range, which is the 'usual limit of regular movement and activities which can be defined as a set of settings or locales and their linking paths'.⁴³ The physical components of any typical *fereej* consisted of streets developed hierarchically to correspond to the levels of relationships in the traditional community. *Sikkas* in the *fereej* formed the main network; they were connected with the other *sikkas* in the other *fereej*s and finally linked with the main street in Hofuf, which was located between the three quarters.⁴⁴ The intersections of *sikkas* created open spaces called *baraha*. However, *baraha* could be found between houses even without the intersection of main streets, and almost every *fereej* has *baraha* because, in addition to its climatic function of circulating the air, *baraha* acted as children's playgrounds. Moreover, they provided space for some communal activities such as marriage

⁴³ Rapoport, A. (1973) 'Some Perspectives on Human Use and Organization of Space', *Architectural Association Quarterly* (UK) Vol. 5, No. 3 (July/September)

⁴⁴ See Appendix 1.

ceremonies, when people used them as dancing areas in addition to places to prepare coffee and food (Fig.6.14).⁴⁵

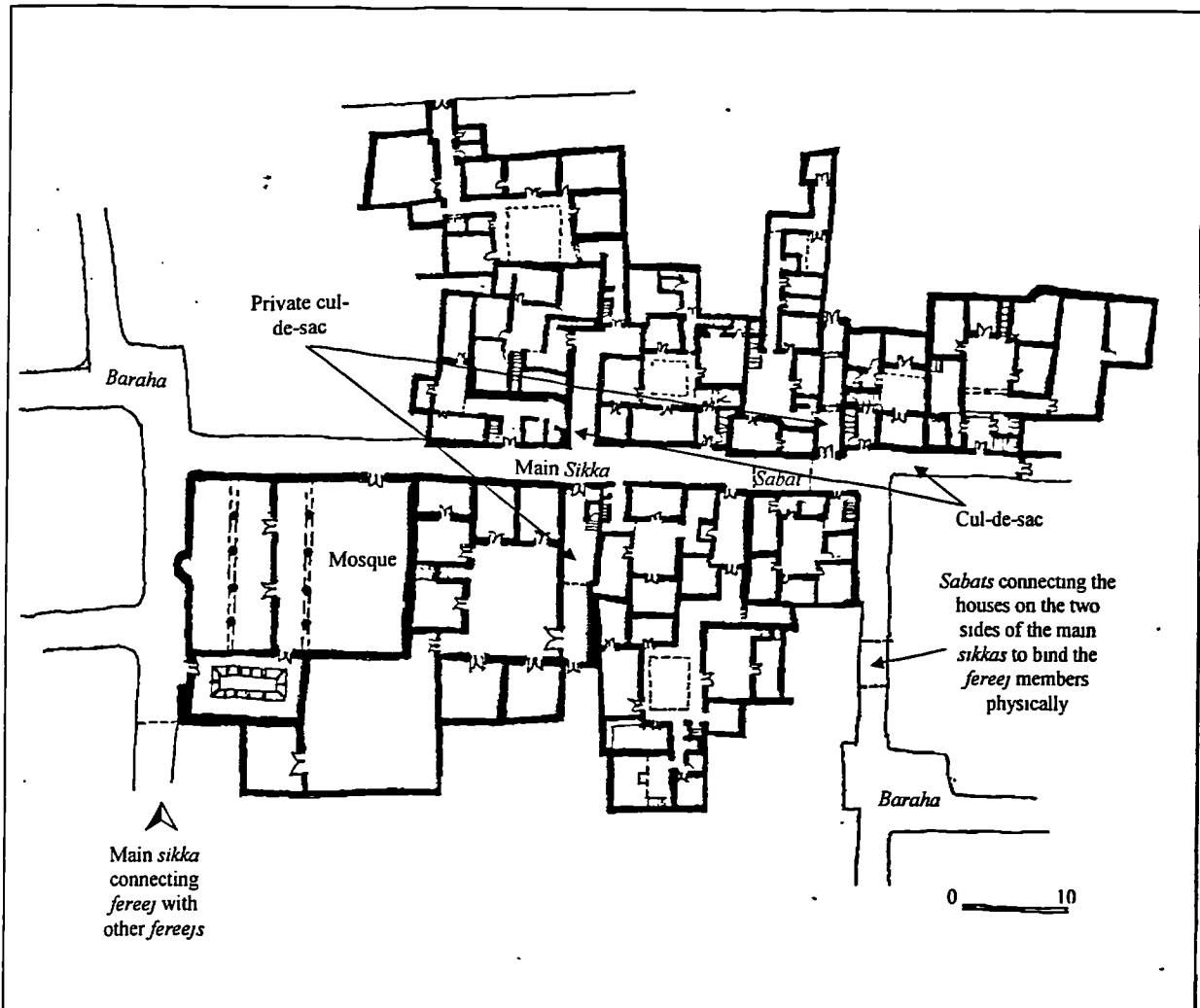


Fig. 6.14: Part of a *fereej* in *Anna'athil* quarter shows the main physical elements that every *fereej* had. Source: Fieldwork

The *fereej* as a social and physical system was used as a system of defining public and private spaces in the home environment. Within the *fereej*, spaces varied from semi-public to private spaces (Fig.6.15). The semi-public space consisted of the main *sikka* and *baraha*. These spaces were public for the *fereej* inhabitants and strangers were allowed to use them to reach other *fereej*s.⁴⁶ Still, it was part of the inhabitants' responsibility to question passers-by if they

⁴⁵ Al-Naim, M. (1993), Op. Cit., p.

⁴⁶ This can be linked to the concept of 'territorial functioning' which refers to 'a system of interlocked attitudes, sentiments, and behaviors concerned with who has access to what particular spaces and what activities go in those spaces ... Thus, cognitions and expectations regarding who has how much control in a space, or over others in a spaces, who has how much responsibility for what goes on in a particular location, and whether one will see strange or familiar faces in locatoin'. Taylor, R. & Brower, S. (1985) 'Home and Near-Home Territories', In Irwin Altman & Carol M. Werner, *Home Environments*, New York, A Division of Plenum Publishing Corporation, pp. 183-212.

appeared more than once or if they were suspicious about them. The cul-de-sac was used as a semi-private space and not every inhabitant in the *fereej* was allowed to use other inhabitants' cul-de-sacs. It was a convention that men only appeared in another's cul-de-sac if they wanted to visit one of the inhabitants. There were also more private cul-de-sacs, which were mainly part of a large house or connected houses that were inhabited by one extended family. This space was more private and mainly used by family members.⁴⁷

The hierarchy of external domestic spaces allowed people to develop an intimate relationship with spaces around their private houses. There was no space in the *fereej* that was public, except to its inhabitants. This made the *fereej* function as a private place for the whole group. As we have noted, strangers were only allowed to pass through. They did not have the right to stay and use those spaces used by the *fereej* inhabitants as public spaces. A sense of shared ownership was very strong in the minds and the behaviour patterns of the members of the *fereej*. This increased the sense of belonging provided people with the ability to use the external domestic spaces as part of their houses.

Families, for example, were never been worried about their children outside home. In the *fereej* there was full security due to the hierarchy of outside spaces. Because the external domestic spaces were very intimate to every house in the *fereej*, parents never said to their children 'Don't go outside' because they knew where they would go and that they could reach them at any time. Children mainly stayed and played within their *fereej* boundary (Fig.6.16). *Baraha* or main *sikka* were the main playing areas for the boys while girls mainly played inside one of the houses or in private cul-de-sacs.

⁴⁷ Hiller, R. & Hanson, J. (1984) state 'the public space of the settlement is a kind of interface between the dwelling and the world outside the settlement, the former being the domain of the inhabitants and the latter being the domain of strangers. How this interface was handled seemed to be the most important difference between one type of settlement and another; and such differences were a function of the same two types of relation that had been so important in analysing interiors: the relations among inhabitants, and the relations between inhabitants and strangers' (p. 17).

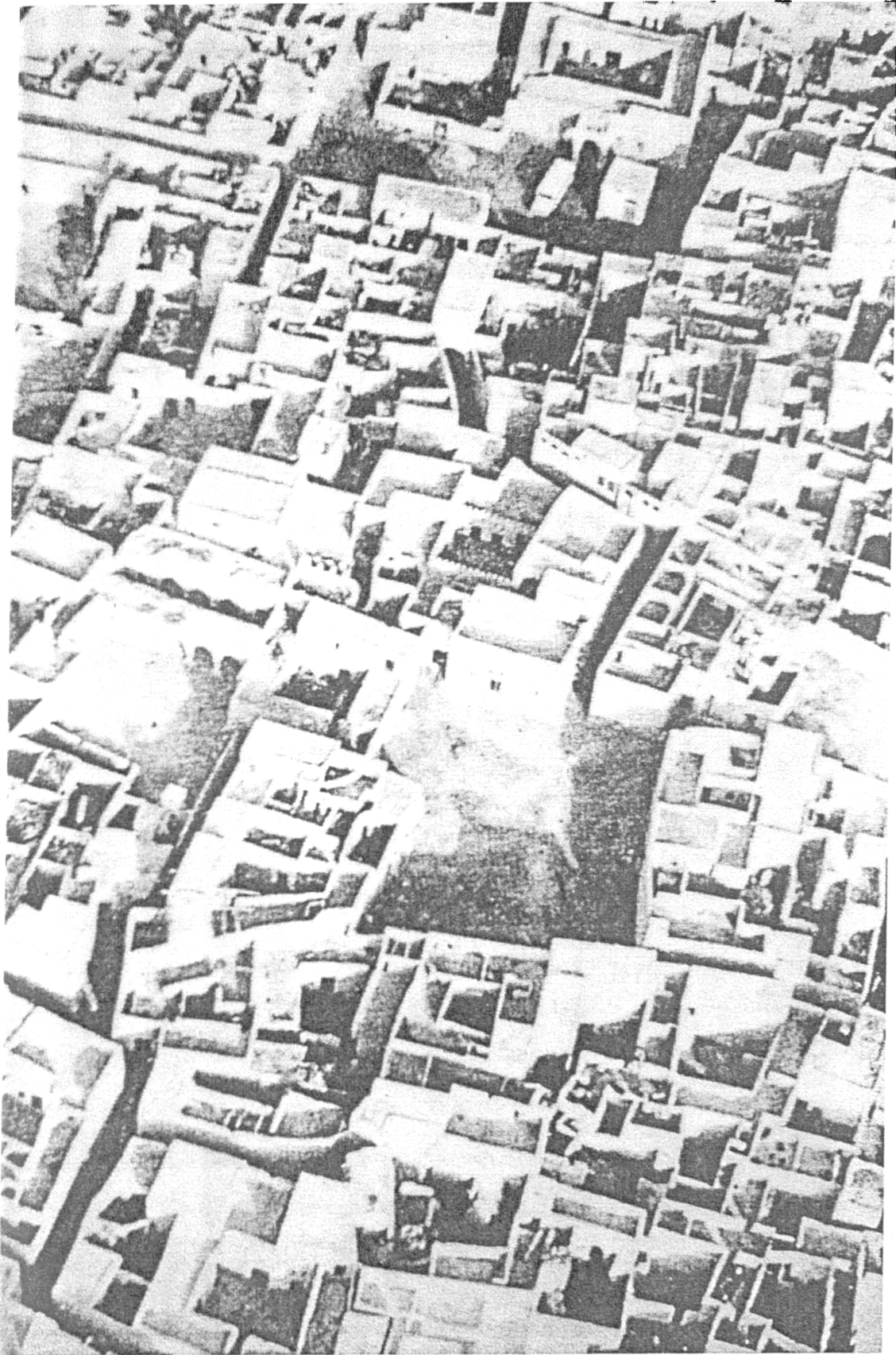


Fig. 6.15: Physical expression of the *fereej* (group of houses, irregular streets, *sabats*, cul-de-sacs, and open spaces) with hidden physical boundaries. Source: Al-Subai'ee, A. N. (1987), Op. Cit., p. 88.

Sikkas and *barahas* carried the *fereej's* name because mostly there was some overlap between the name of *fereej* and its spatial and physical elements. *Sikka* and *baraha* were the shared spaces in the *fereej* and they were used by all the inhabitants of that *fereej*. If anybody mentioned the name of the *Sikka* or *baraha* he meant the name of the *fereej*.⁴⁸ However, sometimes a *fereej* occupied by more than one clan had more than one *baraha* or *sikka*. In some cases, these elements carried names different from the *fereej's* name, mostly the name of the family (usually some extended families in every *hamola* have a distinguishing name either related to one of their ancestors or the profession of the family) who lived in that *sikka* or *baraha*, but those names were uncommon and unfamiliar to outsiders. They were used to only identify the territory of that family within the *fereej*.

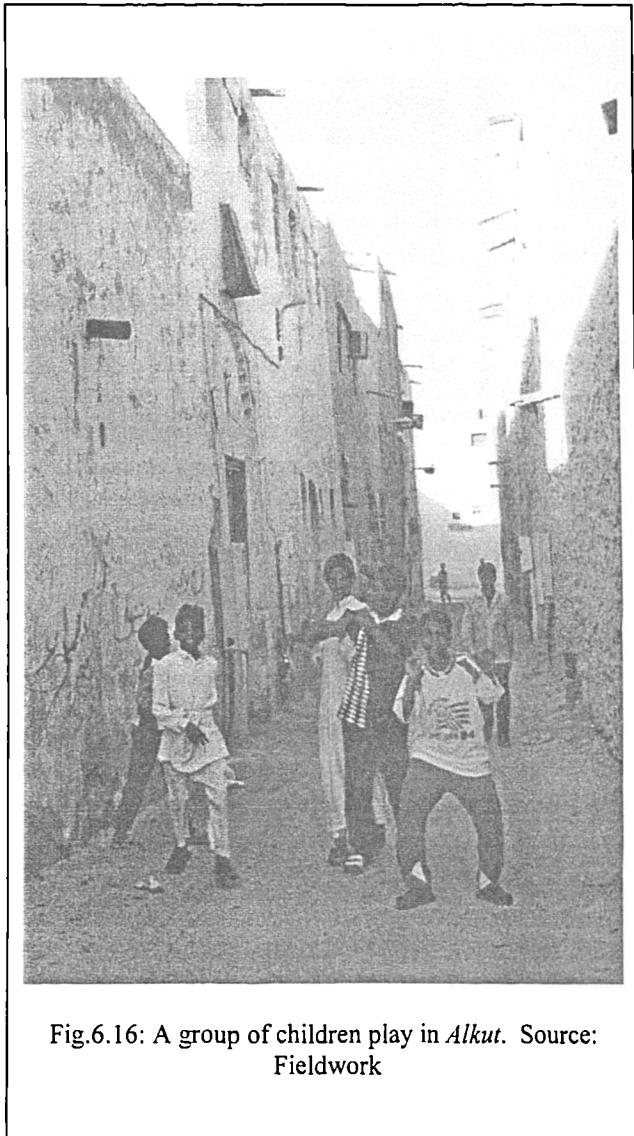


Fig.6.16: A group of children play in *Alkut*. Source: Fieldwork

6.6.2 USE AND MEANING OF THE *SABAT*

The roof footway influenced the morphology of the *fereej* by making the houses almost equal height. It encouraged *sabats*, which are extended rooms over the main *sikka*. *Sabat* was used, in many cases, to connect the houses in the two street sides.⁴⁹ It is the elements which truly express

⁴⁸ For example, in *Anna'athil* there was *Barahat Ashu'aibi* which was part of a *fereej* with the same name. In *Alkut* also there was *Sikkat Alhubaker* or as some people call it *Sabat Alhubaker* which was part of a *fereej* with the same *hamola* name. In fact, some places in the *fereej* became references (landmarks) to inform others about the location of the house. The insiders (the inhabitants of a *fereej*) usually did not use these names among themselves, but they used them when they explained the location of their houses to outsiders.

⁴⁹ Al-Elawy discusses three reasons behind the need for *sabats* in Hofuf. The first reason was to support two high walls on both sides of a street. The second is the need for more space by the occupants to accommodate their extended family. The third reason was for them to be used as bridges between two houses to enable women to move from one house to another without actually leaving the house. Al-Elawy, I. S. (1976) *The Influence of Oil Upon Settlement in Al-Hasa Oasis, Saudi Arabia*, Unpublished Ph.D., Durham, University of Durham, pp. 190-1.

the physical binding of the traditional home environment. In the *fereej*, there were the main *sikkas* which divide dwelling masses into irregular sectors, and the *sabat* binding these sectors and making them one unitary mass. This element existed in every *sikka*. This is because it was the element which enabled people in the traditional home environment to create the boundary of their *fereej*s. It helped them to include and exclude members over time (Fig.6.17).

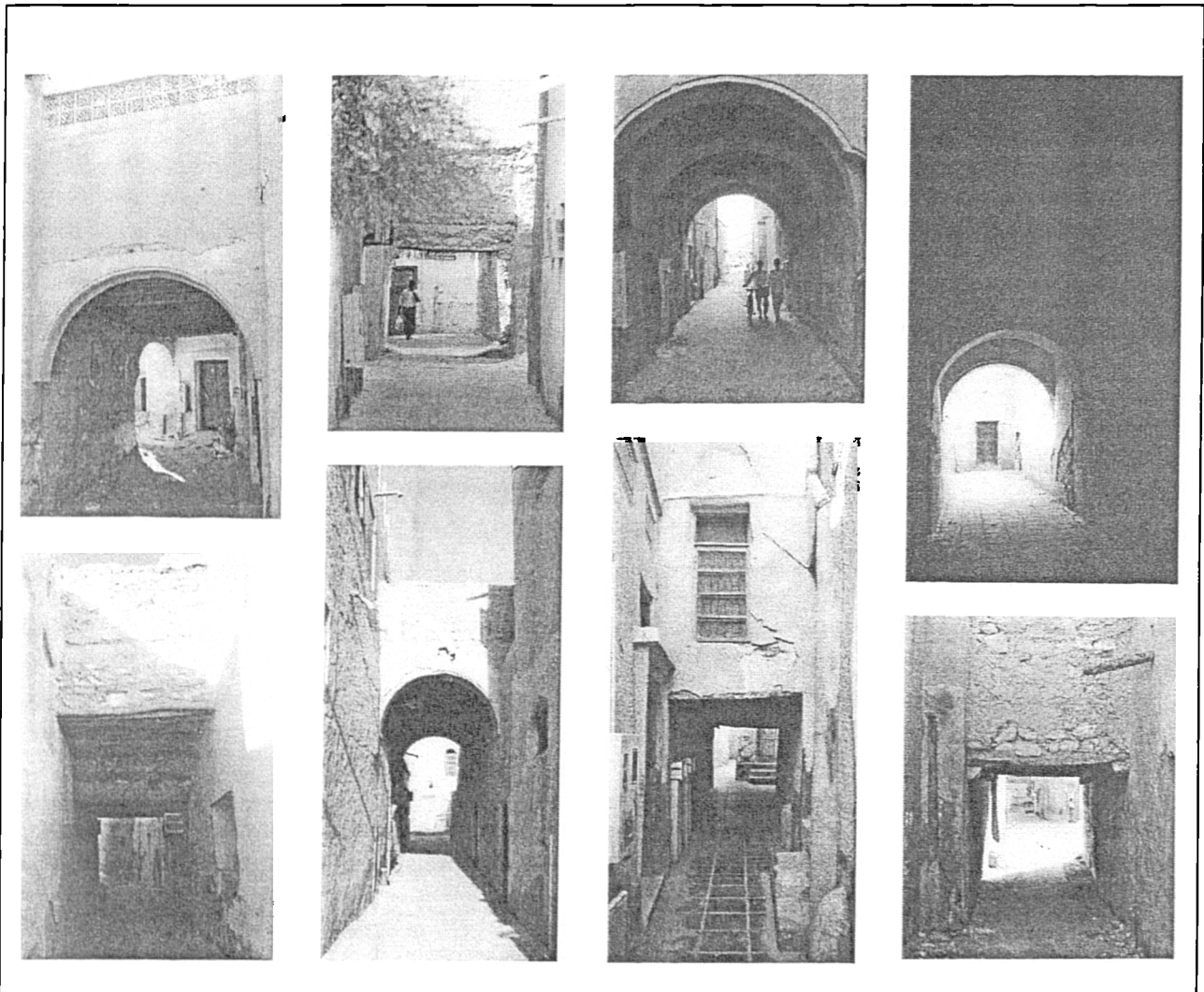


Fig.6.17: *Sabats* in the traditional home environment had worked as connection elements which bound the *fereej* physically. Also they created a contrast between shade and light and provided places for old men and children to enjoy themselves in the external domestic spaces in a hot arid climate. Source. Fieldwork.

The *sabat* also enriched external domestic space in the *fereej* by creating contrast between shade and light, and between heat and cold. The word *sabat* is usually used to refer to a place underneath a bridge room which was mainly part of a main *sikka* or a cul-de-sac. In fact, by the existence of a bridge room, a distinctive place underneath was created. It was different from the rest of the street in the sense that it had certain different functions. It provided the old men with

an external place protected from the hot sun and in the summer it was used for sitting. In a hot arid climate like in Hofuf, such places were very important. In some *sabat* there were *dakas*, which are benches constructed of mud used for sitting.⁵⁰

Sabat in its function helped the extended family to expand their houses while in its external meaning it expressed the group identity of the *fereej* members by translating genealogical bonds into a physical bond. It was also a territorial device whereby the territory of the *fereej* could expand and bridge the physical barrier (main street), linking the whole environment by a strong physical bond.

6.6.3 CONSISTENCY OF PHYSICAL MORPHOLOGY

The arrangement of houses followed certain rules to maintain neighbours' privacy. Because the roof was a main entertainment and sleeping place for the family in the summer time, the morphology of traditional houses, especially those which faced each other in the main *sikka*, developed to protect the privacy of family zones, the courtyard and roof. This was done by locating the mass of the second floor around the courtyard and towards the edge of the external wall that faced the main *sikka* (Fig.6.18).

It was part of convention to situate the men's reception spaces in the front of the house. This is because these spaces expressed the status of the family as well as being a place where the family could interact with other families in the *fereej* and with the whole community. It is clear that the internal spaces of the traditional house responded to the communal requirements of the *fereej* system by expressing symbolic messages in its external appearance (Fig.6.19).

⁵⁰ Harrison illustrates a number of photographs in 1924 showing how people of the oasis used the *sabat* as sitting place. Harrison, P. W. (1924) *The Arab at Home*, New York, p. 46.

It was a spatial principle in the traditional house to have three distinct zones, guest, family, and animal.⁵¹ The location of each zone was controlled by communal needs. The men's reception spaces were at the front, the family spaces in the middle, while the animal spaces were at the back. Those dirty and unpleasant spaces were taken away from visitors' eyes while those spaces used to interact with the community were situated at the front. The family spaces were located in the middle both to be protected by the mass of the guests spaces, which were mainly either two storeys in height or located in the first floor, and to be connected with the neighbours' family spaces by roof footways.

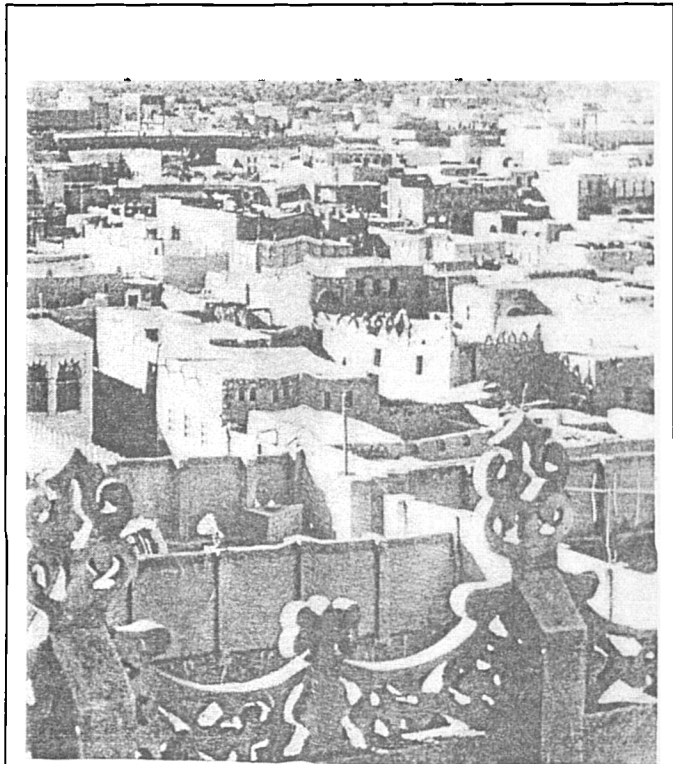


Fig.6.18: A view taken from the old Emirate building in the northern part of *Alkut* shows the mass of the first floors. They had always formed the main facade of the house to protect the family zones and to let the members of the community use their roofs freely. Also, they express a symbolic meaning by connecting the men's reception spaces with external domestic spaces Source: Aramco

The *majlis*, in this context, was part of the family identity but it was, as we will see in the next chapter, strongly connected with communal requirements and conventions where men, especially old men, used to stay in the *majlis* all day and entertain their visitors. The *majlis* was part of semi-private zone because visitors had only to call out before entering the *majlis*. On the other hand the *majlis* became a very private space if men were not in the house because it then took on the role of one of the family spaces. This convention was developed at the primary level to satisfy communal requirements. In fact, not every family could afford to have a large house so the dual use of the *majlis* by males and females minimised the size of the house and made it possible for the family to have a men's reception space. However, it is very important to

⁵¹ See Chapter VII.

mention that women rarely used the *majlis* because the social domain was very limited. It was strong enough to force every member in society to follow it despite the locations of the *majlis* in the house.

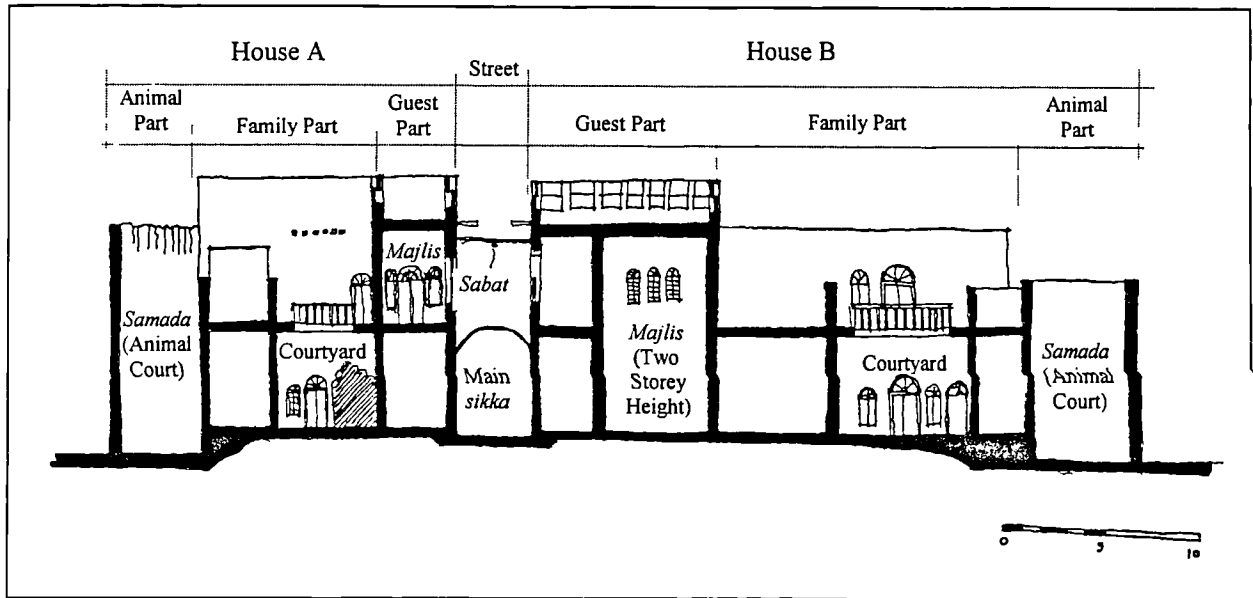


Fig.6.19: Section in the study area in *Anna'athil* show two houses facing each other (the family zone protected by the mass of the guest area). Also, the arrangement of spaces is influenced by the communal need where guest spaces were located in front and the most unpleasant spaces (animal courts) located at the back. Source: Fieldwork.

6.6.4 THE USE AND MEANING OF THE HOUSE FACADE

The communal physical meanings that had been expressed by people in the traditional *fereej*s can be seen in the house facades. The elements which formed the traditional house facades were mainly associated with the men's reception spaces. Because the external home environment was dominated by men, the physical symbols developed to satisfy the men's needs for communal interactions. The openings in the facades indicated the *majlis* and its *riwaq* in the first floor. What is fascinating about the external appearance of the traditional house in Hofuf is the consistency and harmony between void and solid; between those internal spaces and the need for a link with the external domain (Fig.6.20).

It is quite important to understand the influence of the *fereej* system on house facades. The goal here is to understand those non-verbal meanings that been used by people in the traditional community. To start with, we need to recall the three parts which constituted the traditional house in Hofuf. They had specific territorial principles and were strongly connected with territorial principles in the spaces outside the home.⁵¹ Because the spaces around the house had a higher territorial level they will influence the internal spaces, especially those which are immediately connected with the external space. This dialectic between inside and outside generated the traditional house facade. For example, those houses located in the main *sikka* had a different relationship with external space from those in the cul-de-sac. The physical expressions in both cases have been developed in such a way as to link the house with the communal spaces, which resulted in two solutions for interacting with the *fereej*'s external space. Houses in the main *sikkas* established a more visual relationship with outside space and had more physical ability to communicate the family's status than those houses in the cul-de-sacs.

This was clearly seen from the relationship between the male reception spaces and the main streets. This part can be seen as transitional area between the private spaces, used by family, and communal spaces. The male reception part creates the house facade in this case. A visual relationship developed later between the male reception space and the external space through openings and sound. This relationship was decoded by community members as an invitation to join the gathering. This was not the case with the house located in the cul-de-sac.

⁵¹ That hierarchy refers to the arrangement of items according to levels. This means that hierarchy of domestic spaces can be arranged according to certain levels. Habraken (1985) introduces the concepts of 'inclusion' and 'division' to understand the levels on which territories can be arranged. In that sense, the term 'inclusion' refers to the fact that 'each territory finds its location in another, large one' (p.131). The concept of

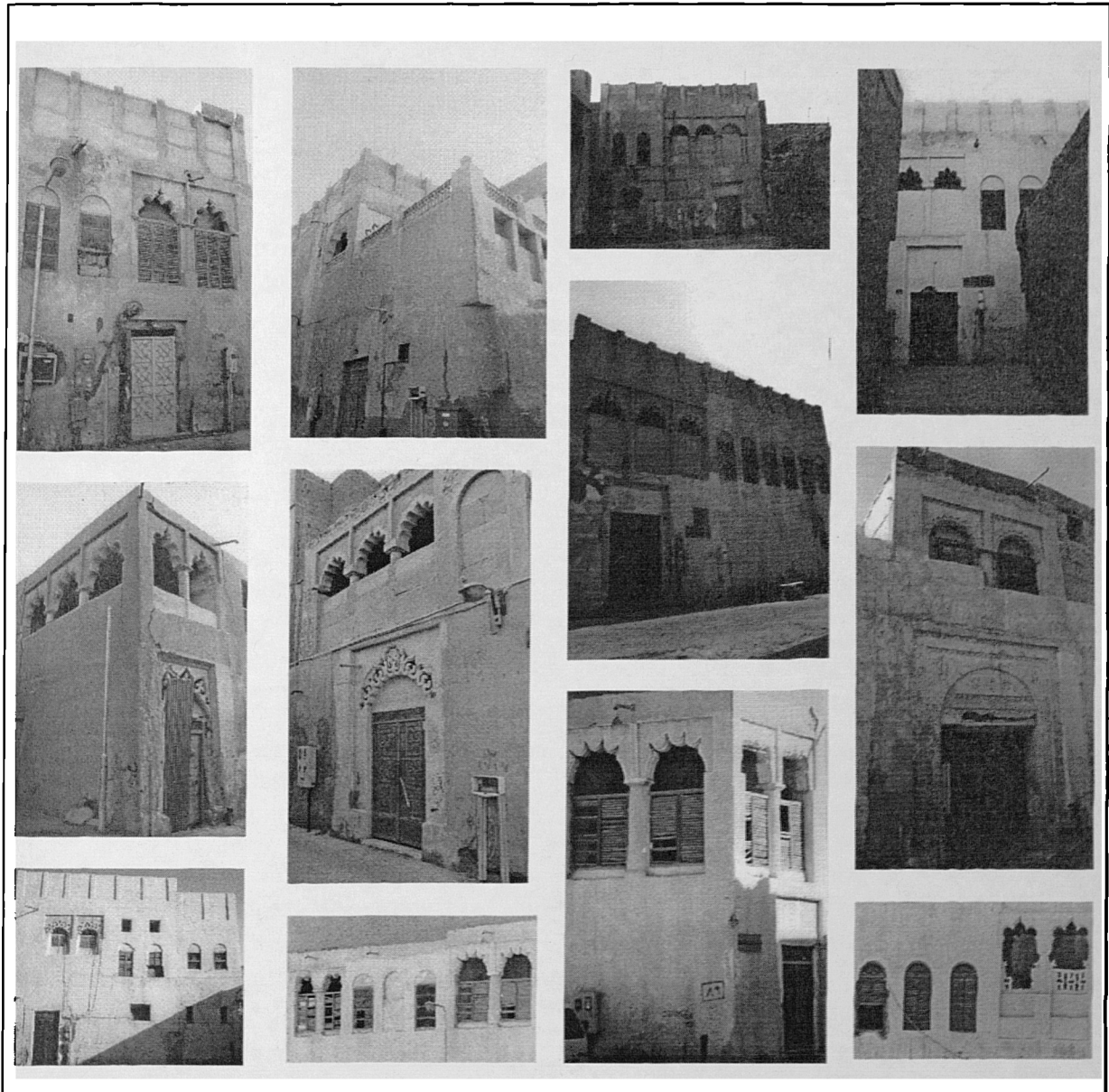


Fig.6.20: *Majlis riwaq* (loggia) with its openings that appeared in the house facades as two decorated arches (three or four arches are found sometimes but usually not more than that) looking toward the main *sikka*. They connected the guest part in the house with the communal domain. By situating the loggia over the main entrance a strong relation emerged between the house gate which is the domain that separate inside from outside and the men's reception spaces. This relationship embodies a message of hospitality. It says 'welcome' to the visitor. Source: Fieldwork.

Male reception spaces, in this case, became deeper and segregated from the main facade. However, people preferred to live in houses located in cul-de-sacs, which means that it was obvious that they would work to develop alternative devices to communicate with the *fereej* community. Well known people, for example, left their main doors open in the day time to

'division' can be understood by seeing the home as large territory divided into private spaces, bedrooms, occupied by included territories and

receive guests. This convention was widely practised by heads of extended families who usually stayed in their *majlises* receiving their guests. In this case the door of the private cul-de-sac would be open - a sign that to link the inner part of the house with the communal space. Another interesting sign is that private cul-de-sacs were used as sitting places (see Fig. 6.22).

The main facade in Hofuf's traditional house responds strongly to the relationship between the members in the community. There was a strong dialectic between privacy as one of the most important needs for every person, and communality. This can be associated with the main religious principle which required from every one to have permission to enter other people's houses. God said 'Ye who believe! Enter not houses other than your own, until ye have asked permission and saluted those in them: that is best for you, in order that ye may heed'.⁵³ It is quite important to understand how this religious value influenced the physical form of the traditional house in Hofuf.

Because there was a need to link the men's reception spaces with the external domain, the spatial relationship inside the house developed to respect this need. Segregation between the family part and the guest part was achieved by situating the guest part at the front of the house and developing several devices to link it with the communal domain. The entranceway, for example, developed in such a way as to be used as a regulator to maintain family privacy as well as to provide maximum interaction between the external domain and the men's reception spaces.

As Altman and Gauvain have indicated, gateways and entranceways throughout history have had 'mythological and religious significance'.⁵⁴ According to Raglan (1964) the thresholds of homes separate between the 'cold cruel world'⁵⁵ and the 'warm protective heaven of the home'.⁵⁶ The decoration of the entranceway in traditional Hofuf indicated the uniqueness of the family's identity and communality (Fig.6.21). By the uniqueness of the decoration patterns, the family expressed its status and identity, while using similar principles and positions of decoration in the gateway can be seen as symbol of the family ties with the *fereej* community and the whole of society. The care taken over the decoration of the entranceway symbolises an invitation and respect for the guest who will use the gateway to enter the house.

public spaces, staircases, corridors, etc., shared by all included territories

⁵³Ali, Y. A. (1989, Op Cit., 24-27) See also Aba Al-Khail Abdulaziz 1988 'The Quran and Sunnah, the Basis of Interpretation of the Arabic House and Mosque Architecture', *Albanaa*, Vol. 8, No. 43 September-October, pp. 3-7

⁵⁴Altman, I. & Gauvain, M. 1981, Op Cit., p. 298

⁵⁵Cited in *Ibid.*, p. 298

⁵⁶*Ibid.*, p. 299



Fig.6.21: The entrance of the traditional house, started by a decorative gate in the main *sikka* to express the status of the family and communicate with the community. Source: Fieldwork,

The entranceway was called by local people *dehreez*. It was divided into two zones forming an L shape in the plan. However, in large houses, especially those which have the men's reception space in the ground floor, the entranceway might consist of more than two zones. Both spatial principles shared the need to provide maximum privacy for the family section as well as easy connection for the men's reception areas with external spaces in the *fereej*. The first zone in both

cases became an extension of main *sikka* or cul-de-sac inside the house only when the *majlis* is open for visitors. In this situation, guests will shout out, calling the oldest man in the house by his son's name *ya abo flan*.⁵⁷ This place was considered part of the semi-private zone in the house, because it was connected directly with the external spaces in the *fereej*. Also, it was used as a symbolic place where families usually placed seating (*dakas*) to attract visitors (Fig.6.22).

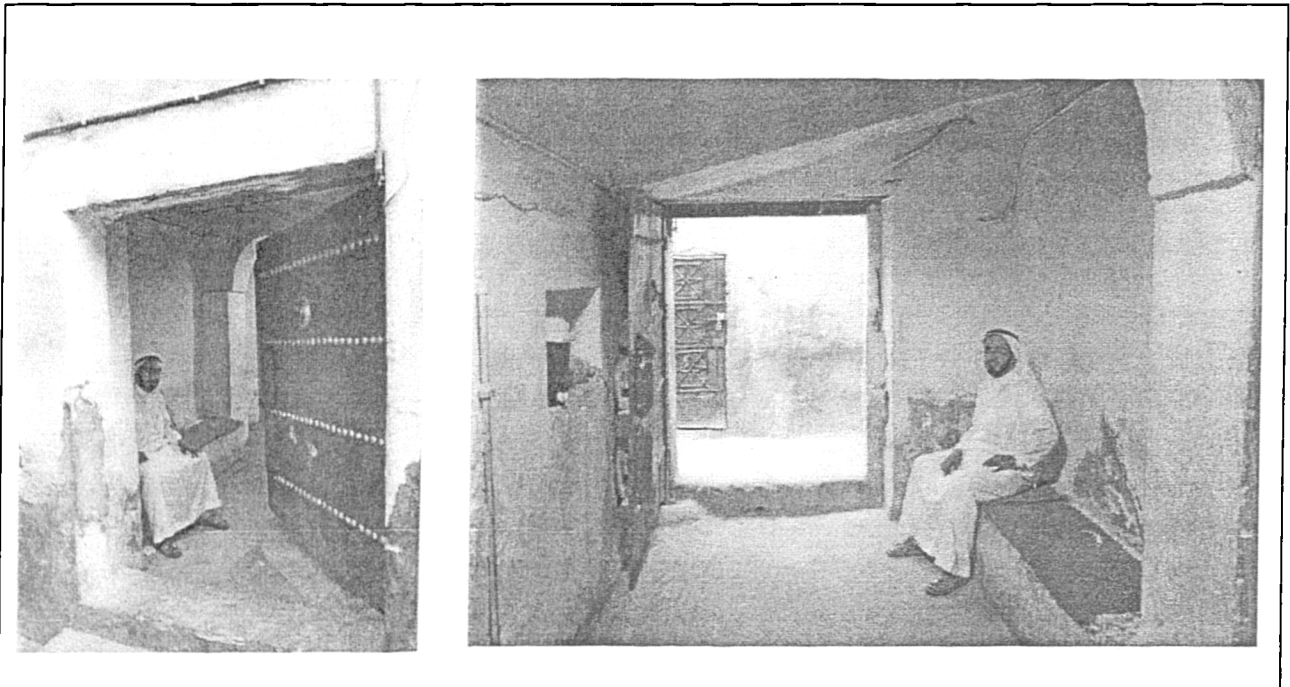


Fig.6.22: Entranceway used as sitting area for visitors in *Alkut*. This phenomenon is also found in some private cul-de-sacs. Source: Fieldwork.

The staircase that led to the *majlis* upstairs or the guest zones in the first floor was positioned close to the main gate of the house to let the guests reach the men's *majlis* without any interruption to the family part. This was the main principle in the spatial organisation of the traditional house (which will be discussed in the next section of this chapter).

The second zone was mainly the family section in the house. A wooden door usually separated sharply the guest zone from the family zone in the entranceway. This door was always closed if there was any guest in the house, and women used the roof footways if they needed to visit their neighbours. In reality the existence of the second door indicated that the guest places in the house were considered by the traditional community in Hofuf as belonging to the communal places, where members of the *fereej* and visitors from different *fereej*s meet each other and

⁵⁷ *Flan* in Hofuf means any person. People use the word *flan* when giving examples, like the English 'so-and-so'. We use it here to replace the oldest son's name. Of course visitors will use the actual name of the older son. For example they can say *ya abo muhammed* or *ya abo*

entertained. This was symbolically expressed by opening the main gateway all day so that any visitor could just shout and enter the house (Fig.6.23).

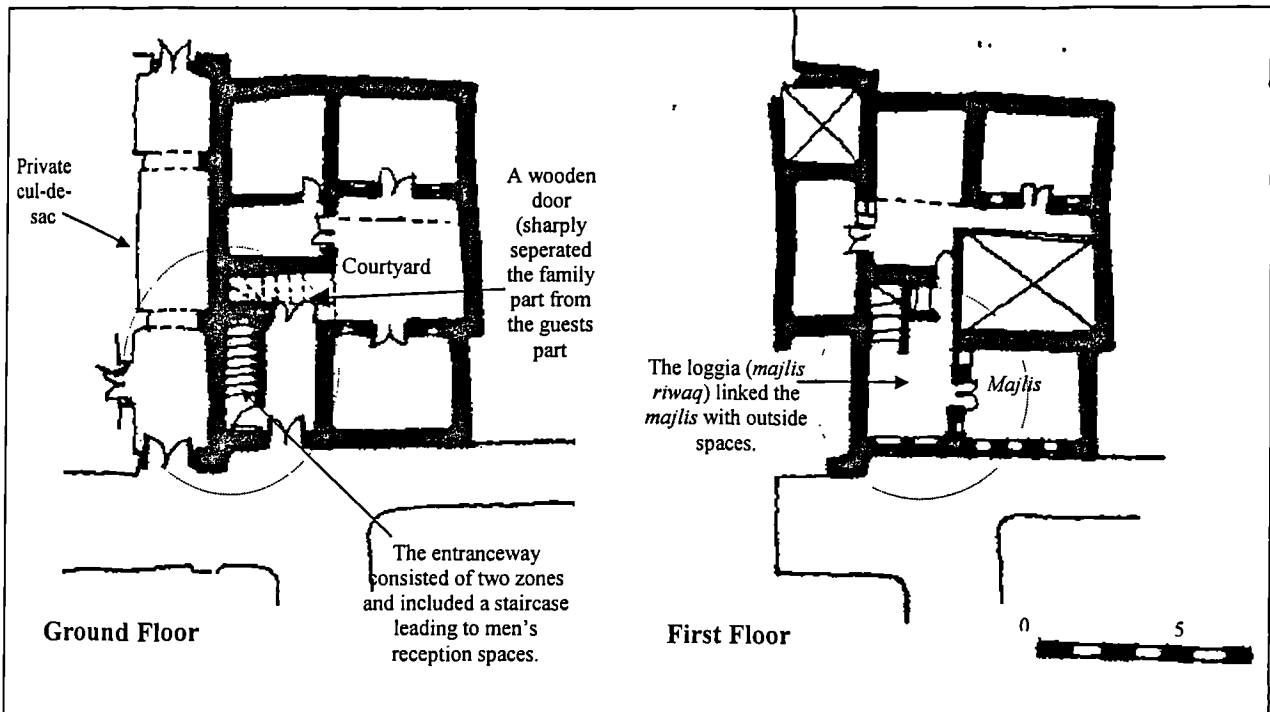


Fig.6.23: A house in Anna'athil. Source: Fieldwork

The entranceway in the *fereej* system might extend to public spaces. For example, the gate of the private cul-de-sac represented a separation between two different domains, those which could be used by every inhabitant of the *fereej* and those which were restricted to the inhabitants of the cul-de-sac. The house entranceway in this case started by the gateway of the cul-de-sac. In some cases, the second door that separating the family zone and the guest zone in the entranceway represented the house gateway. The cul-de-sac in this case became the zone that led to the men's reception spaces (Fig. 6.24).

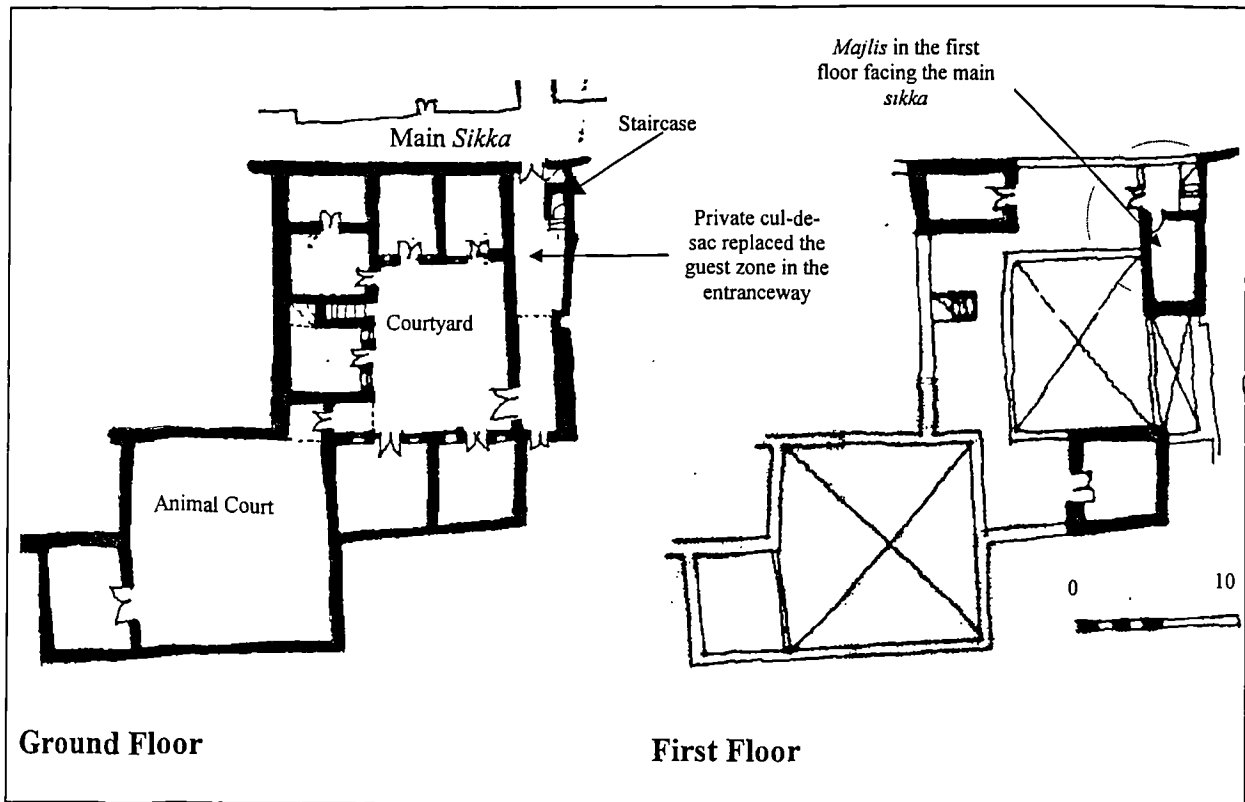


Fig.6.24: A house in *Anna'athil* shows how the entranceway in the *fereej* system may extend to places shared with other inhabitants. Also, the staircase which led to the male reception space in the first floor was located adjacent to the door to be easily seen by the visitors without going deeper into the cul-de-sac. Source: Fieldwork.

The house facade, especially in those houses which had the *majlis* upstairs, developed to inform the passers-by that there were men in the *majlis*. This was achieved by developing the *majlis riwaq* to have two decorative arches over the main gate, which transmitted the sound, but not clear words, to passers-by⁵⁸. The message might also be transmitted through a number of windows positioned in a linear organisation in the *majlis* wall overlooking the main *sikka*. The whole composition of the house facade communicated with the community and invited them to enter the house (Fig.6.25).⁵⁹

⁵⁸The arch was one of the main distinctive physical features in Hofuf. Last century Palgrave said 'The comparative elegance of domestic architecture in Hofuf is due to the use of arch ... [which] gives to this province a lightness and a variety unknown in the monotonous architecture in central and northern Arabia'. Palgrave, (1866), Op. Cit., p. 151.

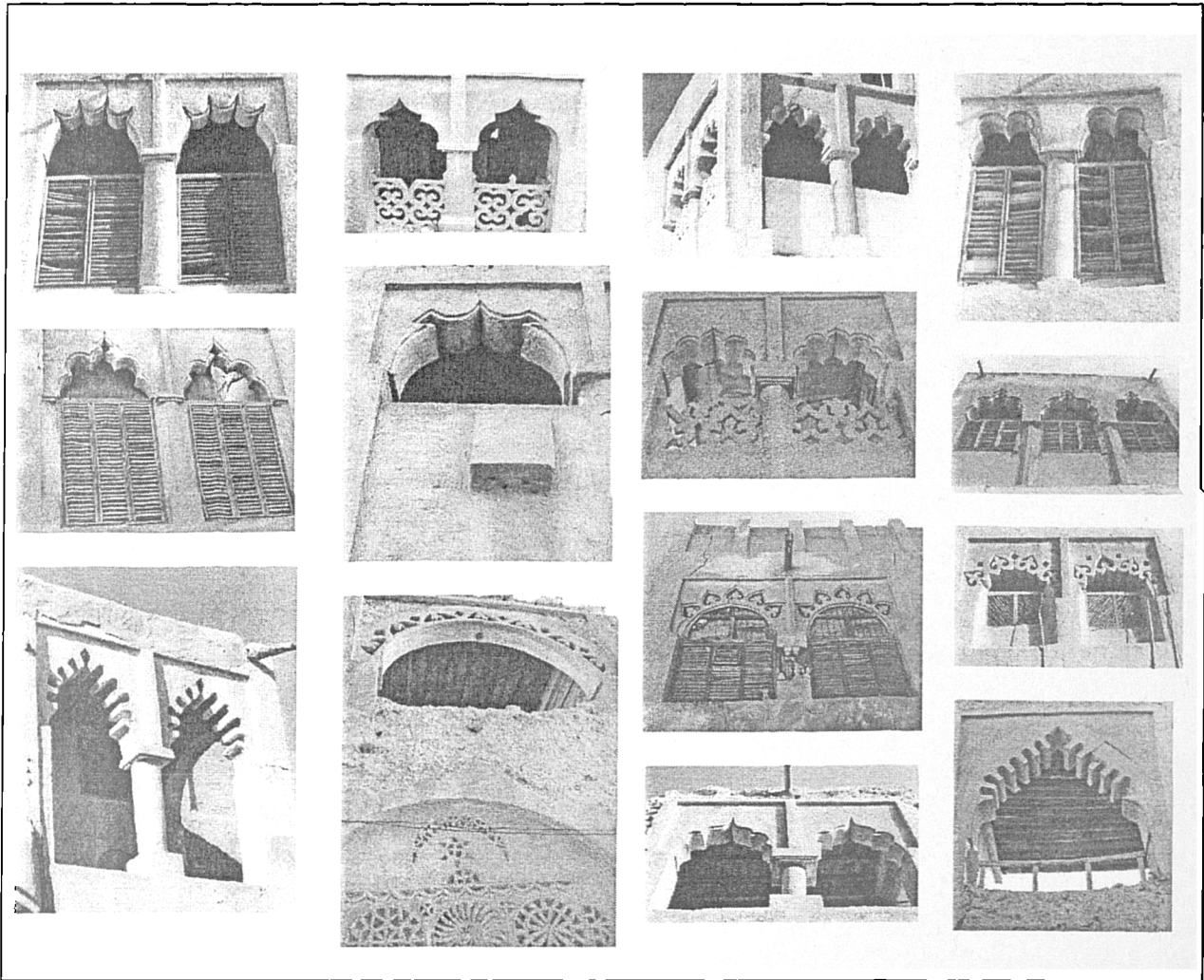


Fig.6.25 Loggias (*majlis riwaq*). The photographs show the diversity within the unity that people in Hofuf used to express their identities. Family identity was maintained by the uniqueness of the arch forms while communality was maintained by the repetition of principles both in their basic forms and their location in the facade.

As we have said, there was always a need to express the uniqueness of the family's identity by the uniqueness of the decoration composition itself. It was rare to find two loggias identical in design and decorative. Still, as with the gateway, a common principle had been used to express collective perceptual identity. In this respect we can say that the individual and collective perceptual identities had been developed to express a deep associational identity which is expressed through hospitality. The visual characteristics of the loggias and the gateway in the traditional house aimed to express collective identity (Fig.6.26).

⁹⁹Al-Naim, M. (1997) 'Functional and Aesthetic Harmony in the Built Environment', *Alqafila*, Vol.46, No.1 (may), pp. 38-43) (Arabic).

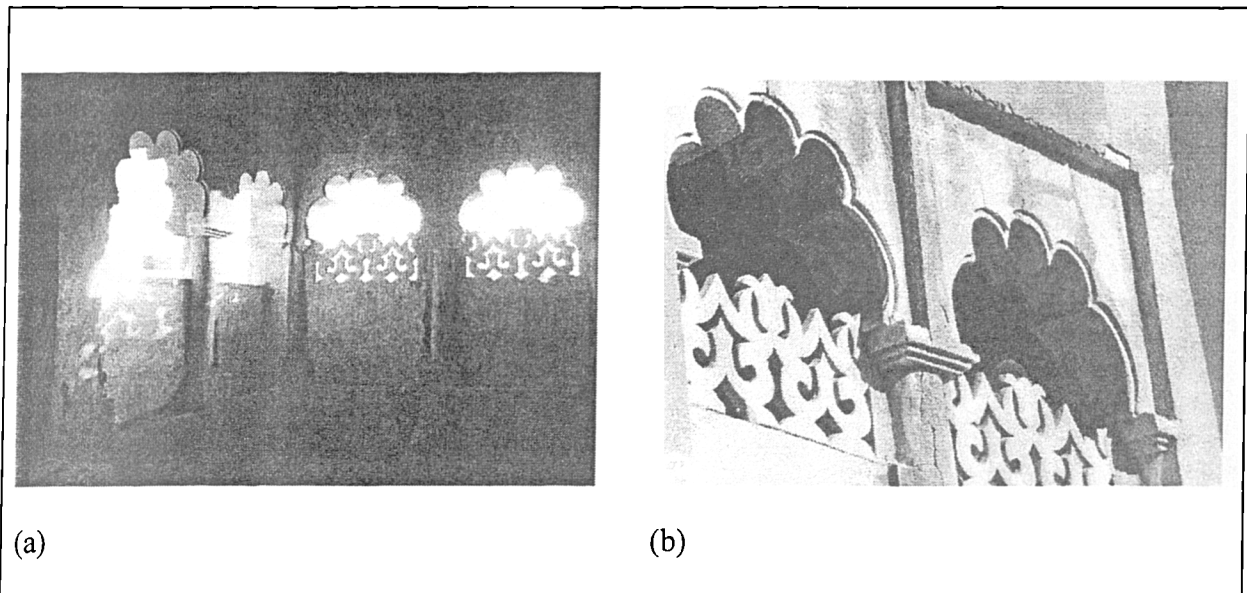


Fig.6.26: The loggia connects male reception space with the community. (a) The loggia from inside: a space associated with the *majlis* used for sitting in the summer. Also it connected those who used it with the external spaces. (b) The loggia from outside expressed the family status as well as symbolically connected the men's receptions spaces with the community

Lionising the guests was a major part of traditional daily life in Hofuf. Originally, as we will see in the next chapter, the *majlis* was associated with a courtyard and always located in the ground floor. The associational meaning of hospitality was fulfilled by the spacious courtyard, which was accessible directly from the entranceway. Later, the *majlis* moved to the first floor. In this case a new form was produced, by developing the combination of the gateway and the loggia, to fulfil the need to interact with the community. The original forms of the *majlis* almost disappeared and were replaced by the new one (Fig.6.27).

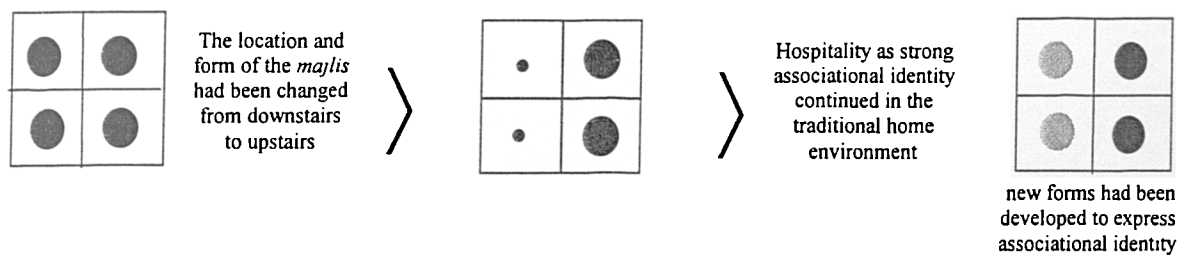


Fig.6.27: Continuity of hospitality as perceptual and associational identity in the traditional home environment.

Although the house facades in traditional Hofuf were mainly developed to express hospitality and communality as collective associational identity, women's interaction with the external

world was also expressed. Because women had very limited interaction with external domestic spaces the house facade always expressed a solid plane surface to indicate family spaces. It is possible to say that this lack of ostentation was used as symbol of privacy. Apart from the roof routes, there was a device in the house facade used to link the women with the external world. This was the *tarma*.

Women could use the *tarma*, which was a small box of wood or mud over the main gate to communicate visually and individually with the external domestic spaces. What we mean by 'individually' here is that a woman could only use this device to see and observe the intimate external spaces. This box had small openings to enable women to observe their children and whatever was going on in the external domestic spaces (Fig.6.28). (The Arabic word *tarma* means 'dumb' or 'mute', which means *expression without speech*.)

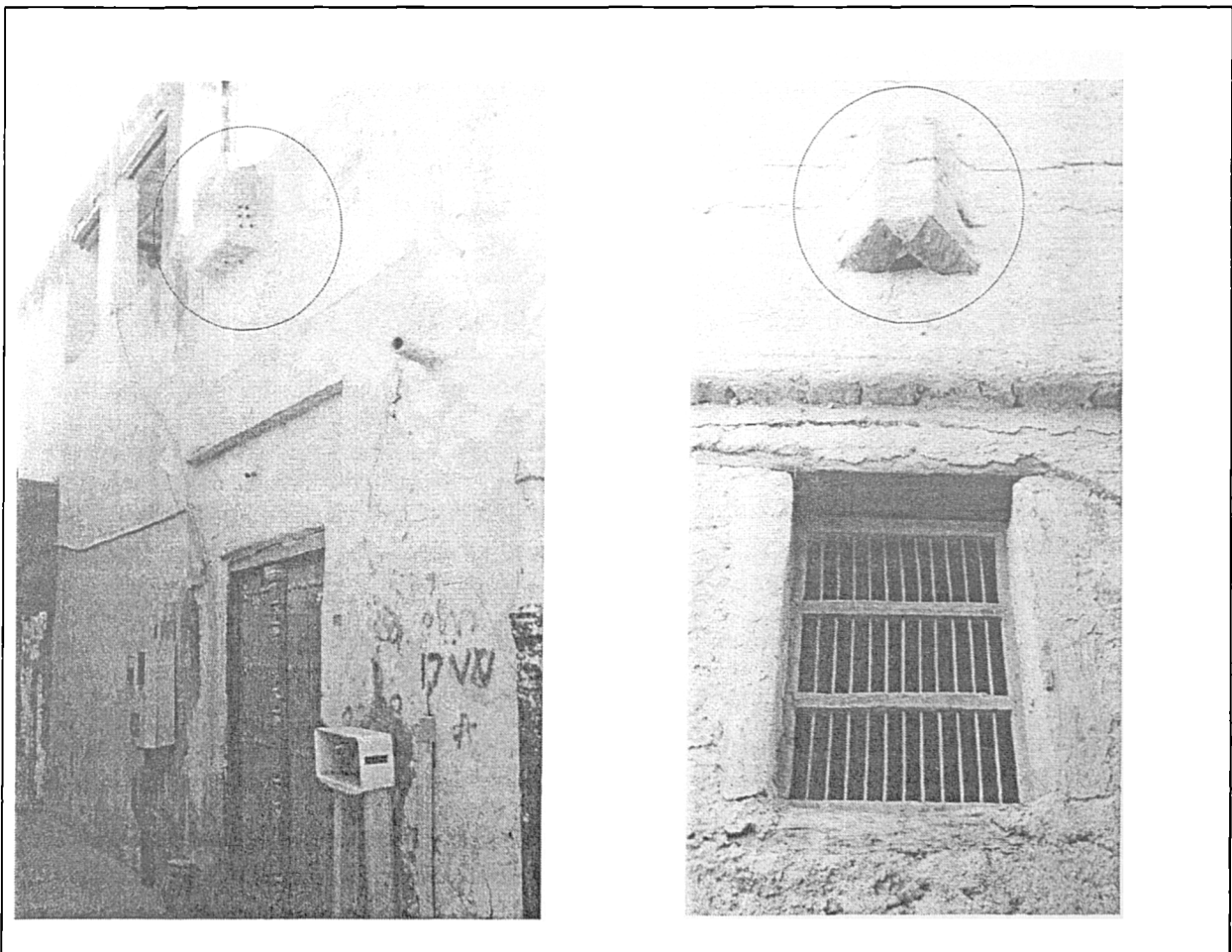


Fig. 6.28: Openings in the *tarma* used by women to observe the external domestic space.

The openings of the *tarma* were small enough to enable the women to see through without being seen. As part of a woman's daily routine she would use the *tarma* to observe the external world, following her children while they played outside, or to see who was visiting or knocking on the door if men were not at the house. The *tarma* was never used to contact the outside world verbally; this was the function of the roof routes, where women could meet and socialise. It was regarded as shameful in the traditional community for the voice of a woman to be heard by strangers. This is why this device was developed. It was symbolically used to express the privacy that was the position of women in society.

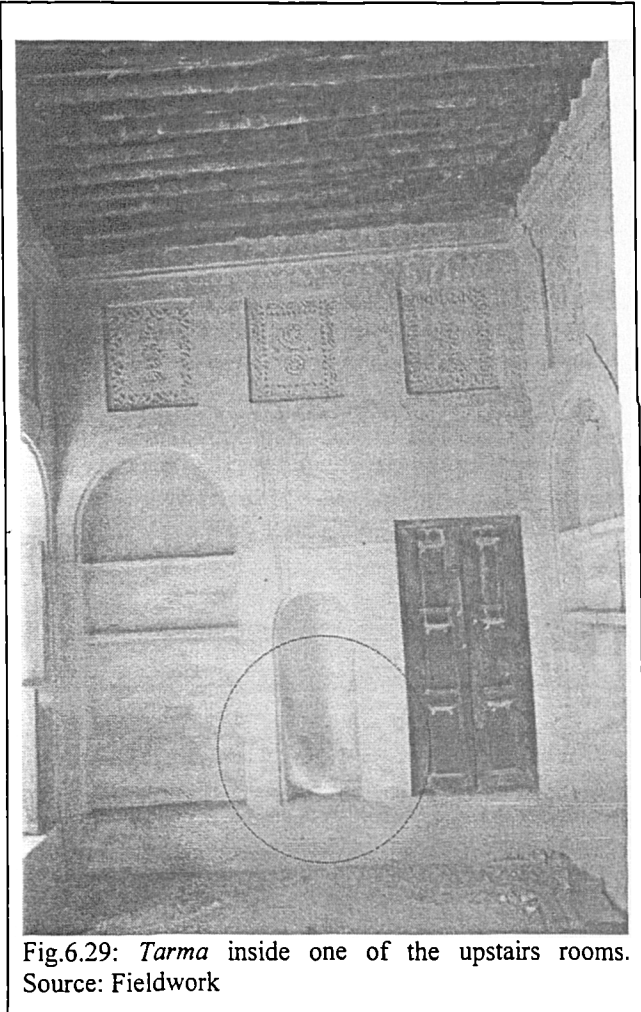


Fig.6.29: *Tarma* inside one of the upstairs rooms.
Source: Fieldwork

6.7 SUMMARY

It is one of the main goals of this study to understand how the local people of Hofuf produced their individual and collective perceptual and associational identities. The *fereej* system developed from a device for maintaining the sense of belonging to a group to a device used as a medium for expressing family, group, and communal identities. As we noticed, the social quality of the *fereej* influenced most of the physical elements in the external and transitional spaces (men's reception spaces) in the traditional home environment. It made them work within an order by supporting each other and harmonising with individual (family) and communal needs.⁶⁰

The *fereej* was compatible with people's lifestyle. Clustering of the traditional home environment was fully associated with the desire to be identified. The *fereej* in this case was used as symbol to define those people who live in it. High homogeneity between these people was an encouraging factor for them to gather in one defined territory, which had provided them with the immediate possibility of helping each other and maintaining their *hamola's* name over time. Also it made them feel more secure, for outsiders could not pass easily undetected into their territories.

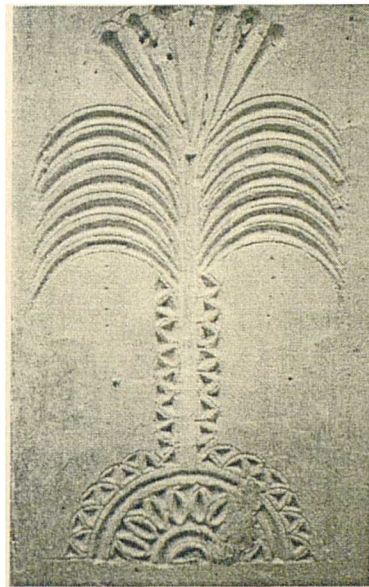
It was the *fereej* system that created a balance between the incremental actions which had to be taken for the family to cope with changing life circumstances, and the need for consistency and communality that was crucial for the collective social identity. This dialectic between the family's needs and community's needs produced the spatial and physical environment of every *fereej*. The consistency of the traditional home environment, then, resulted from the repetition of the physical and social characteristics of the *fereej* which worked within the communal frame of values and images.

This study sees the concept of identity as a device consisting of several levels. It can grow and re-grow over time. The concept of 'inclusion' is an important idea in understanding identity in the home environment. As we noticed there was a continuity of the perceptual and associational identities at the communal and *fereej* level in the traditional home environment. However, when we come to the micro level we find that the collective perceptual identity had been changed in some elements, such as the introduction of the loggia and gateway as a combined form used to

express the hospitality which was part of the collective associational identity of the local people of Hofuf. This new composition had created a new perceptual identity at the house level. Because the *fereej* included the house, the change in the house level had no impact on the collective perceptual identity. It was possible that if the need for communal interaction changed at the family level, the associational and perceptual identity of the *fereej* might change if other families in the *hamola* agreed. The concept of inclusion is very important in understanding collective perceptual and associational identity (collective behaviour always included individual behaviour). It is always possible if any change occurs in the collective level, that a change will automatically appear at the individual one.

It is quite clear that the *fereej* system had created a complete harmonised environment both at its macro level, where different groups socialised and interacted within a distinctive frame of shared values and beliefs, and at its micro level, where the spatial organisation and physical appearance of the house responded by generating and locating the men's reception spaces in a way that symbolically communicated the individual (family) and collective perceptual and associational identities. In the next chapter we need to analyse the house in the *fereej* system. We already have some ideas about the house. However, it is very important to understand how the dwelling has worked in the *fereej* system.

⁶⁰ We refer to family as individual in this part because in the traditional environments individual identity was less strong and group identity was a dominant one. Oliver (1975), for example mentions that 'individual expression is of small importance in vernacular shelter, for the similarity of the buildings within a cluster is symbolic of identification with the group that resides within them.' (p. 12).



Decoration in Hofuf's traditional houses

CHAPTER VII

DWELLING IN THE *FEREEJ* SYSTEM: RITUALS AND CEREMONIES IN HOFUF'S TRADITIONAL HOUSE

CONTENTS

7.1 prologue

7.2 Formation of the Traditional House: Historical Approach

7.2.1 Spatial Principle of the Traditional House

7.2.2 Continuity and Change of the Physical and Spatial Features of the Traditional House (up to 1950)

7.3 Rituals and Ceremonies of Internal Domestic Spaces

7.3.1 Rituals and Ceremonies in the Male Reception Spaces

7.3.2 Rituals and Ceremonies in the Family Spaces

7.4 Decoration and Visual Elements in the Traditional House

7.4.1 The Use of Decoration in the Traditional House

7.4.2 From a Utilitarian Form to a Symbolic Form: Development of the Decorative elements

7.5 Summary



DWELLING IN THE *FEREEJ* SYSTEM: RITUALS AND CEREMONIES IN HOFUF'S TRADITIONAL HOUSE

7.1 PROLOGUE

In the previous chapter we introduced the spatial principles of the traditional house in Hofuf. The discussion mainly concentrated on the dialectic between inside and outside. As we noticed, the dwelling in the *fereej* system has shown a symbolic interaction with the surrounding space. The men's reception spaces had shaped the external appearance of the house and linked it with communal space. The dialectic between individual and collective identity is seen through the common physical symbols that have been used in the house facade as well as by the uniqueness of the symbolic compositions that every family used to express its social status.

Because individuals behave within the family, *hamola*, and community frameworks, we found that perceptual and associational identities were developed to convey the communal shared values. Individual identity, as we noticed, was still at the minimal stage of existence. This is also related to the finding by many researchers that group identity is more important than emphasising personal differences in the traditional home environment.¹ This is not to say the traditional home environment in Hofuf ignored the personality, but personality was accomplished within the communal frame. In general, as Oliver states, traditional home environment

‘...takes the form that is seen appropriate to a society's nature, organisation, family structure, aesthetic. The individual within a tribal or folk culture does not become the form-giver for the society; instead he employs the forms that are essential to it, building and rebuilding within determinants that are as much symbolic as physical or climatic.’²

The external space in the *fereej* system followed a distinctive spatial order known by every member in the community. The question is to what extent the traditional house was linked to the external spatial order. We introduced the example of the men's reception space (*majlis*) when

¹Rapoport, for example, states ‘In the case of most traditional cultures individual identity expressed through dwellings is rather unimportant. Rapoport, A. (1981), Op. Cit., p.9. Also, Giddens (1991) states that ‘in many settings of pre-modern cultures ... Appearance primarily designated social identity rather than personal identity.’ Cited in Jenkins, R. (1996) *Social Identity*, London, Routledge, p. 15.

we discussed the dialectic between personality and communality in the *fereej* system. We found that the guest zone in the entrance hall was considered as an extension of the semi-private space when the male reception spaces were used by guests.

In this chapter, we need to understand how the *fereej* system influenced the whole house formation. The emphasis here is on the meaning and use of the internal domestic spaces. In the previous discussion we tried to introduce the spatial principles of the traditional house. This principle needs to be discussed thoroughly because it embodies the socialising behaviour inside and outside the house. It is not only about spatial relationship; it is in fact a physical translation of people's relationship. As Hillier and Hanson say:

‘It is the fact of space that creates the special relation between function and social meaning in building. The ordering of space in buildings is really about ordering the relations between people. Because this is so, society enters into the very nature and form of buildings. They are social objects through their very form as objects.’²

The purpose of this chapter is to understand the internal domestic spaces, their physical and social characteristics. The aim here is to grasp the core values that had enabled people in the traditional community to embody associational meanings to the physical objects and spaces around them.

7.2 FORMATION OF THE TRADITIONAL HOUSE: HISTORICAL APPROACH

In our investigation of the formation of the traditional house in Hofuf, several strategies have been employed. A number of houses have been studied and analysed.³ It is difficult to trace the development of the physical entity of the traditional dwelling of Hofuf, since many of the traditional houses have been transformed or demolished. As we mentioned in the introduction to this study, one of the main objective of the study is to record and document the physical and spatial development of the traditional house in Hofuf.

The traditional houses in Hofuf were courtyard houses compacted in various cluster sizes forming the *fereej* organisation. Most of the houses were two storeys high. Three and four

² Oliver, P. (1975), Op. Cit., p. 12.

³ Hillier & Hanson (1984), Op. Cit., pp. 1-2.

⁴ See Chapter V.

storeys were rare.⁵ The dwelling's physical identity was maintained over centuries because, as we will see, a distinctive spatial principle worked as regulator of the internal spaces in the house. In this section we will try to give a lucid picture of the physical development of the traditional house in Hofuf since the nineteenth century.⁶ Fortunately, some people in Hofuf still keep some of the old papers which prove their ownership of the houses. Some of these historical documents describe the house, its physical components, its boundaries, and its relationship with surrounding houses (Fig.7.1).⁷

These documents have been used in this study to support the physical and narrative evidence that has been collected. Several local names of the internal spaces appear in these documents. The researcher has tried to understand these names, asking the local people about their meanings. The answers were very important because these names reflected how people shared with each other. In general, every space inside the house had local name. One of the interesting observations about these names is that they have specific meanings both physically and functionally in the local people's minds.

These names have deep meanings because they developed and were used for centuries. Oliver, for example, stresses the importance of local names in the study of traditional architecture. He writes:

‘The study of vernacular architecture ... should take into consideration the values attached to the terminology used to describe the building and its use. If the symbolic value of a built structure is recognised as something special to the society which builds it,

⁵ Vidal, (1955), Op. Cit., p. 80.

⁶ Some old houses have been measured by the researcher but it was difficult to determine the history of the house. Also, because we are interested in the continuity and change of identity in the home environment it was very important to start from a period where the identity of the house was challenged by change. The traditional house in Hofuf faced some changes since the nineteenth century. Its main existing types have been established since that time. This is not to say that the house in Hofuf never changed before the nineteenth century, but it was possible for the researcher to trace the spatial and physical development of the traditional house in Hofuf in the nineteenth and first half of this century. In this connection, the study tried to use the available data about the traditional house in Hofuf. In 1866 Palgrave indicated the most common features of the traditional houses in Hofuf. He said: ‘... what however gives to the houses of Hasa their most decided superiority over those of Central Arabia is the employment of the arch, without which indeed there may be building, but hardly construction. The Hasa arch, whether large or small, contracted to a window or spanning the entire abode, is ... never the segment of one circle; but of two ... it is a simple, broad, but pointed arch ... The arch brings other improvements with it; the entire house becomes here much more regular, its apartments wider, its arrangement more symmetrical, light and air circulate with greater abundance and facility; while the roof, instead of remaining a mere mass of heavy woodwork, supported mid-way on clumsy pillars, assumes something of lightness and spring.’ (p. 167). He described one of the houses as: ‘... comfortable dwelling, well adapted to the quiet tenor of life ... The K’hawah [coffee place] was small and snug, not admitting above twenty guests at a time; alongside was a second and larger apartment ... and opening on the courtyard; two spacious rooms communicated with this on either side; the one was at our disposal, the other answered the purposes of a nursery ... A kitchen and two secluded chambers ... completed the ground storey; while above were three empty and unfurnished rooms, and a large extent of flat roof.’ (pp. 148-9). He mentioned that the domestic furniture in Hofuf was more varied than other areas in central and northern Arabia. He listed several daily use furniture such as stools, low dinner-tables, cupboards, shelves, and bedsteads. Chessman in 1926 described one of the houses in Hofuf when the reception spaces moved upstairs. He said: ‘There was the usual enclosed courtyard. On each side of the door was a spacious room; one was a coffee-dispensing chamber with a small hearth in the middle ... My quarters were the two upstairs rooms, approached by a sandstone staircase from the courtyard, and the broad veranda running the length of the house supported by a colonnade of sandstone arches. In one room ... the furniture consisted of a chair and two benches, a table, a glass toilet water-bottle, and a glass. The other room was arranged in Eastern style as a reception room, the floor being covered with rugs and cushions ranged all round the room against the walls.’ (p.63).

⁷ See Appendix IV.

there seems ample linguistic evidence to show that it may still be conceptualised in a linguistic framework which is itself of a different order of emphasis and signification.⁸

Rapoport support this view when he discusses environmental cognition. For him ‘the world is made meaningful by naming, classifying and ordering through some conceptual system.’⁹ We have already analysed some of the local names and their physical and social meanings when we discussed the *fereej* system. We found it part of people’s identity that they have their own names for every single space in their home environment.

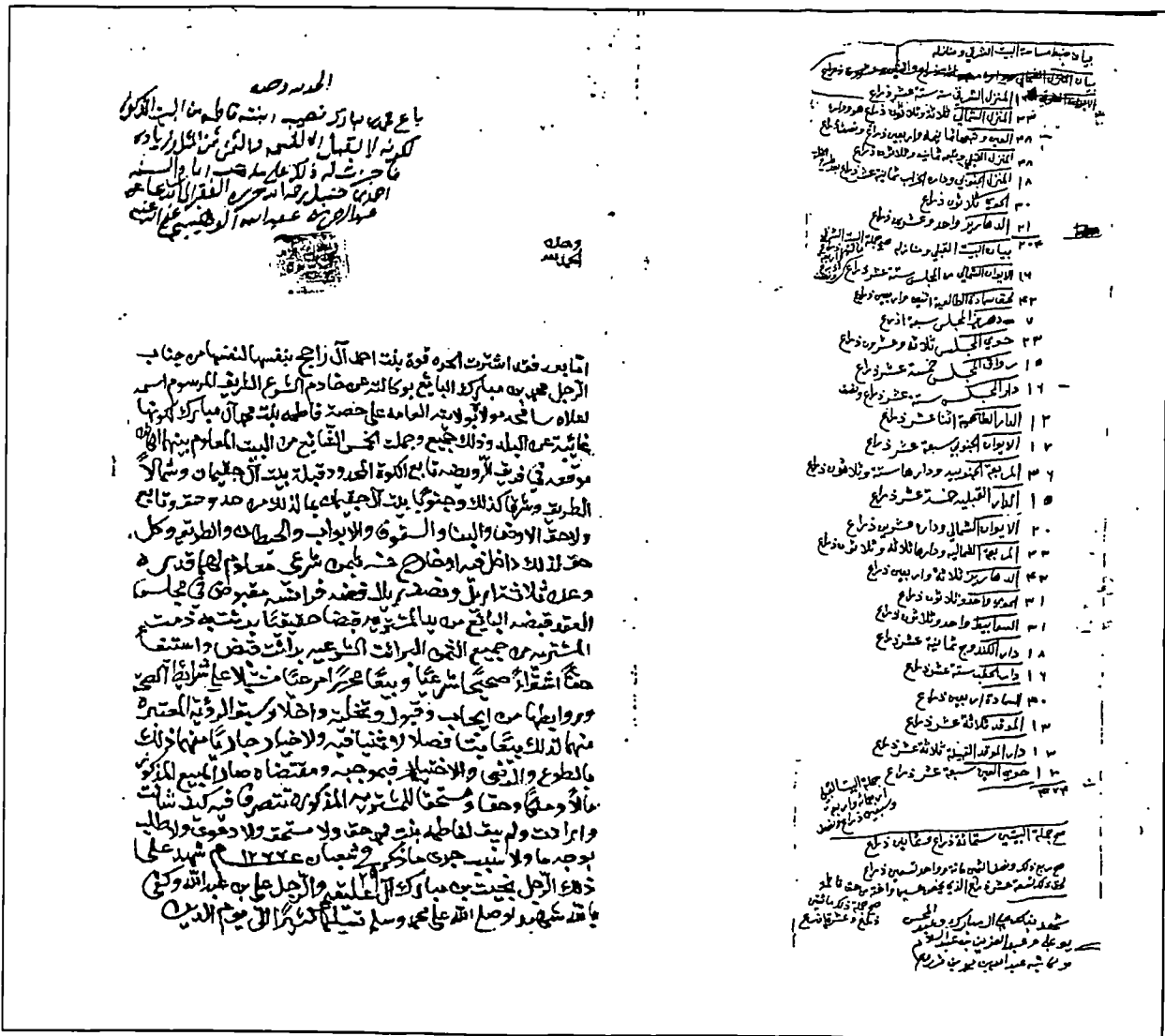


Fig.7.1: Historical document, dated 1857 (1277H) shows the process of selling and dividing the houses in the traditional home environment in Hofuf (*Alkut* quarter). Also, it describes the spatial components of the house and the name and area of each space. Source: Fieldwork (private collection: Abdulaziz Al-Asfoor)

⁸ Oliver, P. (1975), Op. Cit., p. 30.

⁹ Rapoport, A. (1977), Op. Cit., p. 108. Also, Habraken incates that ‘names can simply denote a form in its context’. Habraken, J. (1985), Op. Cit., p. 31.

One method that has been used to analyse the spatial principle of the traditional house in this study is searching for the local meaning of the internal spaces. For example, the word '*muraba'a*' stands for a square room. In Arabic the word '*muraba*' means square. While the word '*liwan*' locally means a rectangular, and sometimes narrow, room opening on to the courtyard. Both the *muraba'a* and the *liwan* were located in the family part and functioned as multi-purpose rooms. However, the *liwan* could be used as kitchen and was mainly used for family purposes while the *muraba'a* was usually used as main room or a room which could be used as a retreat for women or visiting relatives. In many cases the *muraba'a* had ornamentation, which was rarely found in the *liwan*. It is clear that the *muraba'a* had a symbolic meaning associated with its use (Fig.7.2). If the house contained only one *muraba'a*, usually the family used it as reception room for women or close relatives in the day time while they transformed it into a bedroom for the head of the family at night.

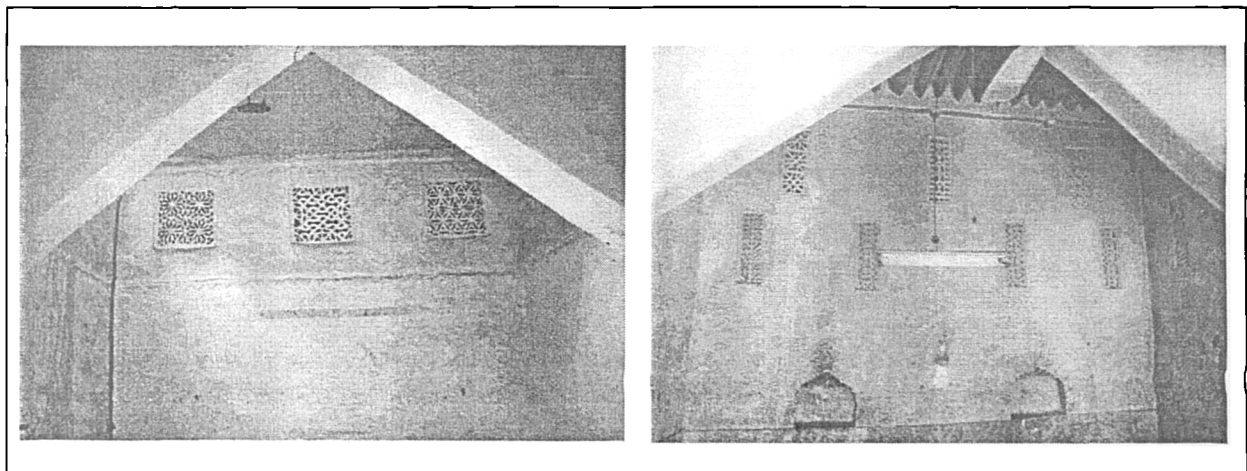


Fig.7.2: In most of the cases *muraba'a* has pointed arch in the middle because it is usually the largest room in the family part. Symbolically, it is decorated and used as women reception space. Source: Fieldwork.

Some people in Hofuf attached the word *muraba'a* to the male reception space by saying '*muraba'at almajlis*'. They never attached the word *liwan* to the *majlis*. This demonstrates the importance of *muraba'a*, not only as space, but as a name with a symbolic meaning in people's minds. This was clear from the answers of the old men. They said it was acceptable to have a narrow and dark *liwan* but a *muraba'a* should be spacious, well ventilated and well lit.

Another important example is the word '*hawi*', which means courtyard. If anyone in traditional Hofuf said '*hawi*' he meant the family courtyard, though as a matter of fact there was more than

one courtyard in the house. For example, there was the male reception courtyard, called '*hawī almajlis*'. Also, there was the animal courtyard, called '*semada*'. Local people in Hofuf never used the word '*hawī*' for the animal court, but they used it to refer to *majlis* courtyard. *Hawī* in the family and male reception areas was considered one of the most important spaces in the house. Its walls were usually covered in ornamentation because it worked both as a transitional open space (in the winter) by connecting the rooms around it, and in the summer it was used as a main sitting space for guests and the family (Fig.7.3).

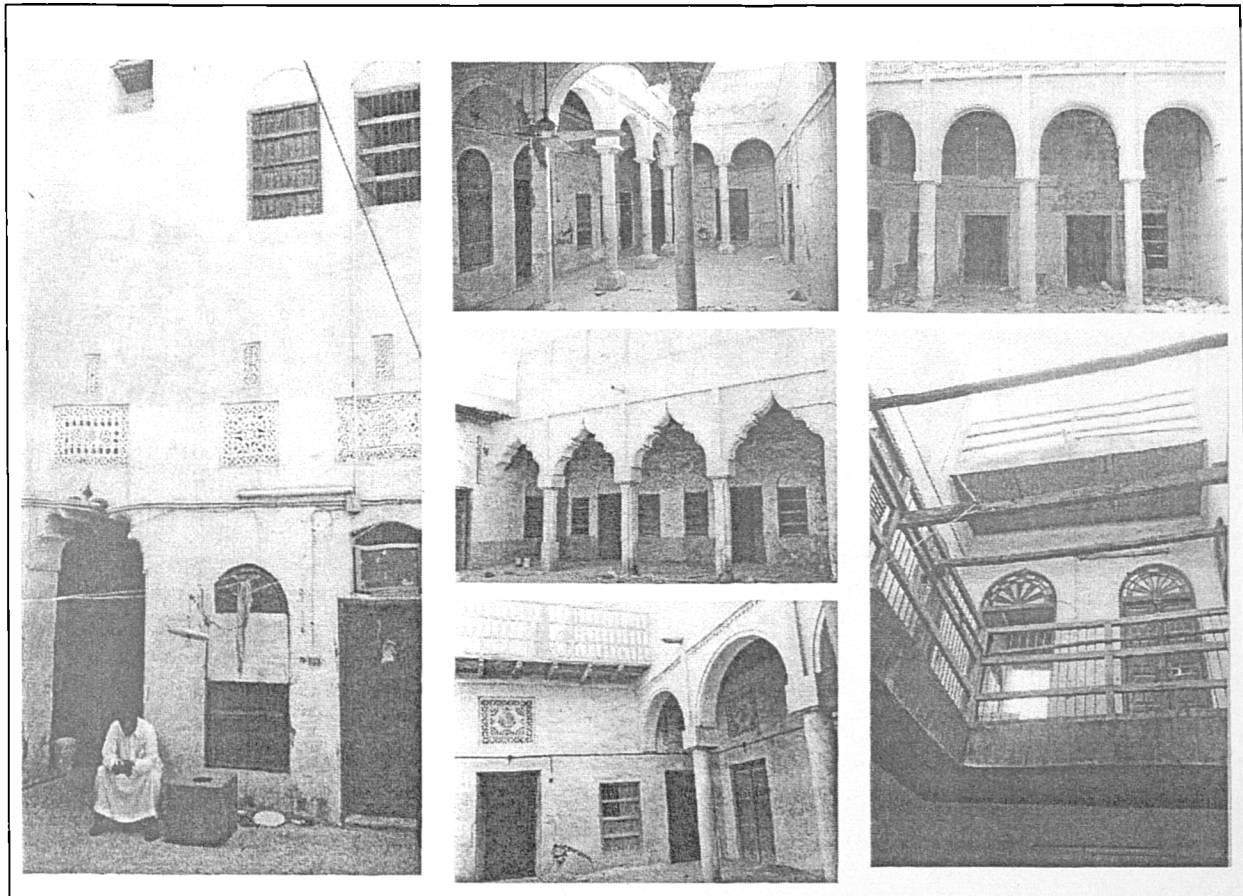


Fig.7.3: The name *hawī* (courtyard) always referred to the family courtyard unless it was associated with other names such as in '*hawī almajlis*'. Its walls were usually decorated because it conveyed symbolic meanings. Source: Fieldwork.

In some cases reception spaces were called by the local people '*bayt almajlis*', which means the house of guests.¹⁰ Here is another interesting use for names. Using the word '*bayt*' to define the male reception spaces indicated that, in the first place, the guest spaces were classified by people as special spaces different from other spaces in the house. Secondly, this expression reflects the

¹⁰ Al-Naim, M. (1993), Op. Cit., p. 68.

size of the guest spaces, which in some cases formed a house within a house. Still there were small or normal *majlises* sometimes called '*dar almajlis*'.¹¹ By attaching the word '*dar*' to the *majlis*, people referred to the size of the guest space. As we noticed, several names were used to describe the *majlis* in the traditional home environment, which reflects its position and its symbolic role in the traditional community.

Although the internal spaces in the traditional house had more than one function (even the *majlis* was used as bedroom for the guest) a specific name that was usually associated with a symbolic meaning was developed by local people to define and rank the spaces in the house. The above examples have shown that the name of a space was very important for the local people of Hofuf. In the following discussion we will try to analyse the spatial principle of the traditional house and also to discuss the local names and their symbolic and utilitarian meanings.¹²

7.2.1 SPATIAL ORGANISATION OF THE TRADITIONAL HOUSE

Spatial relationship in the traditional house was an expression of the social and physical division between male and female in the community. This led to two main domains inside the house, guest and family, and communal and private. These two domains determined how far strangers could enter the innermost parts the house. The family part was forbidden to strangers and only used by women and close male relatives, while the male part was part of the communal spaces in the *fereej* community if the *majlis* was open for guests.

There was free movement between these two domains if there were no male strangers in the house. For example women could use the male reception spaces to entertain women visitors, but this happened on limited occasions, because social interaction between women was rare and limited to the roof routes in most cases. The *majlis* had a dual function in everyday life by letting women use it, but symbolically it belonged to the male domain.

When we discussed the external domestic space we found that the role of women in society had played an important role in defining the concept of *fereej*. Usually, the openings in the parapets

¹¹ The words *bayt* and *dar* in Arabic mean a house. However, in Hofuf, people usually used the word *bayt* to refer to a house, while *dar* is used for a small room always accessible from a larger room.

¹² Some of the names in the traditional house were influenced by the agricultural products especially dates which are still today the most important agricultural product in Al-Hasa region. Because most of the people depend for their food and everyday items on agricultural products, several devices had been used by people to secure the family needs. Two different spaces to store dates were developed in the house. The first store is called *jussa*, which was a small box built in one of the *liwan* corners (one of the *livans* was usually used as the main store in the house). The *Jussa* was only used to store the dates for the family's daily supply. The second store was called a *kandooj* and was used to store the dates for commercial purpose. The *Kandooj* could be found inside or outside the house (there were some stores of dates open in the main *sikka* or in the market) while the *jussa* was found only in the house.

of the party walls between the houses, '*furaj*', connected family domains in these houses because they were used by women only. This system was successful in providing women with the opportunity to create their own social group. This created a clear clustering in society manifested by men's and women's groups. Each group defined itself socially and physically in the community. The whole *fereej* territory became a domain for the woman. Symbolically, the external space in the *fereej* system was a men's space, but women created their external space from within.

It is important to illuminate the way that internal spaces in the house responded to this way of living. It is a very important point to appreciate that the traditional house in Hofuf had three distinctive territories linked together by transitional spaces. Why were the internal spaces arranged in this way? As we mentioned earlier, there was a need to segregate the family part from the men's domain as well as to link it with other family parts in the *fereej*'s houses. Male reception spaces also had to be connected with the communal spaces in the *fereej*.¹³ It is possible here to say that these two factors played a major role in the formation of the traditional house in addition to their maintaining its perceptual and associational identity over time.

The relationship between these three parts in the house was a reflection of the social order of the traditional community. The front part of the house formed the male reception spaces. It represented the front stage where the private and public get together. The middle part was the family spaces, the private zone in the house. Nevertheless it was the domain which women visitors could use. The family part cannot be considered as 'back stage'.¹⁴ This is because its spaces were openly visible to visitors (women). In the traditional house no rooms were dedicated to one function alone, except the utility and animal spaces. The *muraba'a* and *liwan*, which were usually connected immediately to the family courtyard, were used as multi-purpose rooms. This family part was connected with the male reception spaces by a transitional space, the *dehreez*. The third part was usually the services and animal court, which was connected with

¹³ The position of the house entrance was mainly determined by the location of the *majlis*, which in most of the cases, was situated in the entrance at the right side. The entrances of neighbouring houses were located at a distance from each other. This principle may change in those houses which were located in a cul-de-sac due to the limited spaces. In this case, entrances may be located adjacent to each other and *majlis* may take different positions. This spatial attitude can be considered as a general principle but there were some exceptions. For example, the researcher surveyed and measured two houses located in cul-de-sacs one of them located in *Anna'athil* quarter and the other located in the south *Arrif'a* quarter. In the case of *Anna'athil* guest spaces were located in the entrance left side to maximise the distance from the neighbouring house, while in the case of south *Arrif'a*, the house was located in the deepest and narrowest part in the cul-de-sac which provide the house with a door size opening to the cul-de-sac. The *majlis* in the latter case was facing the house gate because this was the only possible location.

¹⁴ Goffman (1959), introduced the concepts of 'front regions' and back region to make a distinction between two domains in the home. For him, the 'front regions' is the area where the visitors are presented. It is like a stage 'where actors present images they wish to convey to an audience'. On the other hand, the back region is more private and it is unavailable to the guests. See Also Altman and Gauvain, (1981), Op. Cit., p. 312.

the family part by another transitional space called internal *sabat* (Fig.7.4).¹⁵ The animal court can be considered the back stage of the house, the location of dirty activities and usually well away from visitors' eyes.

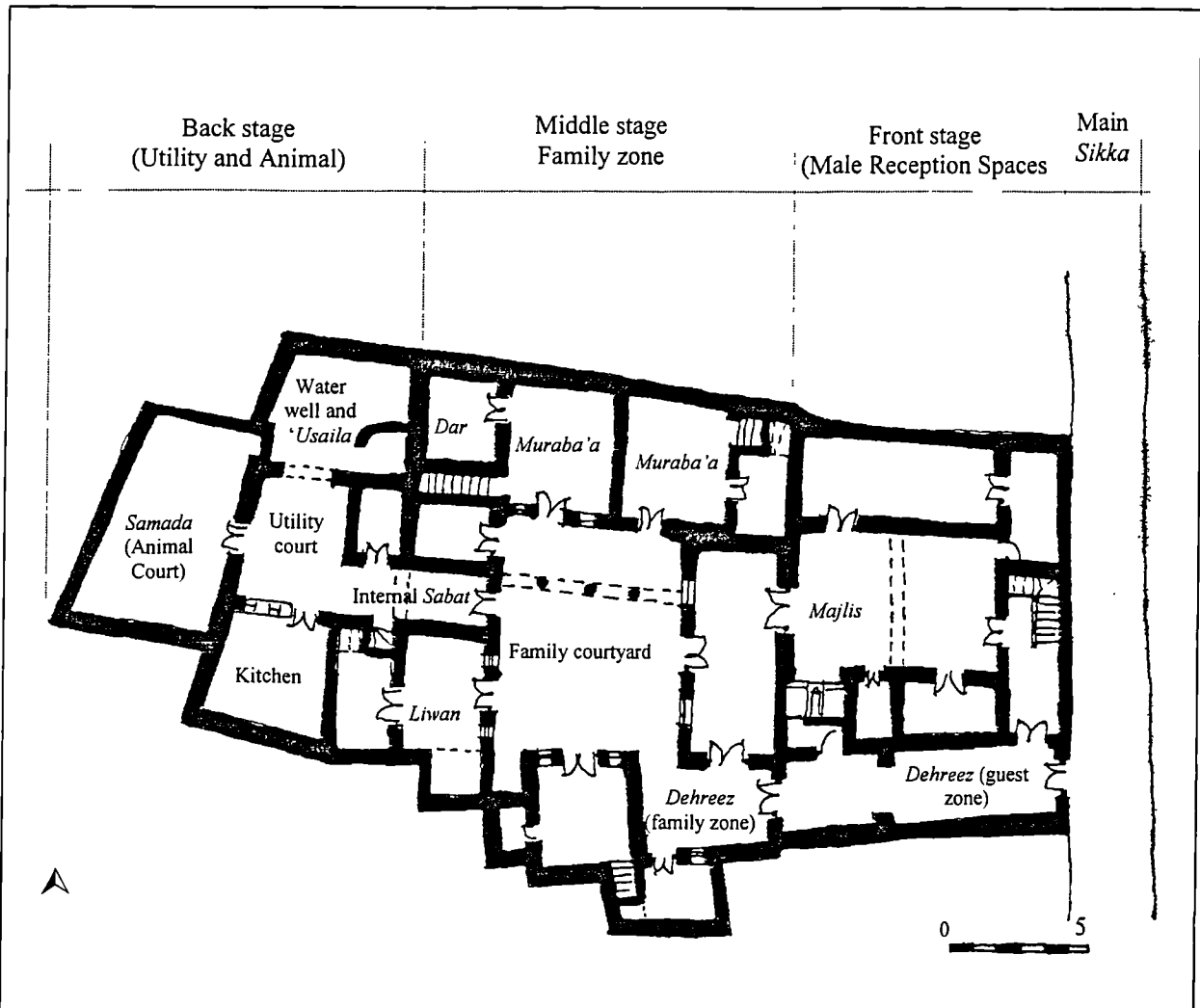


Fig.7.4: A house in *Anna'athil* showing the three parts of the house. Source: After Al-Naim, M. (1993), Op. Cit., p. 67.

¹⁵ Al-Naim, M. (1993), Op. Cit., p. 66.

7.2.2 CONTINUITY AND CHANGE OF THE PHYSICAL AND SPATIAL FEATURES OF THE TRADITIONAL HOUSE IN HOFUF (UP TO 1950)¹⁶

The main theme of this study is to understand the process of identification in the home environment. This requires from the researcher that he trace any changes that have occurred in the home environment and address their implications for perceptual and associational identities. Although the traditional home environment experienced minimal change during the nineteenth century and the first half of the twentieth century, a pattern of spatial change has been depicted. The fascinating point about this change is that it occurred only in the male reception spaces, while the family and animal spaces continued without change.¹⁷ This part, is thus mainly a diachronic study of the male reception spaces in the traditional house of Hofuf during the nineteenth century and first half of the twentieth century.

In the early periods, only prominent people in every *fereej* had *majlises* in their houses (Fig.7.5). Ordinary people used to use the entrance of their house *dehreez* to entertain their male visitors (see Fig.6.22). Women in this case used to move to the roof or to the innermost room in the house to keep themselves away from the sight of the men. Because the *majlis* carried very deep associational meanings, it later became part of every house's identity. Every family needed to express its status by interacting with the community, and the *majlis* was the only space in the house has with the capacity to let them do that. As a matter of fact, the *majlis* was not only a place for amusing visitors but was a place where family could show its wealth and social status as well as express its sense of belonging to the whole community.

¹⁶ The traditional house in Hofuf went under drastic transformation after 1950 which is beyond the scope of this study. The researcher had studied the transformation of the traditional house (1950-93) in his master thesis in 1993.

¹⁷ We traced those changes that transformed the spatial relationship within each part in the traditional house. Often the family and animal parts changed physically because of the need for more room, but their spatial principles continued with minimal change.

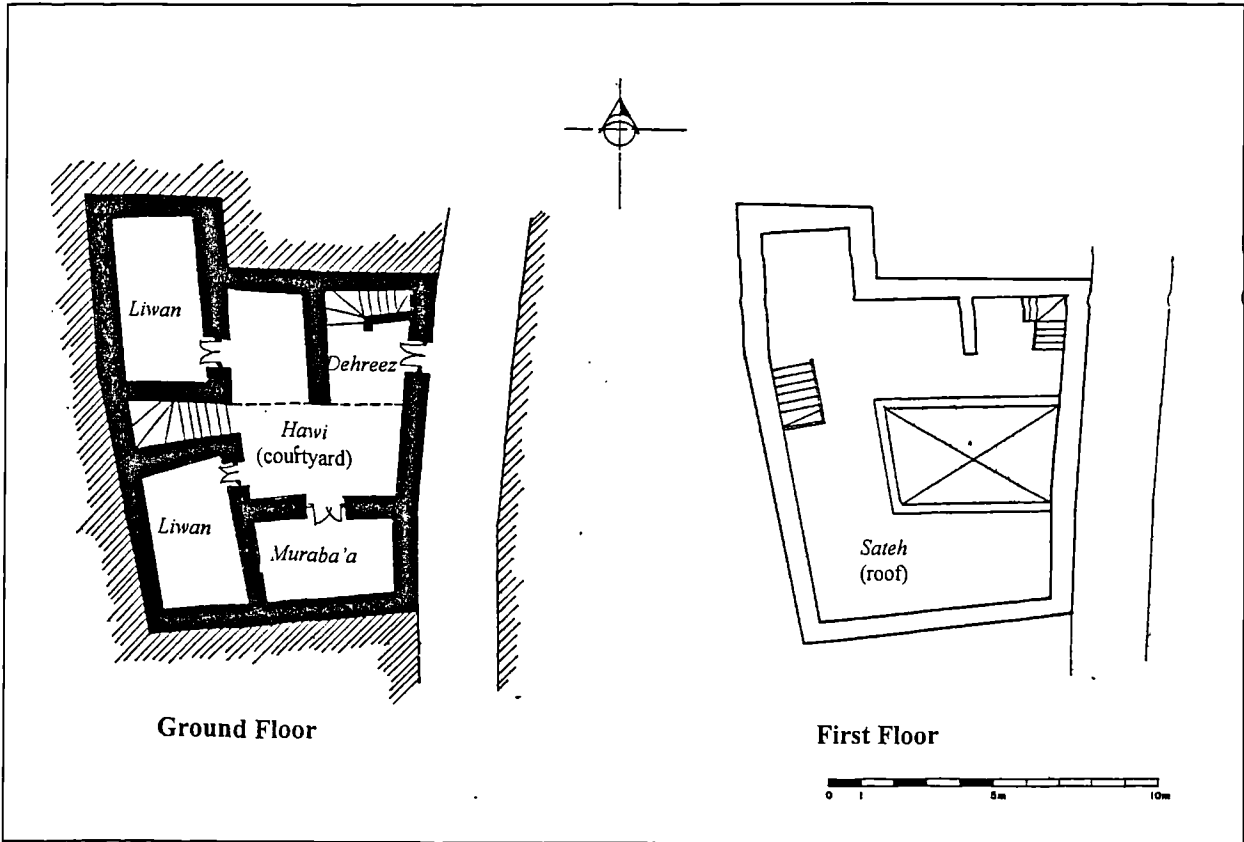


Fig.7.5: One of the early houses in *Alkut* (The *majlis* in this house was not yet developed because only those prominent people in the *fereej* had one.) Men usually used the entrance to sit while women went upstairs to the roof or used the innermost *liwan*. Source: After Al-Naim, M. (1993), Op. Cit., p. 58.

In the nineteenth century the guest spaces in the traditional home in Hofuf consisted of a main reception hall called the *majlis* or *murabba'at al-majlis*. This space was connected with the main entrance by a courtyard open to the sky, called *hawi al-majlis* (guest courtyard). Usually, this open space was used as *majlis saifi* (summer setting place). Moreover, it worked as a transitional space between the guest spaces and both family spaces and the house entrance, which increased the freedom for women to use their space in the house without any interruption to their privacy. This open space was also connected with another small open space used for animals, called

semada (animal court in the guest space).¹⁸ Usually, this space either opened on to the guest zone at the entrance, or what local people called *dehreez almajlis* or the main *sikka* (Fig.7.6).¹⁹

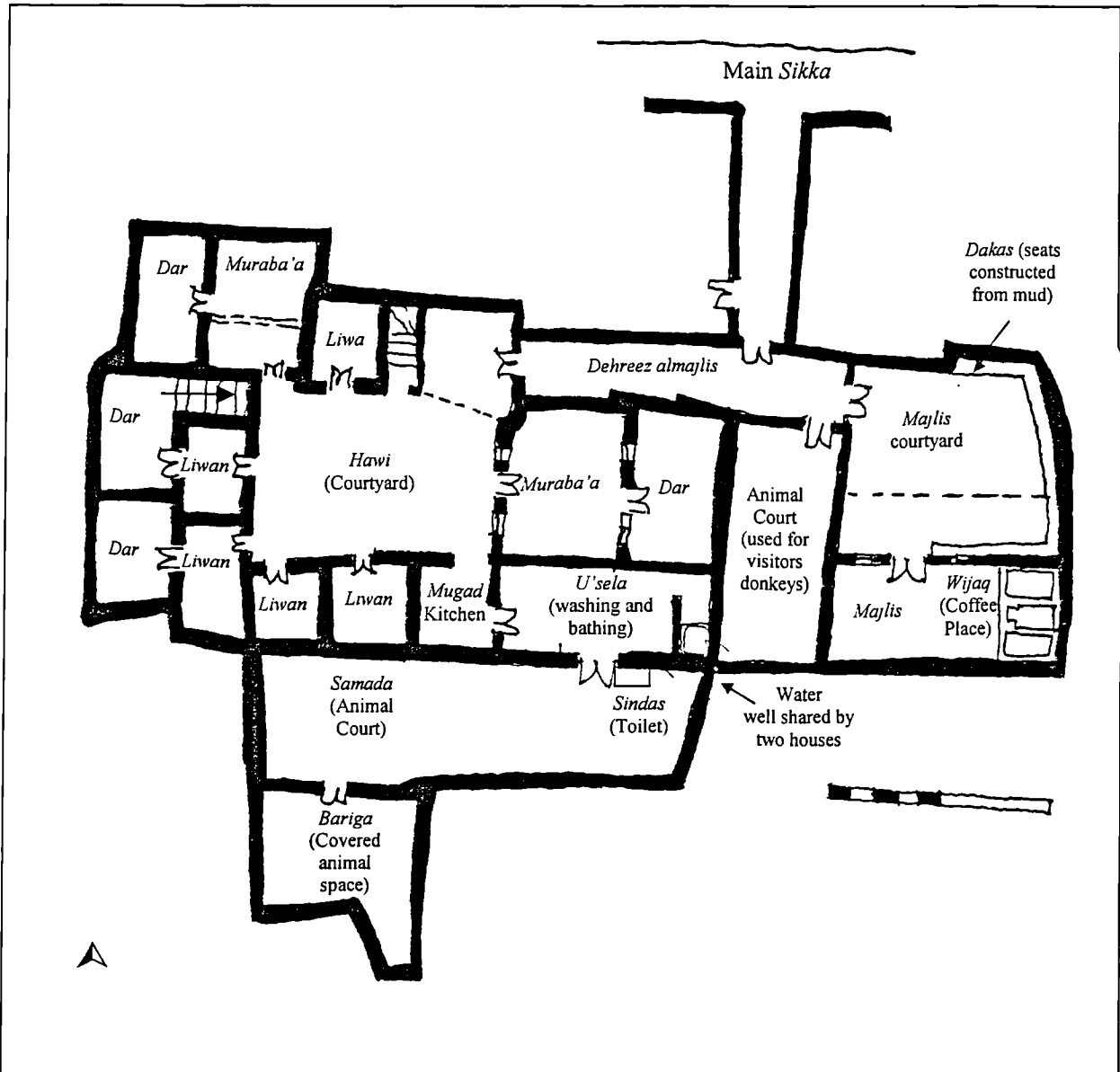


Fig.7.6: *Majlis* associated with a courtyard in a house in *Anna'athil*. Source: Fieldwork

The *majlis* hall usually faced north. Some of the well-to-do families had two rooms, the summer room which was located in the south and called *muraba'at almajlis ashshamaliyyah*, meaning the northern *majlis* (because it faced the north), and the winter room located in the north and

¹⁸ In traditional Hofuf people owned palm tree farms but they did not work in them. They had farmers named *shireech* (partner), who worked in the farms and visited the owner of the farm with their donkeys. The small animal place in the guest part was used for their donkeys. Also, the toilet room connected with it was for the guest. Usually people had a small garden at the side of *majlis* courtyard named *bustan*. This garden was located beside the toilet and the animal court to utilise the water and waste in these two places.

called '*muraba'at almajlis aljanobyyah*', the southern *majlis*.²⁰ The courtyard in this case would be located between these two rooms. The *majlis* courtyard or *hawi almajlis* was usually semi-shaded. The material used to make the shaded area was palm leaves, and was called *gerd* by local people. It is the same material that was used to make the matts for the *dakas* around the courtyard. The shaded part is flexible to enable the household to remove it in the winter.

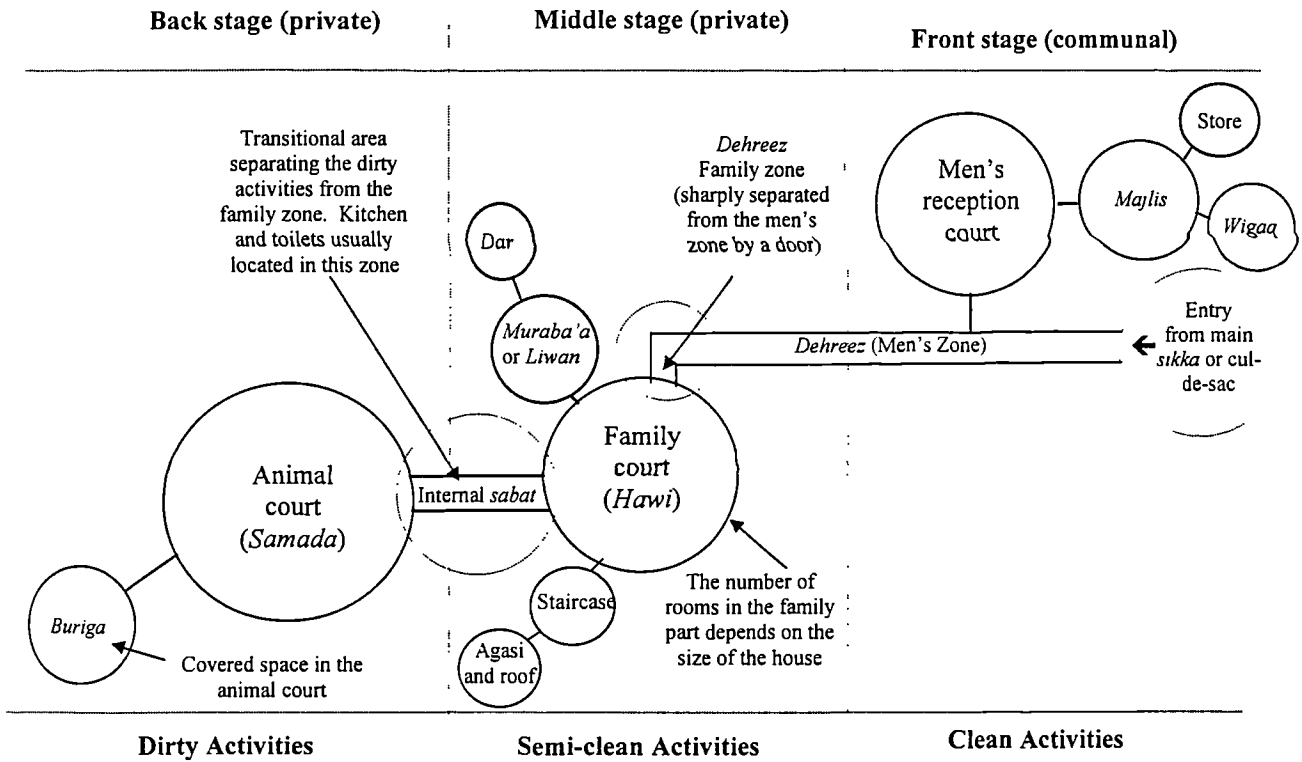


Fig.7.7: The organisation of internal domestic space in the traditional house (nineteenth century)

Generally the spatial principle of the traditional house in the nineteenth century followed the same order. The house was divided into three parts, guest, family, and animal. The front and most symbolic zone was occupied by the male reception spaces. The family occupied the middle zone connected at one side to the male reception part by the two entrance halls (family and guest zones), and at the other side to the animal zone by a corridor called *sabat dakhily*, or internal *sabat*.²¹ Some times the internal *sabat* became larger and contained several facilities such as a kitchen and a small courtyard called *hawi al'ain* (court of the water well), where the bath is

¹⁹ This depends on the location of the house. If the house was located in a cul-de-sac the animal court in the reception spaces was usually accessed from the entrance, while if the house was located in the main *sikka* it was usually accessed from outside.

²⁰ Personal interview with Sheikh Ahmed ben Ali Al-Mubarak.

²¹ This internal *sabat* differed from the external *sabat* which was found in the main *sikkas* and cul-de-sacs. The external *sabat* functioned as a connecting point between two different houses on the two sides of the street while the internal *sabat* was a semi-covered passageway connecting the family courtyard with the animal court.

located (Fig.7.7). For long time these two transitional zones, the entrance and the internal *sabat*, worked, as we will see, to maintain this spatial principle as well as the physical identity of the traditional house.

By the end of the nineteenth century male reception spaces faced several transformations. The male reception spaces were the only part in the house which was adapted to these changes. The changes appeared firstly by transforming all or part of the *majlis* courtyard into a two storey hall used as a *majlis*, and the previous *majlis* became a room inside the new *majlis*. This room functioned as a guest bedroom, dining room, and storage area. The second transformation was that some houses transferred the *majlis* to the first floor and used the entire ground floor for the family. This happened in the beginning of the twentieth century because many houses were divided due to the limited area of the walled city.²²

In the two storey *majlis* hall the reception spaces were still located on the ground floor. This was found in large houses. The reception spaces in this case occupied a large area of ground floor and were usually called *bayt almajlis*. A specific pattern of territorial behaviour was developed to create a balance between the reception part and the other part in the house which was used by the family. The bent entrance (*dehreez*) had worked as a regulator for circulation and to provide the family part with full privacy not only from outside but also from inside. The *dehreez* in such a case was long and consisted of three halls or more. This is because the entrance halls in many cases were situated around the *majlis* and, thus, were connected with the family part. Usually there was one zone devoted to the guests in the entrance area, while two or more zones were for the family, which was separated from the guest zone by a wooden door. As a general attitude, there was a tendency to reduce the depth of the guest area inside the house by defining the front part by physical devices (Fig.7.8).

The *majlis* in this case consisted of a large rectangular hall including a coffee making area (*wijaq*), and was surrounded by small rooms called *bakhaar* (Fig.7.9). The coffee making area either created a small room opening to the main hall with decorative arches, or was located in one of the front corners (usually the left corner) in the *majlis* hall. The *majlis* hall was connected

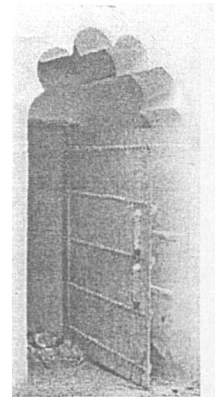


Fig.7.8: The family zone in the entrance opening on to the family courtyard with a decorative arch.

Source:
Fieldwork.

²² Vidal, F. S. (1955), Op. Cit., pp. 81-2.

with the guest entrance hall by another transitional hall called *madkhal almajlis*, or entrance of the *majlis*. This hall separated the male reception space completely from the rest of the house by means of a decorative wooden door to provide maximum privacy for the family inside the house and to enable them to use the house entrance if they needed .

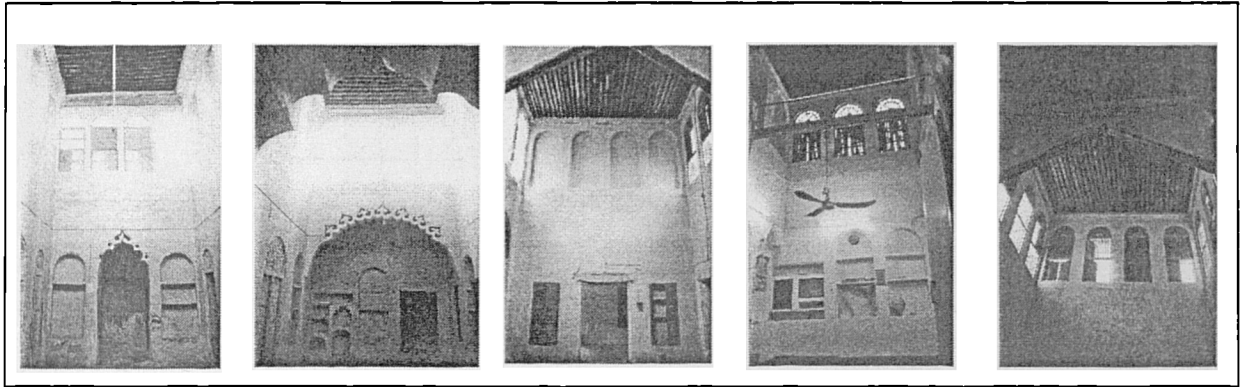


Fig 7.9: *Majlis* of two storeys. Usually it was ventilated and lighted through a number of windows facing north and some time south and east. The coffee place was usually situated in the front zone of the *majlis* hall. Source: Fieldwork.

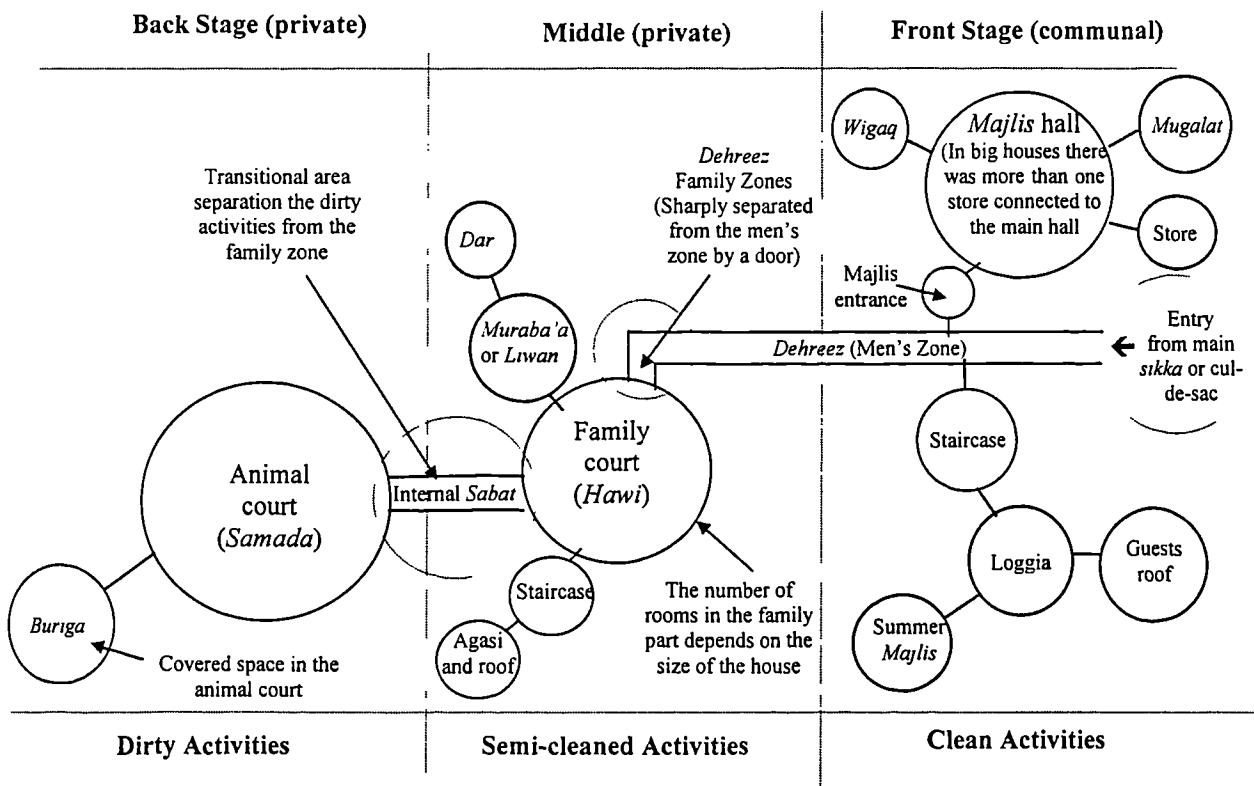


Fig.7.10 The organisation of internal domestic space in the traditional house (Late nineteenth century and early twentieth century)

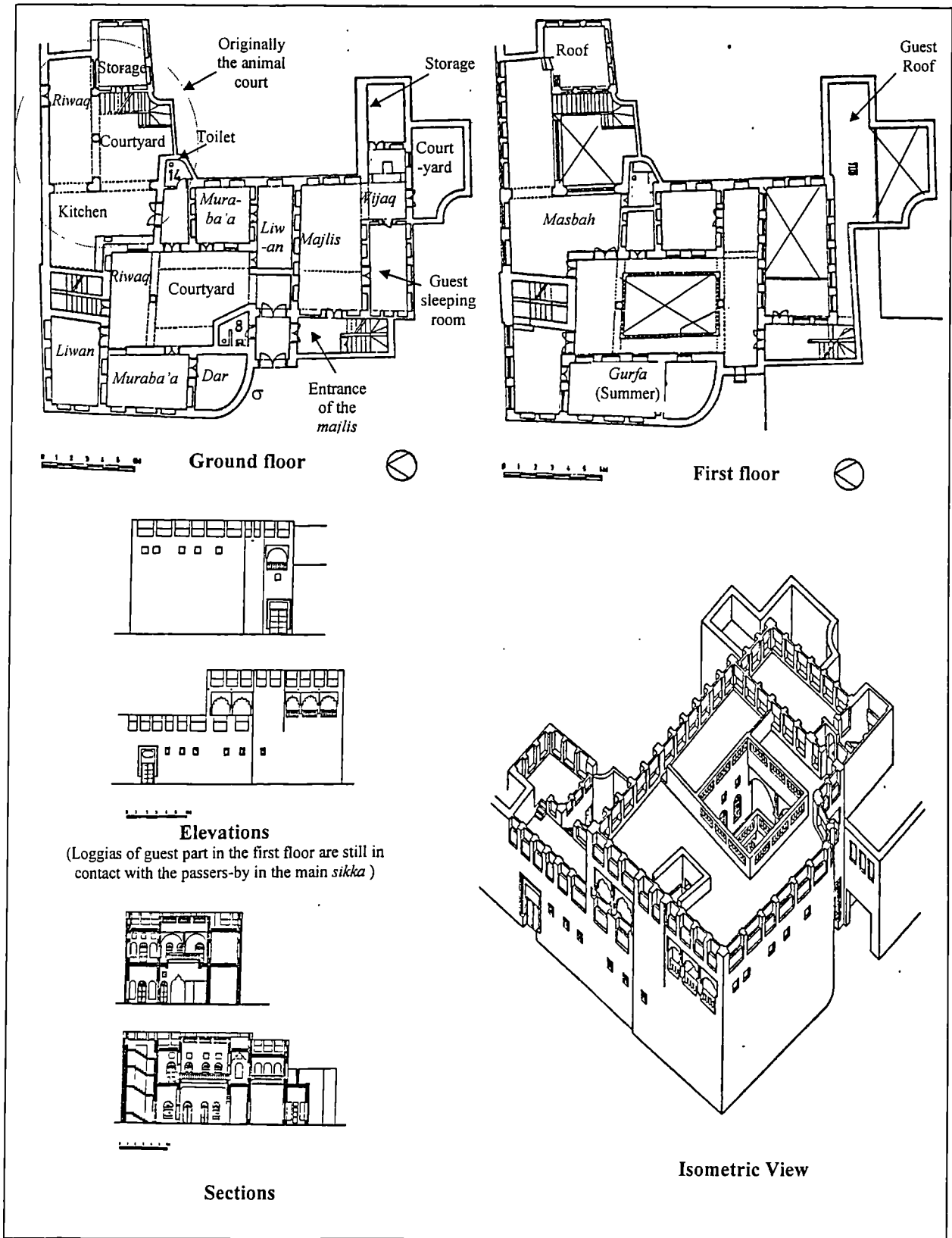


Fig.7.11: A house in the *Arrif'a* had a *majlis* of two storeys on the ground floor (part of the old courtyard). Source: Developed from Winterhalter, C. (1981). Op. Cit., pp. 128-31.

In Fig.7.10 we can see how the spatial organisation of the front zone became more complicated. It was true that the people of Hofuf transformed the *majlis* court into a *majlis* hall on the ground floor. Still the function of the courtyard was very important for them. A staircase was usually situated in the guest entrance hall or the *majlis* entrance to lead to upstairs guest spaces. In the first floor, the staircase led usually to a loggia with two or more openings to the main *sikka*. The loggia also led to a guest roof and summer *majlis* (Fig.7.11). Those spaces which were found in the ground floor, courtyard, shaded area and the summer *majlis* were moved to the first floor by creating the loggia, guest roof, and summer *majlis*. The other two parts in the house, family and animal, continued with minimal change (Fig.7.12).

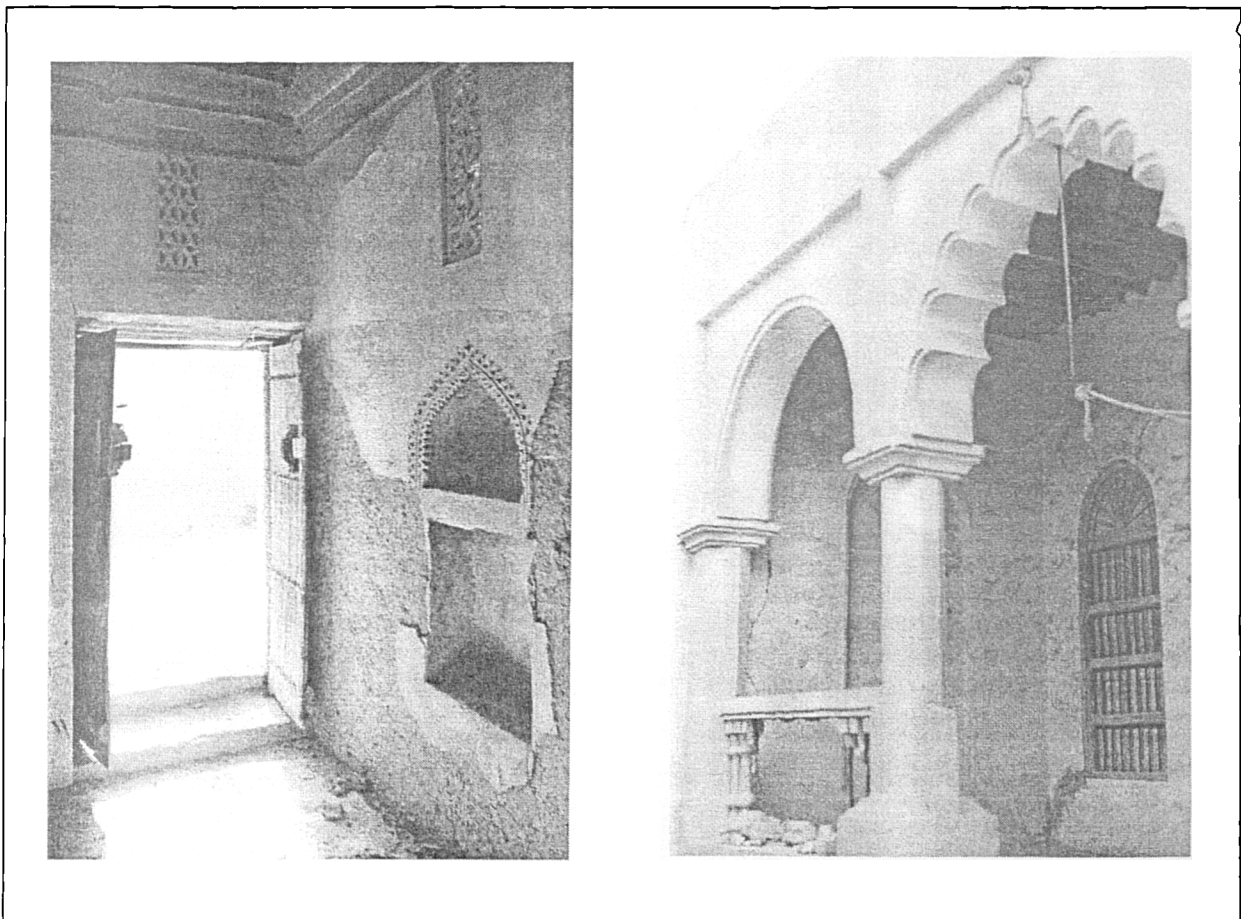


Fig.7.12: Summer *majlis*. People in the traditional environment treated the summer *majlis* as the main *majlis*. Usually it was ornamented from inside and outside. It was located in the first floor and connected with the *majlis riwaq* or guest roof. Source: Fieldwork.

When the *majlis* moved completely to the first floor, the family and animals occupied the ground floor. The male reception spaces had moved completely upstairs but the guest entrance hall remained on the ground floor to link the *majlis* with the external spaces (Fig.7.13). The main

reason behind this change was the division of large houses into smaller ones to accommodate new members in the *fereej*. The entrance in this case consisted of two small halls, one of them connected to the main doorway, which had a staircase leading to the reception spaces upstairs, the other hall leading to the family courtyard and separated from the first hall by a wooden door.

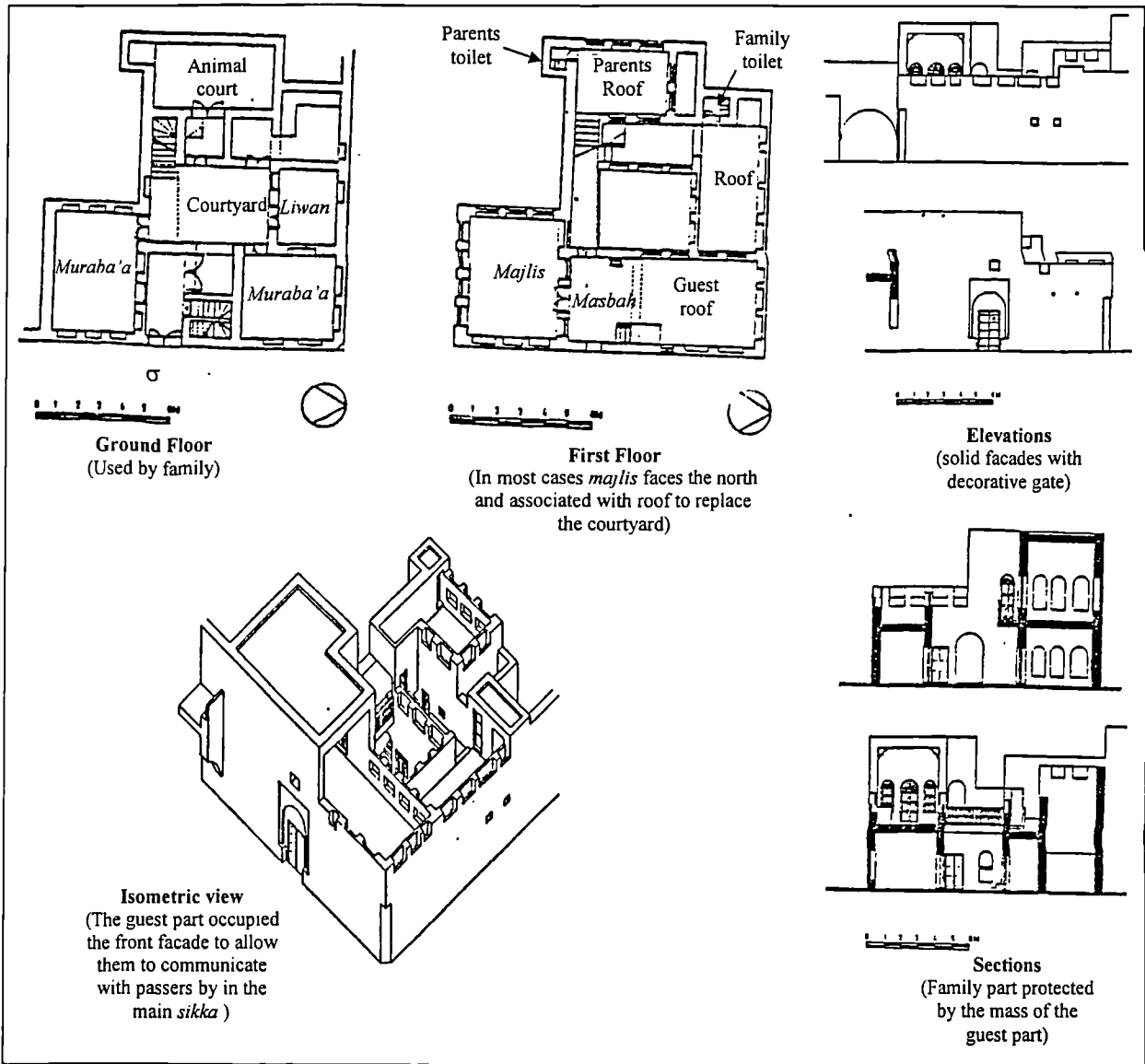


Fig.7.13: A house with upstairs *majlis*. Because of the division of traditional houses over time, small houses usually had *majlises* in the first floor. Source: Developed from Winterhalter, C. (1981), Op. Cit., pp. 134-6.²³

The staircase in the entrance hall led to the *majlis riwaq* or *masbah* which worked as a transitional space to regulate the circulation upstairs and to provide the required isolation

²³ In this study, we used two examples surveyed by Winterhalter in the late 1970's (he was a faculty member in the College of Architecture and Planning, King Faisal University, Dammam until 1980). By that time many of traditional houses had been transformed especially in respect of the animal courts which were changed to utility places and kitchens (see Fig.7.11). Also, the coffee place had disappeared from many *majlises*. This is because the coffee rituals had been changed.

between the guest part and family part on the first floor. The *masbah* usually opened on to a roof to substitute for the courtyard. In some cases, the *masbah* connected with an external *agasi* looking on to the main *sikka*.²⁴ It is obvious that the courtyard and semi-shaded area had been reproduced in the upstairs male reception spaces. The *majlis* hall in this case is one storey high and connected sometimes with a small room to store coffee, wood, etc (Fig.7.14). The coffee making space was located in one of the front corners, usually the left corner, in the *majlis* hall, and another coffee place was located in the *majlis riwaq* or *masbah* for summer use.

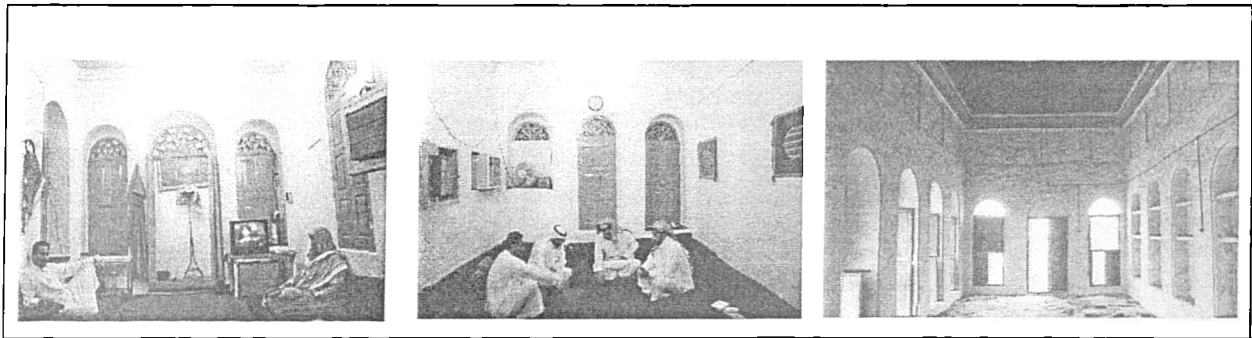


Fig.7.14: *Majlises* on the first floor with a hall one storey in height (most of the *majlises* were transformed in the second half of this century. The coffee place almost disappeared). Source: Fieldwork.

The male reception spaces became less complicated. They transferred to upstairs but they still occupied the front stage of the house. In the previous chapter we discussed how the loggia worked as a symbolic and visual element, as an indicator for the upstairs *majlis* and how it connected it with the *fereej* community. In fact, there was another element associated with the upstairs *majlis*. This was the *masbah*, a semi-shaded space, which functioned as a transitional space between the upstairs *majlis* and guest roof. It had a striking appearance from outside and, when it was associated with the external *agasi*, formed another solution for the house facade. The function of the loggia and the *majlis* windows on the main *sikka* were substituted in this solution by a long *agasi* looking on to the main street and linking the *majlis* with the outside world (Fig.7.15). This is considered another sort of traditional house facade typical of the first half of the twentieth century. Despite the visual differences, the symbolic function of both facades worked to link the house with the *fereej* community.

²⁴ The form of the *agasi* in Hofuf, similar to *mashrabiyyah* in some cases.

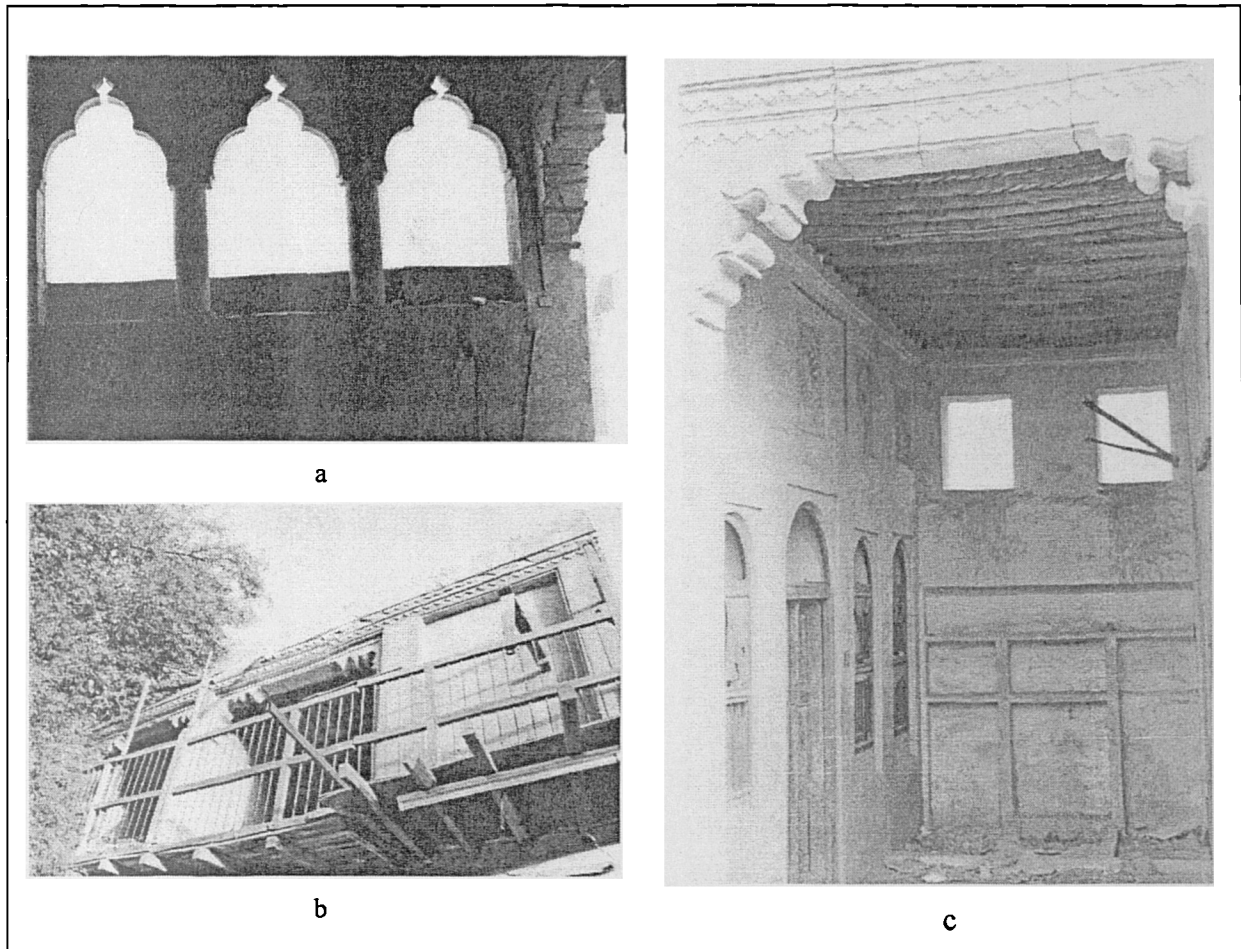


Fig.7.15: Loggia and *masbah*. (a) *Majlis riwaq* (loggia) connecting the male reception spaces with the main *sikka*. (b) *Masbah* seen from outside and associated with an external *agasi* to produce the house facade. (c). *Masbah* opened to a guest roof seen from outside. It had a coffee place for summer use. Source: Fieldwork.

By developing the *masbah* in the house, several solutions were found by people to enhance the internal and external physical characteristics of the house (Fig.7.16). As we mentioned, the *masbah* was mainly developed to replace the semi-shaded area in the courtyard which existed in the original *majlis* in the nineteenth century. The first solution provided by the *masbah* was to give the upstairs *majlis* a spacious open space with a semi-shaded sitting place. However, the *masbah* later become a main element in the upstairs spaces. Almost all the family roofs had at least one *masbah*. It was used in the family partly for sitting in the afternoon, as well as a place to protect mattresses from the sun in the day time.

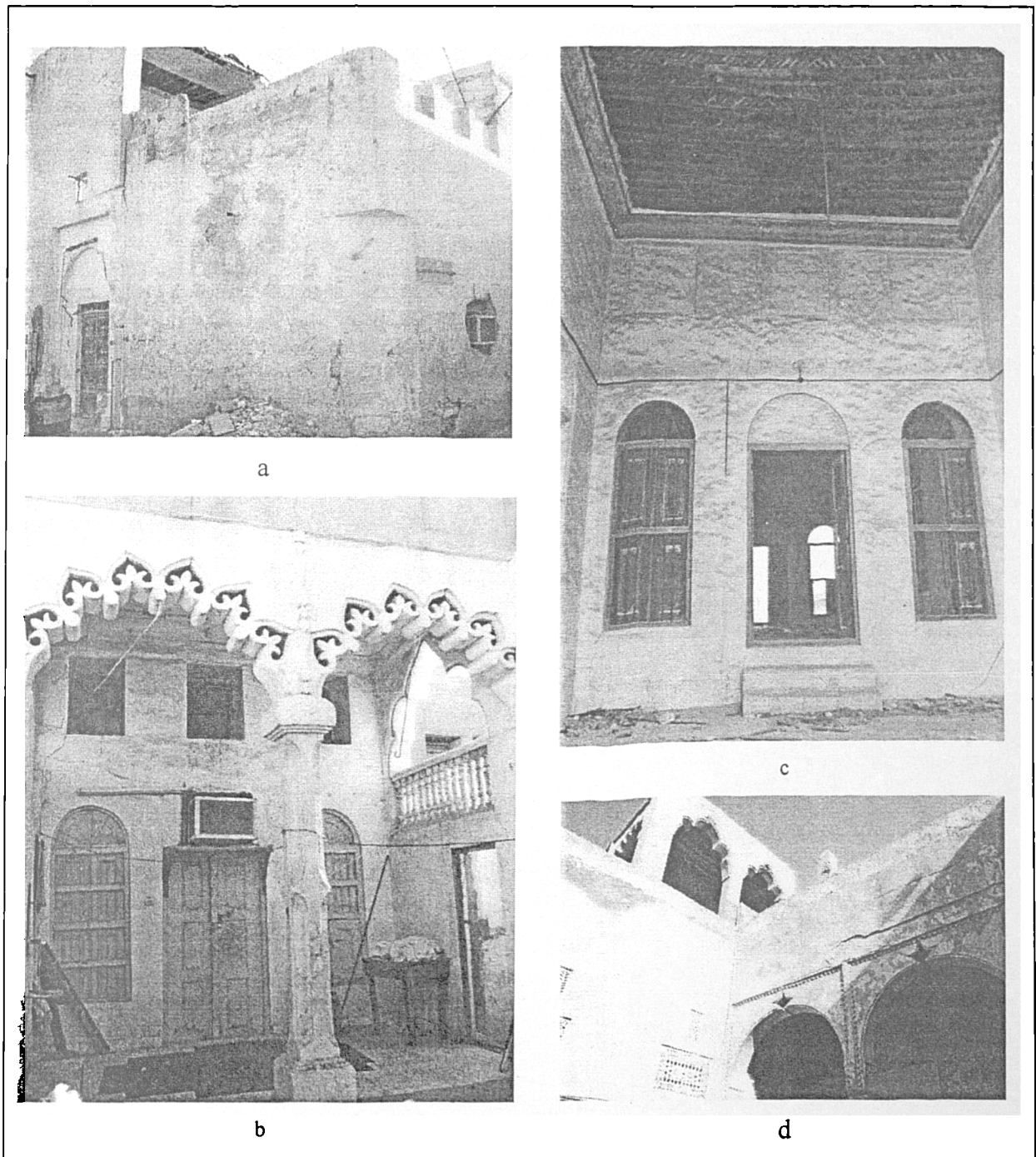


Fig.7.16: The *masbah* in the traditional house took several forms and locations. a) The *masbah* seen from the main *sikka* to indicate the *majlis* upstairs. b) Two decorative arches opened to guest roof in the *majlis masbah*. c) High roof *masbah* to indicate the *majlis* from outside and to emphasise the importance of the *majlis*. d) *Masbah* in the family part looking to the family courtyard. Source: Fieldwork.

The family and animal parts remained with minimal change except that their size grew smaller. Moreover, the family spaces occupied the front zone in the ground floor without any openings on to the main *sikka*, which kept them away from outsiders sight. This meant that the male

reception spaces symbolically and visually represented the front stage of the house even when they moved to the first floor (Fig.7.17). This was because the guest zone in the entrance was still open to the outside world as well as because the male reception spaces were linked visually through the *majlis* and loggia openings to the *fereej* community.

To recapitulate, the male reception spaces in the traditional house in Hofuf passed through several changes. We have tried to make a spatio-temporal path for the development of the spatial relationship of the traditional house in the nineteenth and first half of the twentieth century. One of the main findings is that the change only occurred in the male reception spaces. As we have said earlier, a change within the family and animal parts had occurred but there was no major spatial change. Every part grew smaller due to the division of the houses to accommodate the increasing numbers of the population. The two transitional areas in the house, the entrance hall and the internal *sabat*, played a major role in isolating the change within each part. This meant that if any change occurred in the male reception spaces, the family and animal part remained unchanged. As a matter of fact, the family spaces could be the only spaces which continued over time because they were protected by these transitional zones from two sides.

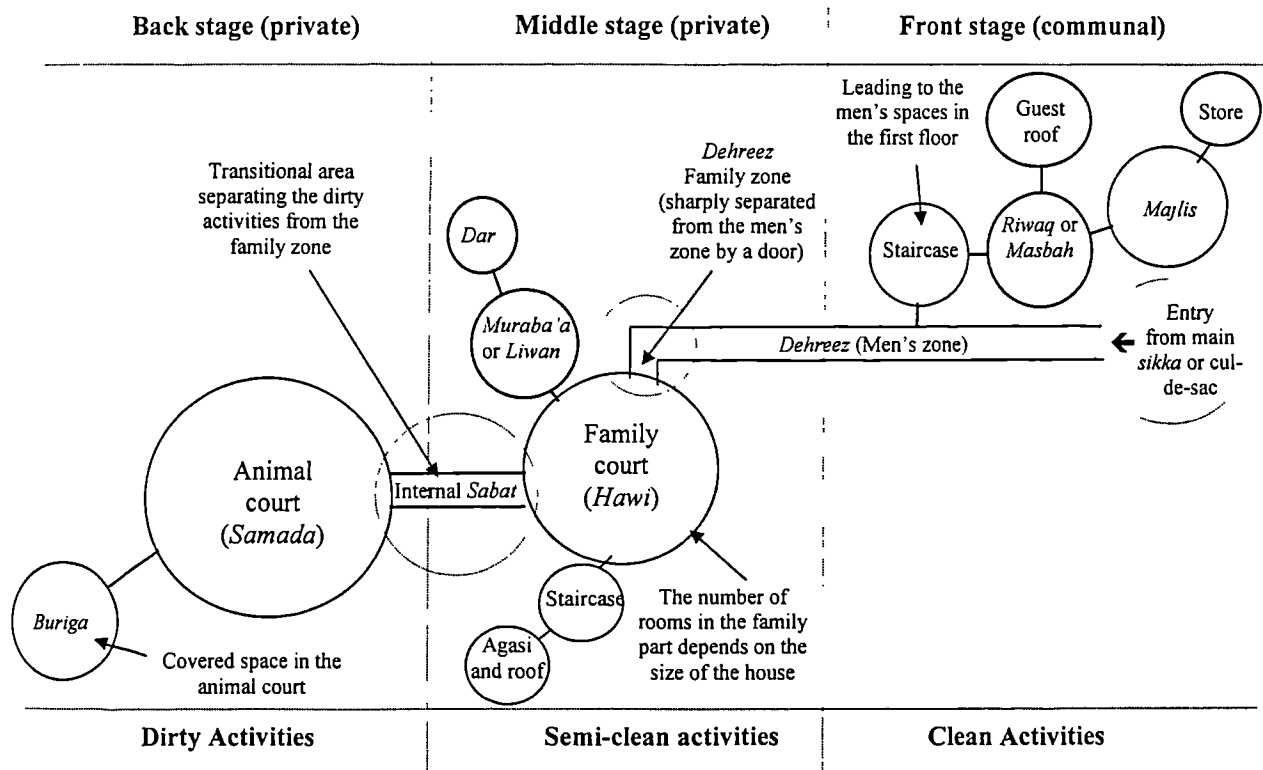


Fig.7.17: The organisation of internal domestic space in the traditional house (in the first half of twentieth century)

We can argue that, because the male reception spaces had symbolic meaning and worked as a medium for conveying social status and family's identity, a continuous change had occurred on these spaces to enable the families in the *fereej* community to communicate with each other by adapting new ideas in the guest spaces. The people of Hofuf believe that the transformation of the male reception spaces first occurred because few people had adapted a new idea which was imported from a neighbouring society, Bahrain.²⁵ The two storey *majlis* hall appeared, not because of the need for spaces in the ground floor because the previous spaces were only transformed to absorb the new idea. Since then, the *majlis* with a courtyard became less important and people started to transform their old *majlises* to express their status.

It is clear that a number of elements had been already developed when the *majlis* moved to the first floor. We can say, in this case, that the last transformation of the male reception spaces was almost an adjustment for the large houses when they were divided into small ones. The *majlis riwaq*, summer *majlis*, and guest roof continued as male reception spaces, while the reception spaces on the ground floor were taken into the family parts. The loggia continued as one of the main visual and symbolic characteristics of the male reception spaces on the first floor. However, another symbolic and visual solution had been developed in this process. In those reception spaces which had been associated with *masbahs*, the facades in some cases were developed with an *agasi* looking onto the main *sikka*. This composition had same function as the loggia openings and the *majlis* windows (Fig.7.18).

Generally we can say that, although the perceptual identity of the *majlis* was partially changed, the symbolic and social meaning of the male reception spaces continued in the traditional house as a major medium for expressing people's associational identity. When we said that the perceptual identity was partially changed we mean that the spatial relationship and the location of the *majlis* was changed, but the *majlis* hall mainly continued especially, as we will see in the next part of this chapter, in its rituals and visual characteristics (Fig7.19).

²⁵ The researcher visited several traditional houses in Bahrain to find the source of this idea. This visit was immediately after the completion of the interviews (Early 1997). In fact there were no *majlises* similar to Hofuf found in Bahrain but there were some of two storeys in height. For example, the researcher found this type in Bayt Siyadi in Muharaq, but it was different from Hofuf because it was located upstairs. Also its

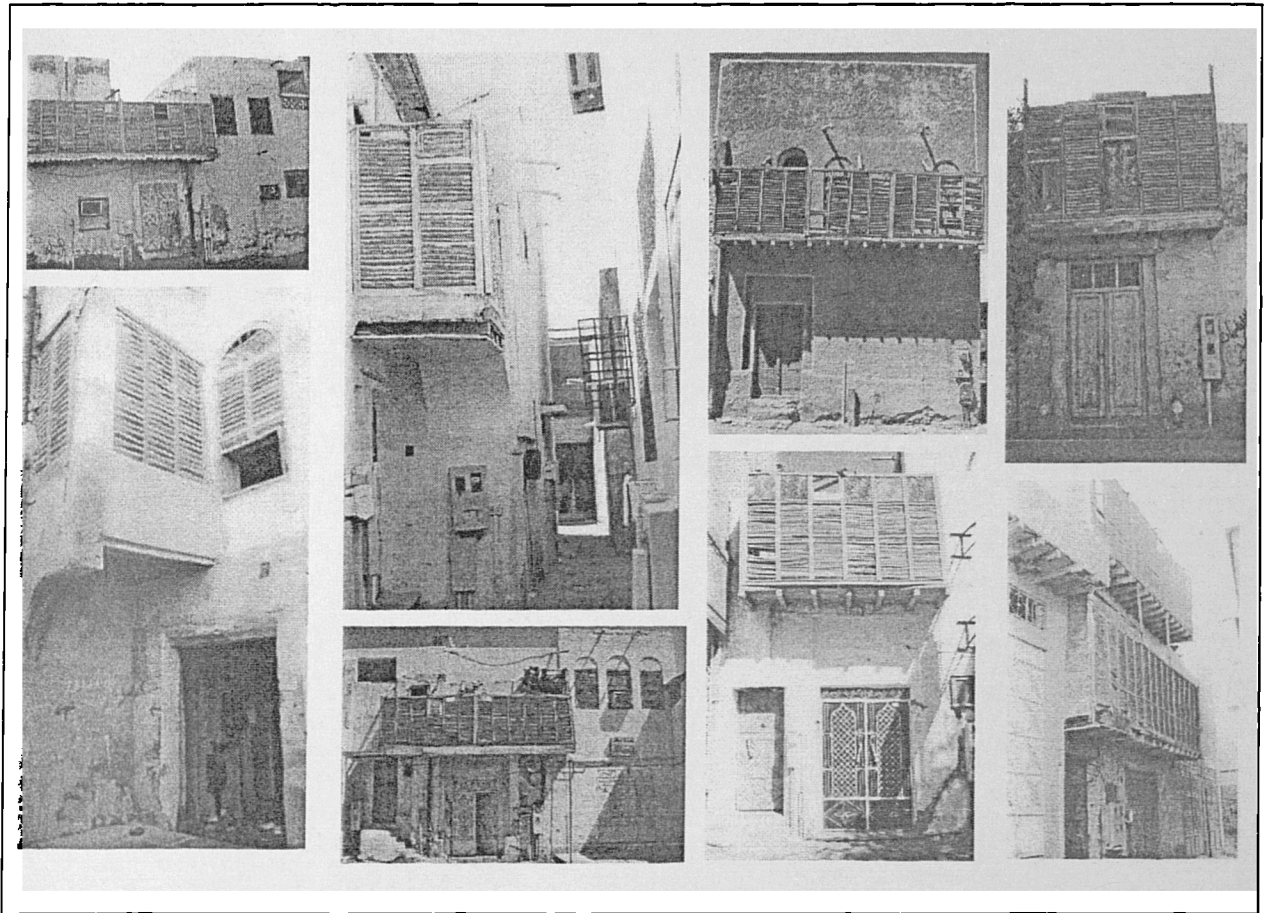


Fig.7.18: External *agasi* linking the *majlis* upstairs with the main *sikka*. Source: Fieldwork.

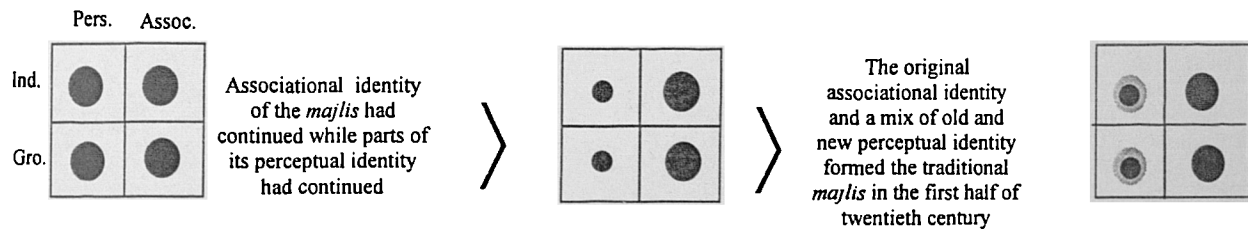


Fig.7.19: Continuity and change of identity of the traditional *majlis* in Hofuf

spatial organisation and its relationship with the rest of the house spaces is totally different from Hofuf. However, it is possible that people in Hofuf took this concept and refined it to make it applicable in Hofuf.

7.3 RITUALS AND CEREMONIES OF INTERNAL DOMESTIC SPACES

In the previous section of this chapter we have tried to discuss the physical characteristics of the traditional house in Hofuf. We found that the people of the traditional community persisted in the symbolic and visual meanings of the male reception spaces. The two most utilitarian parts in the house, the family and animal spaces, continued over a long time with minimal change. Even those symbolic spaces in the family part, the courtyard and main *muraba'a*, continued in their function without much alteration. We can say that the family part was the most unchanging part in the house because it was associated with the family's daily routine and way of living which continued without major changes until the discovery and export of oil in 1938. As we said, the size of every part in the house became smaller due to the need for spaces to accommodate the increasing number of families who wanted to stay in their own *fereej*.

It is quite important now to understand the symbolic meanings that were associated with the use of internal domestic spaces in the traditional house in Hofuf. We shall concentrate firstly on the male reception spaces and family spaces. We shall talk briefly about the animal spaces but they are not within the main area of concern of the study, which is looking at continuity and change of identity in Hofuf's home environment. As a matter of fact, we have already described the animal spaces and linked them with the other spaces in the house.

7.3.1 RITUALS AND CEREMONIES IN THE MALE RECEPTION SPACES

People in Hofuf say '*almajlis wajihat errajal*', which means that the guest space is the face of man. This reflects the attitude of people towards their house in general and the space used for the male guests in particular. The *majlis* in Hofuf developed to say to guests, either members of the *fereej* community or strangers, 'Welcome. My house is yours'. This is not to say that guests will not respect the house as private property, but because men gathering is one of the common traditions in old Hofuf. The *majlis* had developed to fulfil this need (Fig.7.20).

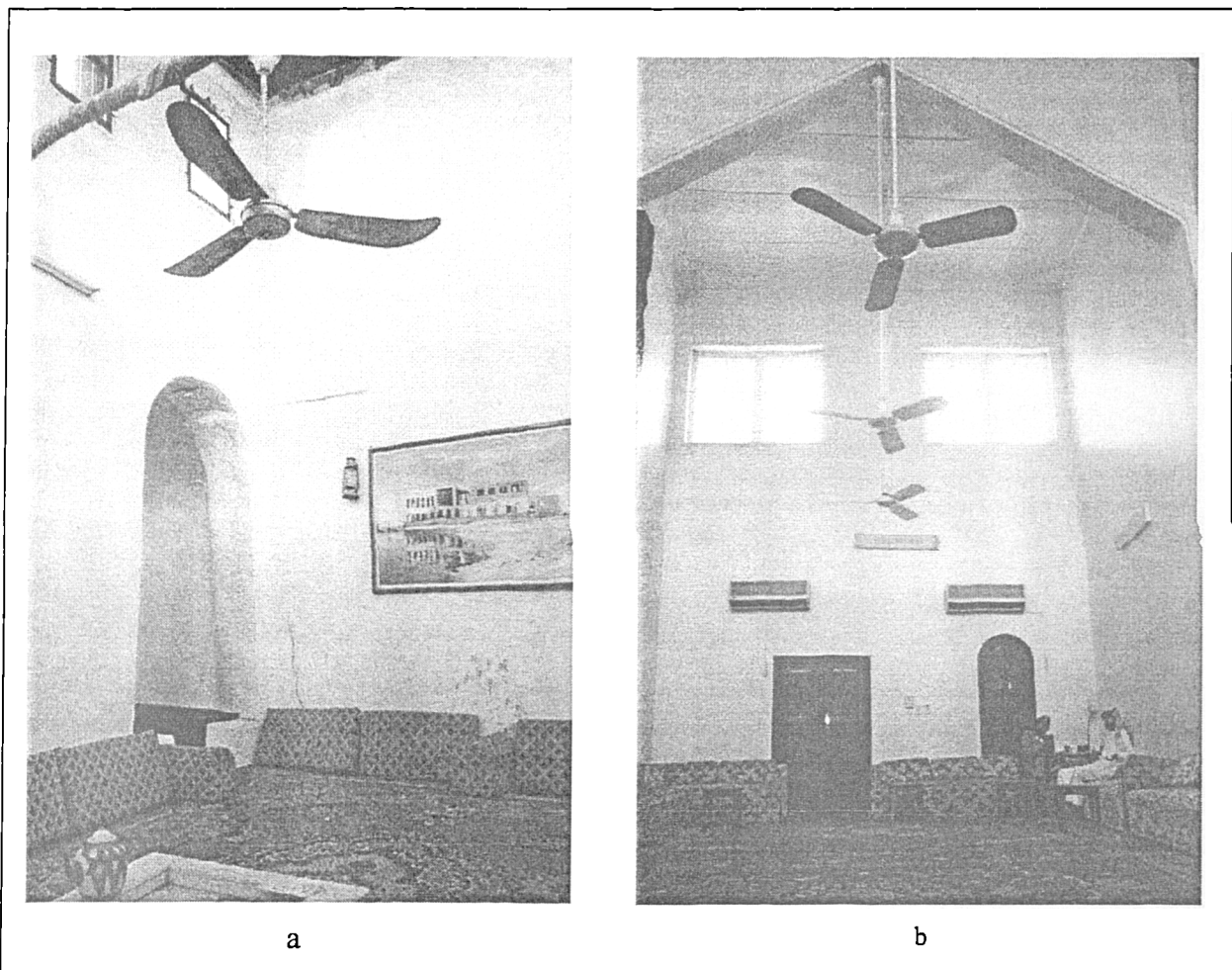


Fig.7.20: Furniture of the traditional *majlis*. a) *Majlis* furnished by oriental carpet and cushions. b) Two-storey *majlis* hall furnished with local seats made of wood and covered by cotton and cloths (this *majlis* has been renewed and all the traditional upstairs windows replaced by aluminium windows to allow the owner to use air-conditioning).²⁶ Source: Fieldwork.

The *majlis* hall was divided into three zones. Each zone had a different meaning and was used in specific way. The first zone was called '*sadr al-majlis*' which means the front of the *majlis*. It occupied the front wall which faced the entrance of the *majlis* hall and took up a third of the other two side walls. This part usually contained the coffee place called *wijaq* or *wijar*. Furnishings in this part included mattresses, cushions and oriental carpets. The middle zone was called '*wasat al-majlis*' which means the middle of the *majlis*. This zone had furniture mostly made locally, carpets made of bamboo called *madda* (plural *mdada*) and a wooden box covered

²⁶ Although furnishing the *majlis* with sofas and chairs is considered an external western idea, people in Hofuf introduced seats in their *majlises* in the second half of this century. At the beginning seats were produced locally then they were imported from different places. The layout of furniture followed the traditional way.

with cloth called *takkaya*. The entry zone, which was usually furnished with wool carpets, was called *taraf al-majlis* (Fig.7.21).²⁷

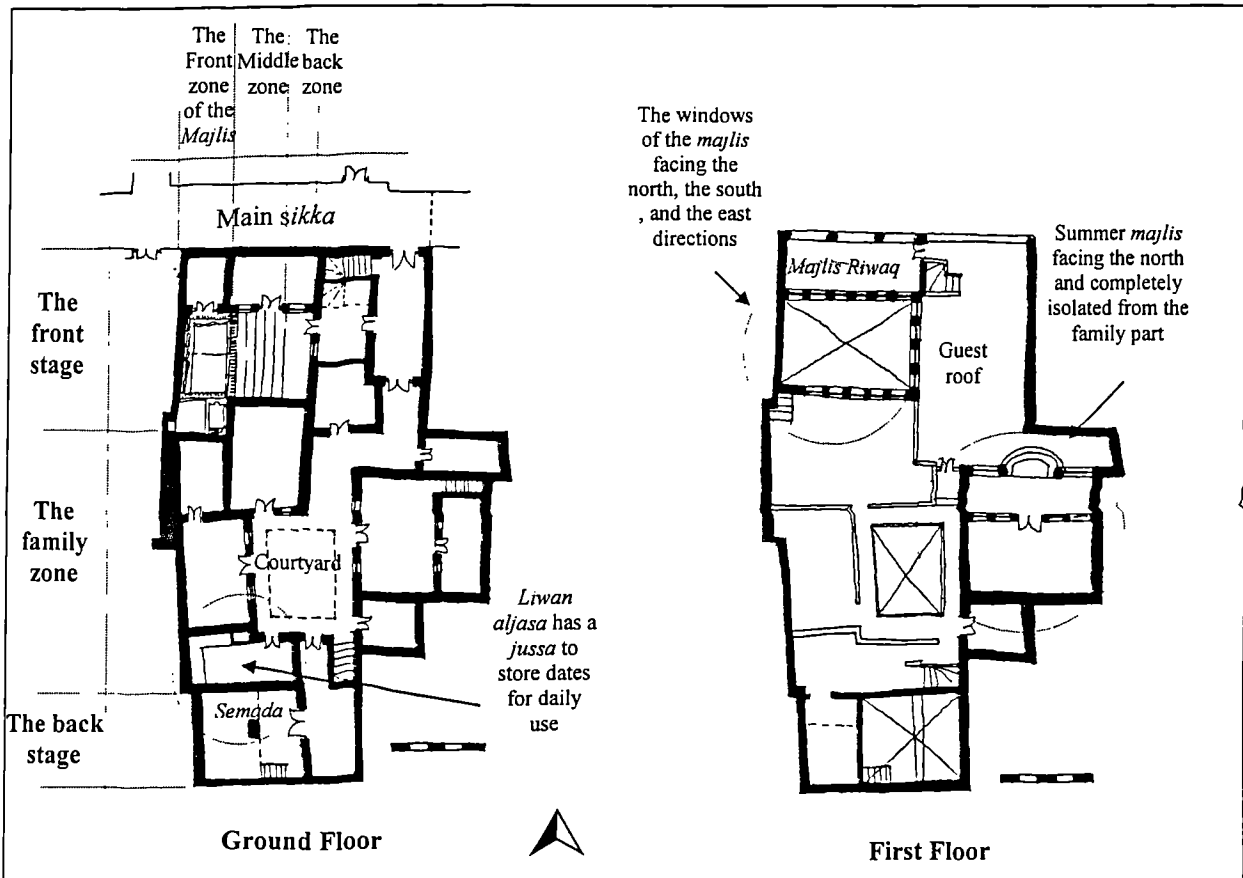


Fig.7.21: A house in *Anna' athil* has a two-storey *majlis* hall. Source: Fieldwork.

The use of each zone depended on the meaning associated with that zone. The front zone was used by important and older guests and the middle zone was used by less important and younger guests. It was a shameful thing for any young guest to sit in the front zone while older guest sat in the middle. Usually nobody use the entry zone except if the *majlis* was crowded. Visiting strangers always sat in the front even if there was an older guest sitting in the middle.

The classification of the *majlis* hall, then, has a deep social meaning which was developed over time to identify the status of guests inside the *majlis*. People in Hofuf considered this an important convention and tried to express it through furniture.²⁸ Another physical and social

²⁷ The classification of the *majlis* hall into three zones is found in both poor and rich houses. In the houses of the well-to-do families, furniture and furnishings may change because of the ability of the household to furnish the whole *majlis* hall with mattresses, cushions, and oriental carpets. The classification of the *majlis* hall existed even if it was not indicated by the furniture.

²⁸ Oliver (1975), for example, indicates that 'Among the most important of the elements that determine sitting in shelter are those related to subsistence, and this in turn provides a reason for venerating the location itself.' (p.13).

space was associated with this convention. This was the coffee place or chamber of the coffee.²⁹ In most cases the *wijaq* (coffee place) was located in the front zone because in Hofuf the owner of the house should prepare the coffee in front of his guests at the same time as he remained with them talked to them (Fig.7.22).³⁰

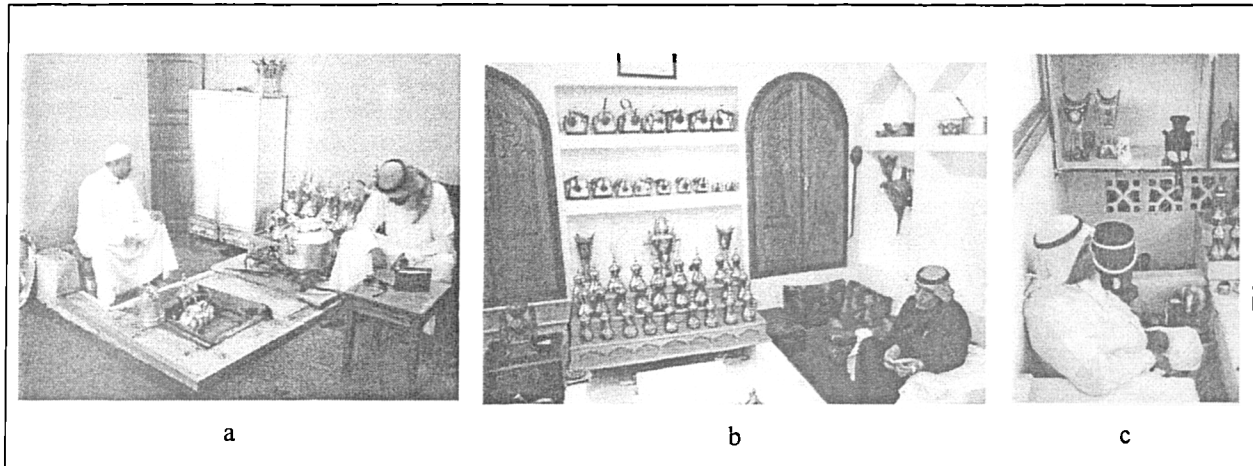


Fig.7.22: The owner of the house prepares and presents the coffee for his guests. a) photograph in a traditional house in *Anna'athil*. b) photograph in a new villa in *Almazrou'* neighbourhood (the owner reproduced the traditional *majlis* in his new villa, see chapter 9). c) Photograph in a *majlis* in a small garden inside Hofuf. Source: Fieldwork.

In traditional Hofuf there were two conventions working together to create the form of the front zone in the traditional *majlis*. The guest status was identified through dividing the *majlis* into three zones and furnishing these zones with different furniture, to emphasise front zone, the place where the household and the important guests sat. This was coupled with the obligation for the householder to prepare coffee in front of his guests and present it to them. It was decorated to become a background for the *majlis* hall (Fig.7.23).

The coffee place in this case developed from a utilitarian place to a place conveying social meaning, either as an element used to express hospitality or as a perceptual element employed by people to reflect the family status by using it as a decorative background in the front zone in the *majlis* hall. It is clear here that the importance of coffee place stemmed firstly from its use, and secondly from its location. Its use was associated with hospitality, which conveyed social meaning, while its location meant it was the first scene that guests saw when they entered the

²⁹ Ritual of preparing and serving coffee is one of the most important custom that indicating hospitality in traditional Hofuf. Tayeb, F. A (1983) *An Ethnographic Study of Al-Hasa Region of Eastern Saudi Arabia*, Jeddah, Tihama, p. 38.

³⁰ Wealthy people had servants to prepare coffee for their guests; however, most people prefer to prepare the coffee by themselves because this indicates their welcoming of the guests.

majlis hall. It was used as a vehicle to convey the family's associational and perceptual identities.

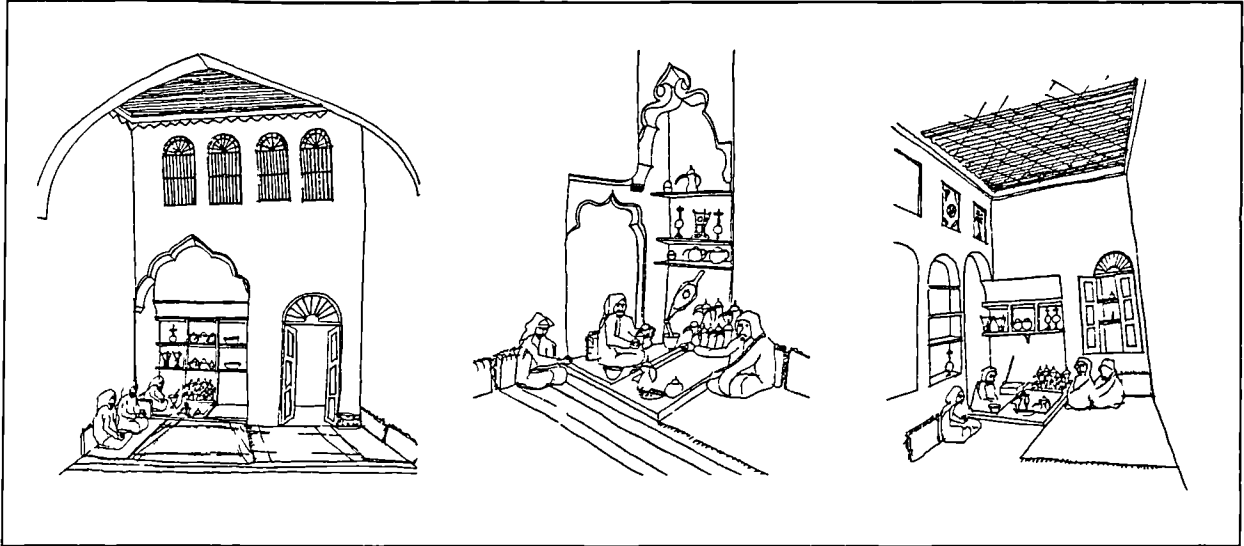


Fig.7.23: The *wijaq* (coffee place), always located in the front zone in the *majlis* hall. Usually each *wijaq* had a different design. Source: Fieldwork.

Generally, we can say that common rules were used in the construction and decoration of the coffee place in Hofuf. Usually this place was located in the left corner of the front zone in the *majlis* hall, while guests sat in the right-hand corner and around the coffee place. The coffee place consisted of two zones, the *wijaq* or *wijar* (fire place) and coffee maker's sitting zone. The name *wijaq* was not limited just to the fire place, but was also used of the entire coffee place. These two zones formed two rectangles, and in some houses the coffee place consisted of three rectangular zones, two for sitting and one as fire place (Fig.7.24).

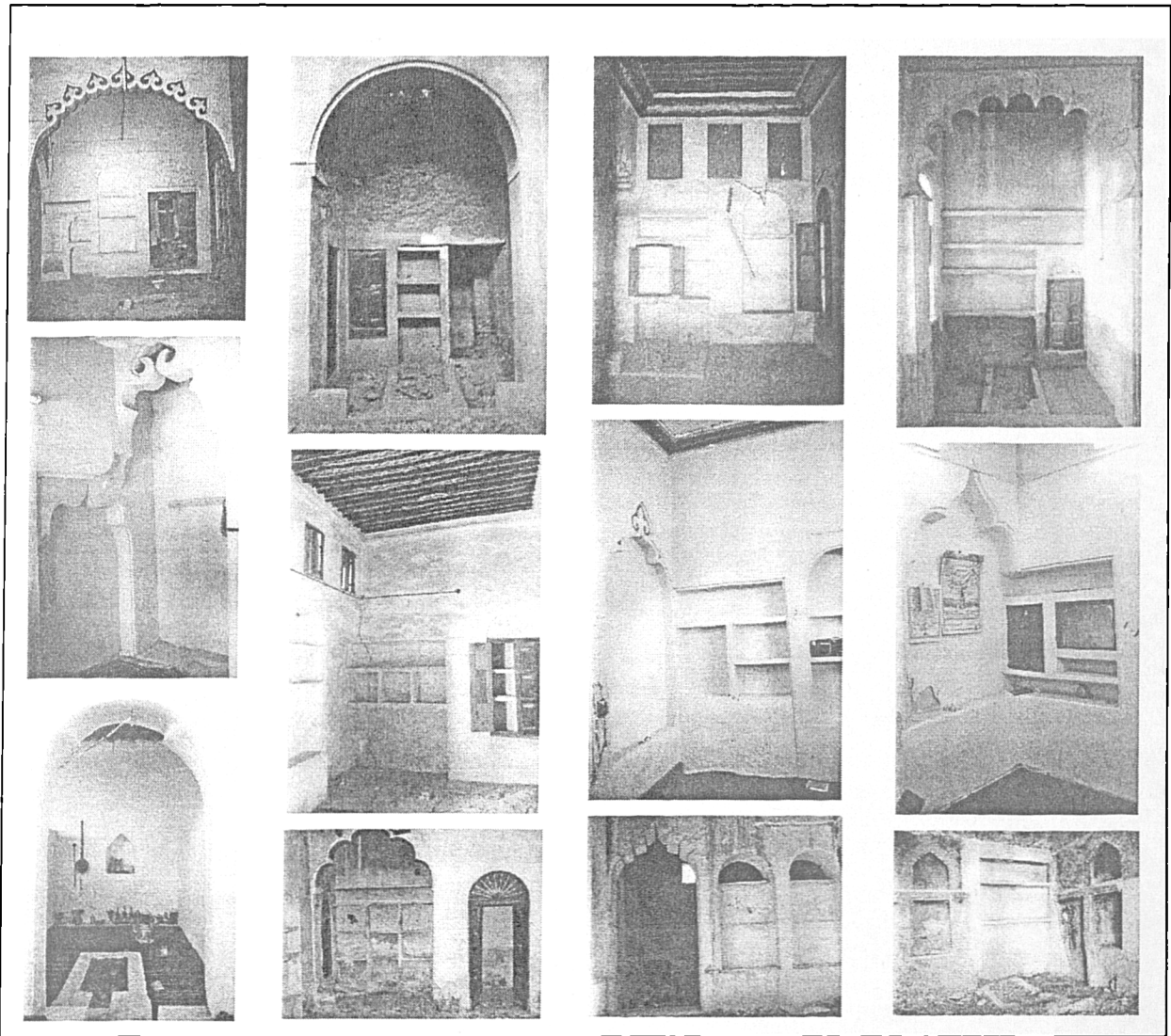


Fig.7.24: The coffee place worked as an element to reflect both the hospitality and family status by using it as decorative element in the front zone in the *majlis* hall. It was rarely that two *wijaqs* have the same perceptual characteristics. Source: Fieldwork.

The rectangle of the fire place consisted of a fire hole and a flat area used for the coffee pots. Towards the wall a stepped wooden table named *maiz* was used to exhibit the coffee pots (Fig.7.25). The sitting rectangle or rectangles occupied the left corner or the two sides of the fire place. Usually they were furnished with small mattresses and cushions and sometimes a small chair was used to help the person who prepared the coffee to serve it for the guests from his place, especially since in most cases the householder served the coffee for the guests. The front

wall of all rectangles consist of shelves and small cabinets to store coffee and to exhibit everyday objects.³¹ The whole composition was called *kamar*.

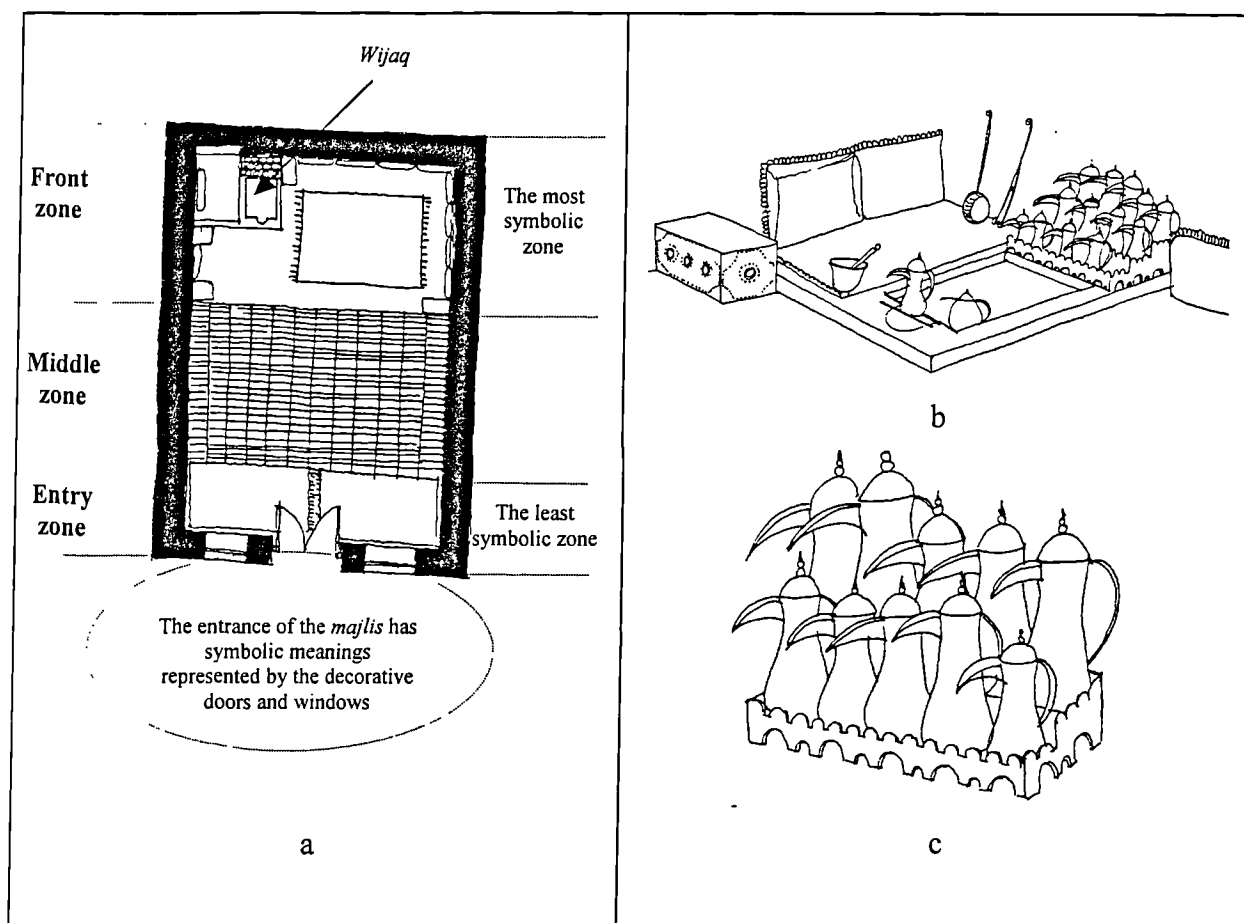


Fig.7.25: a) A typical *majlis* hall in the traditional house of Hofuf. b) *Wijaq* consists of two rectangular zones. c) The wooden *maiz* which was used to exhibit the coffee pots. Source: Fieldwork.

The coffee place in traditional Hofuf, as we noticed, consisted of a number of elements found in every *wijaq*. Through its shared form, the coffee place became one of the important symbolic elements in the *majlis*. It was used by people to convey the collective identity. Individual (family) differences also were expressed through the ornamentation and small details of the shelves behind the fire and coffee maker's places. Every fire place in every house had its own visual identity. It was difficult to find two identical coffee places.³²

The desire to express individual (family) identity was not only found in the visual composition of the coffee place, but also in the exhibition of the coffee pots in the *maiz*. The *maiz* consisted of

³¹ People only exhibit the objects which were used in the *majlis* such as, frankincense pot, perfume pot, etc.

³² The researcher carried out a visual comparison between the available coffee places in the existing traditional houses in Hofuf to derive the similarities and differences of the coffee place. He found that the components of the fire place were similar in every house but with different design and visual characteristics.

one, two, three, or four steps. The high number of steps means that large number of coffee pots would be exhibited. People in the traditional home environment in Hofuf competed with each other in the exhibiting of coffee pots in the *majlis* hall especially as the coffee place was the most important zone in the guest hall.

The coffee pot is called *dalah* (plural *dlal*). This name is used everywhere in Arabia.³³ People prefer to keep their *dlal* looking very shiny and use only a few pots to serve their guests. Therefore those pots which are used every day are usually kept in the flat surface in the fireplace. It is worth mentioning here that there were different types of coffee pots in the traditional Home environment in Hofuf.³⁴ Each type had a different use and meaning and was distinguished by its form (Fig.7.26).³⁵

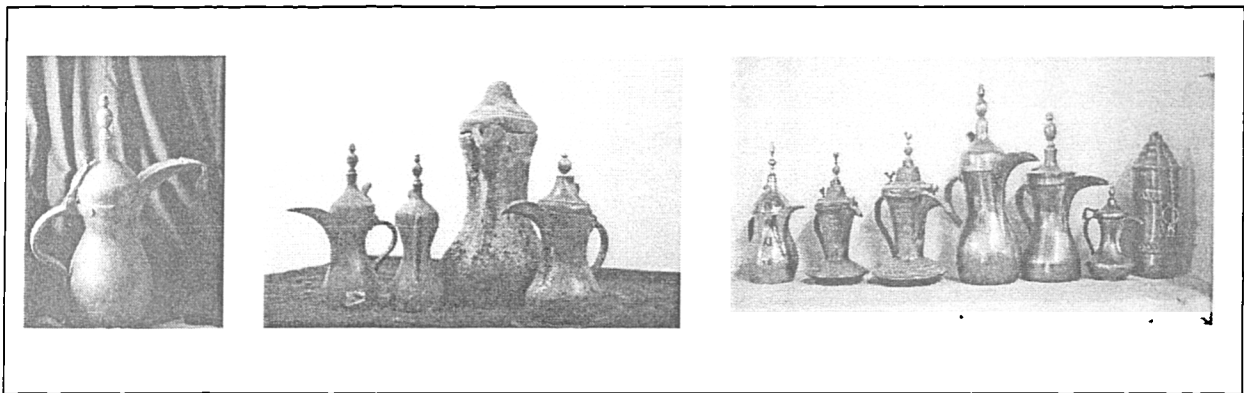


Fig.7.26: Different types of *dallas* (Unitary form with different sizes and shapes). Source: Fieldwork (Private collection and Al-Hasa Musuem).

Usually the opened *majlises* received both guests from the same *fereej* and strangers. The householder stayed in his *majlis* all day with his guests except between *Dhurer* (midday) and *Asr* (afternoon) prayers, which was considered resting time. This was applied only when the guests

³³ Al-Baker, M. M. (1995) *Alqahwa Alarabiyah fi Almowrooth Alsha'bee (Arabic Coffee in Folklore)*, Beirut, Lebanon, Besan.

³⁴ Al-Hasa in general and Hofuf in particular were known by their coffee pot makers called *dalat alhasawy*. Different types of coffee pots were also imported from surrounding areas such as *dalat raslan* and *dalat assalhanityyah* from Damascus. *Ibid.*, p.117-19. The researcher conducted several interviews in January 1997 with a man interested in the culture of Al-Hasa who has his own private collections of most of the everyday objects in the traditional home environment. His name is Saleh Al-Zufar. He said 'Every craftsmen has his own logo and people in Al-Hasa know the craftsman from his logo on the coffee pots'. Also, Cheesman (1926) described the coffee pot makers in Hofuf when he passed through a street in *Al-Kut* quarter with small coppersmiths' shops. He said 'From daylight to dark, Sundays, Fridays, every day, the metallic ring of their hammers is heard as they bend and beat the copper into coffee-pots with long bird-like beaks.' Cheesman, O. B. E. (1926), *Op. Cit.* p. 73.

³⁵ Four types of coffee pot were common in Hofuf. The first type was called *dalat al-ligma*, which was used to cook the coffee. The second type was *dalat al-mazel*, which was used to present the coffee to guests. The third type was called *dalat al-khamra*, which was used for collecting the remains of coffee. Fourth type was called *dalat al-misfah*, which was used to filter the collected remaining coffee in *dalat al-khamra*. These different types of coffee pot created the visual composition in the stepped table. The large pots, *dalat al-ligma*, *dalat al-khamra*, and *dalat al-misfah*, were exhibited on the higher back steps while the small pots, *dalat al-mazel*, were seen in the lower front steps. Therefore, all pots could be seen by guests. What is clear here is that the desire by people to let visitors see and even count coffee pots was connected with the social meaning associated with the number of pots, which represented wealth and social status.

were not strangers. Otherwise the household and relatives stayed with the guest until he took lunch, and then they left him for a rest.

An important tradition deeply influenced the ritual of presenting coffee in Hofuf. That was that guests drank only the coffee which was prepared in front of them.³⁶ This convention was coupled with classifying the *majlis* into three zones to create striking rituals and a striking visual quality in the male reception spaces in the traditional home environment in Hofuf. The taxonomy of coffeepots was also connected with the whole spiritual atmosphere of the guest hall in general and the ritual of presenting the coffee to the guests in particular. The fire place was always ready to cook fresh coffee all through the day, because the fire only burned out at night.³⁷

Serving the coffee to the guests also had its rituals. If there were few guests, usually they sat around the coffee place in the front zone. In this case the house owner prepared the coffee and served it to his guests. However, if there were many guests, they were distributed in the front and middle zones and if, there was a crowd, in the entry zone. In this case, the houseowner prepared the coffee and, if he had no servants, his son or one of his youngest close relatives served the coffee. He had stand up and to remain standing until all guests finished their coffee (Fig.7.27). In both cases the coffee was presented with dates and the server held the coffeepot in his left hand and two or three *fanajee*³⁸ (small cups) in his right hand. The server should start from the right side, but sometimes a conflict arose about which guest should be served first. Some people preferred to start the coffee serving with the oldest guests or strangers even if they were not sitting on the extreme right. When a guest finish his first serving, he could ask for

³⁶ The interpretation of this tradition may stem from what Siham Abdulla mentioned, that Arabs in the past loved coffee and when they drank it they were able to distinguish its components and its preparation time. Abdulla, S. (1994) 'Arabic Coffee: Conventions and traditions', *Al-Mathorat Al-Sh'abiyah*, Qatar, Vol. 9, No. 35, pp. 7-20 (Arabic). This fact, however, may have created sensitivity for people and forced them in the beginning to prepare the coffee in front of their guests because they did not want anybody to criticise their coffee so that, over time, it became a convention known and respected by every member of society. Another interpretation for this tradition is that people in Hofuf usually brought their preferred coffee with them when they visit each other which meant that the house owner had to prepare the coffee in front of the guest to show that he was using the guest's coffee. This may have developed over time to become a social convention. This convention, in addition to its role in creating the social and architectural characteristics of the traditional *majlis* in Hofuf, has an economic dimension. Al-Naim, M. (1997) 'The Symbolic Function of the Arabic Coffee in Al-Hasa Region', *Al-Qafilah*, Vol. 46, No. 1, pp. 11-16 (Arabic). People in Hofuf, differentiate between *al-qahwa al-safyah*, which is the pure coffee which is prepared in front of the guests, and *al-qahwa al-khamra*, which is the remains of the pure coffee collected in the end of each day for re-use by the family members.

³⁷ Common steps were followed in preparing coffee in Hofuf. The houseowner usually placed *al-marachi* (two steel bars) over the hall fire to hold the *dalat al-ligma* to boil water. In themeantime he positioned *al-mihmas* (a steel dish with long hand) to roast the coffee, then he put the roasted coffee in the *assarood* (container made from palm trees leaves) for cooling, and then he ground the coffee by *al-havan* or *arraha*. Finally, he cooked the coffee in boiled water, then he filled *dalat al-mazel* with pure coffee and usually added cardamom or some spices to the coffee.

³⁸ Singular *finjal*.

another one and indeed usually he could ask for three cups. Then he would shake the cup in his hand to inform the server that he had finished.³⁹

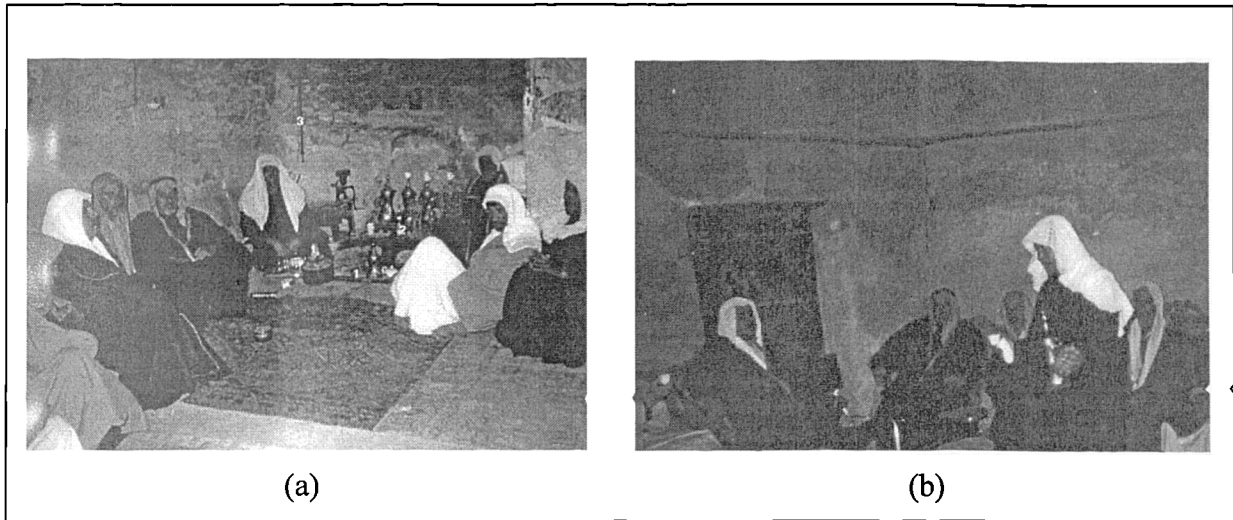


Fig.7.27: Coffee rituals in traditional Hofuf. (a) Guests around the coffee place served by the owner of the house. (b) owner of the house serving the coffee to his guests. Source: Al-Akkad, A. A. (1974) Socio-Economic Impact of Development Schemes on a Rural Community, Al Umrans Al-Shimaliyah, Al-Hasa Oasis, Saudi Arabia, Unpublished M.Sc., Bangor, University of North Wales, p. 119.

This process was carried out many times every day and it became part of the meaning of the *majlis* in people's minds in the traditional home environment. Coffee smells, the sound of grinding with its continuous rhythm, the names of coffee pots, the ways of presenting coffee to guests, and the whole visual composition increased a sense of place and allowed the family to express its status and communicate with the whole of society. This atmosphere emphasised the collective identity of traditional Hofuf by informing strangers about their own ways of saying 'welcome'.

³⁹ In traditional Hofuf people said '*illy yshrab akthar men thalatha mahop rajal*' which means that any one who drank more than three cups of coffee was not a man. Personal interview with Abdulrahim Al-Said Al-Hashim (January 1997). This tradition is common in the whole of Arabia, see Abdulla, S. (1994); Al-Baker, M. M. (1995), Op. Cit., p. 151.

7.3.2 RITUALS AND CEREMONIES IN THE FAMILY SPACES

In the previous chapter we discussed daily family life in the traditional community. We found that the people of traditional Hofuf lived as extended families. Each extended family lived in one house or adjoining houses. It is our concern in the following discussion to understand how the extended family behaved inside the house.

As we said, the family spaces in the traditional house were protected socially and physically. In the social sense, the family part was forbidden any male strangers. While in the physical sense, the family part was separated from the outside world by the two zones of the entranceway which fulfilled the need to isolate family spaces from the men's sight. Also, it remained away from any major spatial change due to the existence of the two transitional zones, the entrance and the internal *sabat*, which maintained its physical identity for a long time.

Still, we need to understand how the nuclear families managed to live together in one house. To start with, we need to differentiate between two sets of spaces in the family part: open and closed spaces, symbolic and utilitarian spaces. The family part always had a central courtyard surrounded by rooms (Fig.7.28). The open space, the courtyard, in this case was considered the most symbolic space in the family part. It was also the central activity space for the family. It linked the two transitional spaces in the house, entrance and internal *sabat*, and formed a third transitional space. These three transitional spaces formed the main circulation network in the ground floor of the traditional house (Fig.7.29).

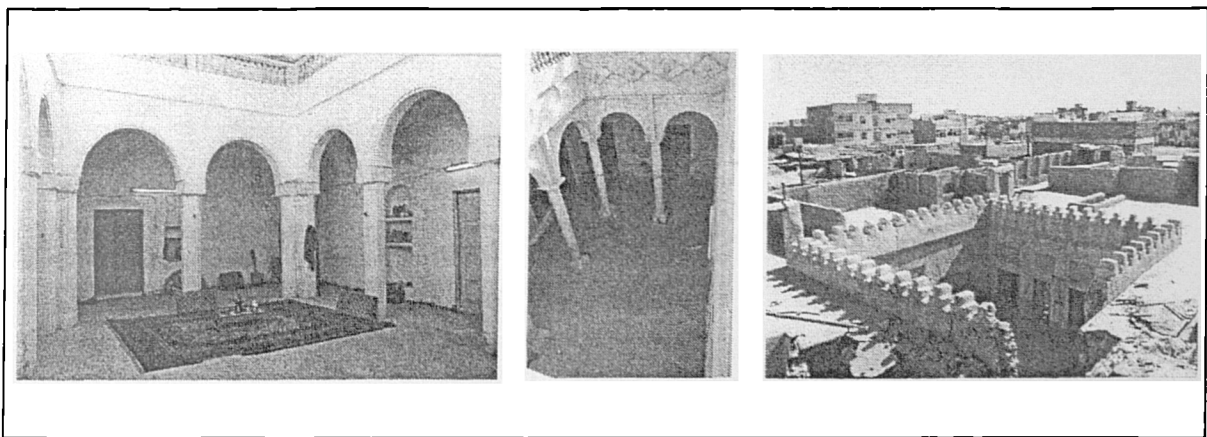


Fig.7.28: The courtyard. It was considered the most important space in the family part. Usually it was found in the centre of the house and all the spaces in the house were linked with it. Source: Fieldwork

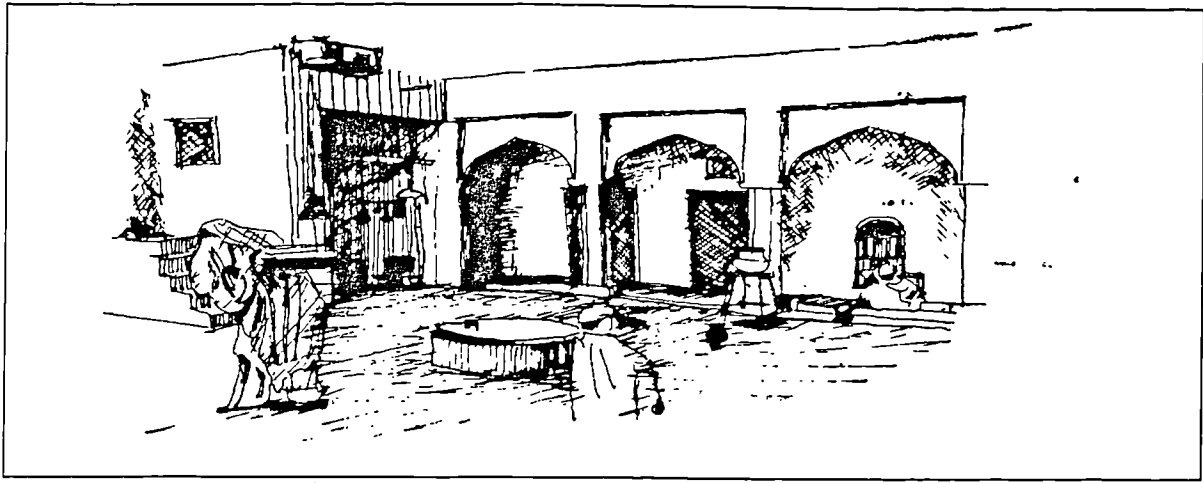


Fig.7.29: The courtyard was the centre for family activities as well as a place where women could entertain their visitors. Source: Fieldwork (reconstructed from several images and interviews).

A covered area with an arcade found in the courtyard, called *riwaq*, existed in many houses. It was usually used for sitting on a summer afternoon as well providing shade for the main *muraba'as*. In some houses the *riwaq* occupied the four sides of the courtyard. At the top of the *riwaq* was another circulation element called the *agasi*. This is not to say that the *agasi* did not exist in the absence of a *riwaq*, but usually the roof of the *riwaq* was used as *agasi*. This *agasi* is different from the external *agasi* which formed, with the *majlis masbah*, one of the house facades of the traditional house. However, both of them had the same form though one was inside and the other outside. The internal *agasi* functioned as a gallery around the courtyard and linked all the spaces upstairs. The external *agasi* was used as an extension of the semi-open spaces of the upstairs male reception spaces (Fig.7.30).

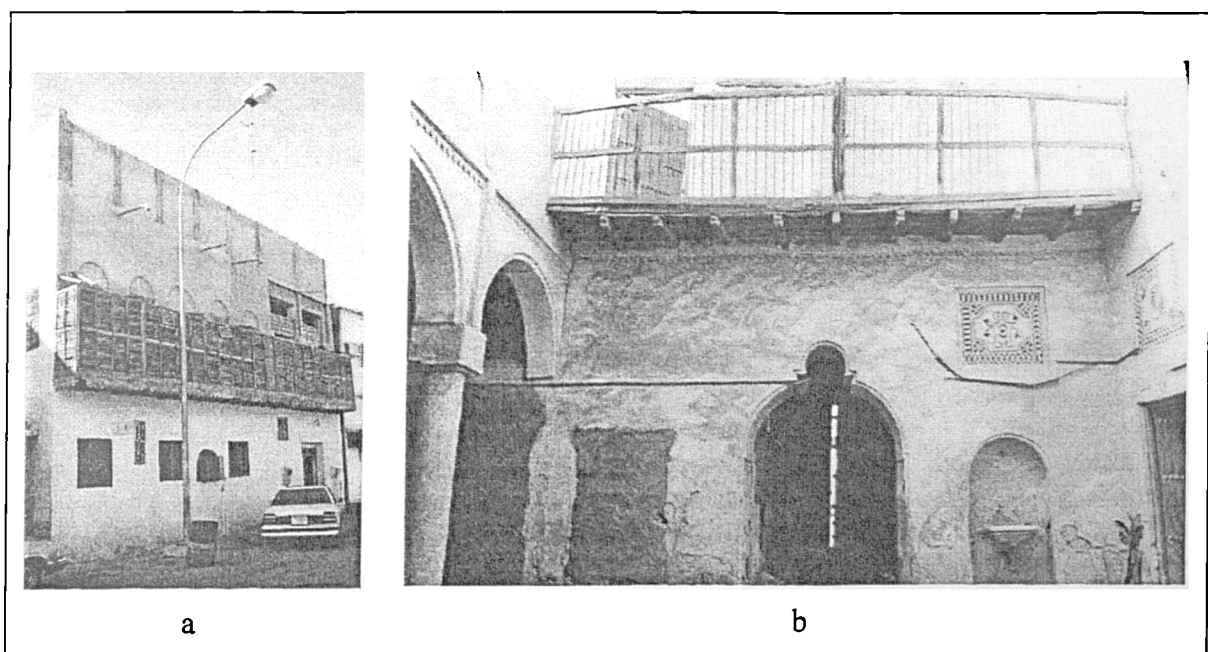


Fig.7.30: The *agasi*. a) External *agasi* associated with the male reception spaces upstairs. b) Internal *agasi* looking over the courtyard. Source: Fieldwork.

The *muraba'as* and *liwans* opened, directly or through the *riwaq*, to the courtyard. As has been mentioned earlier, *muraba'a* had an important function as a living room where the women in the house retreated with their visitors and relatives. The *liwan* was a utilitarian room and was never decorated even if it was used by family. For example there was a room in the traditional house called '*illiwan ashshamaly*', the northern *liwan*, which usually was a central activity place for the family in the winter. This room contained a *wijaq* (fire place) but had no decoration. The fire place was found in its utilitarian form. The *maiz* and coffee pots were not found in this room. Moreover, the word *liwan* is always associated with the utilitarian rooms in the house. For example, there was a room in the house to store the foodstuff called by people '*liwan aljasa*'.⁴⁰

As we said, it was common in the traditional home environment to find several families living in the same dwelling. What is really important in this study is the capacity of the primary relationship to shape the family values and customs. Through this relationship several customs were developed and transmitted over a long period of time. When the extended family interacts with other families it acts as one member. It interacts cohesively in different social contexts. Individual identity almost does not exist and is replaced by family identity.⁴¹ For example, in *Anna'athil* quarter, two brothers with their wives and children lived together in the same dwelling until 1975 when the youngest brother bought a house and moved.⁴² A separate room was allocated to each brother. Both families shared the courtyard, the *majlis*, the kitchen, the bathrooms, and the animal court (Fig.7.31).

To understand how the family spaces were used it is necessary to analyse how these two families behaved and used the spaces in the house. Although these two families lived in the same house, a high level of privacy was achieved. The wives of the two brothers always wore veils to cover their faces in the presence of the two brothers.⁴³ In fact the two brothers were generally outside the home or sitting in the *majlis* with their guests. When they stayed in the family part, they mainly kept to their private rooms or the common room (the northern *liwan*).

⁴⁰ Usually *muraba'a* and *liwan* contain a smaller room called *dar* used in the winter for sleeping. This room was also used as storage (if it is in the *liwan*). In many cases the *dar* was used as a parents' bedroom while the main room was used by children. In top of the *dar* another room called *kindiyah* approached either from the *dar* or from the main room by a small staircase.

⁴¹ From the field work the researcher found that all those who were interviewed had lived in a dwelling occupied by more than one nuclear family.

⁴² In some cases there are more than two families living in the same house, but we selected this case because we need to describe the basic daily use of the family domestic spaces in the traditional house.

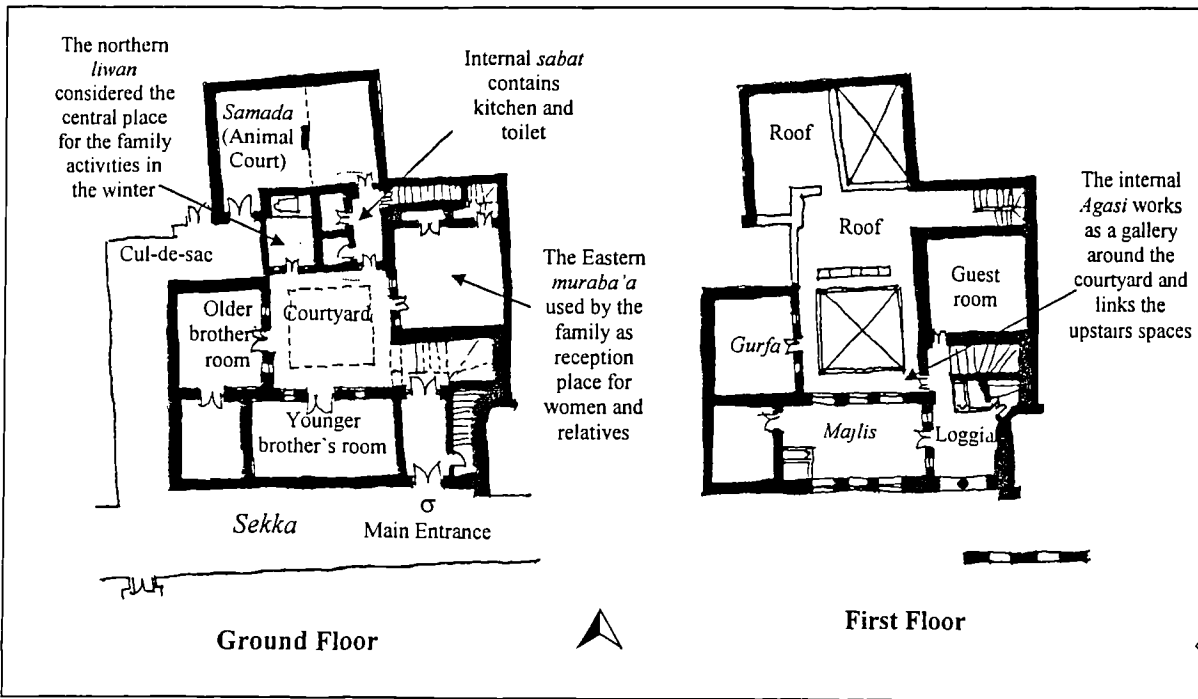


Fig.7.31: A house in *Anna'athil* occupied by two nuclear families. Source: Fieldwork

The whole family gathered together only for food. For example at lunch time, the whole family, including wives and children, gathered around the food mat. This reflects the importance of food rituals in the traditional community. The women were still wearing their veils to cover their faces. The family members arranged themselves around the food mat in such a way as to allow maximum freedom for the women (Fig.7.32). The family by means of this ceremony found it suitable for its lifestyle to sit in such a way to let women enjoy their food and share their family. The arrangement provided maximum visual contact between each man and his wife and at the same time a minimum contact between him and his brother's wife.

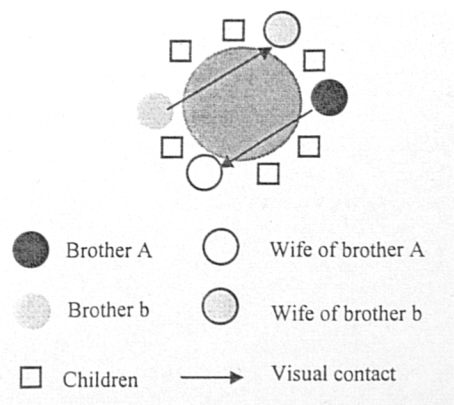


Fig.7.32: Organisation of the two nuclear family members around the food mat. Source: Fieldwork

⁴³ This custom stemmed from a religious principle that women should cover here face in the presence of men. The husband brother is not among *mahrams*.

One of the interesting things about this food arrangement is that a woman always sat on the right side of her brother in law. This allowed her to eat with her right hand and hold her veil with her left. She held her veil in a way that it created a side curtain to prevent the visual contact with her brother in law but to show her face to her husband (Fig.7.33).⁴⁴

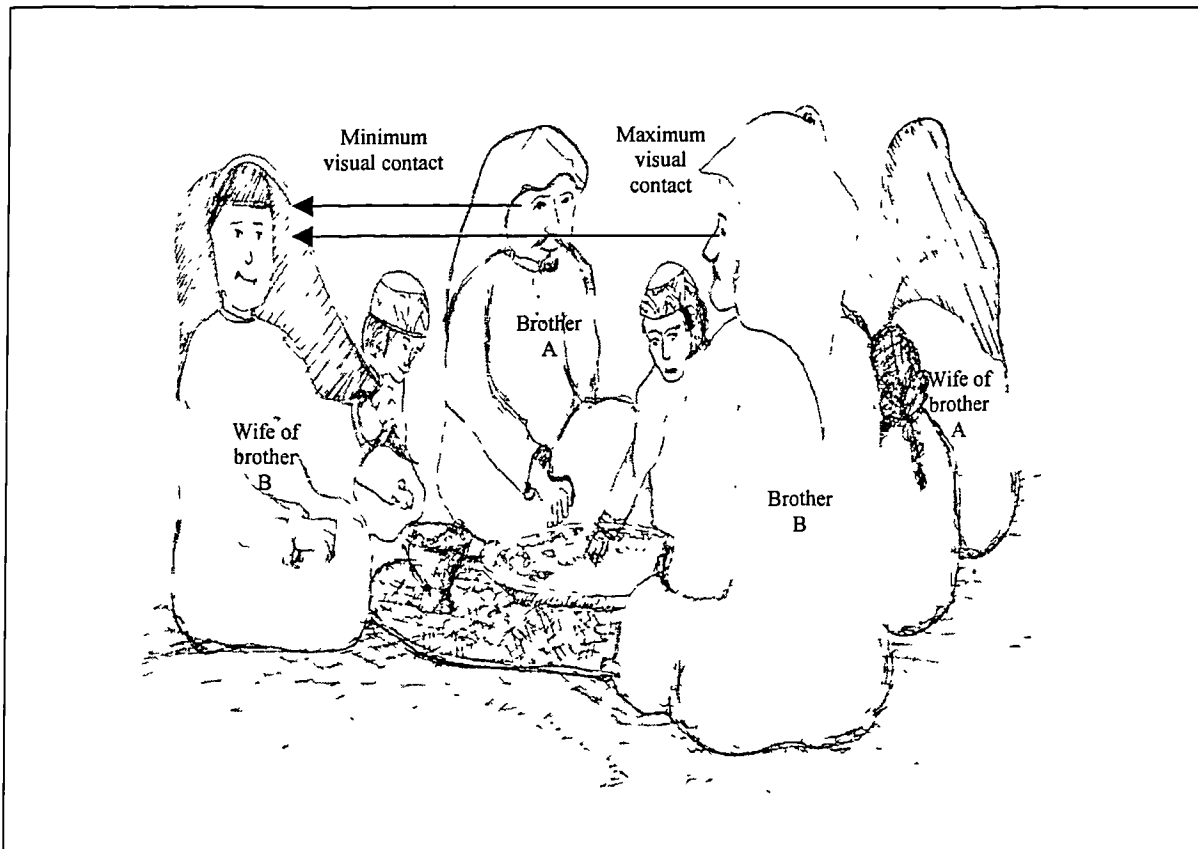


Fig.7.33: Food rituals and arrangement of the extended family in the traditional home. Source: Fieldwork

It is interesting to understand how the family used the roof and other common places in the house. The roof space was divided into three zones, one belonging to each family (Fig.7.34), while the third roof zone was for children. In the summer nights each family transferred to their own roof to sleep and entertain. Full privacy was maintained by a separate staircase and door for each roof. The parents in each family sleep in one roof. The infants slept with their parents while the older children slept on a separate roof. If there were boys and girls usually the girls slept on a separate roof.

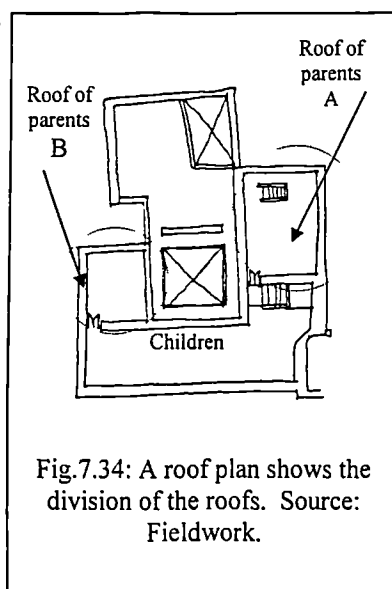


Fig.7.34: A roof plan shows the division of the roofs. Source: Fieldwork.

The kitchen was a common space in the house. It was very simple. People call it *mugad* because it was mainly a place for cooking. It was located usually in the internal *sabat* and sometimes under the family staircase. The kitchen was a small room containing a fire place which consisted of three stones to hold the cooking pot. The woman usually sat on the ground while she cooked (Fig.7.35). In the case under study, the kitchen was very small and was accessible from the internal *sabat*. It was a suitable location for the family firstly because it was separated from the living places by two doors. Secondly, it was close to the common spaces, especially the courtyard and the northern *liwan* where the whole family took their food together.

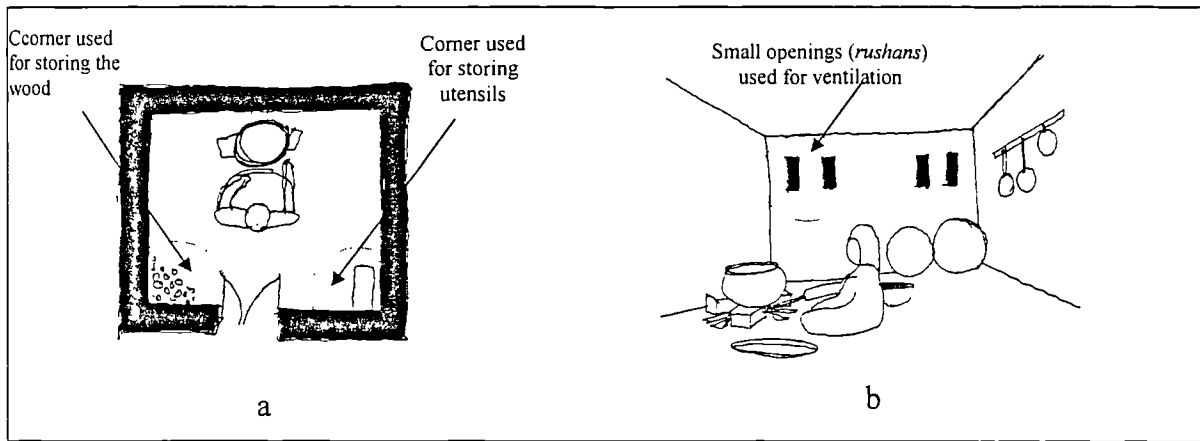


Fig.7.35: a) A typical kitchen in the traditional house. b) A woman sitting in the ground to cook in the kitchen. Source: Fieldwork.

Generally, the people of traditional Hofuf maintained the perceptual and associational meanings that were associated with the family spaces. This was because this part of the house held a constant function and was strongly linked with the family's values and lifestyle. As we noticed, people developed several physical devices to protect the family part from any change that might happen in the rest of the house (Fig.7.36).

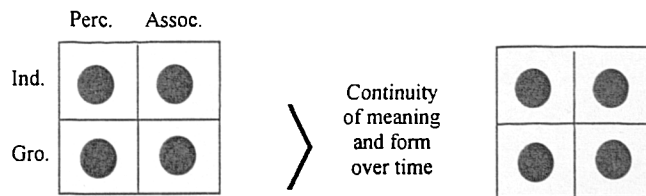


Fig. 7.36: Continuity of meaning and form of the family part in the traditional house

⁴⁴ This ritual and arrangement was found in almost every extended family in the traditional community. The researcher found that this ritual still exists in the contemporary houses.

7.4 DECORATION AND VISUAL SYMBOLS IN THE TRADITIONAL HOUSE

In the previous discussion we tried to analyse the physical and social qualities of the traditional house in Hofuf. We found that there were different levels of meaning that internal spaces conveyed. One of the most important indicators to understand how people expressed the symbolic space in their home environment is the visual form.⁴⁵ In the following discussion, we will try to understand why the people of Hofuf decorated certain spaces in the house while they left other spaces without decoration. It is also very important for this study to elaborate the development of the decorative elements in traditional Hofuf.

7.4.1 THE USE OF DECORATION IN THE TRADITIONAL HOUSE

People in traditional Hofuf used several means to decorate their houses. We have already discussed some examples, especially the gateway, which was a very important visual element used by people to express the family status. The gateway as a decorative element functioned as a linking point between the external and internal domains. It is also worth mentioning that people had ornamented internal spaces that were only seen and used by visitors. The location of the decoration also was very important. For example, in the *majlis* hall, as we said, the decoration was concentrated on the front zone. The ceilings of the *majlis* hall, main *muraba'a*, and courtyard *riwaq* were usually decorated in vivid colours to impress visitors (Fig.7.37).

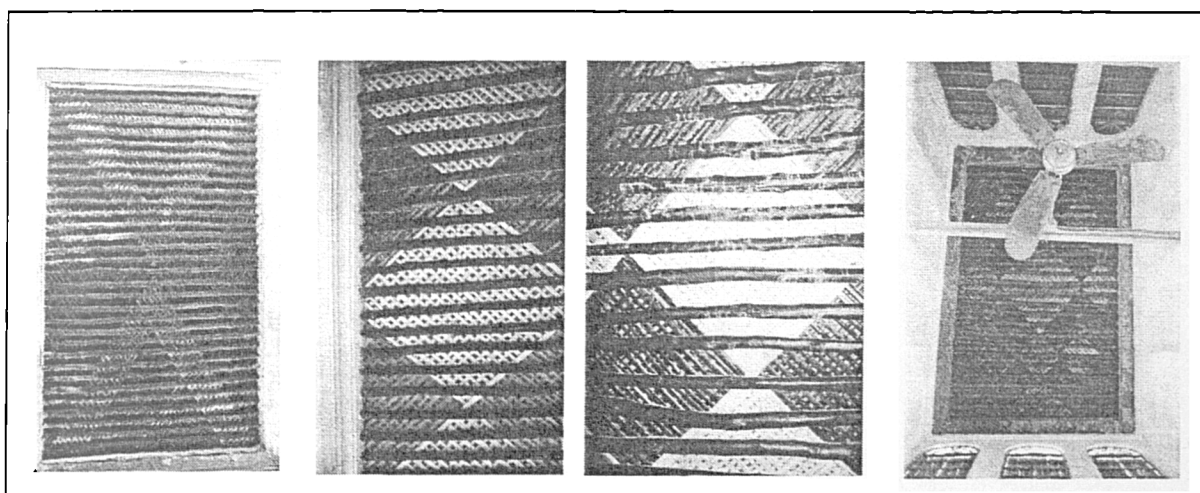


Fig.7.37: The mangrove pole ceiling of the *majlis* hall, main *muraba'a*, and courtyard *riwaq* always decorated and painted in vivid colours (red, yellow, and orange). Source: Fieldwork.

⁴⁵ Oliver, for example, indicates that visual forms usually embody deep and social meanings. He states: 'In graphic symbolism literal images may have profound associations, the attributes of the device being deeply associated with its visual form. By this means, complex philosophical ideas, or the limitless qualities of deity, may be interpreted in visual form, layers of meaning being unfolded as the enlightened teach.' Oliver, P. (1975), Op. Cit., p. 16.

As a general principle, the more exposed a location in the symbolic space, the more it had potential to be filled by ornamentation. There was another principle associated with the location of the ornamentation inside the room: the closer the ornamentation was to the visitor's eyes, the more it became refined and neat. Less refined ornamentation was usually found in the distant positions in the room. The ornamentation in traditional Hofuf had basic rules. Certain materials and techniques were used in almost all decoration.⁴⁶ Still, there were no two identical ornamentations. The concept of diversity within unity is seen clearly from the different designs and compositions.

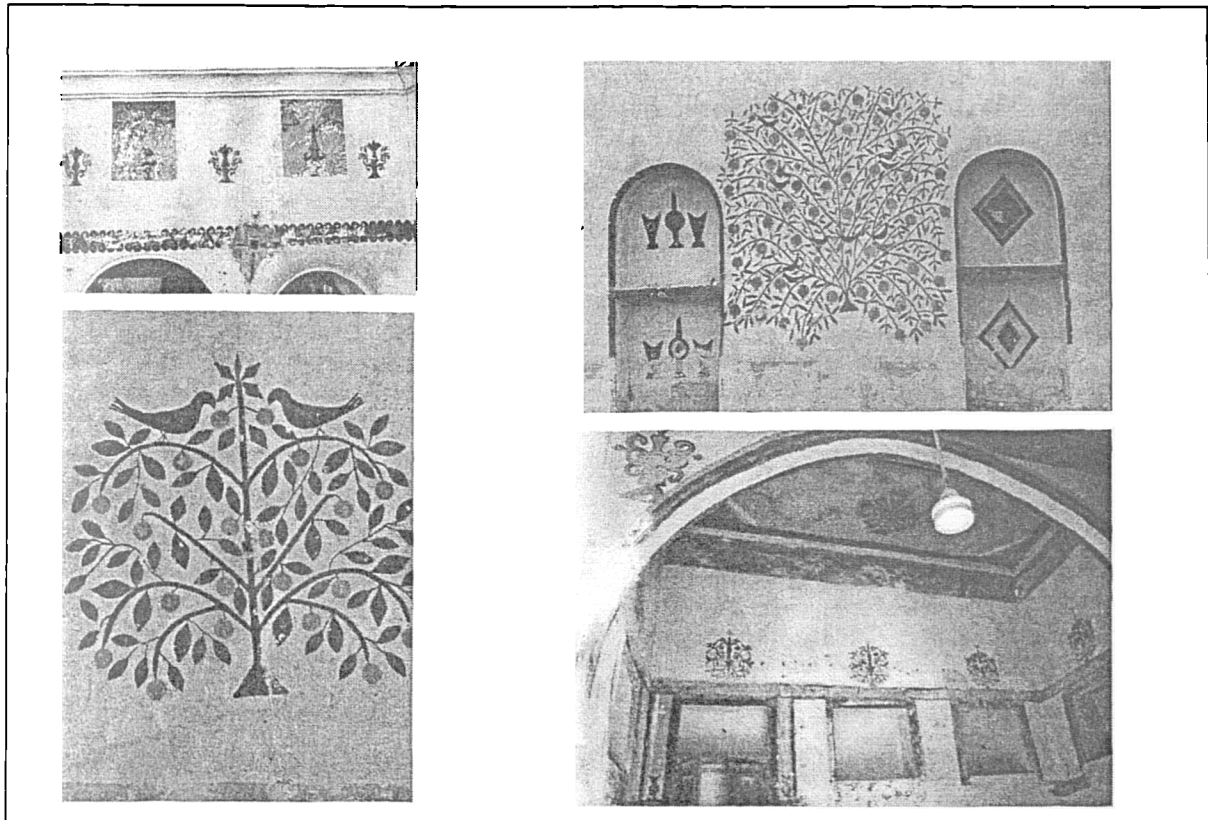


Fig.7.38: Mural painting in the *majlis* hall and the main *muraba'a*. Source: Fieldwork

The male reception spaces were the most decorative spaces in the house because they were open all day for guests. People in traditional Hofuf also gave the family courtyard and the main *muraba'a* attention by decorating them. Several ornamentation types were used in these spaces such as mural painting, gypsum ornamentation, and wood carving (Fig.7.38).⁴⁷ The subjects of the ornamentation were usually derived from the surrounding environment,

⁴⁶ See King, G. (1998), Op. Cit., p. 183.

⁴⁷ In 1866 Palgrave indicated different types of ornamentation in Hofuf. He said: 'Wood-carving is also common; it finds its usual place in door-posts and window-frames ... decorative figures painted on the walls'. (p. 151). See also Al-Shayeb, A. (1985) *Al-Jubail Saudi Village (Architectural Survey)*, Qatar, The Arab Gulf States Folklore Centre, p. 90.

such as the agricultural land or the daily routine and customs.⁴⁸ For example, the palm tree was used extensively as a decorative figure in different positions and in different ways (Fig.7.39).

Using recognisable subjects for the ornamentation enhanced its role as a vehicle to mobilise associational meaning. The palm tree as a decorative figure reflects both the link between people and their surrounding environment, and the hospitality which was usually reflected by the dates and coffee. It is possible to say that ornamentation was used in the first place to express family status but by using shared figures as subjects for the ornamentation, collective perceptual identity was established.

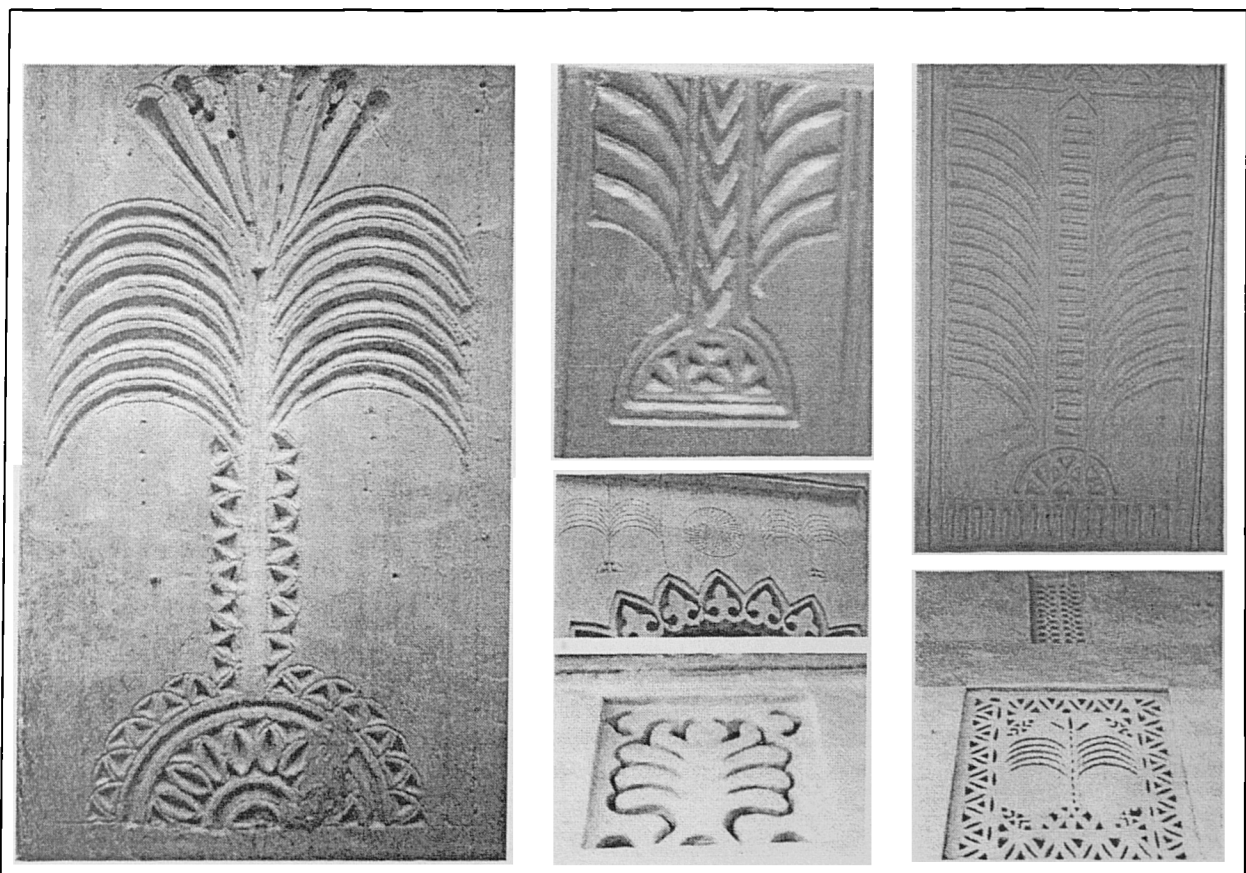


Fig. 7.39: The palm tree was used as decorative figure in traditional Hofuf. Source: Fieldwork.

To conclude, it is very important to state that decoration in the traditional house was mainly used to say welcome to visitors. Because individual identity in the traditional home environment was not clear, it is possible to say that this attitude of decorating the reception spaces only was a result of the need to express the family identity. The other rooms in the

⁴⁸ Al-Naim, M. (1994) 'Mural Painting in Al-Hasa Traditional Houses', *Al-Qafila*, Vol. 43, N.7, pp. 40-43 (Arabic); Al-Naim, M. (1996) 'The Palm in Decorative Engravings in Al-Hasa Region', *Al Ma'thurat Al Sha'biyyah*, Vol.11, No. 43 (July), pp. 7-19. (Arabic)

house had minimal visual quality because they belonged to the family members and no stranger could use them.

7.4.2 FROM A UTILITARIAN FORM TO A SYMBOLIC FORM: DEVELOPMENT OF THE DECORATIVE ELEMENTS

The utilitarian form in many cases developed over time to convey symbolic meanings. Read, for example, mentions that the form will pass through three stages. The first stage is 'discovery of the functional form'. In this case basic needs play a major role in discovering the object that can be used for certain purposes. The second stage is 'refinement of the functional form to its maximum efficiency'. This happens through trial and error. The frequent use of the utilitarian form will refine it to become an optimum functional device. The last stage is 'refinement of the functional form in the direction of free or symbolic form'.⁴⁹ The form in this case is associated with social meanings which change its role from a mere utilitarian object to a symbolic one.

These three stages can be linked with the hypothetical spatio-temporal path that has been developed in Chapter IV. We argued that, in many cases, new forms can be introduced by individuals. The refinement of the form may take a long time but usually starts as personal action. This action may find collective ground and become a shared symbolic medium. In this part of the study we are interested in the development of the utilitarian forms in the traditional house of Hofuf. It was difficult to find many examples; however, we traced two important ones, the *ruwshan* and *rusana*.

The *Ruwshan*

The *ruwshan* was a small opening found in the walls of any room in the house either on the ground floor or first floor. This opening took a high position in the wall almost closed to the ceiling because it has a climatic function. Through the use of the rooms people realised the importance of such openings to circulate air. Cool air came in through the doors and windows which were opened directly to the courtyard or main *sikkas* in the first floor. These small high openings functioned as a device to remove the hot air from rooms, while the cool air came in through the main openings.

This utilitarian relationship continued for a long time until society found another technological possibility to use these small openings as aesthetic elements. This was manifested in the using the gypsum or what people in Hofuf call '*juss*'. This material,

⁴⁹ Read, H. (1966), Op. Cit., pp. 41-2 He illustrates a number of examples of the development of prehistoric forms. For example, 'the ax was divorced from its utilitarian function, and further refined to serve as a ritual or ceremonial object.' (p. 34).

through its ability to form a solid and thin surface, enabled craftsmen in Hofuf to develop pre-cast units to cover the *ruwshans* by creating small and decorative holes in the gypsum panel. The ornamented gypsum unit, in this case, became a climatic and decorative device. The *ruwshan* visually became a unit consisting of void and solid surfaces, the void part usually expressing the subject of ornamentation and re-circulating the hot air in the room. Later the utilitarian purpose of the *ruwshan* became not the only reason for its existence. For example in many cases the *ruwshan* was used merely as a decorative element (Fig.7.40).⁵⁰

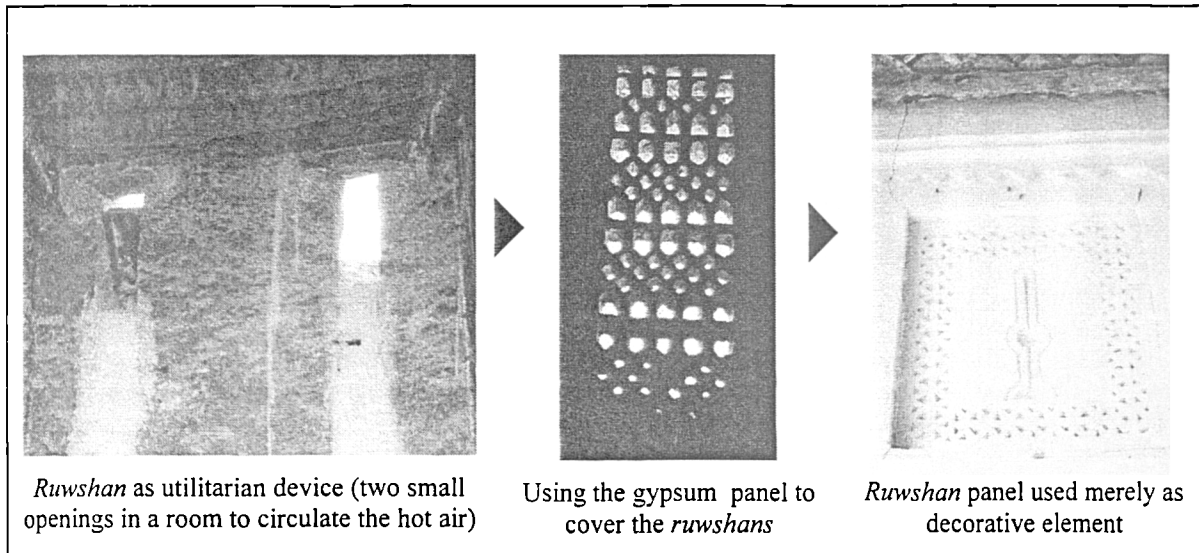


Fig.7.40: The development of the *ruwshan* from a utilitarian element to a decorative element. Source: Fieldwork.

And a medium to express perceptual identity. This was manifested in the major changes that happened to the location and size of the *ruwshan* since it became a decorative element. Visual association became an important factor to determine the location of the *ruwshan*. Unlike the utilitarian stage, where the *ruwshan* was found in any place at the top of the room wall, the decorative *ruwshan* was associated with the main spaces in the house. Also it was strongly influenced by the position of the door, especially in the courtyard. This is because by taking a position over the door it became particularly noticeable (Fig.7.41).

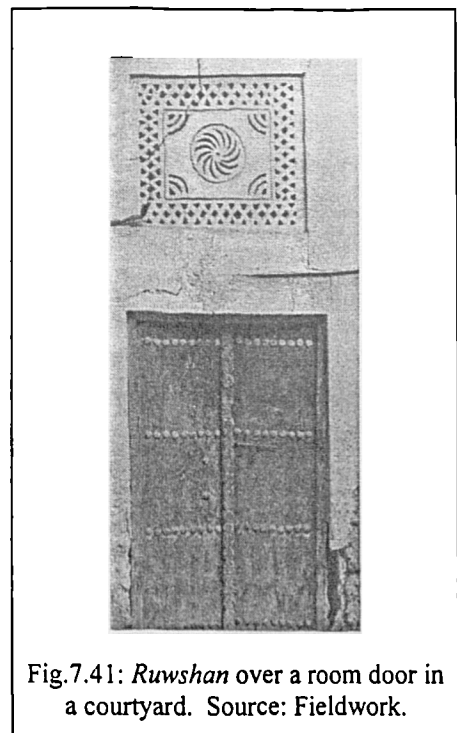


Fig.7.41: *Ruwshan* over a room door in a courtyard. Source: Fieldwork.

⁵⁰ Personal interview with Abdulrahman Al-Humadi (Traditional builder), 1992.

This is not to say that the location of the *ruwshan* did not respond to climatic needs, but people became more aware about the messages that *ruwshan* would send to visitors. For example, in the rooms overlooking the family courtyard, the refined ornamented unit covered the side that looked on to the court while the other side was left unrefined because it looked over the family rooms.⁵¹ This is because visitors, especially women, will see the ornamentation in the courtyard, while inside the room only the family members will see the ornamentation. Well-to-do families might cover both sides for aesthetics reason, but this was rarely found in traditional Hofuf.

This treatment was found also in the upper rooms. If the room looked on to the main *sikka*, the openings overlooking the streets would be covered by a *ruwshan* with the ornamented side showing, while the other openings would be left unornamented coverings. This situation depended on the importance of the room itself. For example, if the room was the main *majlis* or summer *majlis* both sides would be covered by refined ornamented units (Fig.7.42).

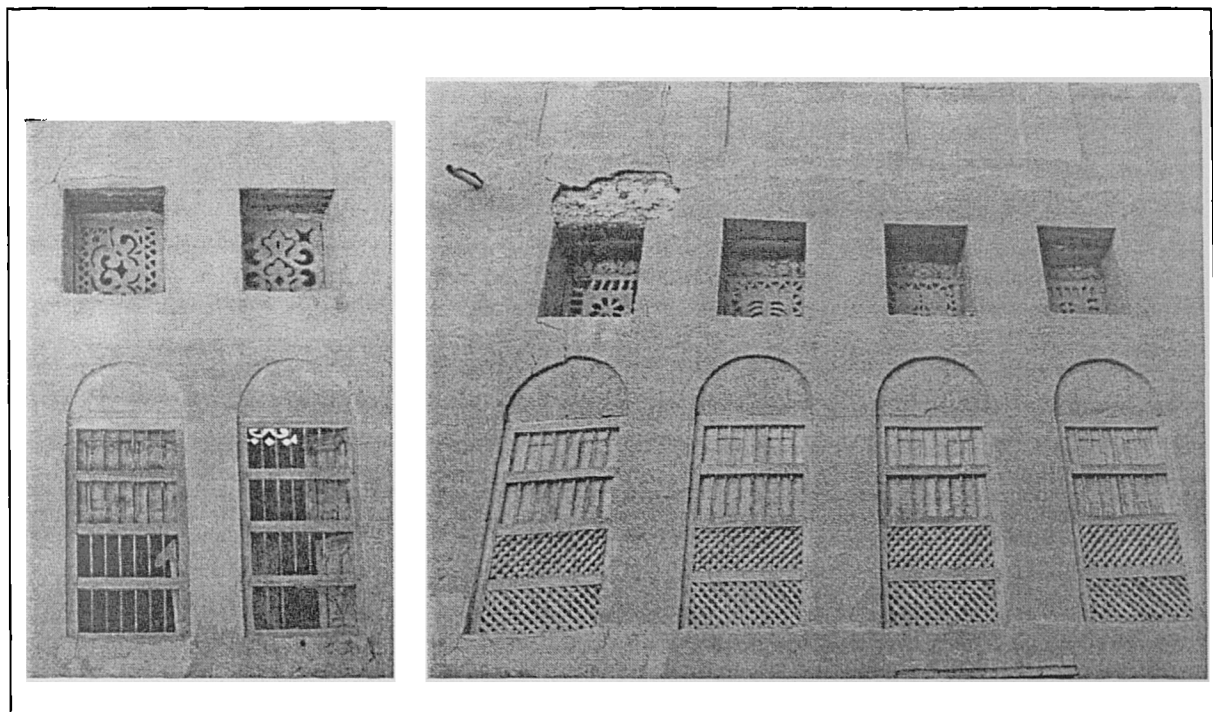


Fig.7.42: *Ruwshans* looking to the main *sikka*. Source: Fieldwork.

This clearly represents how the *ruwshan* was widely used for communicating social status in Hofuf. One last point needs to be mentioned here, and that is the variety of *ruwshan* designs, patterns, and sizes which made it an important element in the traditional home environment

⁵¹ As general principle, the ornamented surface of the *ruwshan* has two faces. A refined ornament which mainly looked on to the symbolic spaces and an unrefined surface which looked on to the family and utility rooms.

(Fig.7.43). This is because it was used by people to create a unique composition in every symbolic space.

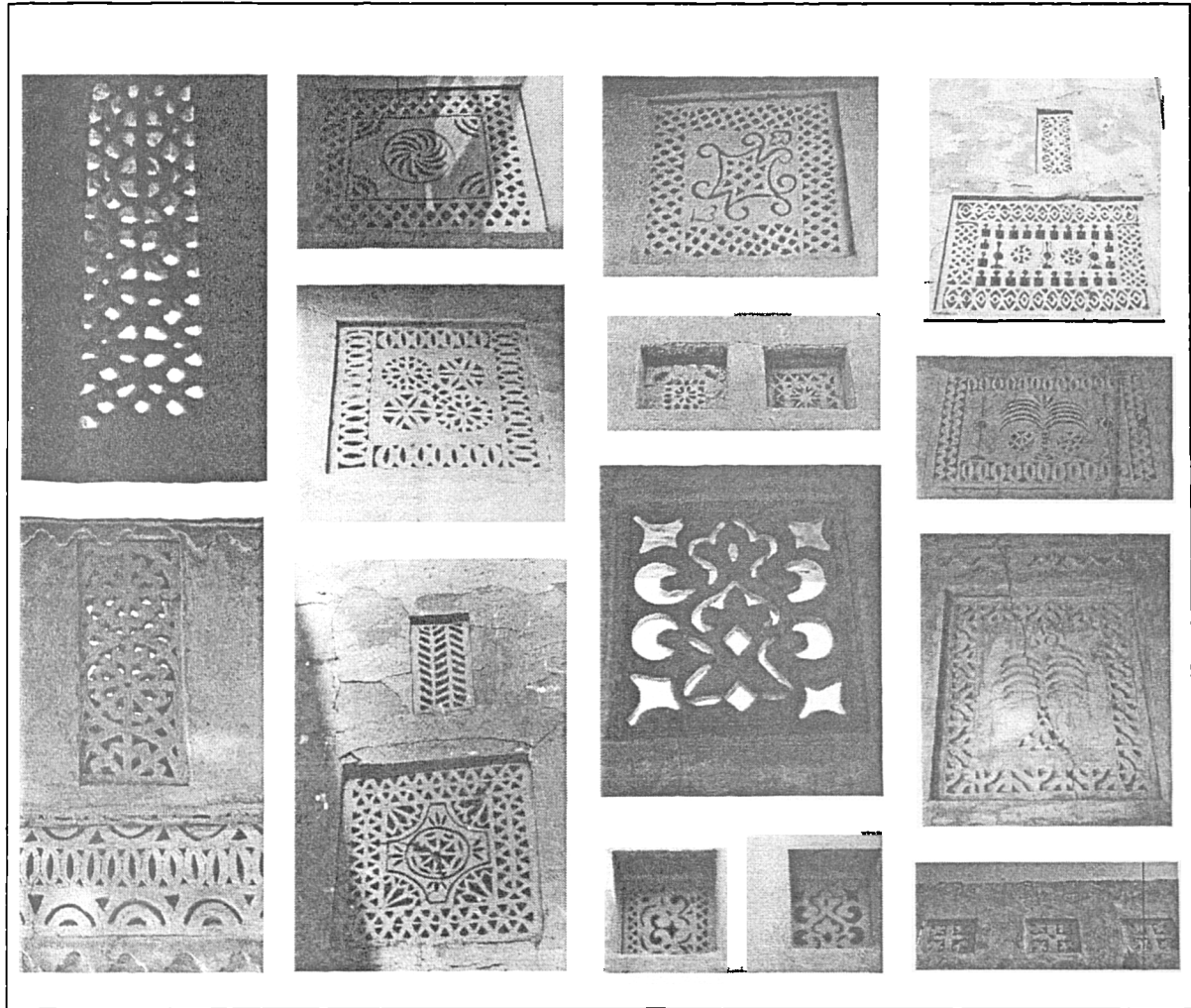


Fig.7.43: Endless patterns of *ruwshan*. Source: Fieldwork.

The *rusana*

Another utilitarian element in the traditional house was used by people to express their social status. This was the *rusana*. It was a simple shelf used for exhibiting and storing objects, and it was found in every room in the house. The *rusana* was associated with construction systems and building materials.⁵² For example in the early construction system (mud

⁵²The form of both *ruwshan* and *rusana* was influenced by the construction system in traditional Hofuf. Two construction techniques were used in the traditional home environment of Hofuf. Firstly, there was a mud construction system which was the oldest in the area. It was done in two ways, either '*urg*', which was a continuous solid course of mud layers of sun-baked bricks, laying the bricks to form the wall in the same manner as ordinary bricks, but with great emphasis on joints and well bonded corners. Then, plain mortar covered the bricks. Second, the rubble construction system. This system was similar to the beam and post system where the main walls were built by dividing the wall into equal modules constructing the posts, then tying them with a beam made of palm tree trunk (*phoenix dactylefera*). The openings between the columns were either filled by mud or used for windows and *rusanas*. The main construction material used in this system was stone or *libin* (limestone) bedded in *juss* (gypsum) or mud plastered by *juss*. See Al-Naim, M. (1993), Op. Cit., pp. 63-5. About the external finishing Cheesman says: in Hofuf the '... houses are built of white sandstone blocks faced with sandstone mortar, with flat roofs of timber, and coated with mud.' Cheesman, O. B. E. (1926), Op. Cit., p. 60. However, the mud coating is not the only finishing found in Hofuf. most of the houses are plastered with gypsum. Vidal noticed that when he said: ' House construction follows a fairly

construction system), the *rusana* was very small with a pointed arch. This is because it was technically difficult to make it large. Later when people used limestone in construction they developed larger and more decorated *rusanas*.

As with the *ruwshan*, the *rusana* developed as a decorative element. Its utilitarian role in some cases became unimportant compared to its symbolic role (Fig.7.44). The function of the *rusana*, originally simply to store objects, moved to exhibiting objects, and in those cases where it was located in a symbolic space, people began to decorate it. Thus it began to take on symbolic meaning of its own.

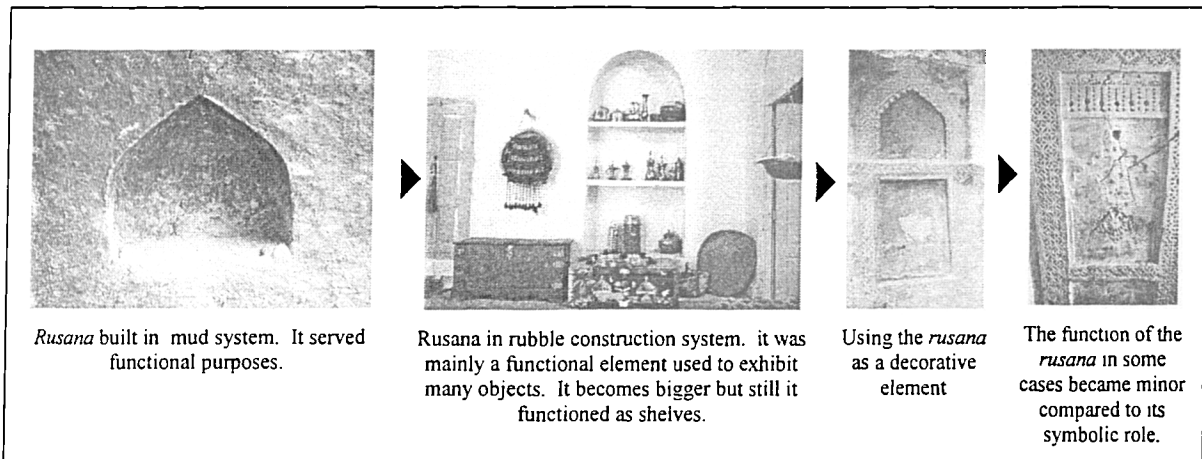


Fig.7.44: The development of the *rusana* as a symbolic element in the traditional house in Hofuf. Source: Fieldwork.⁵³

The *rusana* as functional element in the house passed, as we see, through several changes and adaptations to satisfy the perceptual and associational identities in the traditional home environment. It is worth mentioning that this element developed as decorative medium only in the most symbolic spaces in the house. It remained in its utilitarian form in the family and utility rooms. As with the *ruwshan*, the *rusana* took several forms, patterns, and sizes (Fig.7.45). This clearly indicates that people tried to find ways to express their individual (family) images by using different forms of ornamentation.

regular pattern in the town. Another building material is the local white limestone, roughly faced, bound with mortar and later given a facing of gypsum plaster. The houses of the less well-to-do sometimes have a facing of mud.' Vidal, F. S. (1955), Op. Cit., p. 80.

⁵³ The examples that have been studied in the *ruwshan* and the *rusana* cases have been taken from houses which the researcher had, as a result of his fieldwork, already established to come from different periods. It was only after this prior establishment of the relative dates of the houses that the *ruwshan* and the *rusana* were studied, and they were found to display the linear development described.

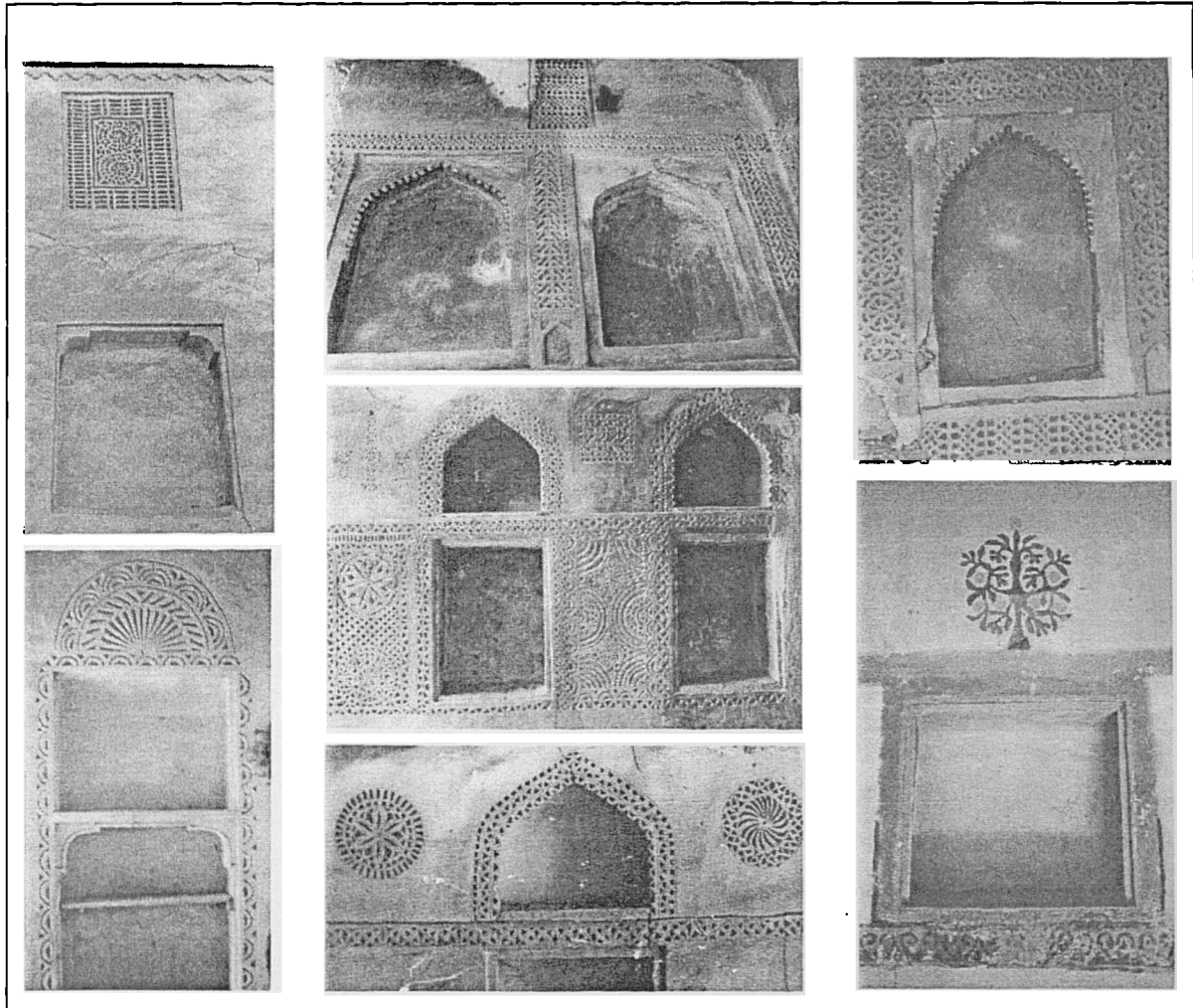


Fig.7.45: Different forms of *rusana* (used as decorative elements in the main rooms such as *majlis* and main *muraba'a*). Source: Fieldwork.

To recapitulate, the development of *ruwshan* and *rusana* from utilitarian to symbolic elements started as a personal action (family action). A few people may have been influenced by the decoration techniques in neighbouring societies and tried to apply what they saw in the houses there. However, the use of the *ruwshan* and *rusana* as decorative elements was completely within the basic decoration principles in traditional Hofuf. This means that when the individual families tried to use these two elements to decorate the internal spaces, they firstly used them in the most symbolic spaces in the house, and secondly they located them in a way that has a visual effect on the visitors of the house.

In the traditional home environment, any new idea might become a common idea if it was compatible with the people's values and way of living (as well as affordable). This was because the traditional community was very isolated, which meant that people used few ideas but with deep elaboration so that several elements function as communicative media in the

community. It is possible that the *ruwshan* and *rusana* passed through this process and became common elements used by people as means to express their perceptual and associational identities (Fig.7.46).

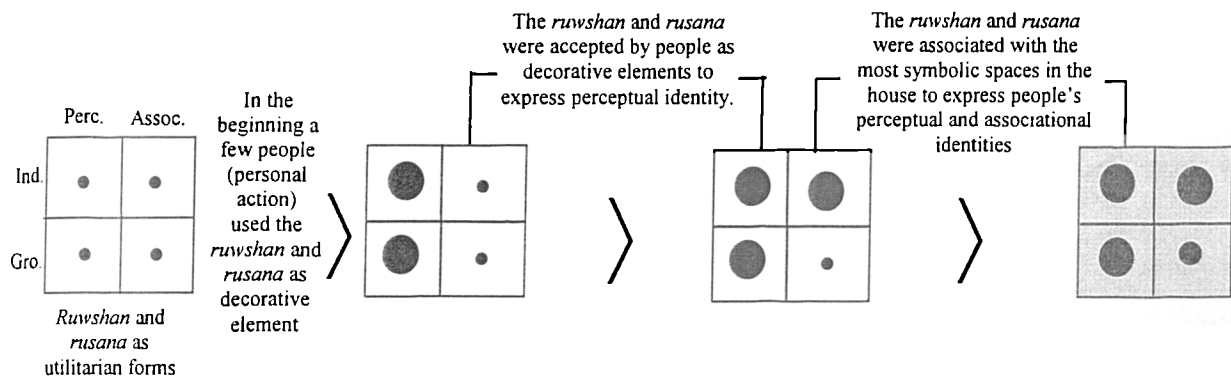


Fig. 7.46: Development of the *ruwshan* and the *rusana* from utilitarian elements to symbolic elements.

7.5 SUMMARY

It is clear that the internal domestic spaces in the traditional house strongly responded to the organisation of the *fereej* system. The division of the house into three parts was mainly developed to link the house with the *fereej* at the ground level, by positioning the male reception spaces in the front, and away from the roof routes by situating the family part in the middle. This order of spatial organisation was very important for the continuance of the *fereej* system over a long time.

Social conventions and lifestyle played a major role in the emergence of this spatial order in the traditional house. The harmony and compatibility of the traditional home environment stemmed from the high response that people showed when they interacted with their physical environment. Because women needed to keep out of men's sight the whole environment was ordered to support this need. At the macro level the whole traditional home environment was divided into smaller units, *fereej*s, which consisted in turn of still smaller units, houses. The house itself was divided into smaller units to define the women's domain. Moreover, the physical elements in the house were developed to keep the women's domain away from the men's domain. As general conclusion, it is difficult to understand why the traditional house was sharply divided into three parts without considering the reasons for the hierarchy of the whole traditional home environment.

The division of the traditional house created a balance between communal and personal identity. This was because the people of traditional Hofuf realised that creating a dialectic between their individual (family) status and the whole community could be satisfied by establishing maximum openness of part of the house to the communal space. This was accomplished by situating the reception spaces at the front stage and linking them visually and spatially with the external environment.

Although the traditional house had passed through several changes in the nineteenth and early twentieth centuries, the basic spatial principles continued without major change because they had been linked with the cultural core of the traditional community of Hofuf. The family spaces continued with a very minimum change because they were associated with the primary relationship in the traditional community, the family. Because the family conventions and lifestyle represented the basic source of values in the traditional community, it was difficult to accept major changes in them. Thus a spatial protection for the family part was developed by situating it between two transitional zones, the entrance and the internal *sabat*, to isolate it from any change that could happen at the front or the back of the house.

The *majlis*, as we discussed, had several locations and developed from a room associated with a courtyard to a two-storey space, and then it moved to the first floor. However, the principle of approaching and using the *majlis* continued without any major changes. Also, it remained as the front stage of the house. Different perceptual and spatial solutions also had been developed to maintain its symbolic role in the house. This is because the *majlis* was the main spatial and physical element which conveyed family identity.

It was clear that the names of the internal spaces in the traditional house were deeply linked with the meaning of the space in the people's mind. They constituted an important part of the identity of the traditional house in Hofuf. Although every space in the house was used for more than one function, a specific meaning was associated with each space, which classified it either among the symbolic or the utilitarian spaces. This classification was very important for the traditional community because it identified the location and the use of the space inside the house. Naming the spaces was, then, a cognitive process by which people defined the spatial and visual quality of their houses And also developed a mental map for the traditional house in general.

We found that the ornamentation in traditional Hofuf was used in those spaces and locations which were exposed to visitors. It is unusual to find ornamentation in a utilitarian space in the traditional house. Even those spaces used by the family had no decoration, except the

courtyard and main *muraba'a* which had a potential to be used by guests. Some of utilitarian elements in the traditional house, such as *ruwshan* and *rusana*, had been refined and associated with perceptual and associational meanings. This completely supports the argument of this study that identity grows and re-grows over time. People always use the surrounding objects to convey their perceptual and association identities. This happened in the traditional home environment when people refined the *ruwshan* and *rusana* and used them as symbolic elements.

To recapitulate, the traditional house in Hofuf expressed the individual (family) and collective perceptual and associational identities, individual identity in the sense that every family employed the various ornamentation patterns and different compositions of the coffee place to express its social status. Collective identity was strongly expressed through the common visual, physical and social language that dominated the whole traditional home environment.



Hybrid images in Hofuf

CHAPTER VIII

IDENTITY IN TRANSITION: CHANGE AND RESISTANCE IN HOFUF'S HOME ENVIRONMENT

CONTENTS

8.1 Prologue

8.2 The *Fereej* System in the Hybrid Neighbourhoods

8.2.1 *Assalhiyyah* Suburb (1904-40)

8.2.1.1 Physical Characteristics of *Assalhiyyah*

8.2.1.2 The *Fereej* System in *Assalhiyyah*

8.2.2 The Post-Oil Neighbourhoods (1940-60)

8.2.2.1 Formation of the Post-Oil Neighbourhoods (1940-60)

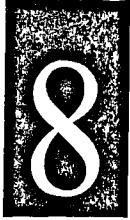
8.2.2.2 Dwelling in the Hybrid *Fereej*

8.3 The Transitional *Fereej* System

8.3.1 The Dwelling in the Transitional *Fereej*

8.4 Contemporary Forms of the *Fereej* System

8.5 Summary



IDENTITY IN TRANSITION: CHANGE AND RESISTANCE IN HOFUF'S HOME ENVIRONMENT

8.1 PROLOGUE

In the previous two chapters we have discussed how the local people in the traditional Hofuf expressed their perceptual and associational identities. We found that people had produced a harmonised visual and spatial environment. Every space in the traditional home environment was ranked and classified by the inhabitants either as symbolic or utilitarian. There was a high compatibility between people and their home environment. Every form had a meaning. The decoding of perceptual and associational meanings in the traditional home environment always led to a collective understanding of spaces and images.

The questions which this chapter tries to highlight are: What was the situation when people in Hofuf moved from the old city to the new suburbs? To what extent did they maintain or change their identity in the new home environments? The people of Hofuf started moving from the traditional home environment as early as 1904 when they planned *Assalhiyyah* quarter. The migration from the traditional areas continued throughout the twentieth century until 1975, when most of the inhabitants of the traditional area left it for new suburbs.

This study is concerned with the continuity and change of identity of Hofuf's home environment. The city, as have we said, underwent continuous change in the twentieth century. This brought the issue of identity to the centre stage. The question here is: Why and how did culture accept change? Warner Casket argues that any culture can accept change in two situations. The first is 'a consciousness of being inferior', which is important in creating the awareness for change and paves the way to grasp and learn from advanced cultures. The second is establishing 'contact between the two cultures [civilizations] at more than one point and for some length of time', which increases the need for change and learning from the advanced culture.¹

¹Cited in Jarbawi, (1981), Op. Cit., p. 178 (Jarbawi parenthesis). This can be linked to the process of acculturation which is a process of contact between cultures. This process 'may involve either social interaction or exposure to other cultures by means of the mass media of communication'. Abercrombie, N. et al (1994), Op. Cit., p. 2.

In the case of hybrid Hofuf, change became accepted by indirect contact with western culture. This indirect contact came about because of the influence of other cities in the Arab world, such as Damascus at the time of *Assalhiyyah* and later the oil cities near Hofuf in the post oil neighbourhoods that had been built between 1940 and 1960. Western culture, including western building designs and styles, had been at work in the development of these cities, in the case of Damascus on development in a long established city, and in the case of the oil cities on what were, as cities, new communities.² This indirect contact with the western culture created a kind of cultural and specifically physical hybridity³ in the city of Hofuf, where the desire to change and learn from the advanced culture mixed with past experience and traditional values and technology.

The impact of western urban concepts and images intensified after 1960. This led to a new identity emerging in Hofuf's home environment. This new identity consisted of continued, modified, and new experiences, traditions, and images. This chapter aims to understand how the people of Hofuf experienced the change in their home environment and how they resisted this change: how did they express their perceptual and associational identities in the transitional context that appeared in Hofuf between 1904 and 1975?

As mentioned in Chapter V we have classified the changing home environment into two types of neighbourhoods, hybrid and transitional. Generally this present chapter aims to implement a diachronic study of the development of the house form in Hofuf in the twentieth century, and specifically between 1904 and 1975. The emphasis will be on the ways that the people of Hofuf followed in order to absorb the new concepts and to redefine themselves in the home environment. We will also consider some aspects of the contemporary home environment, especially the production of the *fereej* system. How the new identity grew in home environment of Hofuf will be addressed in Chapter IX when the identity of the contemporary private home is discussed.

² For more detail about how Damascus was influenced by the western urban concepts see Lewis, B., Pellat, C., & Schacht, J. (ed) (1965) *Encyclopedia of Islam*, Vol. II, London, Luzac & Co., p. 289.

³ Morley and Robins (1995) introduced the term 'cultural hybridity'. They link this term with the need to maintain identity when they say that searching for identity is 'a nostalgic attempt to revivify pure and indigenous regional cultures in reaction against what are perceived as threatening forms of cultural hybridity' (p. 8). We use this term in this study to indicate the parallel use of old and new traditions and images in the Hofuf home environment.

8.2 THE *FEREEJ* SYSTEM IN THE HYBRID NEIGHBOURHOODS

In the hybrid neighbourhoods, the city of Hofuf was exposed to the indirect influence of western urban concepts. These influences brought new urban arrangements that changed the external domestic spaces from those in the traditional home environments. However, the traditional social structure was not influenced by this physical change because local people had adopted most of the change and no external forces imposed any urban or architectural solutions upon them. This minimised the change to the external space while the arrangements of the spaces inside the house remained to a large extent similar to the traditional home.

We call this home environment 'hybrid' because the traditional system and the new urban concepts had been used together in a parallel way. In these neighbourhoods, the identity of the home environment in Hofuf faced the first challenges. This is because, for the first time, the city was exposed to complete and sudden new forms and images, especially as regards the home environment in terms of external space. Initially, emphasis was put on the form and pattern of main streets, which were used to determine the settings of residential blocks. The actual size of each lot and the form of the house itself were left to the people, who obviously followed traditional norms. So the situation for a time was that the external setting of the home environment had undergone change in the new neighbourhoods, but inside things remained much the same. This parallel use of old and new had shifted in the post-oil neighbourhood towards more control over the land when the landlords subdivided the inner blocks and sold the land in individual lots. The following discussion tries to follow both cases and their impact on the spatial organisation of the external and internal domestic spaces.

8.2.1 *ASSALHIYYAH* SUBURB (1904-40)

By the turn of the last century a group of people in *Arrif'a* decided to move from the walled city because the old city had not enough space to accommodate their extended families.⁴ A new planned suburb was founded as a result of this decision with a planning system totally

⁴ The second Ottoman occupation of Hofuf was between 1871 and 1913; during that time, the city was already under pressure to accommodate the growing population. In 1913, Abdulaziz Al-Saud regained all of Al-Hasa from the Ottoman. Throughout the early period of national consolidation, Hofuf remained the seat of administration for the region. One of the most important reasons for the construction of the *Assalhiyyah* at the beginning of this century was the limited area of the old city. Hofuf was surrounded by walls and most of the large houses were divided into small houses to meet the social requirements and population expansion. But the city was over crowded and no place was left for any expansion. This encouraged the people to think about extending their residential settlements to outside the walled city. This suggestion had found agreement among many *hamolas* in *Arrif'a*. The selected location was unsuitable for cultivation and well defined between two cemeteries to the north and the south; at the same time it was considered a natural expansion of the old city.

different from the adjacent traditional area (Fig.8.1).⁵ It is important for this study to understand how the inhabitants of *Assalhiyyah* interacted with the introduced physical forms, and which experiences and meanings people carried with them into the new area, and why. The first question that needs more investigation is why the physical planning of *Assalhiyyah* adopted different system.⁶

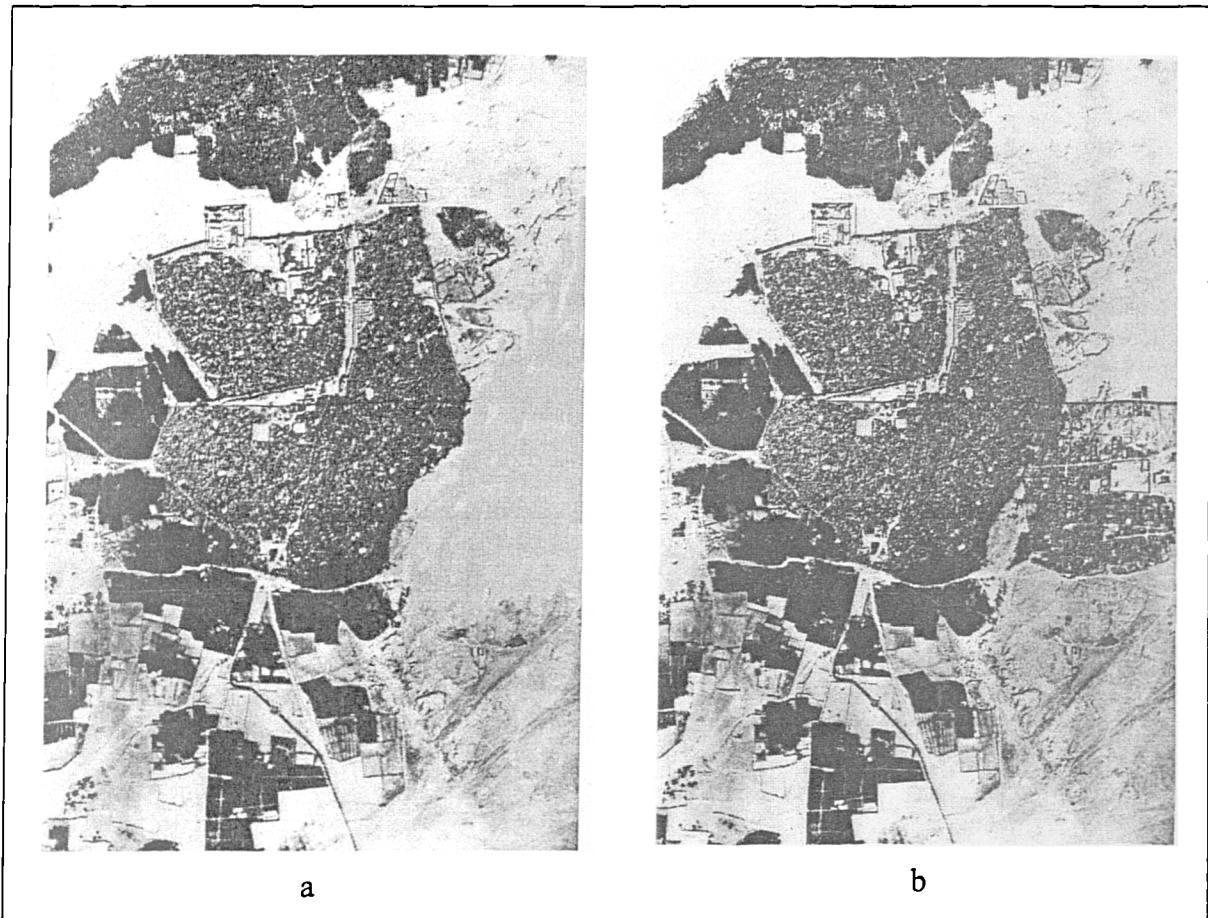


Fig.8.1: Hofuf between 1904 and 1935. a) Hofuf before 1904 (*Assalhiyyah* not yet developed). b) Hofuf in 1935 (The core part of *Assalhiyyah* already completed). Source: Aerial photograph 1935 (one modified), Aramco.

The planning of the new suburb was indirectly influenced by the westernisation of the Ottoman Empire in the nineteenth century.⁷ The land subdivision system that was applied in *Assalhiyyah* was borrowed from Damascus which was influenced by the Western urban

⁵ The first house was construction in 1904 and its early core took almost thirty years to be completed. In fact groups of extended families moved from *Arrifa* to the new suburb, but some of them reserved their blocks and left them empty. In the beginning, people were frightened of living outside the walled city. However, after 1913 this changed and people moved collectively to the area. Interview with Sheikh Ahmed Ben Ali Al-Mubarak (19-7-97).

⁶ From the historical documents we found that Hofuf had a municipal council as early as 1900. Al-Subai'ee (1987) found that the first municipal work was started in Hofuf in 1900 (1320 H), when the Ottoman government established the Municipality. The function of the municipality was very limited. From a historical document dated (1329 H) 1909 (See Appendix IV), the municipality functioned as police to solve any dispute between people which indicated that the municipal council was not the cause behind this difference between the new neighbourhood and the surrounding traditional areas. This council was mainly concerned with security and cleaning rather than planning.

⁷ Celik, Zeynep (1984) *The Impact of Westernization on Istanbul's Urban Form, 1838-1908*, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, Berkeley, University of California. This study shows how the city of Istanbul was influenced by western urban concepts in the nineteenth century. In the last century many of the main Arab cities, such as Cairo and Damascus were influenced in one way or another by western urban concepts.

concept when it was under the Ottoman era.⁸ A committee was formed to plan *Assalhiyyah*. It consisted of a number of religious scholars who had traditional knowledge about astronomy (Fig.8.2).⁹

8.2.1.1 Physical Characteristics of *Assalhiyyah*

Differently from the traditional system, the planning committee of *Assalhiyyah* divided the suburb into almost equal rectangular blocks surrounded by streets of around 10m in width.¹⁰ The committee also identified the locations of the local, Friday and *Eid* mosques. The orientation of the streets mainly followed north-south and east-west directions. The blocks were not divided from inside. They left it to people to decide the areas they needed for their houses and the arrangements they preferred for their external space (Fig.8.2).

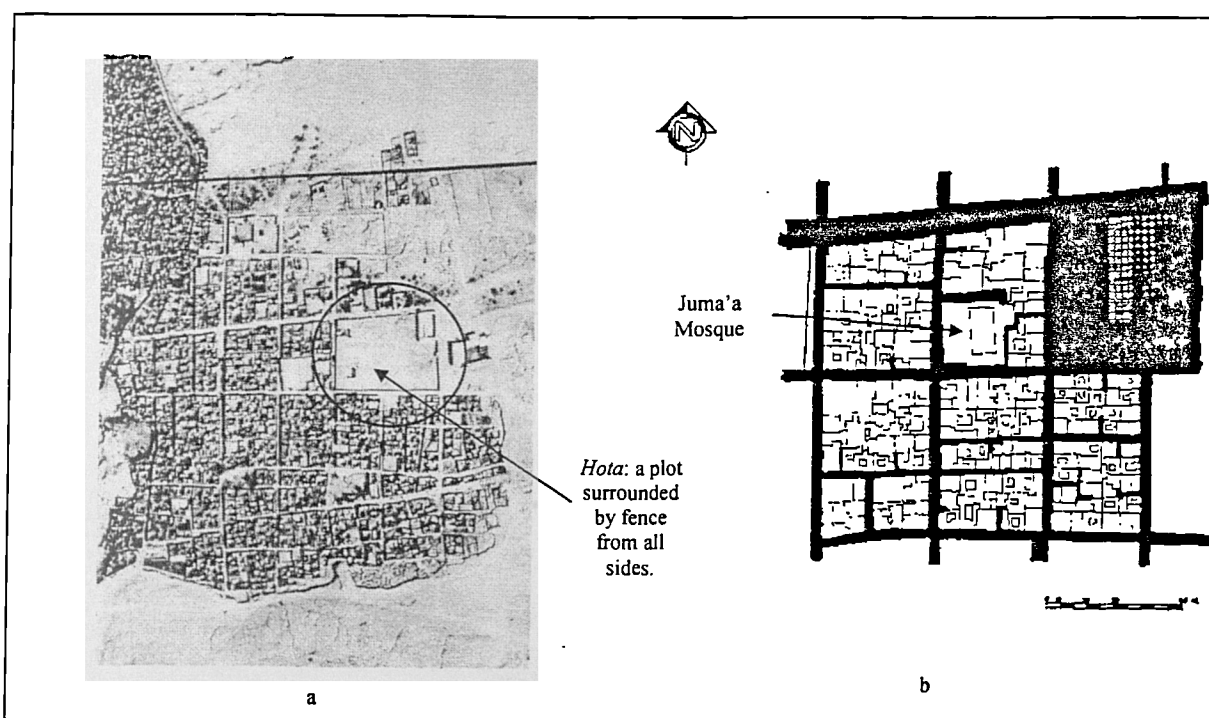


Fig.8.2: a) *Assalhiyyah* Neighbourhood in 1935 (Grid-iron pattern with a traditional system inside the blocks). Source: Aerial photograph 1935, Aramco. b) The first blocks in *Assalhiyyah*. Source. Developed from aerial map (1985), Municipality of Al-Hasa.

⁸ Rashed Al-Mubarak, who suggest the location of the new suburb, went to Istanbul to ask permission from Sultan Abdulhamid. In his way back he passed by Damascus and saw the new suburb of *Assalhiyyah*. This suburb has gridiron-planning. He liked the place, its organisation and width of its street; hence he decided to imitate it in the new suburb in Hofuf. Al-Naim, M. (1994) 'Lessons from the Traditional Built Environment: A Study of Assalhiyya Quarter in Hofuf, S.A.', *Al Ma'thurat Al Sha'biyyah*, Qatar, G.C.C. Folklore Centre, No. 33 (January), pp. 7-29, (Arabic). The researcher believes that Sheikh Rashed was ready to be influenced by what he saw in Damascus because he already noticed the planned streets in Istanbul and he wished that his new residential settlement would become similar to what he saw. The researcher visited *Assalhiyyah* in Damascus in 1996 and he found that the width of the streets is mostly similar to that in Hofuf. Also, he noticed that the inner streets there were more regular than those in Hofuf.

⁹ From the interviews with a number of Al-Mubarak family, they informed the researcher that the committee defined the main street in *Assalhiyyah* by using the stars in the night. The main work was done in the night by defining the blocks by ropes, then in the day time they put in the main marks.

Those extended families who moved to *Assalhiyyah* were given land by the committee. This is not to say that the committee identified the location and size of every peice of land that was given to each family, but every *hamola* was allocated in one or more adjacent blocks. The *hamola* members decided among themselves about the location and the size of every house inside the block.¹⁰ The committee only supervised the construction to guarantee that no encroachment over the main streets or the locations of the mosques took place. Most of those prominent families who used to live in *Arrif'a* reserved one or more blocks for their extended family. Some of them even reserved their blocks and surrounded them with a fence for future use.¹² Those who reserved a complete block divided the block among the extended family.

Each block in *Assalhiyyah* is called *hota*.¹³ The dimension of a *hota* is about 110m by 75m. The planning committee to allow flexibility stressed this large dimension for a *hota*. As has been mentioned earlier, planning of *Assalhiyyah* was only of the street and the boundaries of the *hotas*; therefore, the extended families and other small families took undivided lands and divided them among themselves according to their need. However, there was no system for land division except the traditional system, which depends on the ability of the family to build a house.

The interaction between the western planning system and traditional land development create a hybrid urban context reflecting both the gridiron pattern at the macro level and the traditional system at the micro level. This integration between the new urban concept and the organic-traditional system helped *Assalhiyyah* to face in harmony with the adjacent traditional quarters. Even western visitors who visited Hofuf at that time did not recognise the difference between *Assalhiyyah* and the traditional quarter, or they ignored *Assalhiyyah* completely (Fig.8.3).¹⁴

¹⁰ According to Sheikh Ahmed Ben Ali Al-Mubarak, the width of the streets in *Assalhiyyah* had been devided following the prophet's saying 'If you disagree about the width of a street, make it seven cubits.' This principle was applied because it allow two loaded camels to pass through street without harming each other. See also Hakim, B. (1986), Op. Cit., p. 146.

¹¹ Each family had constructed its house according to its need and ability.

¹² Some families moved after 1940 but their blocks remained empty and only surrounded by a fence. There is a religious principle enabling people to own empty land if they just surround it by a fence but they should later do some construction or plant some trees in it. This principle is called *ihya* (revivification) which means 'utilisation of dead land by building or planting it ... and not necessarily through the ruler's permission.' See Akbar, J. (1988), Op. Cit., p. 256.

¹³ The word *hota* in Arabic means any land surrounded by a wall or fence. The name of *hota* was used in *Assalhiyyah* because the extended families who planned and moved to the new suburb had surrounded their lands to identify them from those which will distributed to other people. This word was used until recent times even when the word 'block' became common in Hofuf.

¹⁴ Around 1917, for example, Philby visited Hofuf and said that the city 'with its reputed 6000 houses ... is by far the biggest town in the dominions of Ibn Sa'ud; roughly oblong in shape and completely enclosed by a wall of unequal height ... and falls into three well-marked division: the Kut, the Rifa' and the Na'athil quarters, to which may be added the extra-mural suburb of Salihiyya.' Mackie, for example, did not noticed *Assalhiyyah* in 1924. He described Hofuf thus: 'The town is divided into three main quarters, Kut, Rifa', and Na'athil. The Rifa' and Na'athil quarters contain the houses of the merchants, shop-keepers, and indeed all except the Government officials, the personal staff of the Amir, and a few artisans and others who are permitted to live inside the Kut quarter and so make it self-supporting in case of trouble'. The researcher believe that Mackie had considered *Assalhiyyah* as an extension of *Arrif'a*; therefore he did not even mention it. Cheesman also ignored *Assalhiyyah* in 1926 when he described *Arrif'a* quarter. He said 'At the back of the bazaar lies the Rifa quarter, the eastern side of the town, with merchants' houses and some slums, through which a busy thoroughfare takes the caravans setting out for and returning from Oqair.' Philby, B. (1922) *The Heart of Arabia: A Record of Travel & Exploration*, London, Constable and Company LTD,

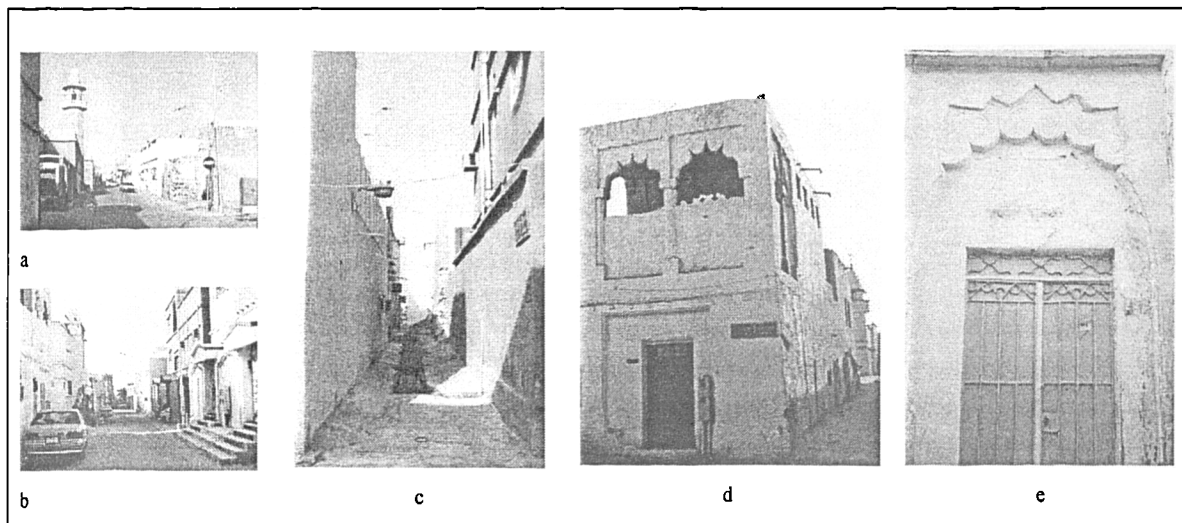


Fig.8.3: Physical characteristics of *Assalhiyyah*. a) Main street in *Assalhiyyah* (In the 1980s many inhabitants of *Assalhiyyah* demolished their old houses and built new ones. b) Main street (showing how the traditional houses were replaced by villas. c) Internal irregular *sikka* inside one of the *hotas* in *Assalhiyyah*. d) Traditional house in *Assalhiyyah* with upstairs loggia. e) Traditional house gate in *Assalhiyyah*. Source: Fieldwork.

The physical external characteristics of *Assalhiyyah* were quite similar to adjacent traditional areas. People used their technical and perceptual experiences to express their perceptual identity in the new suburb. The only difference between *Assalhiyyah* and the traditional areas was that the physical environment of *Assalhiyyah* was divided into isolated masses while, in the traditional home environment, every quarter created one physical mass.

Despite this physical division, we can argue that the people of *Assalhiyyah* expressed their collective perceptual identity very strongly in the new neighbourhood. This can be seen from the fact that most of those who visited the city while the suburb was growing did not notice the grid pattern. Because people moved collectively, the collective perceptual identity was established immediately, especially as inhabitants of *Assalhiyyah* had the same background and had moved from the same area.

Every *hota* in *Assalhiyyah* can be seen as a repetition of the traditional environment because the inner streets that developed inside those *hotas* were a result of the traditional system. For example, *sabats* were only found inside the *hotas* and not between them. This is because traditional building techniques, which were also used in the construction of *Assalhiyyah* houses, had limitations. Therefore, people were not able to overbridge the main streets to create *sabats*.¹⁵ This physical constraint forced people to develop new solutions to reproduce their *ferees*. In the following discussion we will try to understand the ways that people

Vol. 1, p. 27; Mackie (1924), Op. Cit., p. 197; Cheesman, O. B. E. (1926), Op. Cit., p. 73. Sheikh Ahmed Ben Ali Al-Mubarak has said that *Assalhiyyah* occupies the empty area east of Hofuf where the caravans used to go and come from Oqair (old port).

adopted to organise themselves and how they expressed their perceptual and associational identity in the new neighbourhood.

8.2.1.2 The *Fereej* System in *Assalhiyyah*

In the previous discussion we tried to discuss the external environment of *Assalhiyyah*, its physical and spatial characteristics. Still, we need to understand how people interact with the new physical concept that had been introduced in this suburb. It is the purpose of this study to consider whether people's traditions and past experiences played a role in conveying meanings in external and internal domestic spaces, or a new experience was established.

What is crucial for this study is to know those cultural meanings that people ascribed to the new physical forms and the pattern of people's behaviour in the external and internal environment and their associated physical configurations. As has been mentioned earlier, the *fereej* was used by inhabitants of the traditional home environment as a mechanism to identify groups in the home environment. This system was very deeply connected to people's daily lifestyle and was very compatible with every person's role in society. Also, it was compatible with the physical characteristics of the traditional home environment. The question is to what extent the isolated *hotas* enabled people to reconstruct their *fereej*s in *Assalhiyyah*.

The *homola* system continued in *Assalhiyyah* suburb. Compared to the traditional system, the three levels of relationships, primary, intermediate and communal, continued in the new development because, as we have said, several extended families had moved collectively from *Arrif'a* to *Assalhiyyah*. Starting with the concept of resistance, what happened in *Assalhiyyah* can be considered the first resistance by the people of Hofuf to change. Despite the fact that new physical planning had been applied, people still perceptually expressed their traditions and experiences. In fact, people not only resisted the perceptual change but also they continued their social systems and tried very hard to make the physical environment compatible with their values and lifestyle. Maybe one of the factors that enabled people to interact actively with the physical environment was the flexibility that enabled people to subdivide their *hotas* and create their own external domestic spaces.

There was a need to develop the *fereej* system for *Assalhiyyah* society to satisfy the need of the extended families. However, as we have noticed, physically, *Assalhiyyah* was mainly

¹⁵ From the interviews people mentioned that it was impossible for them to create the sabats between *hotas* because of the width of the streets. Rapoport (1969) indicates that building materials had a strong influence on the house form. He states: 'The availability and choice

divided into rectangular blocks defined by streets on all sides. This new physical system was different from the traditional system that had no clear boundaries to define the masses of *fereej*s. The planning committee let people decide the internal form of their *hotas* and some of the extended families took more than one *hota*. This physical solution was used since the beginning, which paved the way for people to create more defined *fereej*s either within or between *hotas*.

The physical demarcation between *hotas* did not mean that the social homogeneity that characterised traditional society changed in *Assalhiyyah*. The concept of *fereej* worked as a system of expressing group identity and continued in *Assalhiyyah* in several forms: firstly as complete *hota* as one physical unit, occupied in many cases by one *hamola*. In such a case the *hota* by itself constituted the *fereej* and identified the family itself.¹⁶ For example, several informants mentioned that the roof route was usually found within the *hota* houses if the members of the same *hamola* or related *hamolas* occupied them. Secondly, in some cases one extended family occupied two or more *hotas* and formed one big *fereej* such as *fereej AlMubarak*. The *hota* in some cases consisted of two or more *fereej*s. This occurred with the small families who moved individually from old Hofuf (Fig.8.4).

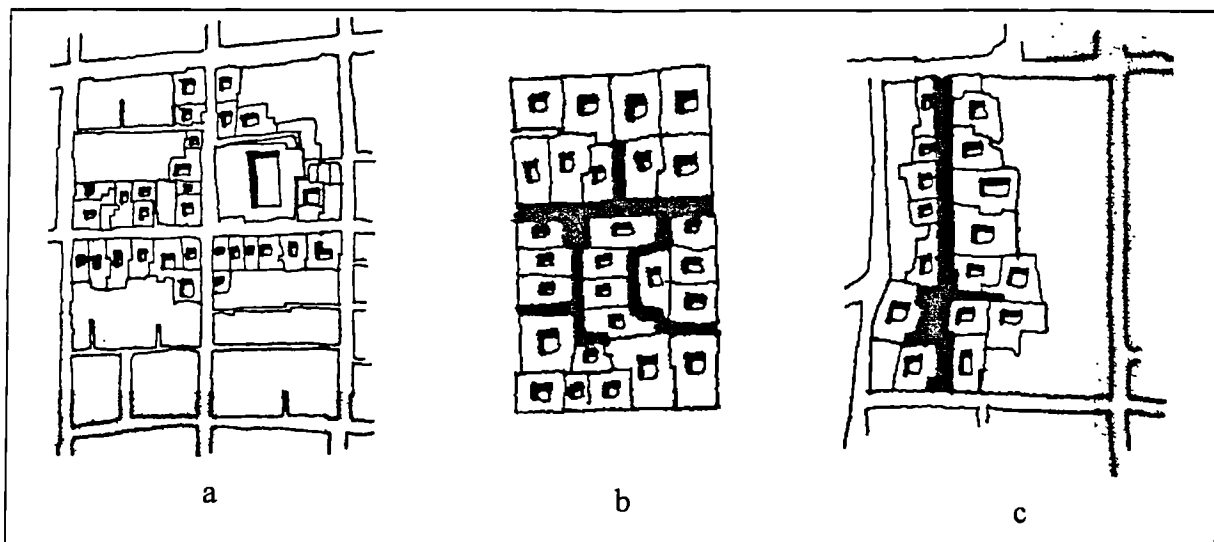


Fig.8.4: a) *Fereej* developing in the edge of several *hotas*. b) *Fereej* occupying a complete *hota*. c) *Fereej* developing inside one *hota*. Source: Fieldwork (based on several interviews and Aerial map (1985), Municipality of Al-Hasa).

The interesting point here is that street organisation in these *hotas* was developed to satisfy the need for identification by these small families. For example in some *hotas* we found two main *sikkas*, each *sikka* representing one small *fereej*. Also, the inhabitants had established

of materials and construction techniques in an architectural situation will greatly influence and modify the form of the building.' (p. 104).

¹⁶ For example there was *hotat Alboday*. The name of the family was attached to the *hota* as people used to do in the traditional *fereej*.

*fereej*s in the intersections of the main road. Those houses which were located in the corner of each block were considered potential zones for the *fereej* to be developed. This type of *fereej* is not limited only to those corner houses but it may extend to include several houses in all directions. In this case social bonds aggregated the physical demarcations of *hotas*.

The inhabitants who moved to *Assalhiyyah* maintained their traditional collective perceptual and associational identities. For example, one of informants explained how he defined his *fereej*. He moved from the traditional quarter of *Arrif'a* to *Assalhiyyah* after 1940. Originally his *hamola* had its *hotas*. When he moved to the area he immediately defined his own *fereej* because he constructed his house in his family empty *hota*. To understand how and why he defined his own *fereej*, we tried to reconstruct his case (Fig.8.5). His house A is located in a corner zone in the block. In the opposite corner is a related house B (from another related *hamola*). When he moved to the area, already two main *fereej*s had been established (his and his related *hamolas*). He immediately defined his own *fereej*, but he also retained strong ties with his related area. Later when other people from different families moved to the area he did not consider them as members of his *fereej* although they were physically very close.

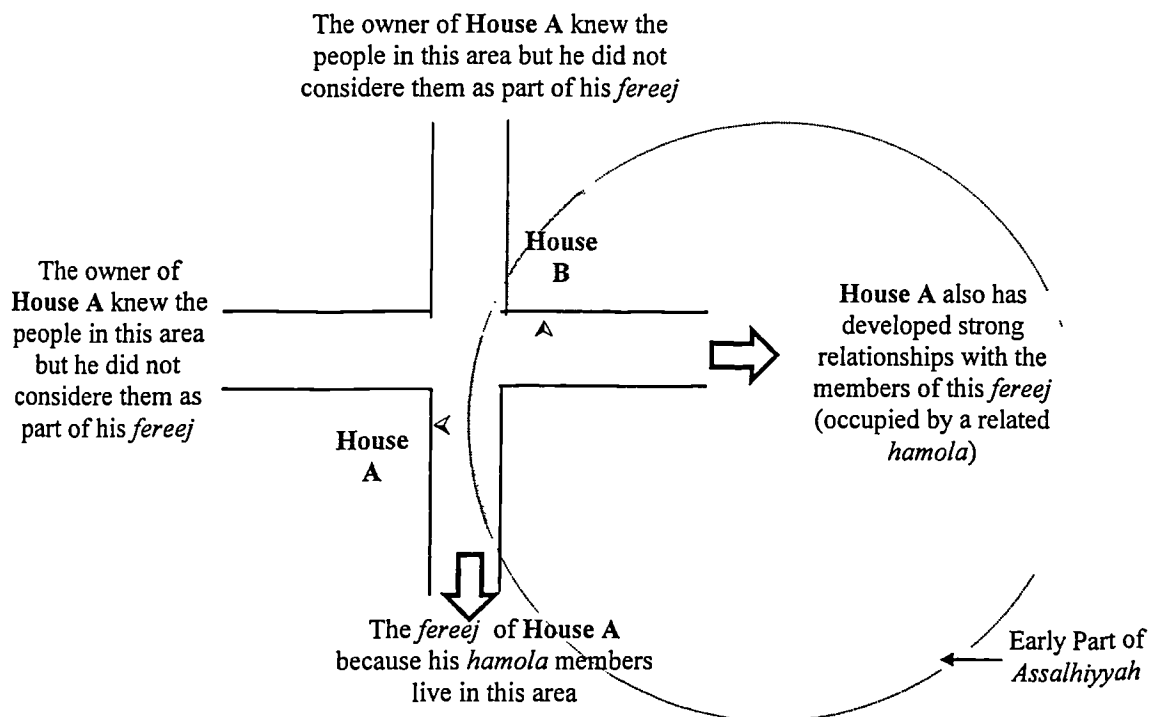


Fig.8.5: Development of the *fereej* system in *Assalhiyyah* neighbourhood. Source: Fieldwork

The desire to maintain the traditional perceptual and associational identities was not limited to the external space only; the house was completely traditional. In *Assahiyyah* all the three traditional house types existed, *majlis* with a courtyard, two storeys height *majlis* hall, and upstairs *majlis* (Fig.8.6).¹⁷ A complete traditional life style existed in the new neighbourhood. The rituals and ceremonies of the male reception spaces and family spaces continued without any change.¹⁸

In Chapter VI, we discussed territorial behaviour in old Hofuf. We have mentioned that the *Assalhiyyah* was considered by local people in Hofuf as the fourth old quarter. The inhabitants of the *Assalhiyyah* behaved as one group when they interacted with other quarters in the old city. This enhanced the sense of belonging not only to the new neighbourhood but also to the whole city (see Fig.6.11).

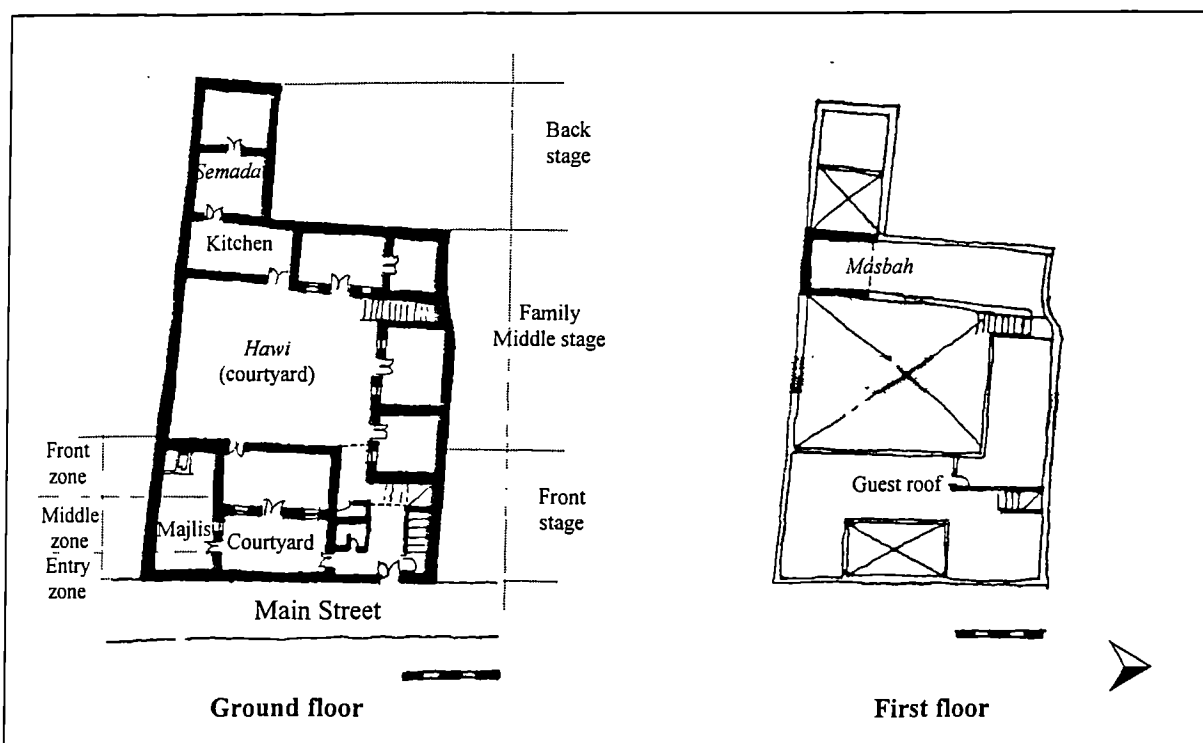


Fig.8.6: A traditional house in *Assalhiyyah*. Source: Fieldwork.¹⁹

We can argue here that the new physical form did not stop the inhabitants of *Assalhiyyah* from using their traditions and past experiences. This strong continuity was attributed to two main reasons. Firstly, it is the people themselves who select the location, form, and organisations of their new settlement. The second reason is that people moved and

¹⁷ The upstairs *majlis* type had developed in both old Hofuf and *Assalhiyyah* in the first half of the twentieth century.

¹⁸ From the interview with the original inhabitants of *Assalhiyyah* (many families left *Assalhiyyah* in the late 1980's to a new neighbourhood called *Albusairah*) we found that a complete traditional lifestyle had continued in the new suburb. For example, the division of large houses into small ones; the *shufa'a*; definition and naming of the external spaces in the *fereej*; naming of the internal spaces in the house had continued.

¹⁹ The scale bar in all floor plans indicates 5m.

reconstructed their previous environment collectively. Even those who moved later in 1940s had their own lands beside their extended families, which in consequence became members in the community immediately.

However, we need to distinguish here between those who moved later but had their *fereej*, and those small families who moved as individuals. In the former case people only decided to remain longer in their traditional areas while their extended families left *Arrif'a* to *Assalhiyyah*. In the latter case, they had no extended families or they came from several traditional *fereej*s which took a longer time to establish their new *fereej* in *Assalhiyyah*. In both cases, the collective perceptual identity was established immediately because they applied their traditional images and technique to building their houses (Fig.8.7).

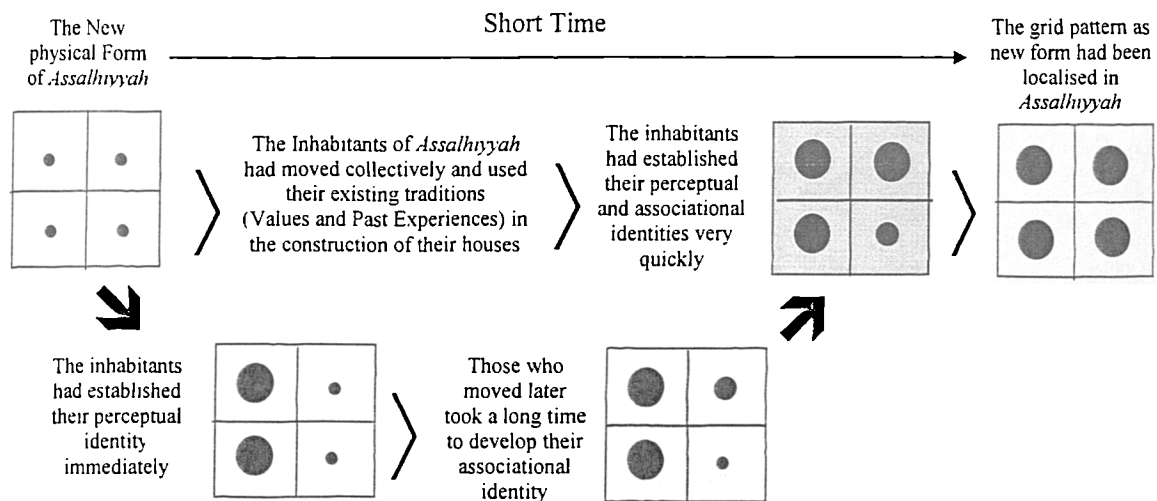


Fig.8.7 : Reconstruction of perceptual and associational identities in *Assalhiyyah*

8.2.2 THE POST-OIL NEIGHBOURHOODS (1940-60)

The oil age began in the Hofuf area in 1938, and many people from Hofuf worked in the industry from that time onwards. Up to 1940, the city had seen no major changes, with the exception of the development of the *Assalhiyyah* neighbourhood.²⁰ This new era had a profound influence on the suburbs which were built between 1940 and 1960, since it was not just physical external appearances which were now being influenced, but matters of lifestyle as a whole.

The direct contact with western culture can largely be attributed to the attempts of Aramco to accommodate its American staff by building several camps between 1938 and 1944.²¹ Although these camps were erected in cities other than Hofuf, they introduced a new image and life pattern to the area, which subsequently influenced the native people's image and created a deep conflict between the physical environment and people's values and past experiences (Fig.8.8).

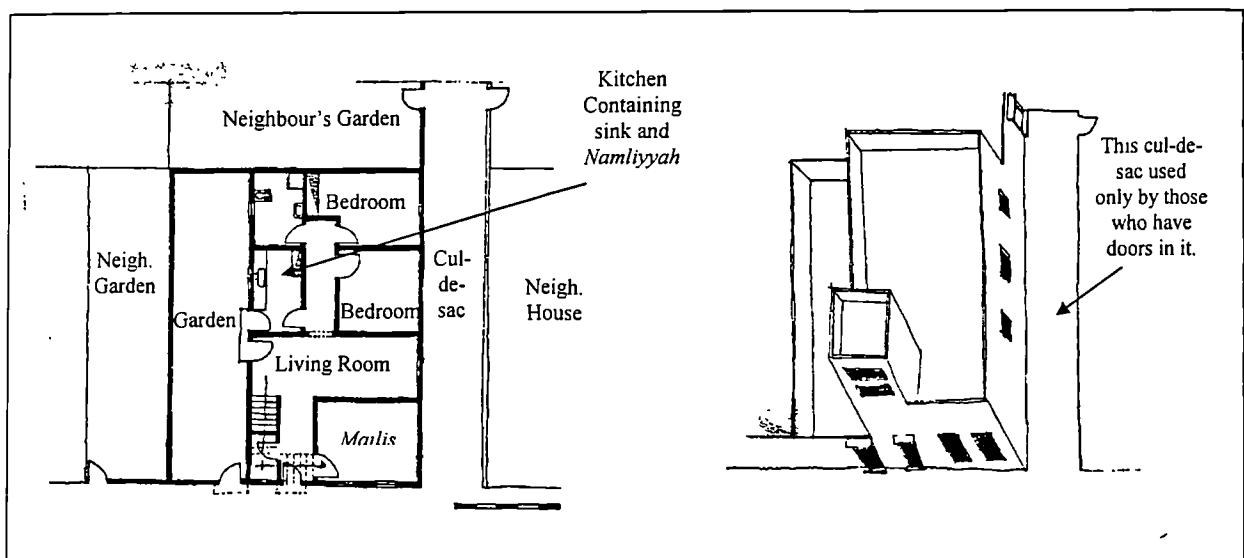


Fig.8.8: One of the Aramco's employees' houses in *Al'adama*, Dammam (1950s). Source: Based on interview and sketch by M. Al-Abdulla.²²

²⁰ Hofuf at that time was the capital of the Eastern region. For example, Shiber said 'By 1934 the province had only one principal city, Hofuf - the capital.' Shiber, S. G. (196), Op. Cit., p. 428. Until 1940, the city had no major changes except the construction of the main market *Al-Qaysariyyah* and some buildings such as *Alqusaibi* office. These buildings were part of King Abdulaziz scheme to rebuild Hofuf. See Mackie, (1924), Op. Cit., p. 197; Cheesman, O. B. E. (1926), Op. Cit., p. 73.

²¹ For more detail see Chapter II.

²² Mr. Alabulla is an architect. He lived in this house with his family between 1961-69. The family originally rented this house from an Aramco employee at that time called Abdularahman Al-Nagedi. Notice the bedroom placed to have an opening on the external domestic space which severely reduced the privacy of the family members. Mr. Al-Abdulla informed the researcher that they used a very thick and dark curtain to provide the level of privacy they needed. He also said that they rarely opened the windows or even enjoyed the daylight. One of the interesting things about Aramco's houses in the oil cities is that they introduced a new image about the kitchen and the toilet. For example in the kitchen, a sink and wooden cupboard called *Namliyyah* was introduced. The word *Namliyyah* maybe originally came from Egypt. Mr. Al-Abdulla (his mother and his wife were from Egypt) said that this word was well known there. The researcher asked him to ask his wife about this word and its use in Egypt. Her description was identical to what we used to have in Saudi Arabia in the 1950s, 60s and 70s.

The demand for oil after World War II increased the revenues from oil from 1.2 million dollars in 1943 to 212.2 million dollars in 1952 (Table 8.1). This encouraged government expenditure in urban development.²³ This is clearly seen from the establishment of the municipalities in 1937 to deal with urban organisation. This was followed by the road and buildings statute, which was initiated in 1941.²⁴ This statute was ‘elementary in nature and, in practice, they were seldom resorted to since the standards they established were the ones usually followed in traditional cities.’²⁵ This organisational attitude by the government influenced the new developments in Hofuf, especially those in the 1950s. For example, the regulations indicated that newly opened street must ‘not exceed the following width: main streets, not less than 15 m.; secondary streets, not less than 8 to 12 m.; and lanes, not less than 4 to 6 m.’²⁶

Table 8.1: Saudi Arabia’s revenue from oil between 1943 and 1952

Year	Production (million barrels)	Revenue (million US\$)
1943	4.9	1.2
1944	7.8	6.8
1945	21.3	4.3
1946	59.9	12.0
1947	89.9	18.0
1948	142.9	52.5
1949	147.0	39.2
1950	199.5	56.7
1951	278.0	110.0
1952	301.9	212.2

Source: Al-Elawy, I. (1976), Op. Cit., p. 245.

Because Hofuf is the nearest city to the oil cities Dammam and Khobar²⁷, the impact of new western images was very strong but, in general we can say that in 1940s urban change in Hofuf was slow. Maybe the most important regulation that influenced the semi-planned suburb in Hofuf was the land distribution system which was issued for the two new cities, Dammam and Khobar, in 1938. This system reflected the early attempt by the government to become involved in the built environment. It introduced, for the first time, building licences and building

²³ As we discussed in Chapter II, the government planned and constructed two big urban projects in 1950s in Riyadh (*Annasriyyah* and *Almalaz*).

²⁴ The Royal order in 1937 limited the role of the municipality to ‘the supervision of the town organization, their beautification, and the work needed to result in their having an enhanced scenic setting’ also the municipality has ‘the authority of general supervision for the public interest and for the betterment of utilities and services’. Al-Hathloul, S. (1981), Op. Cit., p. 191.

²⁵ *Ibid.*, 194.

²⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 194.

²⁷ With the exception of Qatif which became part of Dammam metropolitan.

regulations. It confirmed the height of building to one storey except those built on the sea front, and defined the materials that should be used in construction by prohibiting the use of wood and palm leaves as main materials and encouraging the use of rocks and cement.²⁸ Although this system was limited to the new cities, the inhabitants of Hofuf were influenced by physical images that had resulted from applying this system. They subdivided their land, for the first time, and sold them as individual plots for residential purposes.

At this stage, it is very important for this study to understand how the new developments in Hofuf were influenced by what was happening in the nearby cities, Dammam and Khobar. Tables 8.2 and 8.3 show the number of Aramco employees who came from Al-Hasa and also indicate that until 1962, the number of employees from Al-Hasa who lived with their families during the working week was not more than 1.6%. This indicates that in the 1940s and 50s Al-Hasa employees only worked in the oil camps but they nevertheless lived and constructed their houses in Al-Hasa. This attitude had a very deep impact on the development of the residential settlements in Hofuf. New images of house form were introduced by those employees, which indirectly influenced the residents of Hofuf at that time.

Table 8.2: Percentage of Aramco employees who originally came from Al-Hasa (1962 and 1968)

Location of House residence	1962		1968	
	Estimated no. of employees	%	Estimated no. of employees	%
Qatif Oasis	3,473	32.4	2,790	31
Al-Hasa Oasis (Hofuf)	2,710	25.3	2,332	24
Company Town Site	1,736	16.2	2,429	21.8
Dammam	974	9.1	896	11.4
Khobar	1,101	10.3	691	8.8
Tarut	466	4.3	340	3.5
Other	254	2.4	137	1.4
Total	10,714	100.0	9,615	100.0

Source: Shea, T. W. (1972), Op. Cit., p. 248.

²⁸ Al-Subai'ee, A. (1987), Op. Cit., pp. 146-47. ; Al-Said, F. (1992), Op. Cit., pp. 219-220.

Table 8.3: Proportion of Aramco's employees living with their own household during the work week (1962 and 1968)

Place of Family Residence	1962	1968
Dammam	87.0	100.0
Tarut	0.0	100.0
Qatif Osis	59.8	88.0
Khobar	88.5	86.9
Company town site	85.3	74.2
Al-Hāsa Oasis (Hofuf)	1.6	24.3
Total	52.4	69.8

Source: Ibid., p. 249.

An informant was one of the early employees in Aramco (he is retired now) who built his house in one of the hybrid neighbourhoods (*Aththulaihiyyah*) early in the 1950s (Fig.8.9). The external facade of the house was similar to any villa in Dammam at that time but the plan of the house was a mix of new and old images. There was a setback at the front but there was also a courtyard in the centre of the house (Fig.8.). It was constructed completely with reinforced concrete. This house is considered an example of the Aramco's employee houses in Hofuf at that time. If we compare this house with the Aramco's houses in Dammam (see Fig.8.8) we will find that in the Hofuf case, there was inspiration from the external image of the new houses. This was not the case in the spatial organisation. In Hofuf, Aramco's employees mobilised their long standing experiences which led to a severe refinement of the new form. A completely new house type, a mix of old and new images and spatial concepts, was developed in Hofuf at that time.

The indirect impact of Aramco's urban development on the residential settlement in Hofuf in 1940s and 50s was very clear. It may be considered the first real challenge for people's collective identity because what happened in *Assalhiyyah* was very minor compared to this situation. In the post-oil residential settlements, new concepts were introduced to Hofuf not only at the macro level, but they went very deep to influence the house spatial organisation and its external image. A mix of continued and new traditions, experiences, and images worked together to create the collective perceptual and associational identities of the home environment at that time. It is very important for this study to understand how people resisted and localised the new forms. The following discussion aims to build a spatio-temporal path for the

development of the home environment in 1940s and 50s with special emphasis on the *fereej* system and the house form.

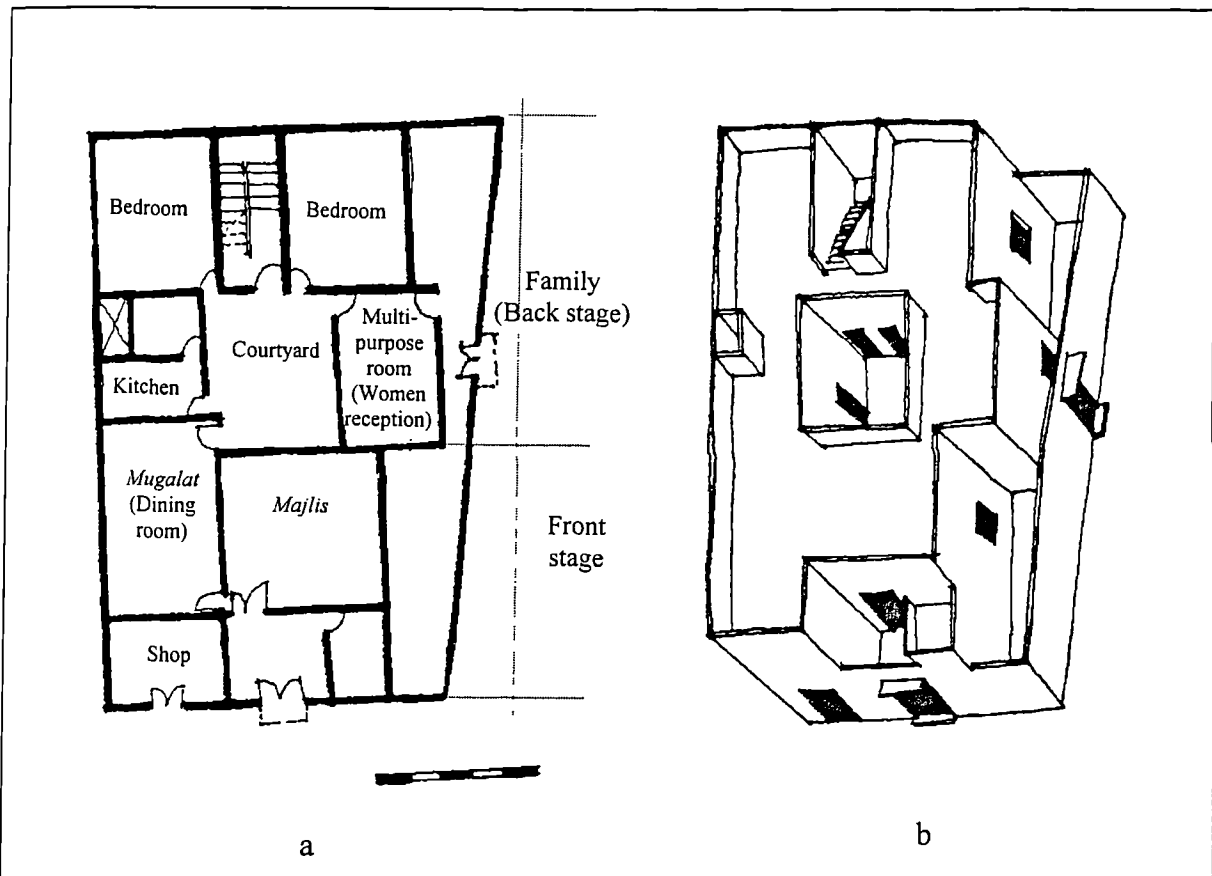


Fig.8.9: a) A house built by an Aramco employee in 1950s (*Aththulaithiyyah* neighbourhood). b) Isometric view shows the open spaces in the house (old and new images). Source: Fieldwork.

8.2.2.1 Formation of the Post-Oil Neighbourhoods (1940-60)

By 1940, Hofuf had started to expand from two directions, the south and southwest direction and northeast direction. At the beginning a large new settlement called *Arrigyah* appeared south of the city wall. The name *Arrigyah* used to define the southern suburbs from the northeastern suburb, which is called *Alfadliyyah*. In addition to the Bedouin settlers, there was interurban migration from the old city towards the new suburbs in the south and the north. This study concentrates more in *Arrigyah* suburb and specifically on those settlements, which were constructed by people who originally moved from old Hofuf. This is not to say that the study

ignores the northern suburb, *Alfadliyyah*, but it has passed through almost the same process as the areas of local migrants in *Arrigayyah*.²⁹

Arrigayyah was a very big suburb and it was clear from the beginning that this name was continued to indicate the old location, the Bedouin camp, which later became a permanent residential settlement. It is important to mention that this suburb was developed over three decades. The aerial photograph in 1960 shows that there were four to five isolated settlements developed in this suburb (Fig.8.).³⁰ In reality every settlement took some time to grow. This can be clearly understood from Vidal's description of *Arrigayyah* suburb in 1955. He said:

'The southern and western borders are not defined. It seems likely that this suburb developed in a roughly concentric fashion, starting at a point close to the water well. As one approaches al-Ruqayyiqah from the south or west, one encounters first a series of tents pitched along the edges of the settlement. Proceeding towards the centre, one sees a series of compounds consisting of a mud or rubble wall courtyard with a variable number of *barastis*. In the central part of the community, these *barastis* have for the most part been replaced by permanent mud or masonry construction.'³¹

What Vidal described, in reality, was more than one settlement. It is true that the Bedouin camp was on its way to transformation to a permanent residential settlement, but several permanent settlements had already developed around the old city. Those settlements were built by those who moved from the old city at that time. He also indicated the house types that had been developed in this neighbourhood. The mud rubble system prevailed in the 1940s, while concrete blocks replaced it in 1950s.

Because local people liked to live close to the old city, most of the palm farms that existed around Hofuf had been transformed to residential settlements. At the beginning satellite suburbs appeared on the empty lands; then these suburbs expanded over the farms around them

²⁹ In the investigation of the physical transformation of *Arrigayyah* suburb, it is necessary to explain how this suburb came into existence. *Arrigayyah*, originally, was a camp used by Bedouin settlers from long time. Lorimer described *Arrigayyah* in 1908 as: 'a large camping ground always occupied by Bedouins of the poorer class; of these about 500 families are permanently resident and 1,000 more are added to their number in the hot weather.' Lorimer, J. (1908), Op. Cit., p. 650. By 1940, a major change had occurred to *Arrigayyah*; the previous camping ground started to change to a permanent suburb. Vidal noticed this change and described the area in 1952 as: 'In more recent times, another suburb of Hofuf has grown to considerable proportions. This is al-Ruqayyiqah, a former Bedouin camping ground just outside the southwest corner of Hofuf wall. Al-Ruqayyiqah, as regular suburb, is probably not more than fifteen years old, although a few scattered *barastis* had been built in this area for a longer time.' Vidal, F. S. (1955), Op. Cit., p. 93 (his italic). The word *barasti* or *barastag* refer to a type of houses mainly constructed from palm leaves (*jareed*).

³⁰ There were also small settlements, but we prefer to indicate those major settlements, which later formed distinct neighbourhoods. Three of these settlements were developed by local inhabitants (*Aththulathiyah*, *Almazrou'iyah* and *Almansouriyah*) while two settlements were developed by Bedouins (later the south settlement named by *Hay Almatar* while the south-west one kept the name of *Arrigayyah*).

³¹ Vidal, F. S. (1955), Op. Cit., p. 94 (his italics).

(Fig.8.10).³² By analysing the external physical characteristics of two settlements, *Aththulaithiyyah* and *Almazrou'iyyah*, we found that each neighbourhood had established a collective perceptual identity similar, to some extent, to the traditional home environment. This is because people had moved directly from the old city and the traditional construction technology still prevailing at that time.



Fig.8.10: Growth of the post-oil neighbourhoods. a) *Aththulaithiyyah* Neighbourhood in 1960 (scattered houses with predetermined streets and land size and shape). b) *Aththulaithiyyah* neighbourhood in 1967 (the *fereej* system had been established and the density of the area had increased). Notice how the green areas around the city had been abandoned to be used for residential purposes. Source: Based on Aerial photographs (1960 and 1967), Aramco.

In their spatial layout, these two neighbourhoods were similar to *Assalhiyyah*. The only difference was that the blocks in the later settlements were determined by local inhabitants who subdivided the inner land plots in every block and sold them to people before the construction of their houses.³³ This was the first time in Hofuf that land was subdivided and sold as individual plots. The flexible system that existed in *Assalhiyyah* had been vanished. This slowed down the reproducing of the *fereej* system in these areas because people had moved individually and in small groups (extended family or very closely related families). People in this case took a long time to define themselves in their home environment.

³² For example Al-Shuaibi (1976) described one of the semi-planned suburbs., *Aththulaithiyyah* neighbourhood. He said that it 'was a suburb, with date gardens, but the new expansion after 1950 joined it to the main town at the southern boundary of old Hofuf.' (p. 227).

³³ Al-Shuaibi (1976) has said that 'in Hofuf ... directly after 1950 some of the farmers burned or cut their plants and palms, and divided their land into smaller areas for the new urban areas of the towns, preferring to sell their land rather than to cultivate it.' (p. 228).

We used an aerial photograph from 1960 to compare *Assalhiyyah* and post-oil neighbourhoods. In the physical sense, it is difficult to differentiate between *Assalhiyyah* and these settlements. However, we find that *Assalhiyyah* had more inner streets and more cul-de-sacs. This was expected because people had maximum flexibility when they formed their *fereej* within and between *hotas*, while in the post-oil suburbs, people were not so free to organise their external domestic spaces because the land had been divided and the final shape of the external domestic space had been decided by the landlord.³⁴

It is necessary for this study to understand how the *fereej* system was reproduced in the post-oil neighbourhoods. Until the late 1940s, the wall of the old city was not demolished. The existence of the wall was used by the people of old Hofuf to define themselves from those who moved to outside areas. The local people considered the new developments outside the wall of the city not part of Hofuf.³⁵ Many people of Hofuf still joke about the name *albar* (desert) which they used for a long time to describe those neighbourhoods outside the old city.³⁶ Some of them said that they considered those who moved from the inner city 'mad people'.

Compared to *Assalhiyya*, the semi-planned neighbourhood passed through a longer time to establish a definite *fereej*. One of previous residents of *Almazrou'iyah* said that:

'There were no *fereej*s similar to what we had in the old quarter. Houses had appeared in our area in a very scattered manner. When we moved, a few houses existed here and there. The area took a long time to fill up. People did not move easily to the new areas because they call them *albar* (desert). When we decided to move from the old city, we selected a location for our house near the old area to feel security and to have connections with our relatives and friends.'

It is important to mention that the old city was very crowded at that time. People had no places to accommodate the increasing number of the *hamola* members. Despite that, people preferred to stay in the old city because they still had no alternative to reproduce their *fereej*s. What happened in *Assalhiyyah* was not possible in the 1940s and 50s because the availability of land

³⁴ The land subdivision system in those semi-planned suburbs was completely depended on the individual technological ability. In that sense, different from *Assalhiyyah* which had a central committee to control the land subdivision, the post-oil suburbs appeared less organised.

³⁵ This is supported by Vidal (1955) when he said 'Some people claim that Hofuf consists only of the three quarters [*Alkut, Anna'athil, and Arrifa*] ... and that neither al-Salihyah nor al-Ruqayyiqah, particularly the latter, can be considered parts of Hofuf. Although this statement might have some support, particularly from a historical point of view, we believe that this question is largely academic. To all intents and purposes, both al-Salihyah and al-Ruqayyiqah are administratively, geographically, and in the feeling of inhabitants themselves not independent settlements but fringe suburbs of Hofuf.' (p. 95). (The researcher's Italics)

³⁶ The city walls had been demolished in 1947. Al-Shuaibi, A. M. (1976), Op. Cit., p. 225.

was very limited, especially as most of the land around Hofuf was private farms. The land which was free in *Assalhiyyah* became very expensive and not everybody could afford to buy it.

Because the *fereej* system was vital for people's social life, the inhabitants of the post-oil neighbourhoods tried to create their own *fereej* system. Although the traditional clustering that existed in the traditional and *Assalhiyyah* quarters had almost disappeared in these settlements, a kind of *fereej* system developed through the interaction of the newcomers with each other, which led to a reproduction of the traditional lifestyle in the new areas. The collective background and lifestyle helped people to increase the social bond in the area. Also, in some parts of these neighbourhoods collective development occurred, especially in the 1950s, when a number from one *fereej* in *Anna'athil* moved collectively to *Almazrou'iyyah* and occupied land originally owned by one of the *hamola* members who preferred to sell it to his relatives. Still the reproduction of the traditional *fereej* system in these two neighbourhoods was very limited because the main *hamolas* in Hofuf still persisted in living in the old *fereej*s.

8.2.2.2 Dwelling in the Hybrid *Fereej*

Because the block was subdivided, the shape of the house became more regular. However, in the spatial sense, the house kept its three parts, the guest, the family, and the animal spaces. The transitional spaces, the *dehreez* and internal *sabat* continued as regulator spaces to control and isolate the three parts from each other. It is obvious that the house became larger. This can be seen from the large number of *muraba'as* and *liwans* in the family zone. It is clear that the house in the 1940s became more functional because the family part occupied most of the house. The male reception space was minimised to the *majlis* hall and its entrance (Fig.8.11).

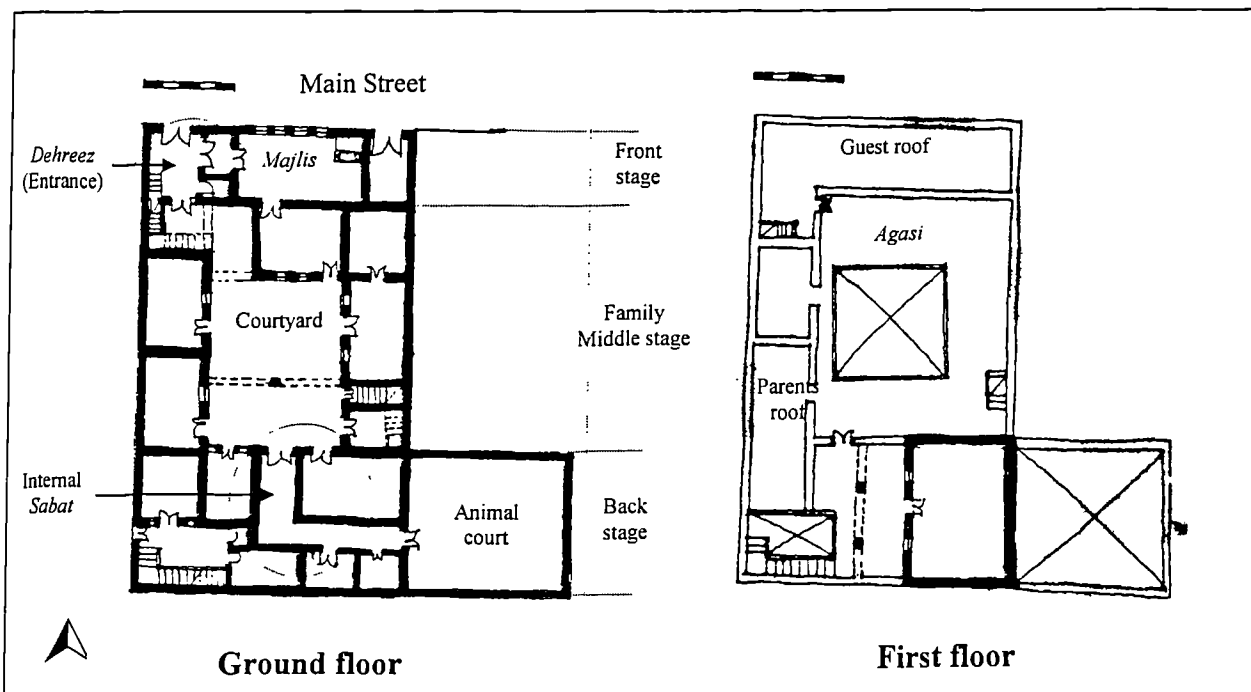


Fig.8.11: A house in *Almazrou'iyyah* constructed in 1940s. Source: Fieldwork.

The traditional names of the internal spaces continued in the hybrid house of 1940s. The external spaces had some changes because the physical characteristics of the external domestic space had been changed completely. The hierarchy of spaces almost disappeared. No cul-de-sacs, *sabats*, or *barahas* were found in the post-oil neighbourhood.³⁷ The main *sikkas* became main streets and were transformed from semi-public to public spaces. It is difficult to say that the control over the streets disappeared. A number of informants mentioned that they considered the streets around their houses as the boundary of their *fereej*. However, this does not mean that they had control over them like they had in the traditional *fereej*.

The *majlis* of the hybrid house of the 1940s was a single storey high and was located in the ground floor. It was linked with the external spaces by a number of windows opening directly on to the main street. This was the first time that private house in Hofuf had contained a window opening at ground level, a change which resulted in direct contact with external spaces. Now, guests could see and hear the activities that might take place in the external spaces, and those in external spaces could see and hear guests. The inhabitants of the hybrid neighbourhoods were encouraged to reach such a solution partly because of the need to create a closer association with neighbours since the *fereej* system had not yet developed in the area. A further reason for this change was that people were influenced by the new house image in nearby cities and by the design, in Hofuf itself, of Aramco employees, which had openings at the ground floor level (see Fig.2.1, 8.8, & 8.9).

The *dehreez*, with its two zones, continued in the hybrid house to link the *majlis* with the external domain. The *dehreez almajlis* (the guest zone) opened to the street but was sharply separated from the family zone by a wooden door. This increased the role of the *majlis* in the neighbourhood as a communal space. The gateway, with its gypsum decoration, continued its traditional role (Fig.8.12). The whole composition of the front facade indicates the continuity of the traditional perceptual identity, but with the adoption of a new form (Fig.8.13).

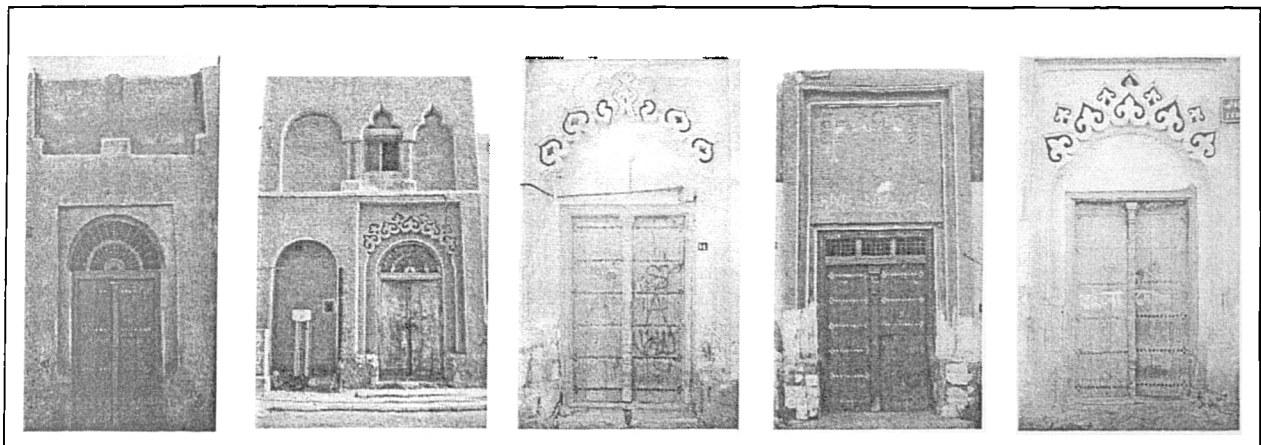


Fig.8.12: A number of hybrid house gateways constructed in the 1940s. Source: Fieldwork.

The *majlis* continued in its function as the front stage in the house. The hall of the *majlis* was divided, as in the traditional *majlis*, into three zones: the front zone which contain the coffee place (*wijaq*), the middle zone, and the entry zone. The perceptual and associational meaning of

³⁷ Some cul-de-sacs appeared in some cases when some houses were divided in the 1960s, but these cases were very limited.

the *majlis* continued with very minimum change, except the height and the way that the *majlis* was linked with external domestic space. It is possible to say that there was a complete continuity for the rituals and ceremonies of the male reception spaces at that time (Fig.8.14).

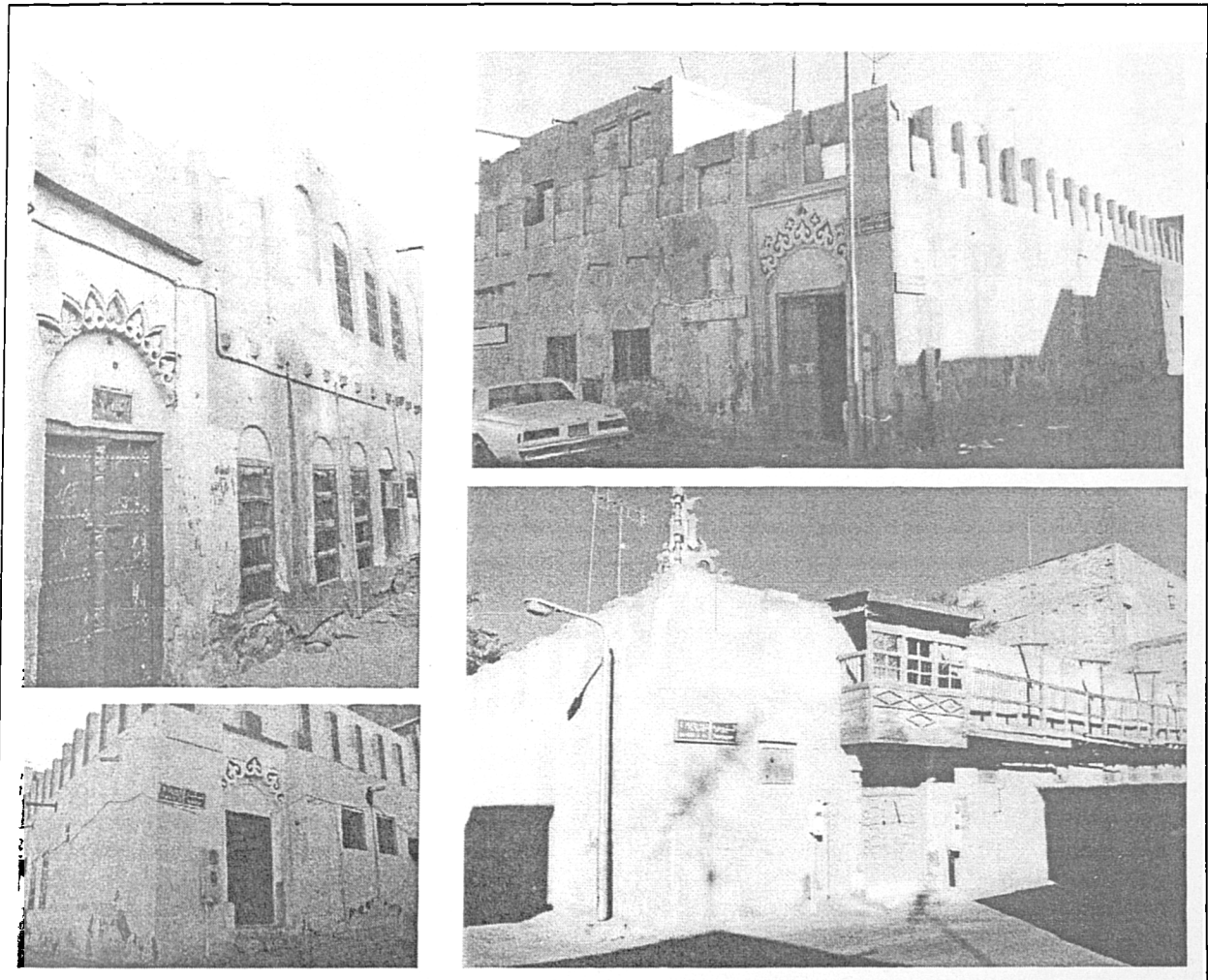


Fig.8.13: The main facades of a number of houses constructed in 1940s (continuity of the traditional perceptual identity). Source: Fieldwork.

Because the *majlis* was the most symbolic space in the house, it was continuously linked with external space and worked as a connecting point between the family and the whole community. This role continued in the hybrid house. The family spaces continued without any change except that there was an increase in the number of the rooms in this part (Fig.8.15). Also, new equipment had been introduced to the kitchen such as the gas cooker, which meant a *daka* had to be built to hold the cooker. However, the location of the kitchen remained in the internal *sabat*.

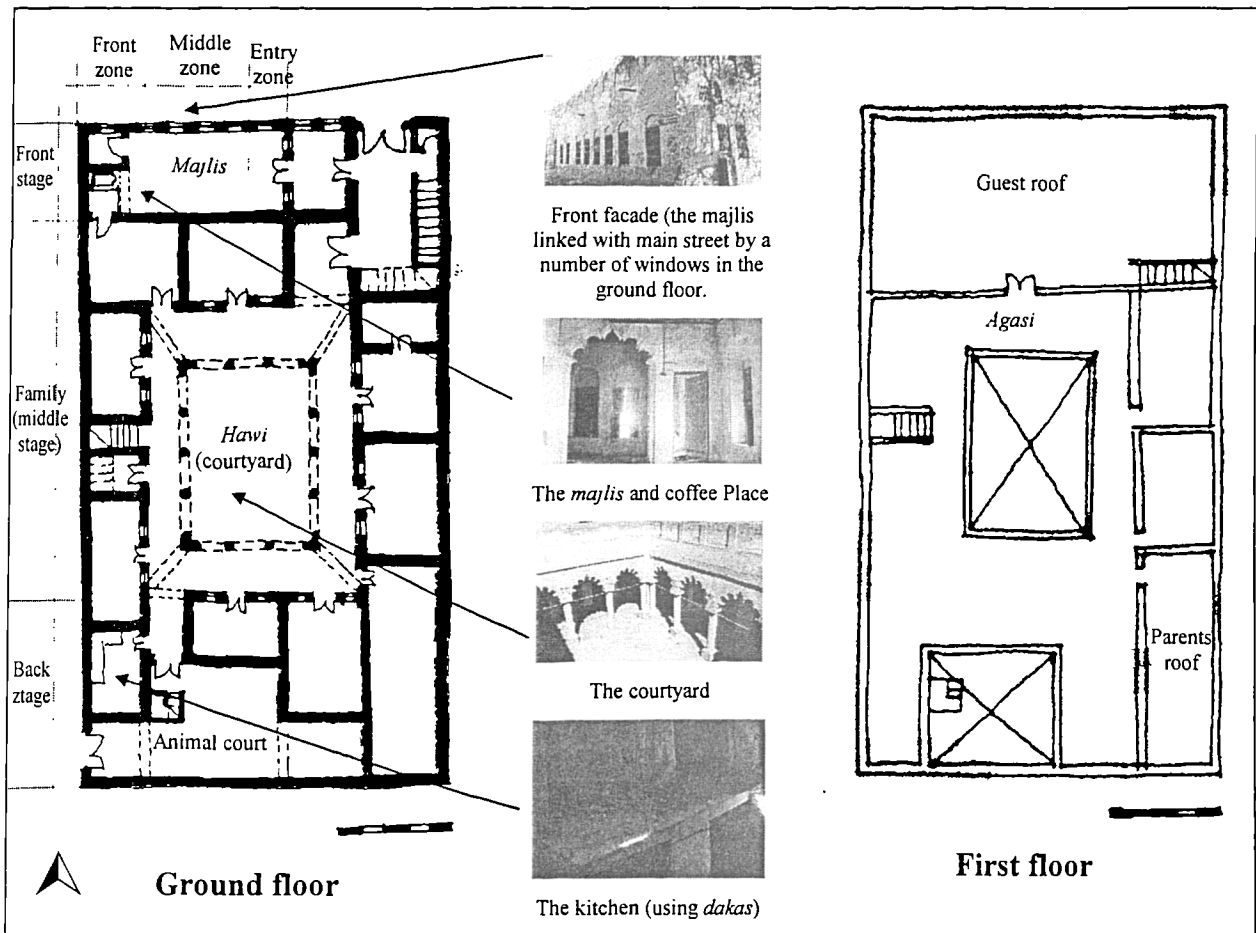


Fig. 8.14: A house in *Almazrou'iyah* constructed in 1940s. Source: Fieldwork.

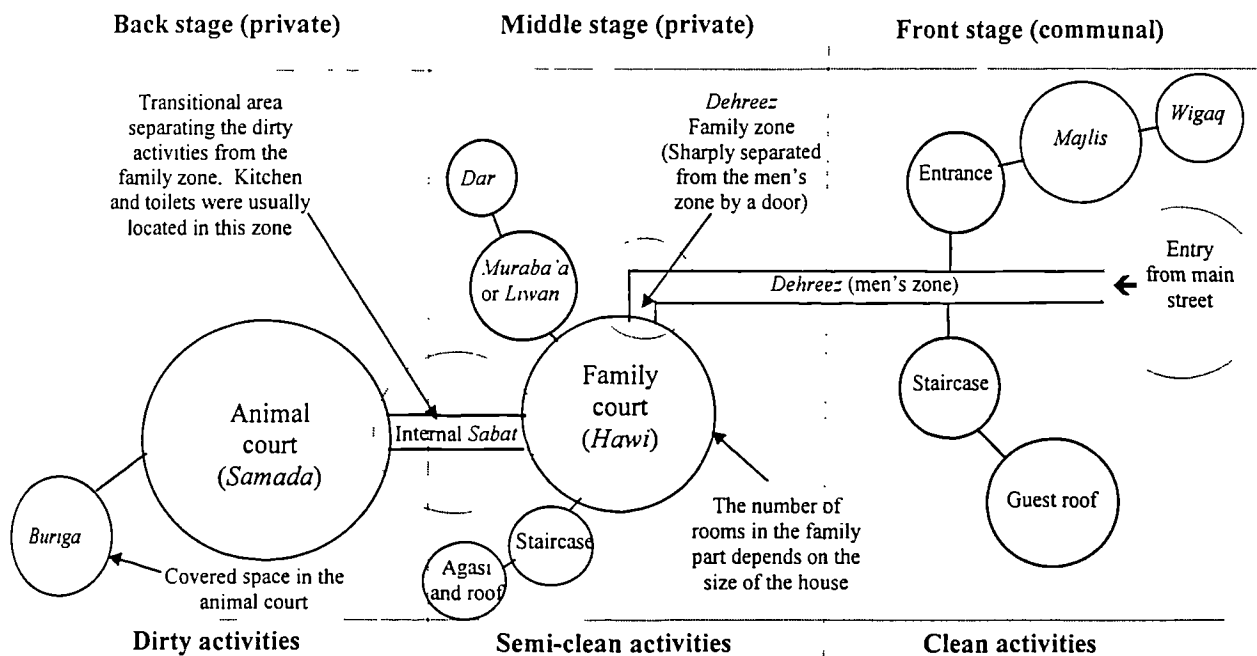


Fig. 8. 15: The organisation of internal domestic space in the hybrid house of 1940s.

Minimising the male reception spaces and changing the level of association with the community support the finding that the perceptual identity of the male reception spaces is more dynamic than its associational one.³⁸ However, the few changes that had occurred in the house in the 1940s were mainly an attempt towards absorbing more changes in the following years.

This can be seen in the houses of the 1950s when the animal space in the house almost disappeared. Different from 1940s houses, the hybrid houses of the 1950s contain only two parts, guest and family spaces. The animal space was transferred to the roof or the rear setback (Fig.8.16). This type of house is called by local people of Hofuf *nuss-musallah* (half concrete). Its walls, columns, and beams are constructed with reinforced concrete while the roof is made of wood (*murab'a*). The local people differentiate between this type and the other old types by calling the houses in the traditional areas, *Assalhiyyah*, and hybrid houses of the 1940s 'Bayt Arabi' Arabic house. This naming can be seen as clear realisation by people of the new images and their challenge to their traditional identity.

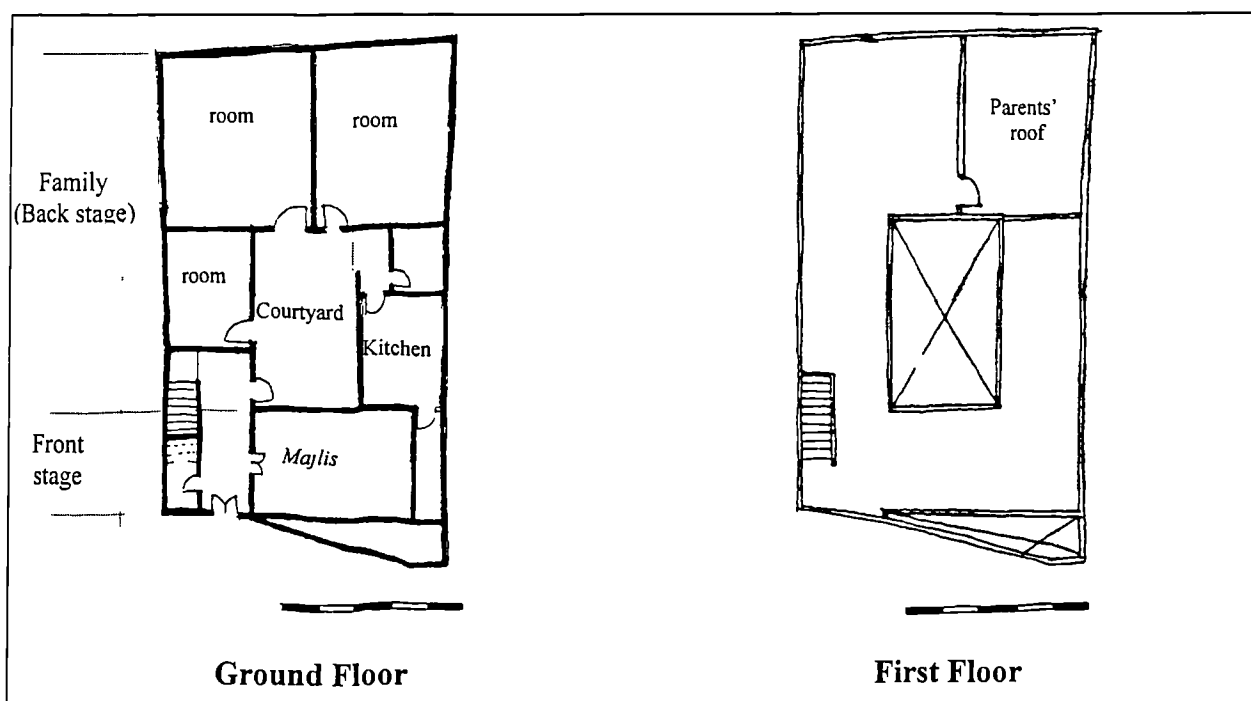


Fig.8.16: A house constructed in the late 1950s strongly influenced by the new images that had been introduced by Aramco's employees houses at that time. Source: Fieldwork.

³⁸ See chapter vii.

The threat to identity at that time can be seen clearly from the name that is used by local people to differentiate the house type used in the old city, *Assalhiyyah*, and hybrid suburbs in the 1940s and 50s, from the new house type that started to appear in the city and was mainly influenced by the western house type. The *Arabi* house type reflected the need for Hofuf's people to differentiate between the local house type that reinforced their identity and values from those strange house types that started to attack their home environment (Fig.17).

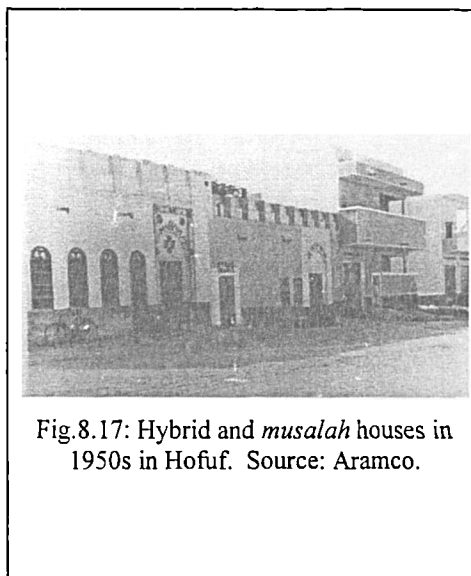


Fig.8.17: Hybrid and *musalah* houses in 1950s in Hofuf. Source: Aramco.

We should admit here that this latter type existed in the city since the early 1950s, but it was limited to the Aramco's employees and some well-to-do people who preferred to build their houses using reinforced concrete. For example, one household in *Anna'athil* decided to demolish its traditional house in 1953 and build another one using reinforced concrete (Fig.8.18). Because the family had a very large house, the whole traditional *majlis* was kept and linked later with the new concrete house. Reinforced concrete became an important material for housing construction after the 1950s. People used it as a symbol of modernity and sophistication. One of the informants, for example, said that some people in the 1960's and 70's built their houses in concrete blocks and left them without plastering because they believed that it reflects a prestigious image for their houses.

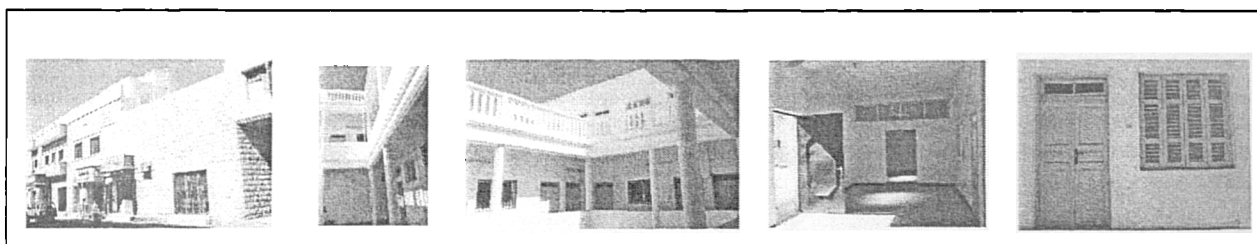


Fig.8.18: A house in *Anna'athil* built in 1953 (concrete and balconies with courtyard in the centre of the house). Source: Fieldwork.

The hybrid house of 1950s was a mix of traditional and new perceptual images but it was more traditional in its spatial organisation. Although the three parts that distinguished the private house in Hofuf were discontinued in this type, a partial continuity had been maintained by people when they retained the guest and the family spaces. The animal space disappeared, which led to end of the end of the internal *sabat*. The *majlis* remained in the front stage but the entrance

became one zone. Placing a door to separate the entrance from the family courtyard continued the sharp segregation between guest and family parts. The family spaces continued with minimum change, except that the kitchen became part of the family part and opened directly on to the courtyard (Fig.8.19).

Resistance to the new forms and images was very high in the hybrid houses. People had persisted in the old images and lifestyle. Even when a new form became a symbol of social status (concrete gate) they integrated it with a traditional form. This massive challenge to the traditional perceptual and associational identity led to an unstable situation for the house form in both its external and internal characteristics. The house facade in the 1950s, for example, indicate this tension between old and new in people's mind: a concrete gate with traditional windows and loggias, a traditional gate with front setback (Fig.8.20). This situation can also be seen in the spatial organisation when the animal space completely disappeared by the time of the late 1950s houses. It is clear that a new identity for the private house in Hofuf has emerged since that time.

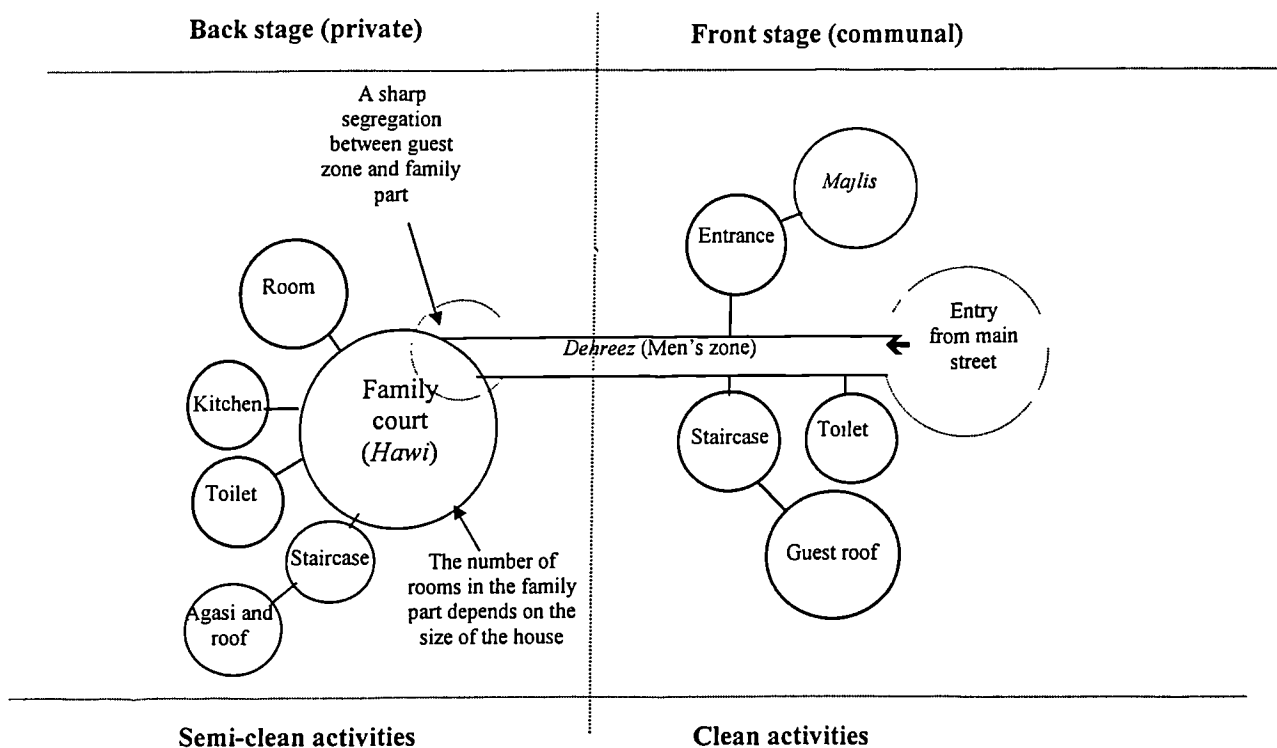


Fig.8.19: The organisation of internal domestic space in the hybrid house of late 1950s.

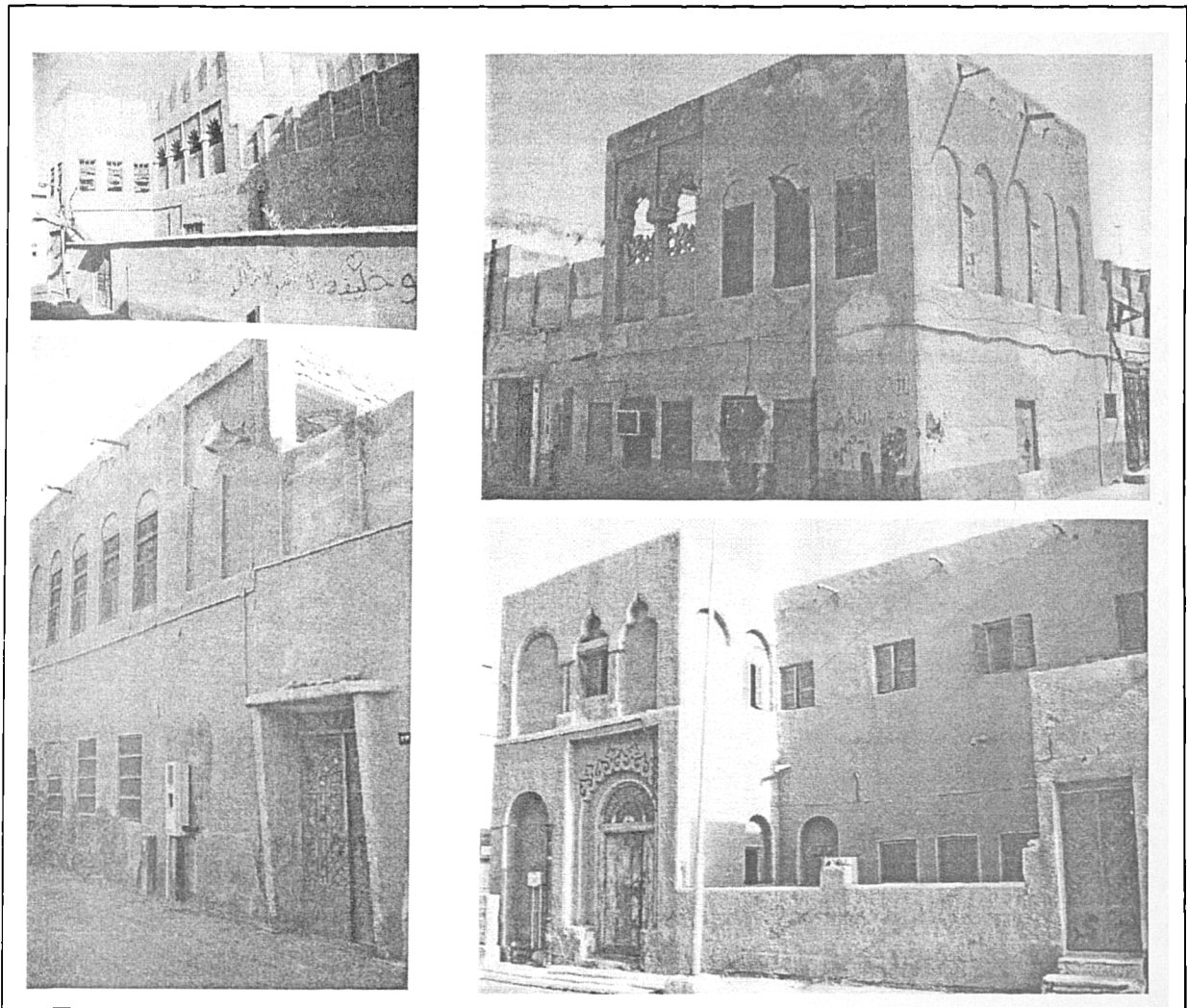


Fig.8.20: A number of hybrid houses contain traditional and new perceptual elements in the main facade. Source: Fieldwork.

One of the clear perceptual changes in the hybrid house is that the ornamentation became very minimal even in the main symbolic spaces such as the gateway, *majlis*, and courtyard. The *ruwshan* with its decorative and symbolic role completely disappeared. The *rusana* continued but in its utilitarian form. We can attribute these visual changes in the hybrid house type of the 1940s and 50s to the deterioration of traditional craftsmanship in the city of Hofuf. All traditional crafts were influenced by the new cheap imported articles. As a matter of fact, traditional crafts in Hofuf had been challenged by the large western companies since the nineteenth century.³⁹ However, people at that time were isolated and had very few commercial activities which maintained several crafts. This situation changed after the discovery of oil. In

the 1950s, Abul Ela indicated that traditional crafts in Hofuf have ‘declined ... and only few people are engaged in them because of an abundance of cheap, imported articles’.⁴⁰

This study tries to understand the process of identification in the home environment. We have already noted in the foregoing discussion that a new identity had started to develop in the home environment of Hofuf, albeit that it is difficult to describe this new identity in detail since it was just emerging. It can be said, however, that people at the time we are considering used their past experiences to evaluate all new forms and concepts that had been introduced to their city (Fig.8.21). The traditional associational identity continued almost as it was, though with some changes in the rituals of presenting coffee. In fact the coffee area disappeared in the houses of late 1950s, and although the ritual of serving coffee did not die out completely, this may be seen as symbolic of the new era. The traditional life style had been challenged by the changes all over Saudi Arabia, when many adults joined the government and took private jobs, which altered the daily routines and made it difficult for people to find time to gather and entertain in the *majlis*. Despite the above, however, in a general way the impact of the new images was limited to those who were directly influenced by western concepts at that time.⁴¹

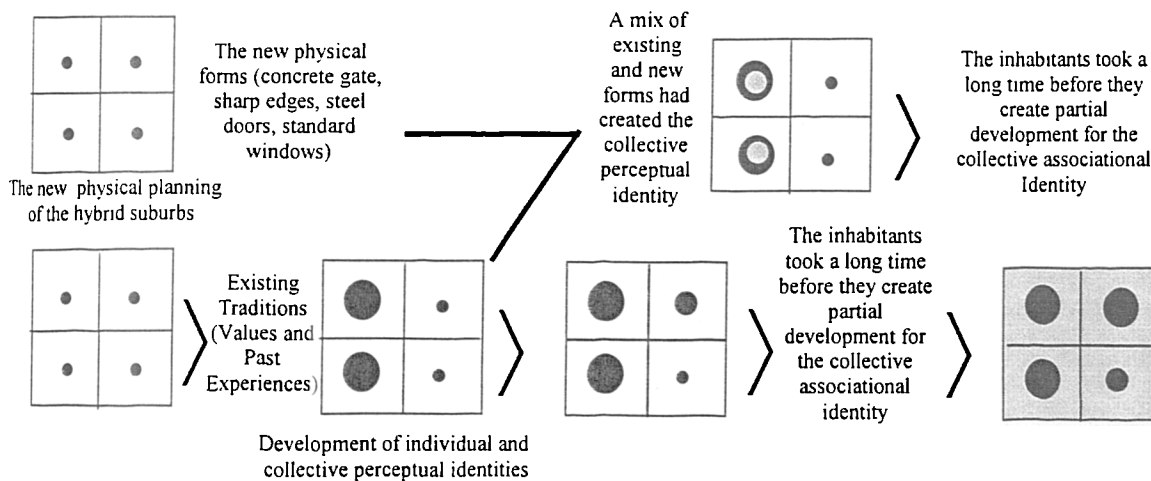


Fig.8.21: Process of identification in the hybrid neighbourhoods.

³⁹ Cheesman (1926) for example indicated that some of the traditional crafts in Hofuf had deteriorated. This was because ‘English commercial firms have gone to a country and found out what the people liked, and have produced it in exactly the form desired and at a much cheaper price than it can be made for locally.’ (P. 79).

⁴⁰ Abul Ela, M. T. (1959) *A Geographical Study of Man and his Environment in Al Ahsa Province (Saudi Arabia)*, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, Dublin, Trinity College, p. 228.

⁴¹ Jarbawi (1981), argues that in the early impact of western culture on the Arab world, the ‘feeling of inferiority affected only specific sections and groups of society, and those were the people who had exposure to the West ... The majority of Arabs, who were not sufficiently exposed to the West, remained isolated, traditional, and self-centered’ (p. 185).

8.3 THE TRANSITIONAL *FEREEJ* SYSTEM

The Saudi home environment in general has experienced radical changes since the discovery and export of oil in 1938. The socio-economic status of the Saudi citizen changed dramatically, which at the same time changed the way of living and produced a new daily routine. The *fereej* system was one among many cultural and physical targets for that change. This can be seen clearly from the foregoing discussion when the home environment in the hybrid neighbourhood took different forms in the late 1950's. What is really critical is what happened to the traditional home environment, which underwent such a severe transformation as to render it uninhabitable. It is relevant to this study to understand how the *fereej* system in the traditional home environment responded to those social and physical changes, and how it eventually re-emerged in the transitional neighbourhood.

The new roads ignored the social tissues that bound the traditional physical environment together. They divided the traditional quarters into small pieces each containing parts from different *fereej*s. They broke the hidden social and physical boundaries, because the new physical boundaries divided the unitary mass of the traditional quarters. This situation created a chaotic physical and social environment which made the traditional home environment uninhabitable and thus people started moving from it to other places (Fig.8.22).

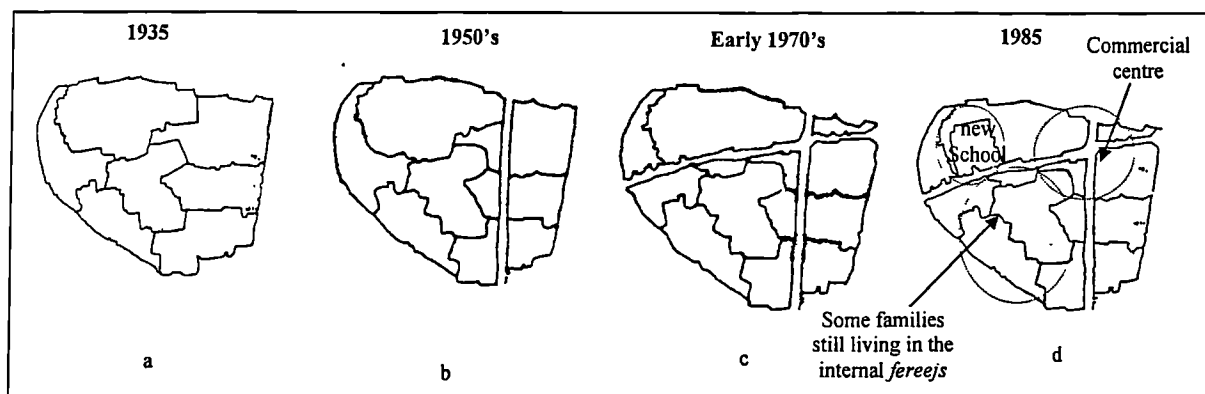


Fig.8.22: Transformation of *Anna'athil* quarter: (a) The hidden boundaries of the *fereej*s in *Anna'athil* quarter. (b) A new road constructed in 1950's (dividing the *fereej*s and destroying the social tissues of the traditional home environment). (c) Another road was constructed early 1970's (ignoring the physical and social system). (d) Major destruction occurred in the traditional areas in the 1980's, which left them uninhabitable. Source: Based on Al-Elawy, I. (1976), Op. Cit., p.185: Aerial Map (1985), Municipality of Al-Hasa, and the researcher interviews and observational data.

Those families who were directly affected by the new development moved collectively into new suburbs and constructed small *fereej*s. For example, two small neighbourhoods

appeared between 1960 and 1975, each neighbourhood was occupied by one *hamola*.⁴² These two neighbourhoods were located on what had either been empty land between farms or actual farmland itself (see Fig.8.24).⁴³ It was during this period that the government began to increase in a much greater way its involvement in the physical environment, and this first became apparent in new areas in Hofuf in 1960 (Fig.8.23).⁴⁴ In that year too a set of building regulations were initiated. These mainly introduced setback for dwelling design, and the segregation of dwellings by application of grid patterns for the subdivision of land.⁴⁵

Because the people of Hofuf preferred to live close to the old city, the farms around and inside the old city were burned or destroyed to use the lands for residential or commercial purposes.⁴⁶ Al-Shuaiby noticed two forms working in the urban expansion of Hofuf at that time. The first, was 'outward extension', where new suburbs appeared here and there around the old city. The second was 'internal re-organisation', where the government started to implement comprehensive planning for the existing residential settlements.⁴⁷

People who lived in traditional dwellings which were far from the new streets remained in their houses until 1975 when the government started to subsidise private housing by establishing the Real Estate Development Fund in 1975 to provide people with interest-free loans to build new private houses. Because the *fereej* system in the traditional home environment had deteriorated, people were ready to move; therefore, they used this opportunity to reproduce their new *fereej*s. Thus there was a collective migration from traditional areas between 1975 and 1985, which led to them falling into decline and ruin.

⁴² The first suburb called *Albugsha* was developed in early 1960s. The second suburb called *Samha*, was also developed in the late 1960s and early 1970s. Both of them were very small (originally private palm gardens) which made it possible for them to be occupied entirely by one *hamola*.

⁴³ For example *Samha*, one of the transitional neighbourhoods was originally a farm. In 1955, Vidal indicated that *samha* was still a garden. He said 'West, north, and south of the town are a few palm gardens owned by wealthy people, more for relaxation than for economic reasons. Such are, for instance, al-Kubainiyah, al-Bahairah, and particularly Samhah.' (p. 95).

⁴⁴ Al-Shuaiby, A. (1976), Op. Cit., p.229. This plan concentrated on improving the transportation system of the city and controlling its urban growth. The plan divided the city into two residential zones. In the first zone, the traditional areas, there were no building regulations developed and it was left for the people to practice the traditional system they knew. The second zone, where the new suburbs were located, was controlled by the municipality by introducing a new system for land subdivision. The block sizes were 50-80m long by 40m wide, and the plot size about 10-25m by 7-10m wide

⁴⁵ See Chapter II.

⁴⁶ The semi-planned hybrid settlements continued to grow at that time. Because old Hofuf was surrounded by agricultural lands, the newly developed residential settlements appeared very isolated from each other. The owners of these farms burned and cut the palm trees and divided the land to sell them for residential purposes. For example Al-Shuaiby (1976) indicates that *Almazrou 'iyyah* and *Almansouriyya* 'occupy previously farms or wasteland.' (p. 225). Vidal (1955) indicates that the farms changed to residential areas. He states: 'Here and there throughout the al-Ruqayyiqah area are a few palm gardens and some vegetable plots. Between them clusters of houses have arisen, which show a tendency to grow towards one another, so that if this trend continues and the total population of al-Ruqayyiqah continued to grow as it has, particularly over the past four or five years, it can be predicted that in the near future the whole suburb will form a continuum and will probably grow to the southwestern edge of the Hofuf limit.' (p. 94).

⁴⁷ Al-Shuaiby, A. (1976), Op. Cit., p. 229



Fig.8.23: Impact of government developments on the hybrid neighbourhoods. a) Hofuf 1960 (before governmental involvement). b) Hofuf 1967 (After governmental involvement). Source: Aramco.

It is important to say that people before 1975 still preferred to live in the traditional settlements. This can be seen from the fact that the residential land value in traditional areas in the 1960's and early 70's still was higher than hybrid and transitional neighbourhoods.⁴⁸ This can be attributed to the fact that the quality of life was acceptable in the traditional *fereej*s. This was not the case after 1975 when the opportunity to move became possible after the introduction of governmental subsidies for private houses.

Every *hamola* moved and concentrated in one suburb. This is not to say that the whole suburb was occupied by one *hamola*, but that every *hamola* tried to reorganise itself and

defined its territory within new suburbs. The direction of migration was, in most of the cases, according to the location of the *hamola* in the traditional quarters. For example, those who lived in the southeast (southern *Arrif'a*) moved to the south-eastern neighbourhoods. The same was true for the clans who had lived in the northeast (northern *Arrif'a*) and southwest (*Anna'athil*). Those who had lived in the northwest (*Alkut*) moved to the south and southwest because the northwestern boundary was a cemetery (Fig.8.24).⁴⁹

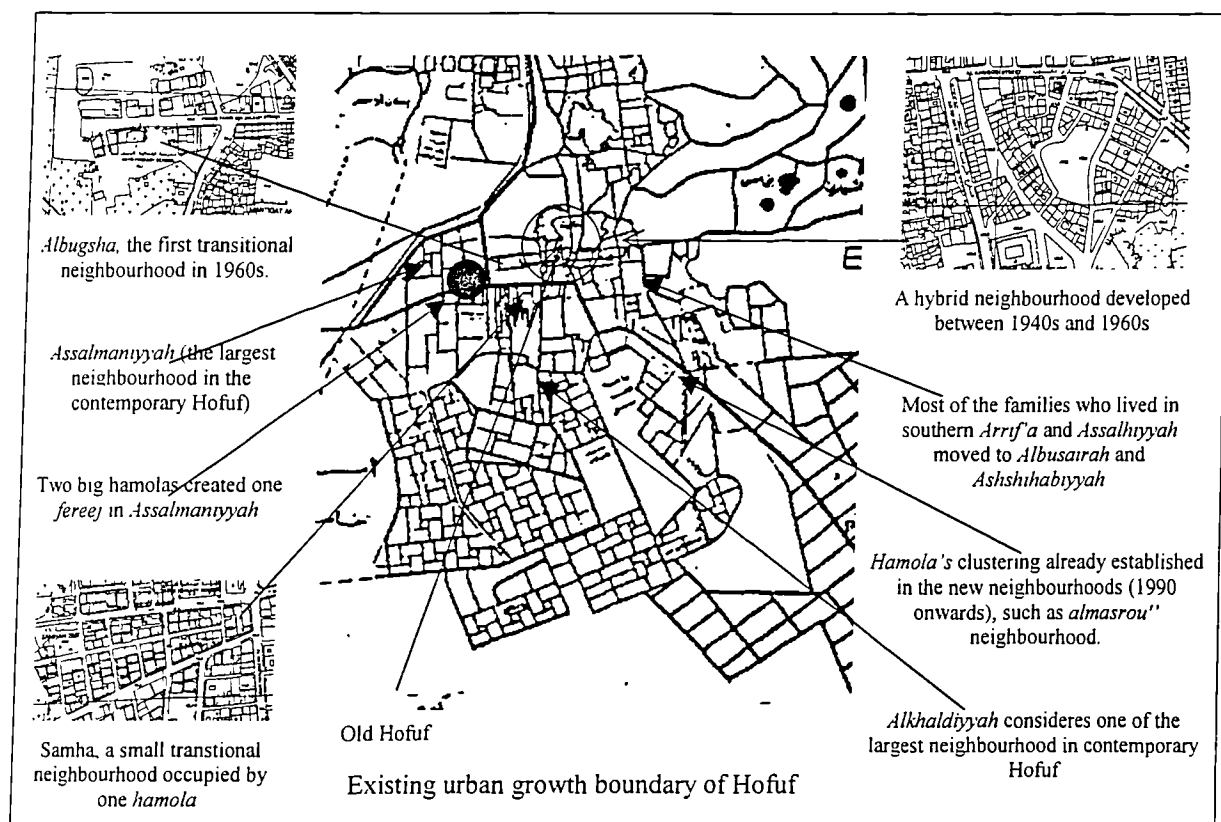


Fig.8.24: The redistribution of the traditional *hamolas* in Hofuf's contemporary home environment. Source: Fieldwork (the maps from the municipality of Al-Hasa)

⁴⁸ Al-Elawy, I. (1976), Op. Cit., p. 359.

⁴⁹ It is a phenomenon in the contemporary home environment in Hofuf that people who come from the same traditional quarter prefer to live together. This phenomenon was noticed by the researcher in several occasions. This maybe attributed to the fact that many *hamolas* in every traditional quarter had an inter-marriage relationship which encouraged them later to move to the same neighbourhood. This reason is also supported by another social convention in Hofuf. That is that women are fully dependent on men to drive them to visit their relatives; therefore, by living in the same neighbourhood, men will not have to do this.

8.3.1 THE DWELLING IN THE TRANSITIONAL *FEREEJ*

The acceleration of change continued to drive people from their old traditions and experiences. The growth of the new identity which appeared in the 1950's houses continued in the 1960's and early 1970's houses. This can be seen from the increasing number of villas. Table 8.4 shows that 10.6 % of the houses in Al-Hasa in 1975 were detached houses. The villa type at that time was perceived by local people in Hofuf as a symbol of wealth and modernity especially because the construction material was concrete.

Table 8.4: House types in Al-Hasa Region (1975) (around 16000 houses)

House Type	Detached (villa)	Non detached	Others
Number of houses	1698	13254	1052
%	10.6	82.8	6.6

Source: Developed from Candilis (1976) Master Plan of Al-Hasa, p. 37

However, the name 'villa' was not used in Hofuf in the early 1970s and instead people used the name '*bayt musallah*' which means the house constructed entirely of concrete.⁵⁰ As we have mentioned earlier, a major shift had occurred in the perceptual identity of the private home through replacing the mud construction system with concrete. This shift was clearly seen in the 1960's and 70's when the use of mud in construction stopped completely (Table.8.5).⁵¹ This indicates how visual taste of the local people was influenced by the new materials, which were associated from the beginning with wealth and education.⁵²

Table: 8.5 Building Materials used in Hofuf (1972)

Material	Construction	Alteration	Compounds	Total	%
Cement	199	-	-	199	9.9
Stone	219	846	25	1080	53.9
Mud	-	-	-	-	-
Block & Bricks	309	415	-	724	36.2
Other	-	-	-	-	-
Totals	727	1251	25	2003	100.0

Source: Ministry of Finance, Central Department of Statistics (Al-Shuaibi, A. (1976), Op. Cit., p. 237).

⁵⁰ Al-Shuaiby (1976) mentions that in Hofuf 'the villas ... are situated almost entirely in the areas of new development and [only] few houses of this type, designed in modern styles' (p. 237).

⁵¹ Tyeb (1983) indicates that the cement production in Saudi Arabia had 'doubled between 1970 and 1974, increasing from about 600,000 tons to 1.2 million tons'. (p. 44).

⁵² Al-Elawy (1976), indicates that in Hofuf's houses of 1960s and 70s 'the traditional decorations were not commonly used in these houses not because that they are ugly, rather because 'people's tastes have changed and coarsened'. According to him people at that time considered 'anything new or foreign as a sign of progress and any thing old or local as backward' (p. 367).

Similar to the *nuss-musallah* type, the *musallah* type had a similar concept of space and the only difference between the two types was that the courtyard in the latter type was transformed to a covered hall called *sala*, used mainly as transitional circulation space as well as family living space (Fig.8.25).⁵³ This major change is noticed by Al-Elawy (1976) when he said that in the recent houses of Hofuf:

‘The traditional courtyard has now become a central sealed hall, separated from outside. Rooms are arranged in an orderly manner around this central hall, while windows open to the outside world for fresh air and light, but keep out intruding eyes by being above the height of the average tall man... Some houses even have wooden shutters in front of their windows through which air and light can come: a family can thus enjoy the pleasant scene outside without being seen ...’⁵⁴

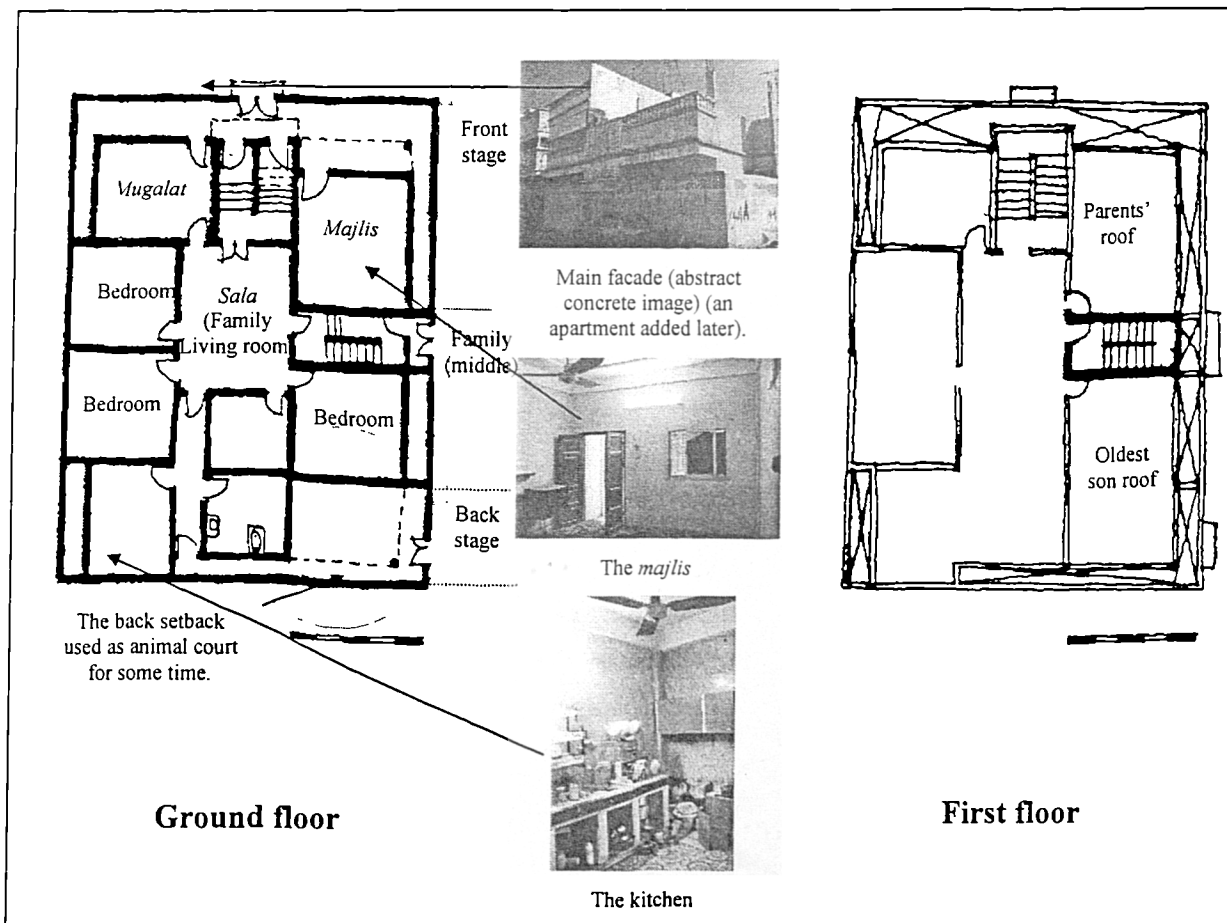


Fig. 8.25: A transitional house constructed in 1960's in *Albugsha* neighbourhood. Source: Fieldwork.

The fascination by the villa type that spread in the main cities of Saudi Arabia was one of the main motives that encouraged people to move on and change the inner spaces. Air conditioners became common as house appliances and made it possible for people to change

⁵³ As a matter of fact, many traditional names disappeared in the transitional house. The only names remaining were *majlis*, *dehreez*, and *muraba'a*. Changing the names can be considered as one of the main indicators that indicate the emergence and growth of the new identity in Hofuf's home environment in the 1950's, 60's, and 70's.

their courtyard into a sealed hall (Fig.8.26).⁵⁵ Al-Elawy notices how the air conditioner influenced the spatial organisation of the private houses in Hofuf at that time. He states:

‘The house plan need no longer be directed by environmental factors. Air conditioning equipment can cool a house in summer and keep it warm in winter, hence there is no need to keep the courtyard ... Modern equipment has superseded it.’⁵⁶

Total Number of Imported Air-conditioners to Saudi Arabia

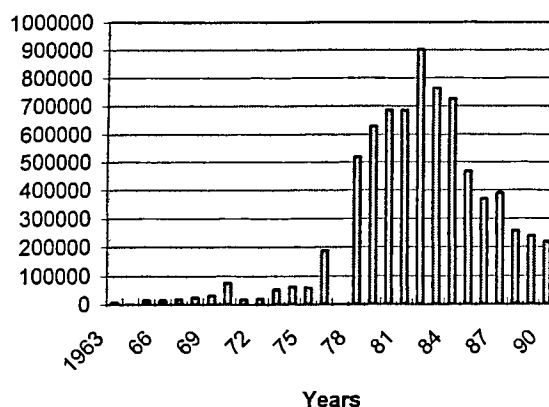


Fig.8.26: The number of imported air-conditioners to Saudi Arabia. Source: Developed from the Annual Statistical Reports, Department of Statistics, Ministry of Commerce.⁵⁷

The impact of modern technology was not limited to spatial change only. Although the kitchen and toilet remained in the back of the house, a complete new image was attached to them. The floor and walls of the kitchen were tiled with ceramic tiles. New modern appliances such as exhaust fans for ventilation fixed on one of the walls; a refrigerator and gas cooker became main elements in the transitional kitchen (Fig.8.27). The wooden *namlīyyah* was replaced in some houses by a set of cabinets and counters fixed on one or two walls of the kitchen. The toilet was displaced from a place adjacent to the animal court in the traditional and early hybrid houses to the front setback to serve the guests, and to a place near the kitchen to serve the family. Modern sanitary equipment made it possible for people to make this change (Fig.8.28).⁵⁸

⁵⁴ Al-Elawy, I. (1976), Op. Cit., p. 364.

⁵⁵ As matter of fact, even traditional houses were influenced by the introduction of the air conditioner. Many people covered their courtyards to use air conditioners. Al-Naim, M. (1993), Op. Cit., p. 109.

⁵⁶ Al-Elawy, I. (1976), Op. Cit., p. 364.

⁵⁷ Fig.8.26, 8.27, and 8.28 were prepared by Samer Akbar.

⁵⁸ These changes influenced the traditional and early hybrid houses. For example, the animal space in the traditional house was partially transformed by taking parts of it to build a modern kitchen and toilets. See Al-Naim, M. (1993), OP. Cit., p. 113.

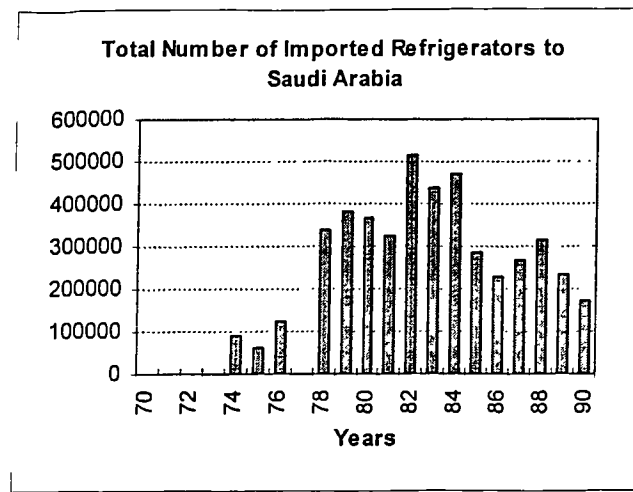


Fig.8.27: The number of imported refrigerators to Saudi Arabia. Source: Developed from the Annual Statistical Reports, Ministry of Commerce, Department of Statistics.

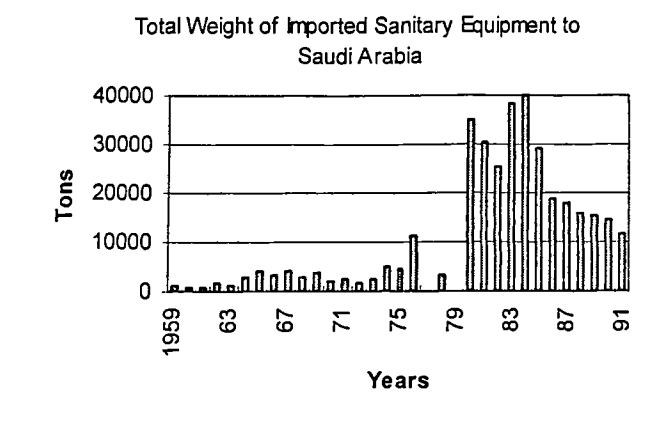


Fig.8.28: The weight of imported items of sanitary equipment to Saudi Arabia. Source: Developed from the Annual Statistical Reports, Ministry of Commerce, Department of Statistics.

Although major changes occurred in the visual and spatial aspects of private homes in Hofuf, people resisted the change and produced a house type consisting of a mix of old and new elements. The covered family hall was similar in its function to the traditional courtyard. It is possible to say that there was a clear continuity in the use of internal spaces which indicates that a minimum change had occurred in people's lifestyle. The major social change took place in the rituals and ceremonies of the male reception spaces. The desire to get a regular government job led to the abandonment of the traditional coffee rituals. This became very clear when the coffee place completely disappeared from the 1970's houses. As a result, the traditional three zones of the *majlis* hall became less important from the visual point of view but the associational meaning was still in people's mind.

The *musallah* house witnessed also the use of modern sofas and chairs in the *majlis* hall. The inhabitants of Hofuf had used chairs in their traditional and hybrid *majlises* (see Fig. 7.20),

but this was limited to well-to-do people. What happened in the transitional house was totally different. The use of modern sofas and chairs became associated with family status. One of the interesting observations about the imported chairs is that they were compatible with the traditional way of furnishing the *majlis* hall.⁵⁹ Long seats with a corner table were a common furniture arrangement at that time. The seats were arranged in a U shape while two corner tables to emphasise the front zone of the *majlis* hall (Fig.8.29). This is not to say that every transitional *majlis* was furnished with seats. But the aim here is to indicate the main changes in people's image and how they resisted or absorbed new forms. As matter of fact, many transitional *majlises* were furnished with mattresses and cushions.

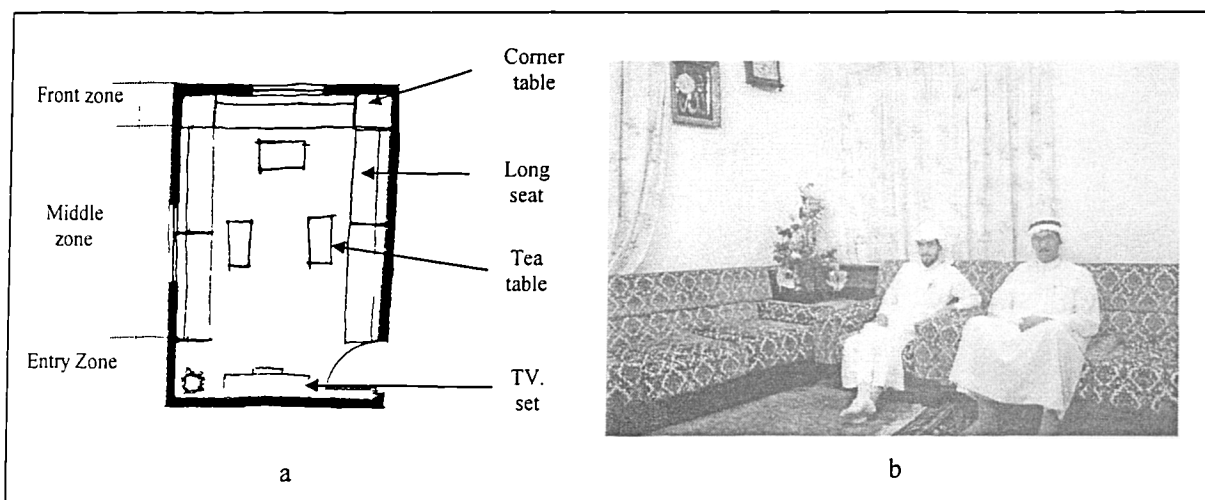


Fig.8.29: a) A typical transitional *majlis* (the front zone minimised to the front seats only). b) *Majlis* of a *Musallah* House in *Alkut* (one of the early households who imported modern sofas and chairs in Hofuf (imported from Kuwait)). Source: Fieldwork.

Another space had been developed in the transitional house. That is the *mugalat*, which was located in the front stage although it was used as a multi-purpose room. However, it usually functioned as a women's reception space and on occasions as a dining room. What is really important about this space is that it was the beginning of the women's reception space which later took its position and image as one of the most important spaces in the contemporary private home in Hofuf.⁶⁰ This space was not completely new because in the traditional house, and especially in the *majlis* type of the two storeys' height, more than one space was connected with the *majlis* hall, one of them called *mugallat*. What was new about this space is that it took a position in the front facade and was used as a women's reception space.

It is possible to say that the people of Hofuf insisted on the traditional associational meanings that oriented them in the transitional house. The spatial organisation of the transitional house

⁵⁹ This is because most of the furniture was imported from Kuwait and Iran. Many informants indicated that in 1960s and 70s they travelled to Kuwait and visited the furniture factories and the furniture dealers and selected their furniture.

indicated that people carried their past experiences with them when they decided to move from the traditional areas. This explains why the spatial organisation of the transitional house seems more traditional than the *nuss-musallah* type in the 1950's. Although the traditional courtyard in the transitional house was transformed into a sealed living room, the back part of the house was reproduced as it previously was. This was because the inhabitants of the transitional neighbourhood moved directly from the traditional areas, while *nuss-musallah* inhabitants kept the main two parts of the house, family and guest, in the 1950s because they were fascinated by Aramco's houses in the oil cities. Still, we can argue that, in both types, the past experience was strongly influential in people's decisions on the form and the way that the internal spaces in their houses should relate to each other (Fig.8.30).

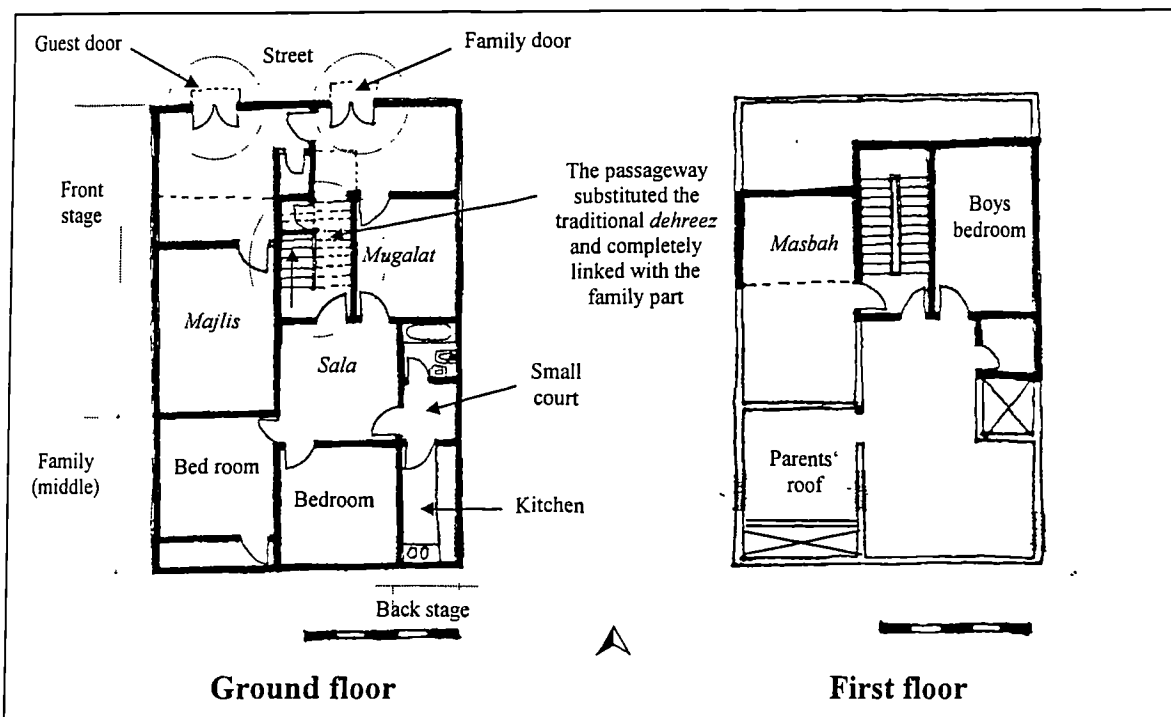


Fig.8.30: A transitional house built in early 1970's in *Adduraibiyah* neighbourhood. Source: Fieldwork.

The introduction of the setback regulations changed the front part of the transitional house in both spatial and visual aspects. Different from all house types in Hofuf, the *musallah* house developed without the traditional *dehreez*. In fact, people started to relinquish the traditional entrance hall in the 1950s when the *nuss-musallah* type included one entrance hall used as guest zone (see Fig.8.16). The *musallah* house design completely ignored the traditional way of approaching the house and instead the front setback was used to emphasise the *majlis* hall. This is clearly seen when the front spaces are occupied by the guest rooms and separated from the rest of the house by a passageway with a door that worked to some extent like the

⁶⁰ See Chapter IX.

family zone in the traditional *dehreez*. This linked the *majlis* hall with external spaces, at the same time preserving the family part from intruders' eyes (Fig.8.31). The interesting thing here is that people were still not sure which elements of the traditional house they needed to keep, which was clearly seen when the traditional entrance hall for guests was kept in the 1950s houses, while the family one was reproduced in 1960s and 70s houses. This phenomenon has continued even in the contemporary house, as we will see in the next chapter.

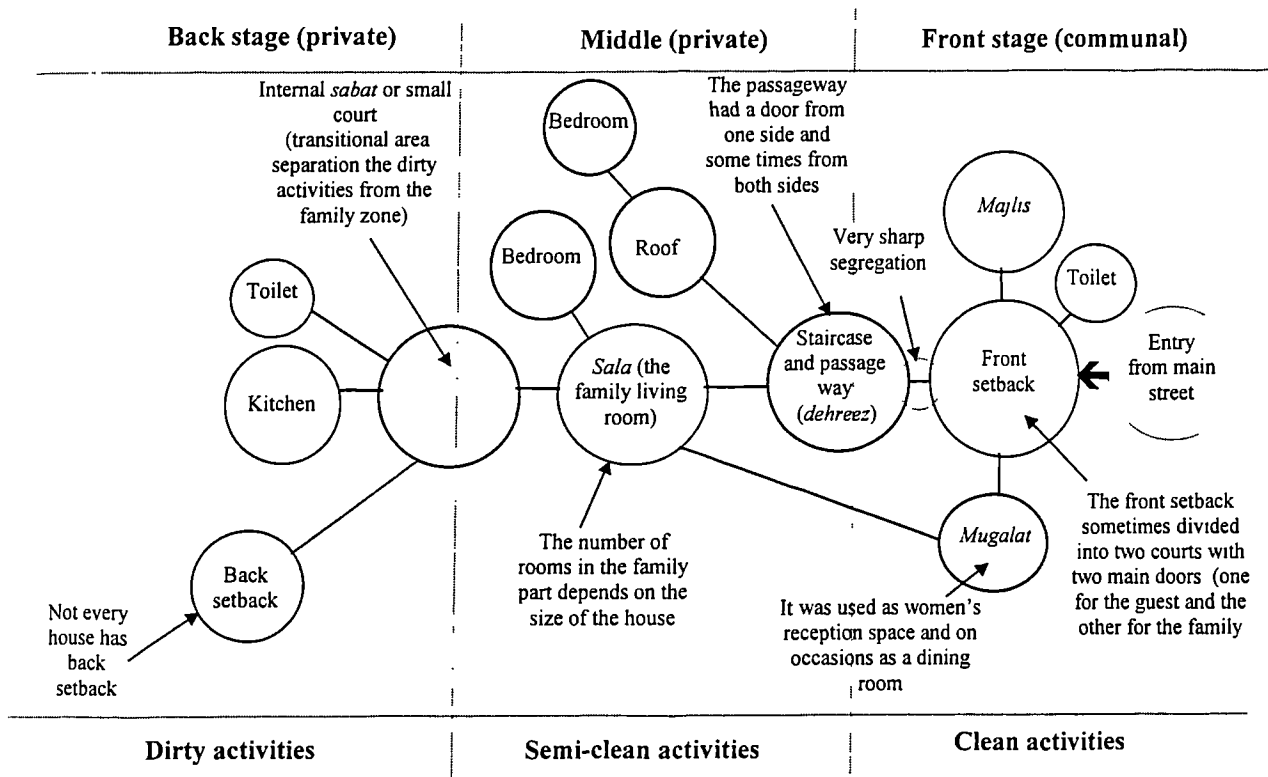


Fig.8.31: The organisation of the internal domestic space of the transitional house.

From the visual and spatial perspective, the above mentioned solution was completely different from the traditional one, especially in that the *majlis* hall was physically separated from the external space by the existence of the front setback in between. Still, the way that people treated the front organisation showed the influence of past experiences, which led them to link the guest rooms with the external environment and at the same time maintain the family privacy. One of the informants, for example, said 'I asked the municipality engineer to design my house [this was in the late 1960's] but I wasn't convinced by what he did for me. Later I made a sketch for the house and I said to him, "I want this"'. The role of the architect at that time was very minor because they cared only about the technical aspects of

the concrete while the real design was made by people. This is why there was a common abstract facade for the transitional house. The emphasis was on spatial organisation rather than the visual quality of the house because the concrete image was enough for perceptual identity at that time (Fig.8.32).

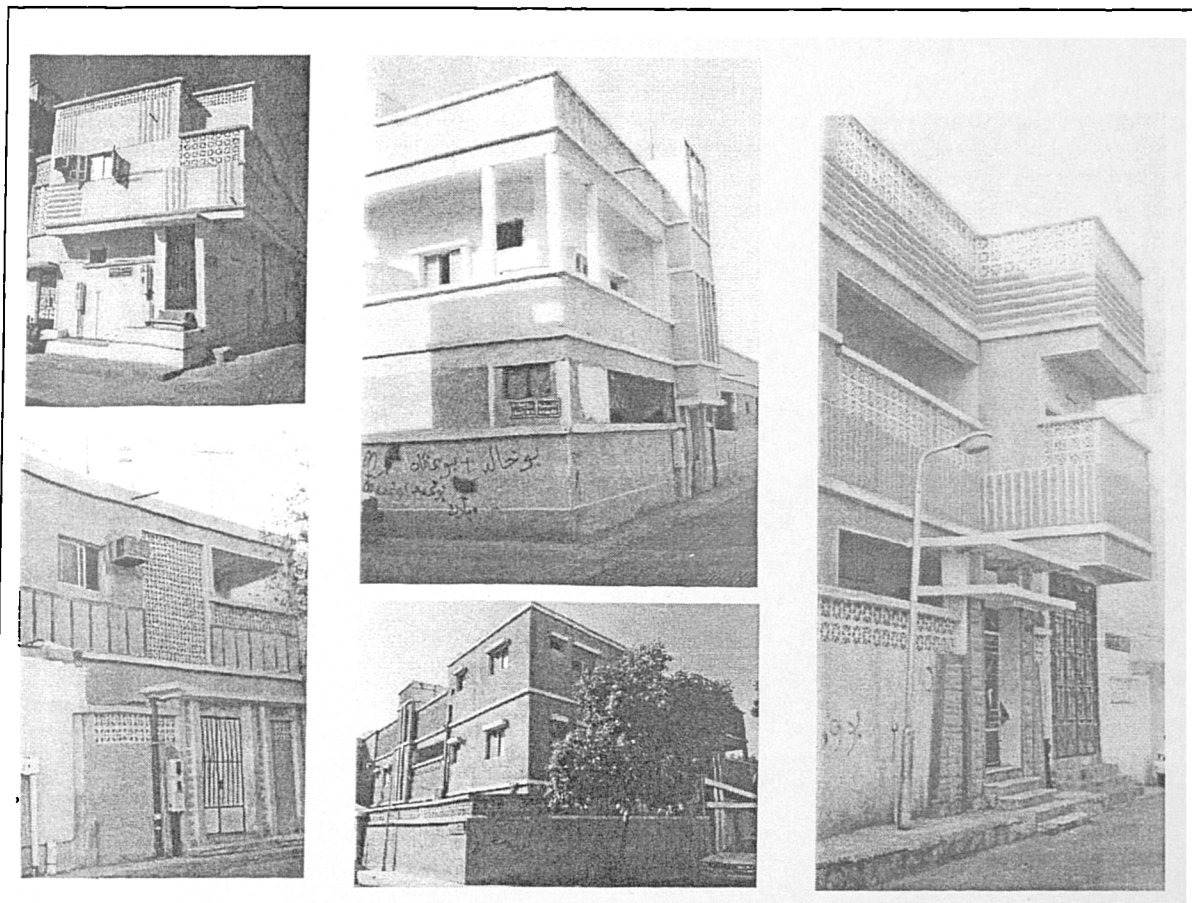


Fig.8.32: The front facade of the transitional house indicates how concrete became a symbol of social status in the 1960's. An abstract concrete facade was the common perceptual image in the transitional house. Source: Fieldwork.

The gateway continued to play its symbolic role. The new material, concrete, made it easy for people to produce a simple gate, but with a full integration with the house fence (Fig.8.33). One of the new images that are associated with the transitional gate was the appearance of wooden or metal signs fixed either in the top or on the side of the gate carrying the name of the owner. In some houses two signs were used, one for the guest door and the other for the family door. Both signs indicated the name of the owner and informed the visitor about which door he should use to approach the *majlis*.

Because the male reception spaces worked for a long time as mediator between the family and the community, there was a need to increase the link between the *majlis* hall and the external environment, which had been severely reduced by the existence of the front setback.

In this sense, we can argue that people introduced the second door, which later became a common phenomenon, to retrieve the external status of the *majlis*. The guest door is usually open if there is a guest in the house. Any new guest will be oriented by the sign in the gate to the guest space, and can enter the house by shouting the name of the owner as in the traditional home environment.

In the transitional house there was a need to substitute the visual symbolic meanings that existed in the traditional house, especially those whose function linked inside with outside. Those strong associational meanings constituted the evaluation criteria that guided Hofuf's people in the 1960s and 70s to develop new solutions to substitute those important symbols. People tried to localise the new forms and spatial concepts by embodying their traditional associational meanings in them.

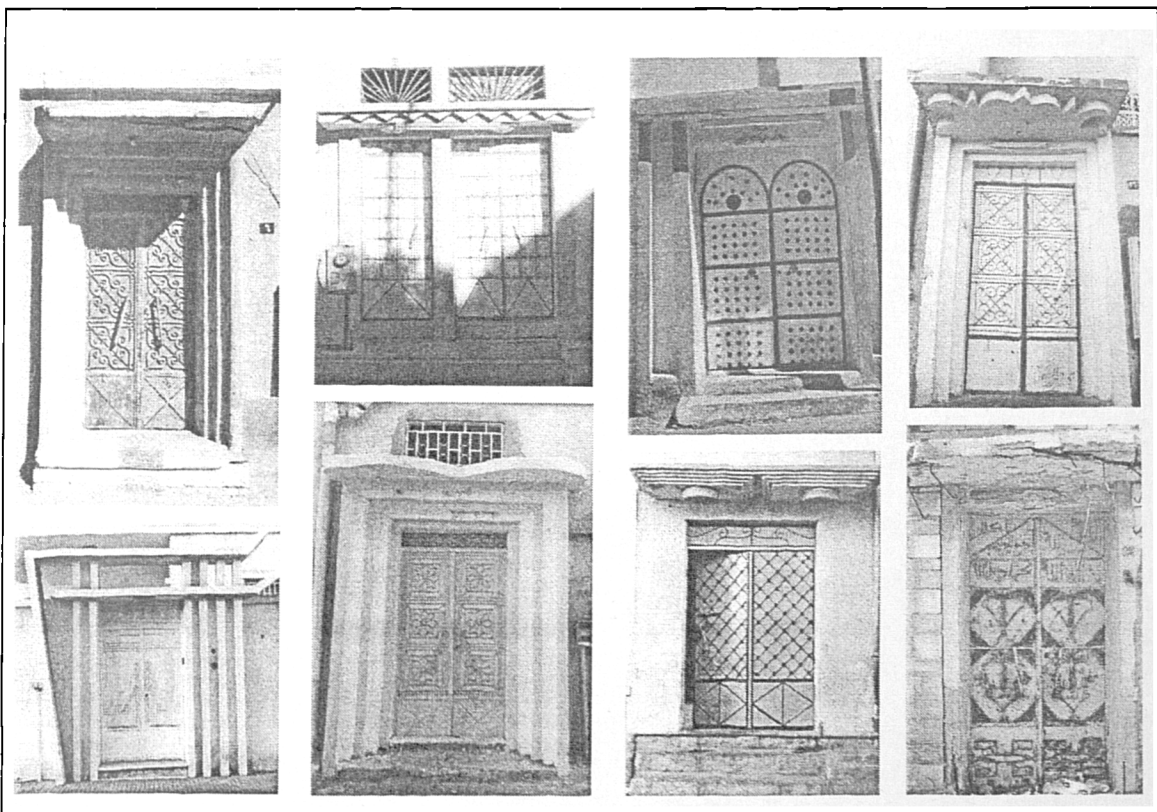


Fig.8.33: A number of transitional house gateways. Source: Fieldwork.

Visually, the facade of the transitional house passed through two stages. The first stage, as we have discussed, could be seen when the house facade was only an abstract cement plaster or concrete block surface. This plain facade indicates the period when people of Hofuf were attracted to concrete as a material reflecting wealth and modernity. The second stage was seen in the late seventies when concrete lost its social meaning. This was because it became a common construction material. People at that time started to plaster and paint the facades

of their houses. The facades of the transitional houses of the 1970s contain many carved decorations. The cement facade became a medium for people to express their individual (family) perceptual identity (Fig.8.34, and 8.35).

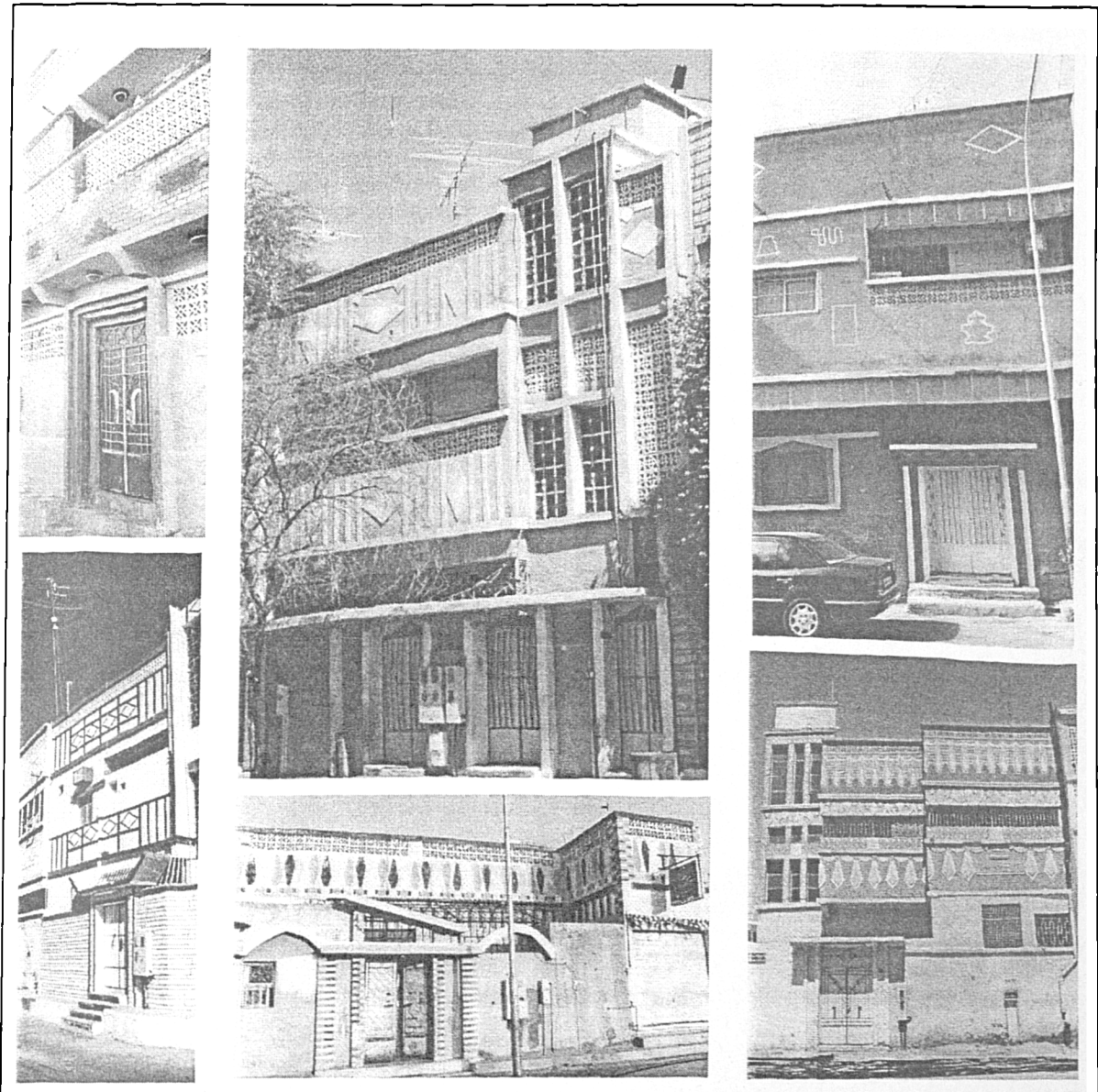


Fig.8.34: Attempts by inhabitants of the transitional house in the 1970's to decorate their house facades (their attempts appeared when concrete became the only material for construction). Source: Fieldwork.

What happened in the transitional neighbourhoods was partially imposed by the government and partially imposed by people's collective action. Because the government had not yet established institutions to enforce the regulations⁶¹, people selected what was suitable for their lifestyle. This flexibility was coupled with the collective move of members of some *hamolas* to establish a kind of homogeneous *fereej* in the transitional neighbourhood. This is not to

⁶¹ The Ministry of Municipal and Rural Affairs was established in 1975. For more detail see Chapter II.

say that people reproduced an identical traditional *fereej*, but the desire for clustering coupled with desire to be modern created new home environments consisting of old and new.

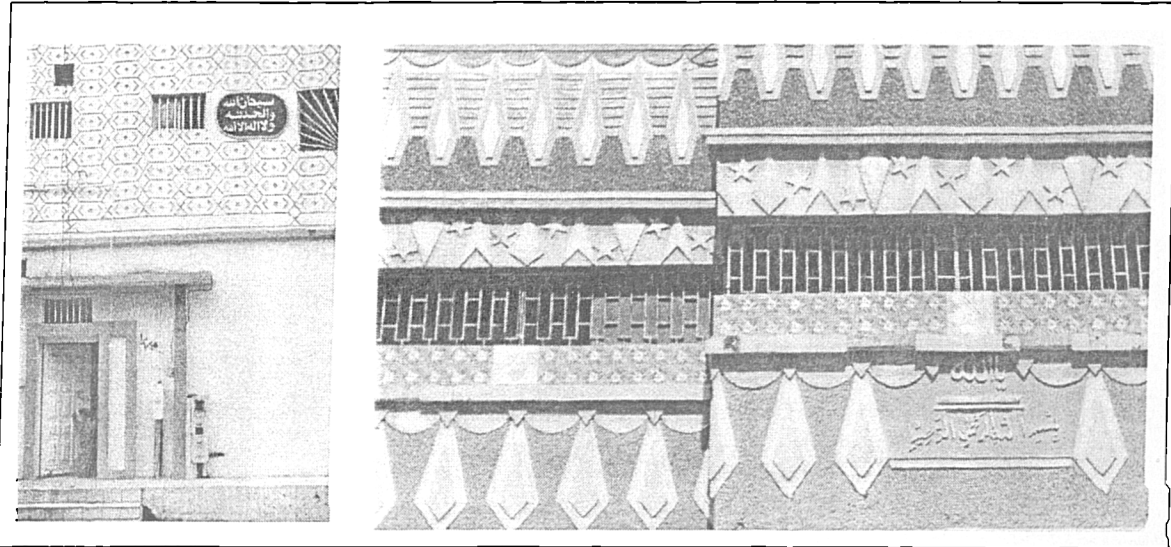


Fig.8.35: The cement plastered used as a decoration medium to personalise the house. Source: Fieldwork

It is clear that a new perceptual identity developed in the transitional home environment. However, we notice the attempts of the inhabitants to embody old meanings in the new forms. The associational identity was very strong; hence, it continued with some alterations because people's lifestyle had changed with the introduction of regular jobs and the availability of food in the nearby grocery shops which changed the whole family lifestyle away from dependence on producing one's own food. All these social and physical changes paved the way for the new identity, which appeared in the 1940's and 50's to grow and dominate the later home environments in Hofuf (Fig.8.36).

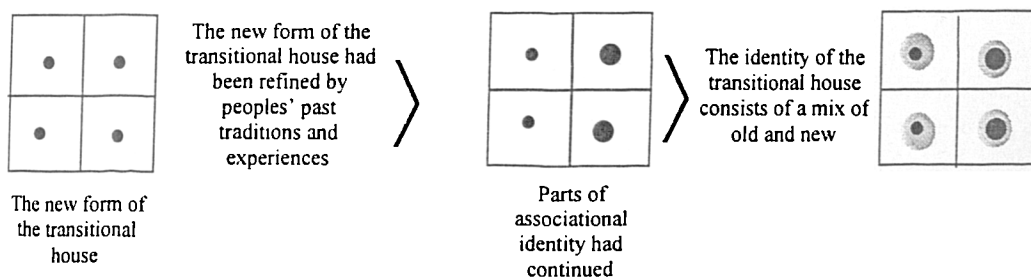


Fig.8.36: The growth of the new identity in Hofuf's home environment.

8.4 CONTEMPORARY FORMS OF THE *FEREEJ* SYSTEM

The economic growth in Saudi Arabia encouraged the government to start implementing five-year development plans, from 1970, in order to benefit from the oil revenues. The current plan, 1995-2000, is the sixth. These plans are intended to develop economic and human resources and enhance the social sector and physical infrastructure. The oil boom in 1973 made these plans more effective in the transformation of the physical characteristics of all Saudi cities. The national income increased from 8.7 billion dollars in 1973 to 39.2 billion dollars in 1974.⁶²

Several master plans were initiated for all Saudi cities between 1967 and 1976. Those plans institutionalised the gridiron land sub-division and setbacks as the only way to deal with the home environment at its macro and micro levels. The villa became the only house type built in Saudi Arabia since 1975. The process of producing the physical environment had shifted from the incremental mechanism which used to occur daily on a micro level to a rigid process imposed on the macro level without a real understanding of people's cultural needs. It was a complete contrast to the traditional home environment, where communal relationships maintained the identity and consistency of the home environment at the macro level and let the family, at the micro level, adapt to changing life circumstances.⁶³

This section tries to introduce the contemporary home environment in Hofuf, while the next chapter will analyse how the contemporary private home in Hofuf took its recent form. The emphasis is on the contemporary form of the *fereej* system especially after the collective move from the traditional areas after 1975. The assumption here is that, because in Hofuf there was an extensive move from the traditional areas to a new suburb after 1975, people had carried their past experiences and tried to mobilise them in their contemporary houses. Alkhars, for example, found that almost 55% of the residents of *Alkhaldiyyah* neighbourhood (one of the main contemporary neighbourhoods in Hofuf) originally came from old Hofuf.⁶⁴ This suggests that the concept of the traditional *fereej* played a role in people's aggregation or segregation in the contemporary neighbourhood.

⁶² Tayeb, F. (1983), OP. Cit., p. 59.

⁶³ See Chapter II.

⁶⁴ Alkhars, S. (1990) Community Structure and Residential Satisfaction in a Transitional Urban Environment: With the Emphasis on Residential Relocation. The Case Study of Al-Hasa, Unpublished Master Thesis, Dhahran, King Fahad University of Petroleum and Minerals, p.76.

It is one of the main goals of this study to understand the characteristics of the contemporary neighbourhoods in Hofuf. At the family level, the economic independence encouraged young men to separate from their family houses and create nuclear families. For example, income per capita increased in the last two decades from SR 600 to SR 6000 per month.⁶⁵ This increased the individual expenditure and brought a new lifestyle for the family. This can be seen from the increase in the living expenses of a family consisting of six persons which was in 1975 SR 26,400, and increased to SR 83,400 in 1985.⁶⁶ This can be linked to the regular income of families. Alkhars found that more than 63% of the families in *Alkhaldiyyah* had monthly income of SR 6,000-15,000 (Table.8.6). This changed several aspects of people's lifestyle. Owning a car, for example, became part of people's identity. Some households in *Alkhaldiyyah* neighbourhood own five or more cars, while at least two cars are owned by every household (Table.8.7).

Table 8.6: Income group in *Alkhaldiyyah* neighbourhood (per month)

Income (SR)	3000	3000-6000	6000-9000	9000-15000
%	9.09	27.27	27.27	36.36

Source: Developed from Alkhars, S. (1990), Op. Cit., p. 83.

Table 8.7: Number of automobiles per household in *Alkhaldiyyah* neighbourhood

Number of Automobiles	1	2	3	4	5+
%	0.00	45.45	18.18	27.27	9.09

Source: Developed from Ibid., p. 84.

In order to describe the identity of the contemporary home in Hofuf, it is essential to consider the economic changes at the family level. People are now wealthier and more educated. This has influenced, in one way or another, the perceptual and the associational identity of the private home in the last two decades. In the past, for example, it was difficult for young men to leave the family house after marriage because they mainly worked in their fathers' farms, industry, or trade. They had no private property which made it difficult for them to leave the family house even if they wished to do so. This is not to say that every young man would leave if he was able

⁶⁵ Hamdan, S. (1990), Op. Cit., pp. 14-15.

⁶⁶ Shata, A. (1985) *Studies in Saudi Society*, (publisher not mentioned) (Arabic).

to, because even in contemporary society in Hofuf many extended families still live in the same house.

In the last two decades, the family size in Hofuf has continued much the same. The family size was 6.9 persons in 1975⁶⁷ (see Table 8.8) while in 1996 the family size became 7.1 persons (Table 8.9). This can be linked to what AlKhars (1990) found in *Alkhaldiyyah* neighbourhood that, 45.45% of the residents have at least one married son, and 60% of these live with the family in the same house.⁶⁸ It is clear that this attitude has increased the size of the contemporary house in Hofuf, especially now that every person in the family likes to have her/his own private room. Table 8.10, shows that more than 50% of the contemporary houses in Hofuf contain more than 5 rooms.

Table 8.8: Household size in Al-Hasa region (1975)

Number of People	Number of households	%
1	681	4.2
2	905	5.6
3	1127	7.0
4	1364	8.5
5	1553	9.7
6	1659	10.3
7	1859	11.6
8	1969	12.3
9	1385	8.6
10	1590	9.9
11	725	4.5
more	1244	6.8
Total (rounded)	16000	100

Source: Candilis (1976), Op. Cit., p. 37

Table 8.9: Size of the household in Hofuf in 1996(1612 families)

Size of the Household	1	2-4	5-6	7-9	10-12	+12
Number of the household	29	373	346	481	265	118
%	1.8	23.1	21.5	29.8	16.4	7.4

Source: Developed from Al-Khrajji, S.(1996) Master Plan of Al-Hasa (Report of the Basic Data, Vol.2), p.2.19

(Arabic)

⁶⁷ Candilis (1976), Op. Cit., p. 42.

⁶⁸ *Ibid.*, p. 91.

Table 8.10: House size in Hofuf in 1996 (1612 families)

Number of Rooms	1-2	3-4	5-6	+7
Number of Houses	170	610	417	415
%	10.6	37.8	25.9	25.7

Source: Developed from Ibid., (Report of the Basic Data, Vol.3), p.5.87 (Arabic).

In fact there is some continuity of the old social structure, but not as strong as in traditional society. Nowadays, newly married couples prefer to have a separate house. To allow for this, people developed physical solutions on their houses by creating one or two apartments in the first floor of their villas. An apartment is usually used as an additional income source by renting it out until the oldest son gets married, when he would use it with his new wife. If there is more than one apartment, the second son can use one, but if there is only one, the oldest son may leave the house and give the opportunity to his younger brothers (Fig.8.37). This solution has been developed recently by people to help their young sons economically by providing them free houses and to guarantee that at least one of their sons will stay with them.

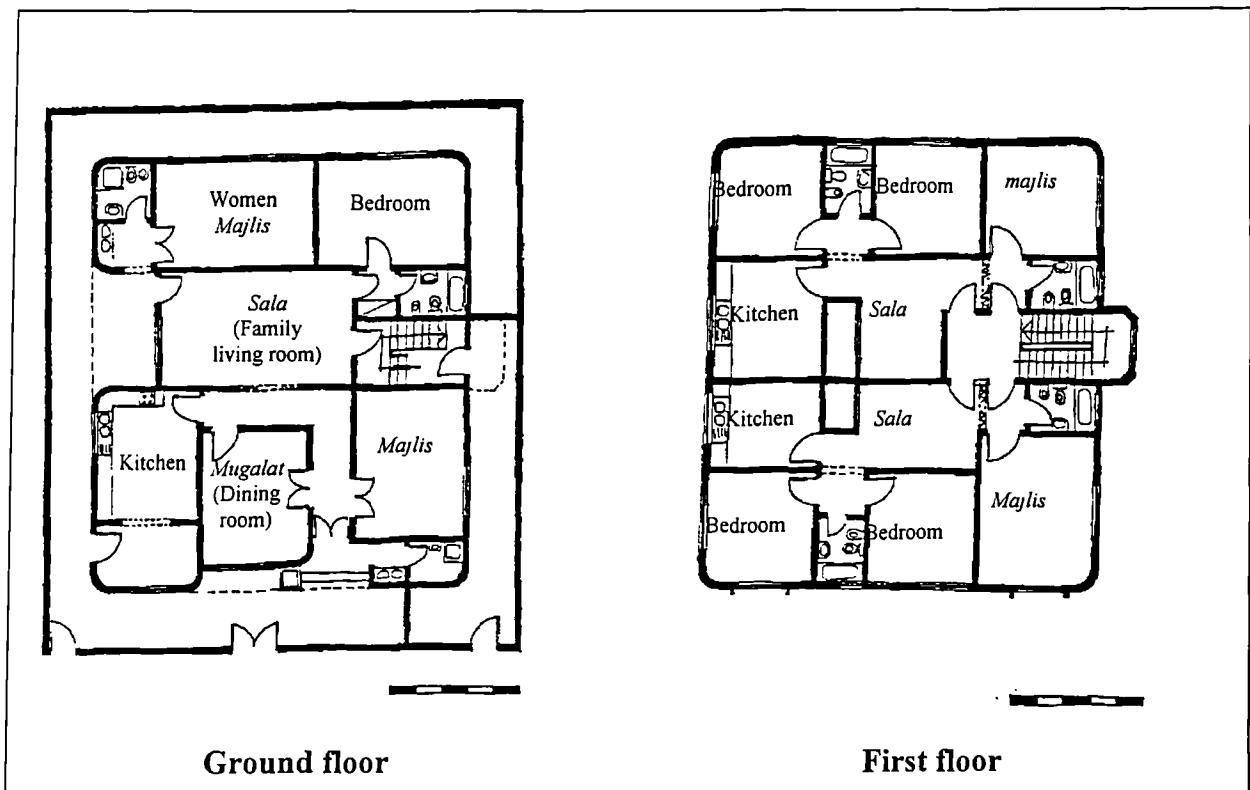


Fig.8.37: One of the contemporary houses which consists of a villa style on the ground floor and two apartments in the first floor. Source: Fieldwork.

One of the major consequences of the ignorance of people's cultural needs was that the physical characteristics of the contemporary home environment reduced the domain of women and children.⁶⁹ The *fereej* system in the traditional home environment was very supportive of a lively social life for women and children. Through the roof footway women could meet their neighbours and socialise with them without using the external spaces. Parents also never stopped their children from playing outside the home because there were no hazards for them. Children knew the *fereej* boundary and practised their activities within those intimate spaces outside their homes. This is not the case in the contemporary home environment where women have no outside space to meet their neighbours. Also, children are now forced to play inside their homes because people and places in the contemporary home environment have not yet been defined by the inhabitants.

What is really noticeable about the contemporary home environment in Hofuf is that people have striven to maintain their sense of group, their sense of homogeneity in the new suburbs. This has been accomplished by maintaining the intermediate relationships and reproducing the *fereej* system. Although the flexibility that existed in the traditional home environment has decreased due to regulations which forced people to build individual dwellings as well as stopped them from making changes to their houses, people persisted in their way of socialising and resisted the changes by reorganising themselves in the new suburbs.

Living as groups is considered by the people of Hofuf to be very important. For example, in one neighbourhood (*Assalmaniyyah*) two *hamolas* who used to live as one group in the past moved from the old city into this suburb and formed one big *fereej* in the 1980s.⁷⁰ The land value of this cluster is almost double that of the other plots in the same suburb. People in the area called this cluster (*bulik Annar*) 'the fire block', due to the high value of the lands. What made people of these two clans persist in living together, even if it cost them double the cost of living separately elsewhere is the social quality of the area. In this contemporary *fereej* people know

⁶⁹ Al-Nowaiser, M. A. (1987), Op. Cit., p. 307. Al-Olet, A. A. (1991) Cultural Issues as an Approach to Forming and Managing the Future Neighbourhoods: Case Study: The Central Region of Saudi Arabia Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, University of Strathclyde, p. 230. Al-Hussayen, A. S. (1996), Op. Cit., p. 143.

⁷⁰ It was very important for this study to concentrate on one neighbourhood and study people's environmental behaviour in the external domestic space. This is because it is impossible to study every neighbourhood. Also, the study aims to understand how people preserve or change their attitudes towards their home environment. In this sense, *Assalmaniyyah* suburb was selected because, firstly, the construction in this neighbourhood took place from the early 1980's until today. There are a number of houses under construction at the time of fieldwork. The second reason is that it has the potential to enable the researcher to trace the continuity and change of people's behaviour in the external spaces because most of the inhabitants of the *fereej*s under study in the traditional and subsequent home environment had moved to *Assalmaniyyah* and formed their new clusters. This neighbourhood can be divided into three main clusters. The first cluster is occupied by those families who moved from *Arrigayga*, and specifically from the Bedouin settlements. The second cluster is a general one used by those families who moved from different areas and from different families. The last cluster is occupied by two large *hamolas*. The last part is called by the inhabitants 'Bulik Annar'.

each other; women visit each other safely; children play outside. The sense of home is very high and a definition of place and people has been established or reproduced.

Even in *Alkhaldiyyah* neighbourhood, the clustering existed but not as strongly as *Assalmaniyyah*. This is because those *hamolas* who moved to *Alkhaldiyyah* were very small which make their *fereej* limited to one or two blocks (see Fig.8.40). Alkhars found that more than 36% of the *Alkhaldiyyah* residents know their neighbours very well (Table.8.11), while he found that more than 63 % have a friendly relationship with their neighbours (Table.8.12). This indicates that the desire to be within a group has continued even between small *hamolas* who moved directly from the traditional areas.

Table 8.11: Knowing about neighbours in *Alkhaldiyyah* neighbourhood

Knowing about Neighbours	Much	Little	Very little	Nothing
%	36.36	45.45	9.09	9.09

Source: Developed from Alkhars(1990), Op. Cit., p. 92.

Table 8.12: Relationship with people in *Alkhaldiyyah* neighbourhood

Relationship	Friendly	Average	Unfriendly
%	63.64	27.27	9.09

Source: Developed from Ibid., p. 97.

This is not the only way that people have tried to maintain the form of the traditional extended family; some people tried to reproduce the traditional *fereej* in their new neighbourhoods. This has been done in one case by building a group of villas owned by a man and his sons. The main house is considered by all as the family house, while every son has his own house. All these houses are connected by one internal passageway to allow the women to visit each other without actually leaving home (Fig.8.38).

All the family members gather in the family house every night and have their dinner together. Also, the father sits in his *majlis* (men's reception space) and a number of his sons, grandsons, clan members, and males from related clans visit him between *Asr* and *Maghrab* prayers (4-6 pm) (Fig.8.39). The internal passageway can be seen as a substitution for the roof routes which existed in the traditional *fereej*s. This passageway is used by the children as a safe playing area. Every family knows the boundaries that their children are playing within.

The father and sons interact cohesively, as one family, with the community. Although every house has a *majlis* hall, the main *majlis* was the only place that was used symbolically to link every one in the family with the external environment. In fact they used their individual *majlises* when a visitor calls on at any time when the main *majlis* is not open. The interesting point here is that, although sons rarely use their own *majlises*, they have insisted on having individual *majlises* because they cannot imagine their houses without a *majlis* hall.

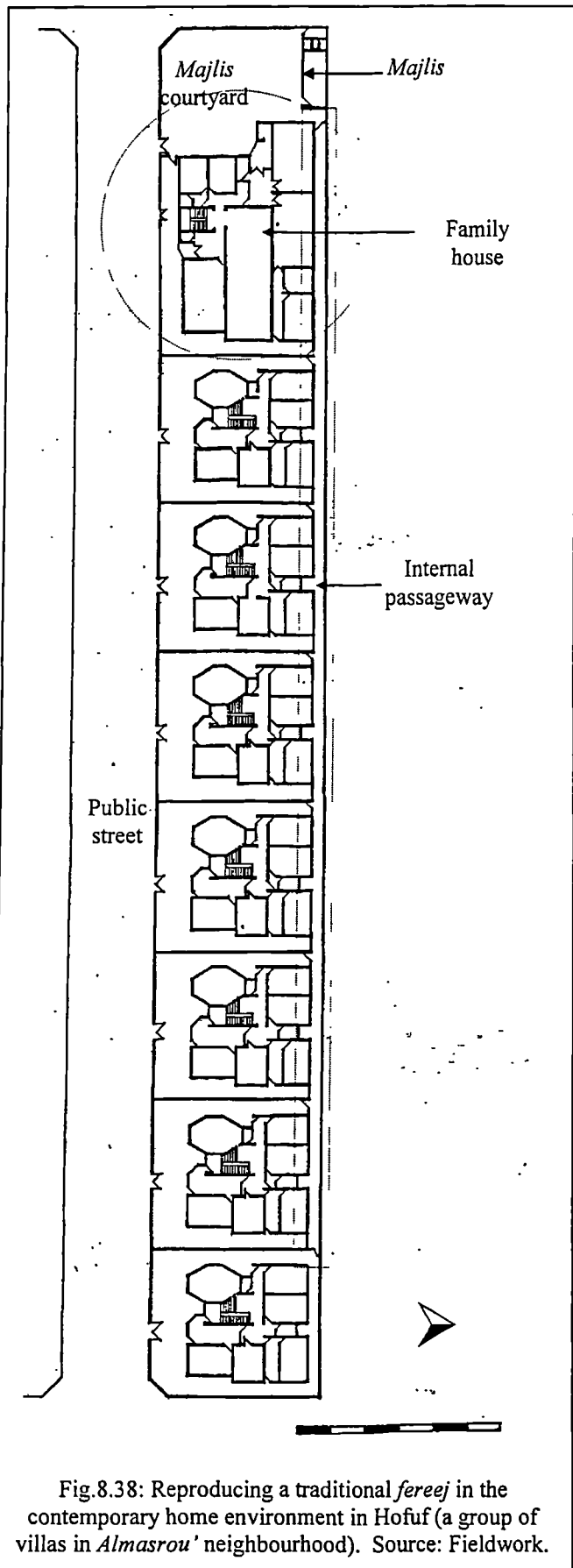


Fig.8.38: Reproducing a traditional *fereej* in the contemporary home environment in Hofuf (a group of villas in *Almasrou*' neighbourhood). Source: Fieldwork.

In the above example, all the family members are connected physically and socially. This is a clear attempt to overcome the physical and legal constraints of the contemporary home environment in Hofuf and reproduce a modern form of *fereej* system. However, it requires a huge budget and not every family can afford it. It is common now to find different clustering forms for extended families in contemporary neighbourhoods. They share one goal, that is living as a group and providing maximum freedom for women and children. Even if the family members are physically living apart from each other, at least one day per week they gather in the family house and have lunch or dinner together. The family house in this situation becomes a symbol for the extended family.⁷¹

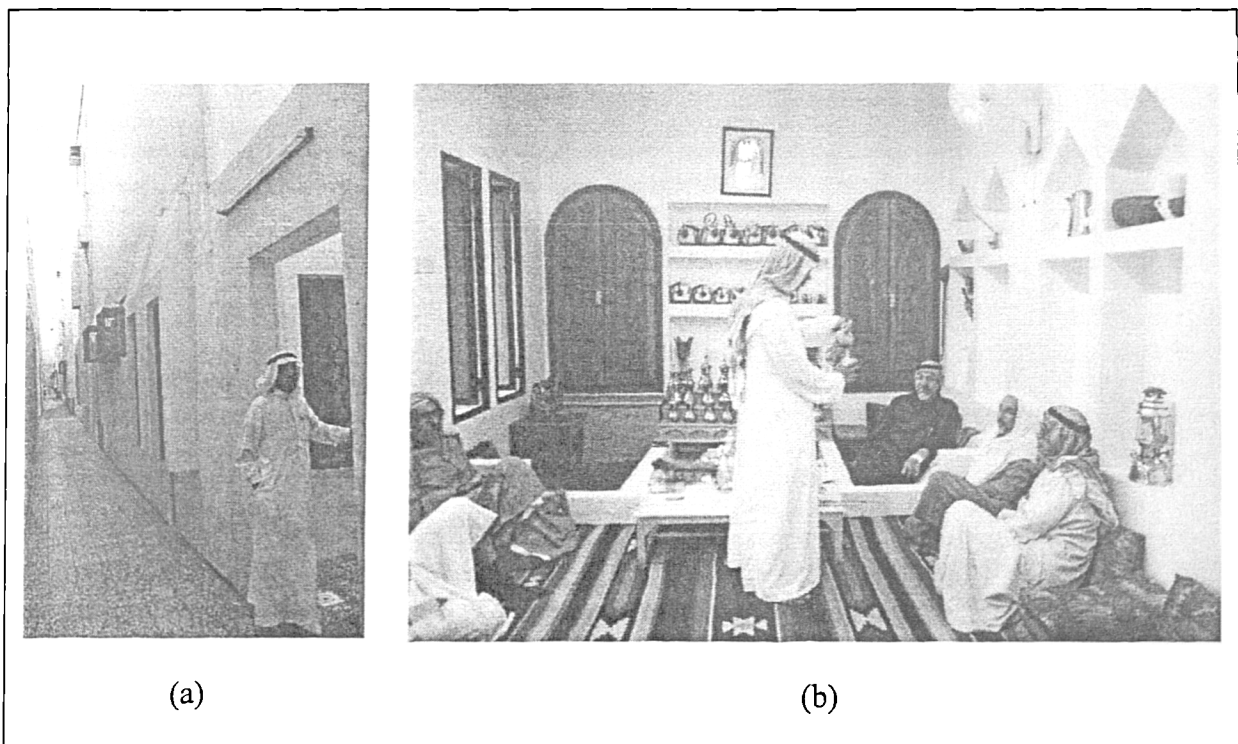


Fig.8.39:. (a) The internal passageway connecting all the houses physically and socially and providing women and children with maximum freedom. (b) All the eight houses are connected by one *majlis* (male reception space), which makes them interact with the community as one group.

Clustering in contemporary Hofuf is not limited to certain *hamola* or restricted to one area; it exists in every new neighbourhood. We can say that the traditional community system has continued despite all the constraints of regulations and physical planning during the last four

⁷¹ Al-Naim, M. (1998) 'Cultural Continuity' A Mechanism for Future Home Environments, Study of the Fereej System in Hofuf, Saudi Arabia , Paper presented at the 15th Inter-School Conference on Development, 29-31 March, Cardiff, University of Wales.

decades. The traditional clans are now redistributed in the new neighbourhoods, but with clear physical boundaries and less physical connectedness (Fig.8.40).

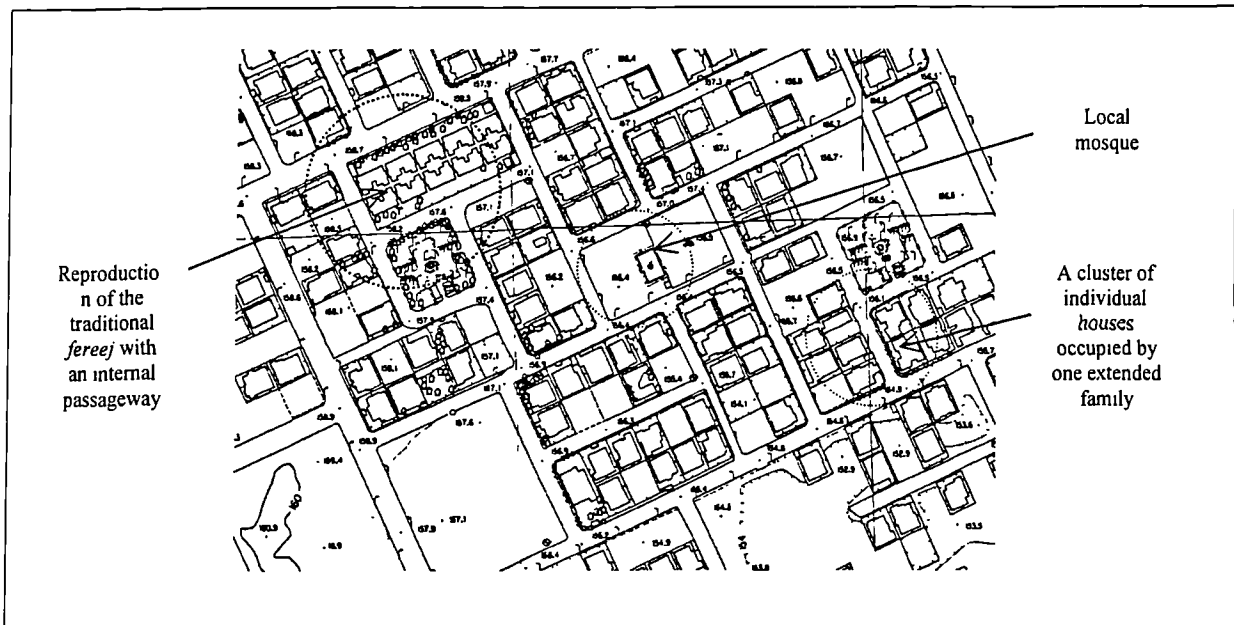


Fig.8.40: Clustering in *Alkhaldiyyah* neighbourhood. Source: Based on aerial map (1985), Municipality of Al-Hasa and the pilot study.

8.5 SUMMARY

The concept of change and resistance has been discussed in the first two chapters of this study. We suggested that it was natural for people to resist innovations because they desire what they know. This is not the only determining factor in people's reaction to innovations, for in fact they are often accepted, but accepted and adapted in a such a way as to fall in line with people's existing concepts and ideas. In some cases old meanings are attached to new forms in order to maintain certain some important rituals in the home environment.

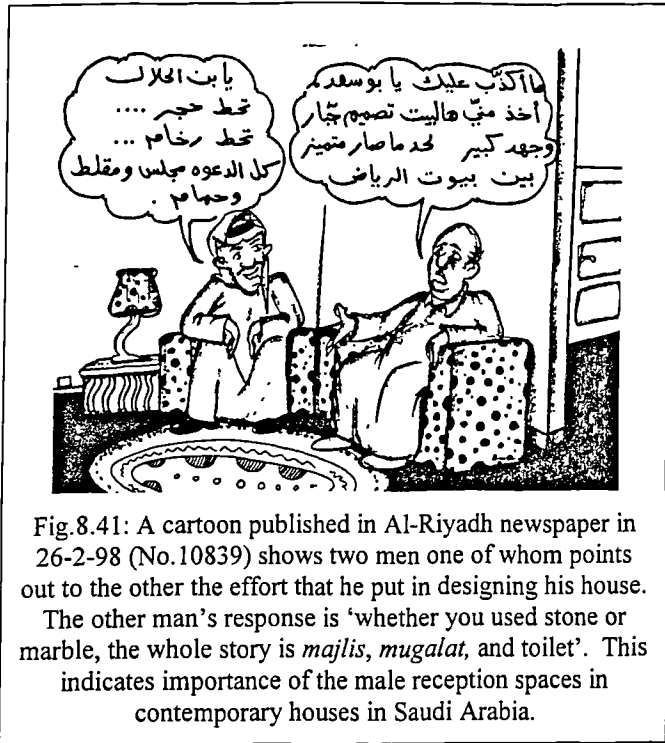
For instance when we discussed the process of identification in *Assalhiyyah* in the early 20th century, we found that people absorbed the gridiron pattern and re-established the collective perceptual and associational identities immediately because there was maximum flexibility in forming the internal context of the home environment. This was not the case when this flexibility was reduced in the post-oil neighbourhoods. We can, then, argue that the more the home environment is characterised by flexibility and is formed by the inhabitants themselves, the more readily the collective perceptual and associational identities are established.

One interesting point to emerge is that people used their past experience to interact with ideas and forms in the 1960s and 1970s in a way that enabled them to maintain their rituals and their relationship with the community even when the external characteristics of the home environment, and their house itself, changed. The researcher believes that an understanding of this hidden mechanism in the home environment will help to develop more responsive policies in the future, which will consider what is going on at ground level.

At the house level, a new identity has been emerging since the 1940s. The private house form in Hofuf has responded to this identity. Its form development was a very clear illustration of the tension between the desire to be modern and the strong long standing values, images, and experiences. This can be seen from the early impact of Aramco's house image when the people of Hofuf were fascinated by the new image but they persisted in their old experiences. The house type of the 1940s, for example, was almost traditional despite the fact that people employed a new way to link the *majlis* hall with the external environment. The house of the 1950s indicated some growth of the new identity. The animal part disappeared and the *dehreez* was minimised to one zone. The coffee spaces disappeared from the *majlis* hall, but still the male reception spaces continued in their symbolic roles by occupying the front stage. The new identity continued in its growth in the transitional house. This was achieved by changing the house facades and the relationship between the front stage and the external spaces. The traditional courtyard was transformed into a sealed hall with a function, other than climatic, as the traditional courtyard.

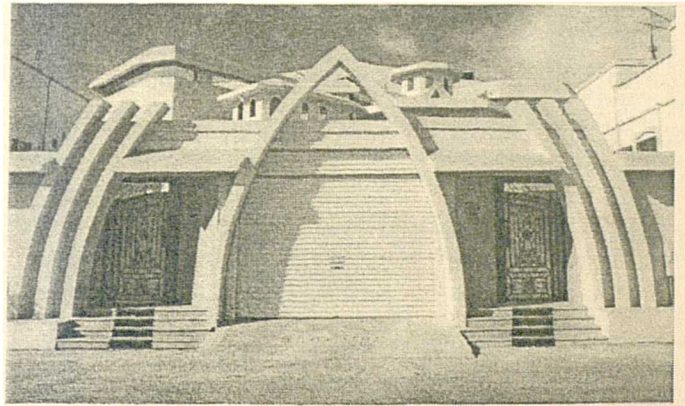
The identity of Hofuf's home environment in the 1970's mainly consisted of more new perceptual elements and more traditional associational meanings. This indicates that the people of Hofuf preferred change and modern technology, but also that they persisted in their core values. This tension in people's minds played a part in every decision they made in their home environment.

Because reception spaces worked for a long time as mediators between the family and community, people mobilised their traditional experiences in their new homes. These reception spaces were considered the key spaces which give the private home in Hofuf its identity. The *majlis* is still, however, seen by people as representative of the whole house (Fig.8.41), as it was in the traditional home environment when people said '*Almajlis wajihat arrajal*'.⁷²



Did the male reception spaces continue with their symbolic function or did new spaces develop in the last two decades? The next chapter, on the identity of the contemporary private home in Hofuf, will address both these questions. The emphasis will be, as in the previous chapters, on those spaces that had been used by people to express their individual and collective perceptual and associational identities.

⁷² See Chapter VII.



Gate of a contemporary house in Hofuf

CHAPTER IX

THE IDENTITY OF THE CONTEMPORARY PRIVATE HOME IN HOFUF

CONTENTS

- 9.1 Prologue
- 9.2 Design Profession and the Contemporary Private Home in Hofuf
- 9.3 Spatial Development of the Private Home in Hofuf
 - 9.3.1 From Transitional House to Villa Style
 - 9.3.2 Refining the Villa Type
 - 9.3.3 Localising the Villa Type
- 9.4 Rituals and Ceremonies of the Contemporary Private Home
 - 9.4.1 Rituals and Ceremonies in the Male Reception Spaces
 - 9.4.1.1 The *Majlis* Hall
 - 9.4.1.2 *Mugallat* and Arabic *Majlis*
 - 9.4.1.3 The Entrance Hall
 - 9.4.1.4 The Coffee Ritual
 - 9.4.2 Rituals and Ceremonies of the Women's *Majlis*
 - 9.4.3 Rituals and Ceremonies of Family Spaces
 - 9.4.3.1 The Living Room
 - 9.4.3.2 The Kitchen
- 9.5 Summary



THE IDENTITY OF THE CONTEMPORARY PRIVATE HOME IN HOFUF

9.1 PROLOGUE

It is difficult to understand how the people of Hofuf re-produced their own *fereej*s in their contemporary home environment without considering their attitudes towards the changes that took place in Hofuf since the 1940's. As Lomax and Berkowitz mentioned: 'The ways of a people - its economic, affective, political, communicative, and expressive systems - are learned and may be changed by each succeeding generation.'¹ They discussed the 'cultural hypothesis', which suggests 'that most human behavior is determined by complex patterns of learned behavior transmitted through the centuries in the same territory'.² Werner supports this when she said 'time had been an important - albeit implicit - part of research on interpersonal relationships and theories of the meaning and use of homes'.³ As we noticed, in the foregoing discussion, establishing group identity was one of the fundamental issues that the people of Hofuf strove to accomplish in every new home environment. This was true when clustering and re-producing the *fereej* system became an organisational factor in the contemporary home environment.

In the introduction of this study we hypothesised that home environment in Hofuf had been refined by continued traditions (socio-cultural values and past experiences). We suggested that even when external and technocratic forces were imposed on the home environment some continuity for the old traditions was noticed. We attributed this phenomenon to the fact that the people in Hofuf had resisted and refined the new forms in order to localise them.

In this chapter, we will continue in our argument. The assumption here is that people continued in using their traditions in refining their houses. It is obvious that the change after 1975 was drastic and irresistible but still, as we suggested, we believe that people had used their past traditions as criteria for evaluating new house forms. This time the sources of the house image was produced by architects who always think about fantasy and individual designs. This chapter, however, is not about criticising the role of the architects in the

¹ Lomax, A. & Berkowitz, N. (1973), Op. Cit., p. 77.

² Ibid., p. 78.

contemporary home environment in Hofuf; rather it is about the unique relationship that the people of Hofuf had developed with their contemporary private homes. It is about the resistance that people had imposed to control the unlimited imagination of designers in the last two decades tried to tempt people to adopt.

9.2 DESIGN PROFESSION AND THE CONTEMPORARY PRIVATE HOME IN HOFUF

It is difficult to understand how the private home in Hofuf took its recent form without considering the impact of the design profession on the contemporary home environment. We have mentioned that the design profession before 1975 was not yet developed in Hofuf. Local people either asked technical help from the municipality engineers or prepared their home designs in one of the design offices in the nearest cities, Dammam and Khobar. This led, as we have said, to the fact that the spatial organisation of the private home remained with a minimum change. However, a new era came in after 1975. This was clearly seen from the increase of governmental involvement in the physical environment. Now no one can build his house without having full architectural and technical documents from a licensed design office.

In the late 1970s few design offices were established in Hofuf.³ Most of them tried to provide the documents that the municipality required without real architectural involvement. This situation did not last long because the design profession became prestigious, especially as several design offices were established by Saudi architects in the early 1980s. Those design offices employed several architects from Egypt and Syria who introduced several spatial concepts to Hofuf. This section tries to understand the process of change and resistance that took place in the private home in Hofuf in the last two decades. The purpose here is to understand how the local people in Hofuf absorbed the new concepts introduced by those architects and how the design profession contributed to the growth of the new identity, which had appeared in the 1940s.

According to Abdulrahman Al-Naim, owner of a design office since 1982, the relationship between the client and the architects in the late 1970s was not equal. Designers tried to impose new concepts upon people who were at that time, in a hurry to have the documents because they needed to take their turn in the governmental subsidy. What was important for

³ Werner, C. M. (1987), *Op. Cit.*, p. 171.

⁴ These offices were established by non-Saudi engineers such as Al-Sayed Allam office (Egyptian). Most of them were civil engineers because the need was for the technical help rather than for architectural design.

them was the number of rooms and the separation of the *majlis* from the family part. As long as the house was *musallah*, this was enough for them at that time. This was not the case in the late 1980s and early 1990s. People became more aware about their home design, and were especially aware that they passed through a number of experiences, whether personal or through their relatives.

Abdullah Al-Shayeb, owner of a design office since 1985, supports this view when he says that people now force the architect to become an adviser rather than a designer. The role of architect in the home environment is an organiser of what people need. Now he cannot impose his values and images upon people because they know what they really need. Ashraf Mahmood⁵ also gives us statistical indications about his clients. He said that 40% of his clients prepare the original sketch of their house design and ask him only for technical support with minimum organisation. Also, they let him design the facades, which later, during construction, may change. Another 40% of his clients accept him as adviser and let him prepare alternatives for the spatial organisation. While only 20% let him prepare the original designs and ask him for new ideas. It is clear that people have developed a strong resistance towards the design profession and have forced the architects to apply what they need, especially since they are the ones who will pay the bill.

One of the initial changes is in the role of women in house design. Up to the 1970s, women had a very minor role in the internal spaces. This was because the house itself was small and followed the same spatial organisation. This situation has changed in the contemporary private homes in Hofuf. This important change has been noticed by Al-Shayeb when he states:

‘Recently, we can say that the most important factor that influenced the private home design in Hofuf is the role of women. In the past the rank of the relationship between the family members was organised in such a way that young men had a strong relationship with their fathers. Their wives came in the fourth level after their relationship with their fathers, brothers, and mother. This situation has completely changed in the last two decades when young women became educated and economically independent. The relationship between young men and their wives changed to the first level. This led to an increase of women’s role in house design. Now it is difficult to find a man designing his house without asking his wife.’⁶

What is really interesting about this change is that the family part in the house became more important. Ashraf Mahmood supports this finding when says ‘Clients always take the sketch design to their home and in the second day they come up with new changes mostly in the

⁵ An Egyptian architect working in Hofuf since 1983 as chief architect in Al-Barrak Office.

⁶ Personal interview.

family part, and specifically in the living room, women's *majlis*, and kitchen. What I noticed in the last fifteen years is that the opinion of the client's wife has become more important than the architect himself.⁷

The above mentioned phenomenon indicates that the designing of the private home in Hofuf can be seen as a process of decisions taken by the family members, especially the parents. Every member concentrates on the spaces that belong to her/his domain. It is possible to say that individual identity inside the house has become more important. Women as well as men try to express themselves in their house. This is not to say that collective identity has totally disappeared but what has happened as Ashraf Mahmood said 'Clients always show the sketch of their home design to their friends. Their opinion is very important. When they say it is good it means that this house is socially acceptable'.⁸ This can be linked to what one of the informants said: 'Our houses should respect our traditions. Because we like others to visit us, we should design our houses to fit their beliefs. It is important, for example, to separate the guest spaces from the family part.'⁹

The new identity that developed since the 1940s grew towards individual identity more than a collective one. In contemporary Hofuf we can say that people's resistance is very high because the opinion of the community is still important for individuals. It is important, however, to say that there has always been pressure from the architects to introduce new ideas, which has led in many cases to the infiltration of the new concepts and to their localisation, to fit with people's lifestyle in Hofuf. The following discussion concentrates on the development of the contemporary home in Hofuf.

9.3 SPATIAL DEVELOPMENT OF THE PRIVATE HOME IN HOFUF

In the last chapter we illustrated how the private home developed between 1940 and 1975. We argued that a new identity consisted of continued, modified, and new traditions, experiences, and images working together to produce this new identity. As we have mentioned, the home environment in Saudi Arabia after 1975 had been strongly controlled by government institutions, which forced people to follow the setback regulations and imposed the villa type upon them. Different from the transitional house, private home owners in the late 1970s, 80s, and 90s have had no other alternative than applying the setback and accepting the villa as the only house type. What is really important for this study is to

⁷ Personal interview

⁸ Personal Interview

understand the position of local people in Hofuf in regard to these severe limitations that have been imposed upon their private homes. To what extent that did they mobilise their long standing traditions and experiences in their private homes?

Recently the private home in Hofuf has taken a definite form. People have reproduced similar spatial organisations with minimum differences. This phenomenon was noticed by the researcher when he was involved in designing several houses in Hofuf between 1990 and 1994. Clients always spent a long time in refining their house plans, asking their wives and friends and photographing other people's houses, while paying little attention to the facades. Maybe one of the reasons for this attitude is that the need for visual communication with the community became less important after the separation of the male reception spaces from the external spaces by the front setback.

Still, from the pilot study we found that people tried to reproduce some of the traditional images in their house facades. Because the municipality of Al-Hasa cares about applying the regulations rather than the image of the house,⁹ this has enabled people to make several alterations during the construction of their houses. One of the interesting things is that people have tried to reproduce some of the images from their previous (traditional) homes. This was clearly seen when the composition of the gateway and loggia were reproduced in the facade even if the original functions had completely disappeared (Fig.9.1). For example, some people introduced balconies in the first floor of their houses to indicate the image of the loggia over the main gate. People never use those balconies and instead they leave them to indicate the visual image they wanted in their house facades.¹¹

This part of the thesis tries to describe the development of the private home in Hofuf in the last two decades. We have already traced three stages that the contemporary private home in Hofuf has passed through. The first stage was in the late 1970s when the villa was imposed by the government institutions and plans as the only house type. By that time a spatial and visual tension between the transitional house and the villa type was noticed in several houses. The second stage took place in the 1980s when the architects and design offices became the only reference points for house design. People in this stage could not build any house unless they had architectural and technical drawings from a licensed design office. We argue that the contemporary private home in Hofuf took its main identity at that time. The last period is

⁹ Personal interview

¹⁰ All the three architects that were interviewed mentioned that most of the house facades that were constructed in the 1980s were not as they designed originally. People made large alterations during construction. They indicated that even in the 1990s people concentrate more on the internal spaces than external design.

¹¹ Some people later closed those balconies and include them in the internal rooms, but they left the decorated arches as windows, as well as to indicate the image of the traditional loggia.

the 1990s onward. This period is characterised by the increase of people's involvement in their home's design.

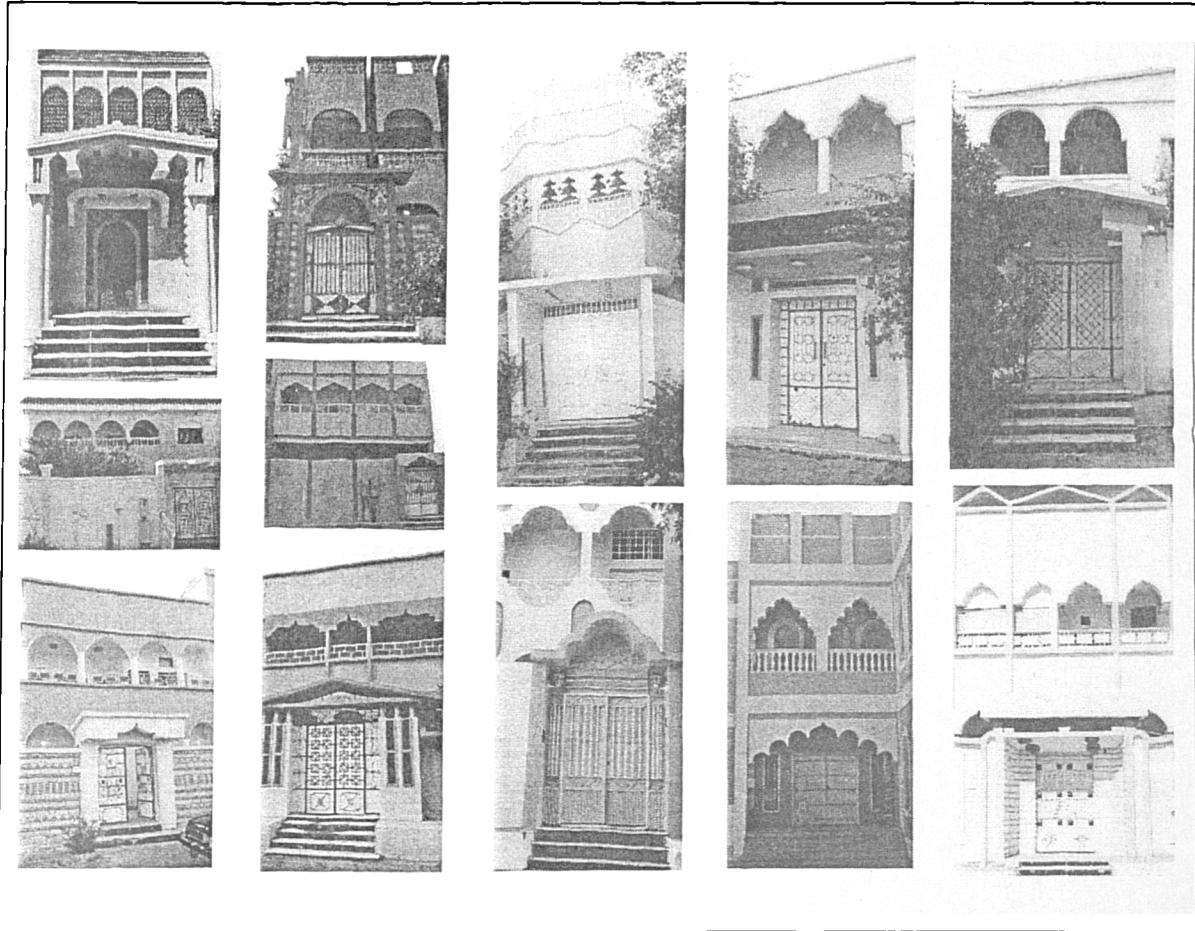


Fig.9.1: A number of villas constructed in 1980's and 90's influenced by the image of traditional loggia in the main facade. Source: Fieldwork.

9.3.1 FROM TRANSITIONAL HOUSE TO VILLA STYLE

In investigating how the private home in Hofuf moved from the transitional type to the villa style, it is necessary to indicate the impact of the new forces in the home environment after 1975. We already discussed the impact of the design profession on the contemporary home environment in Hofuf. In addition to implementing the setback regulations, the municipality architects imposed themselves on the design process by asking people to satisfy four conditions in their home design in order to have a licence for construction. These conditions included, firstly, the requirement that living rooms should be located in the side of the house and have an opening on the setback. This condition aimed to change the prevailing transitional house where the traditional courtyard was replaced by a sealed hall located in the middle and all rooms opened to it. The second condition insisted on connecting the *majlis*

hall with the *mugallat* or at least ingathering them in one defined sector in the house. Because the transitional house contained balconies and terraces on the ground floor,¹² the third condition aimed to minimise this phenomenon. The fourth condition aimed to improve the location of the kitchen in the house by asking people to locate the kitchen in a ventilated space and not facing in the northerly direction (because of the prevailing wind).¹³

These local regulations influenced the form of the private house in the late 1970s. This is clearly seen from, firstly, the fact that the house displayed a spatial organisation different from the transitional one, especially in the middle part where the family spaces were located, and secondly, that the male guest spaces became a complex of spaces related to each other and occupying the front of the house. These changes may be considered the beginning of the villa type in Hofuf. Even the name of ‘villa’ appeared at that time and became the image of the wealth and modernity.

However, it is important to mention that the setback regulations were not completely applied in Hofuf at that time (Fig.9.2). From the pilot study we found that the setbacks did not exist at all sides in many houses of the early contemporary neighbourhoods, which were built after 1975. This can be attributed to the fact that the real involvement of government institutions began in the late 1970s and early 1980s, because establishing the institution was not enough to apply the regulations. This situation was changed when the Saudi architects became involved.¹⁴ This led to minimise people’s resistance, especially in the external domestic space.

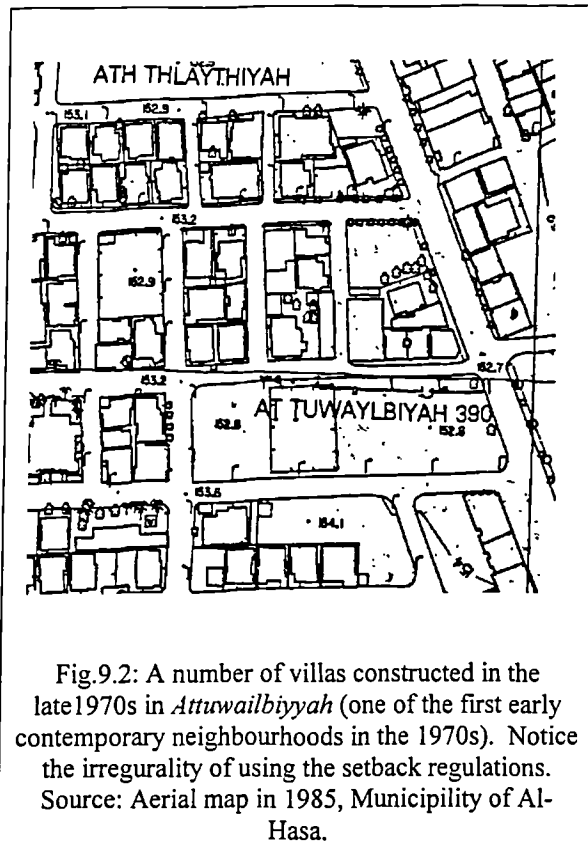


Fig.9.2: A number of villas constructed in the late 1970s in Attuwaylbiyyah (one of the first early contemporary neighbourhoods in the 1970s). Notice the irregularity of using the setback regulations. Source: Aerial map in 1985, Municipality of Al-Hasa.

As we have said, the four local regulations imposed by the Al-Hasa municipality influenced house design at that time and produced a new house type in Hofuf. It is difficult, however, to indicate a definite spatial organisation for the early villa in Hofuf. Because people, for the

¹² People at that time thought having a balcony on the first floor and terrace (veranda) in front of the *majlis* as indications of modernity.

¹³ Interview with Abdulrahman Al-Naim (one of early Saudi Architects who was a head of the building licencing deptment in the municipality of Al-Hasa in the late 1970s).

¹⁴ It is important to mention that architectural education started in Saudi Arabia in the early 1970s. For example the architectural college in King Faisal University in Dammam was established in 1975. A few years earlier the Department of Architecture was established in King Saud University. Saudi architects graduated from these schools in the late 1970s and became directly involved in government institutions.

first time, were forced to involve an external party, the design office, in their house design, the spatial organisation of their homes did not attain a satisfactory state. People insisted on certain relationships, but the architects too tried to introduce new spaces and relationships into the home

Fig.9.3, shows one villa constructed after 1975.¹⁵ The setback did not completely surround the house; it was cut in the front by a shop, which was later used as a driver's room. An apartment was included in the first floor which was rented for five years, then the oldest son used it when he got married, and now it is used by the youngest son. As with the transitional house, two doors are located in the front fence, one for the guests and the other for the family. In the early villa a garage was introduced, which required another large door. What is interesting about the front facade of the early villa is that it contained three to four doors in an elevation only 15m wide.

Another important change in the early villa was that the house became two storeyed. The ground floor used as a reception area and family common space while the first floor was completely used for bedrooms. This split of activities was not clearly seen until mid 1980s when the people of Hofuf completely stopped having bedrooms on the ground floor, except in a few cases, and instead introduced another room on the ground floor which was used as a multi-purpose room. This attitude influenced the contemporary private home in Hofuf and tempted people in later years to increase the space sizes of the ground floor areas and introduce more new spaces and relationships. One point that can be added here is that by splitting the utilitarian spaces from the symbolic spaces, certain spaces in the house, such as the kitchen, became the only utilitarian space on the ground floor.

In the aforementioned case, the male reception space had two doors, one of them to enable the guests to approach the *majlis* from the front garden, the other to link the *majlis* with the *mugallat*, mainly used as a women's reception space and dining room.¹⁶ Sofas and chairs were used extensively in the early villa in the *majlis* hall. This type of furniture was associated with the villa type. The interesting thing here is that people realised later that the size of the *majlis*, which was 6 x 4m, was not suitable to take this type of furniture. There was always a problem of width in the *majlis* at that time, which led to an increase in its size to at least 6 x 5m in the later houses.¹⁷

¹⁵ An office called 'Modern Engineering Office' designed this house. It was owned by a non-Saudi engineer (Salah Al-Deen Anwar Khalid). This office does not now exist.

¹⁶ In the 1980s women *majlis* was either the living room or in one of the ground floor bedrooms. This encouraged people to open one of bedrooms to the side setback in the late 1980s to define the women *majlis* and to provide accessibility for women without exposing the family spaces to them.

¹⁷ Interview with Abdulrahman Al-Naim.

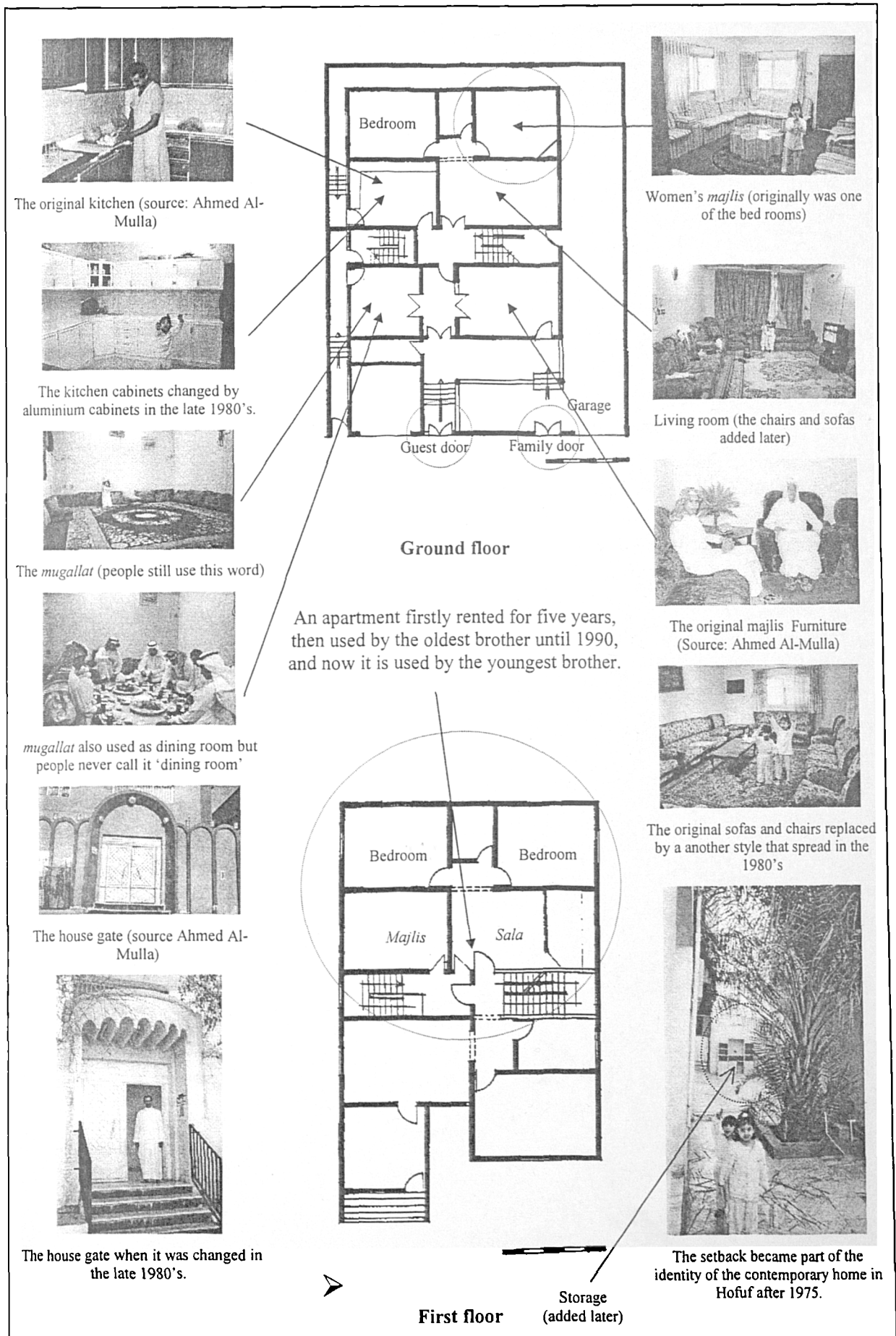


Fig.9.3: A villa constructed after 1975 in Assinaiyyah. Source: Fieldwork

One clear indication of the impact of the local municipality regulations was the location of the living room in the side of the house. Although the living room connects the bedrooms on the ground floor, it is now more isolated and used as common space for the family as well as reception space to entertain close relatives. The relationship between the bedrooms and the living room encouraged the family to transform one of the bedrooms in the middle of the 1980s, to a women's *majlis* by opening a door to the side setback. The *majlis* and *mugallat* also clustered in one zone and were connected to each other by an entrance hall. The latter change became part of the male reception organisation in the later houses.

The development of the early villa is illustrated in Fig.9.4. As we have said, the spatial organisation of the late 1970s houses was in a fluid condition but there was a common agreement on certain images among local people. The desire to separate the guest part from the family part remained as a major factor that influenced the organisation of the ground floor. In a villa designed in 1977 (Fig.9.4 a) parts of the transitional house elements continued, especially the passageway, with the staircase, that links the family part with the front garden. *Mugallat* and *majlis* remained as they were in the transitional house. The living room took a side location but it functioned, as in the transitional house, as a circulation space. The only difference here is that in this case, the living room can be approached from the side setback when people placed a *veranda* in front of the living room entrance.

In a villa designed in the late 1970s, the ground floor changed slightly when the *mugallat* came closer to the kitchen because of the need to serve food on occasions (Fig.9.4 b). Also the living room became more isolated and was used as a reception space in the house. The staircase took an isolated space close to the family entrance in the side setback. The staircase later integrated more with the living room (see Fig.9.4 c). It is clear that the spatial organisation of the contemporary house of the late 1970s was undergoing reform. The new ideas brought by architects at that time, especially the living room with the staircase, were resisted by people but in the end they absorbed them and accepted the staircase inside the living room in the later houses.¹⁸

¹⁸ People were strongly influenced by the colonial villas in the Arabic cities, especially in Cairo. The main image of those villas was a staircase in the middle of the living room. See Appendix II.

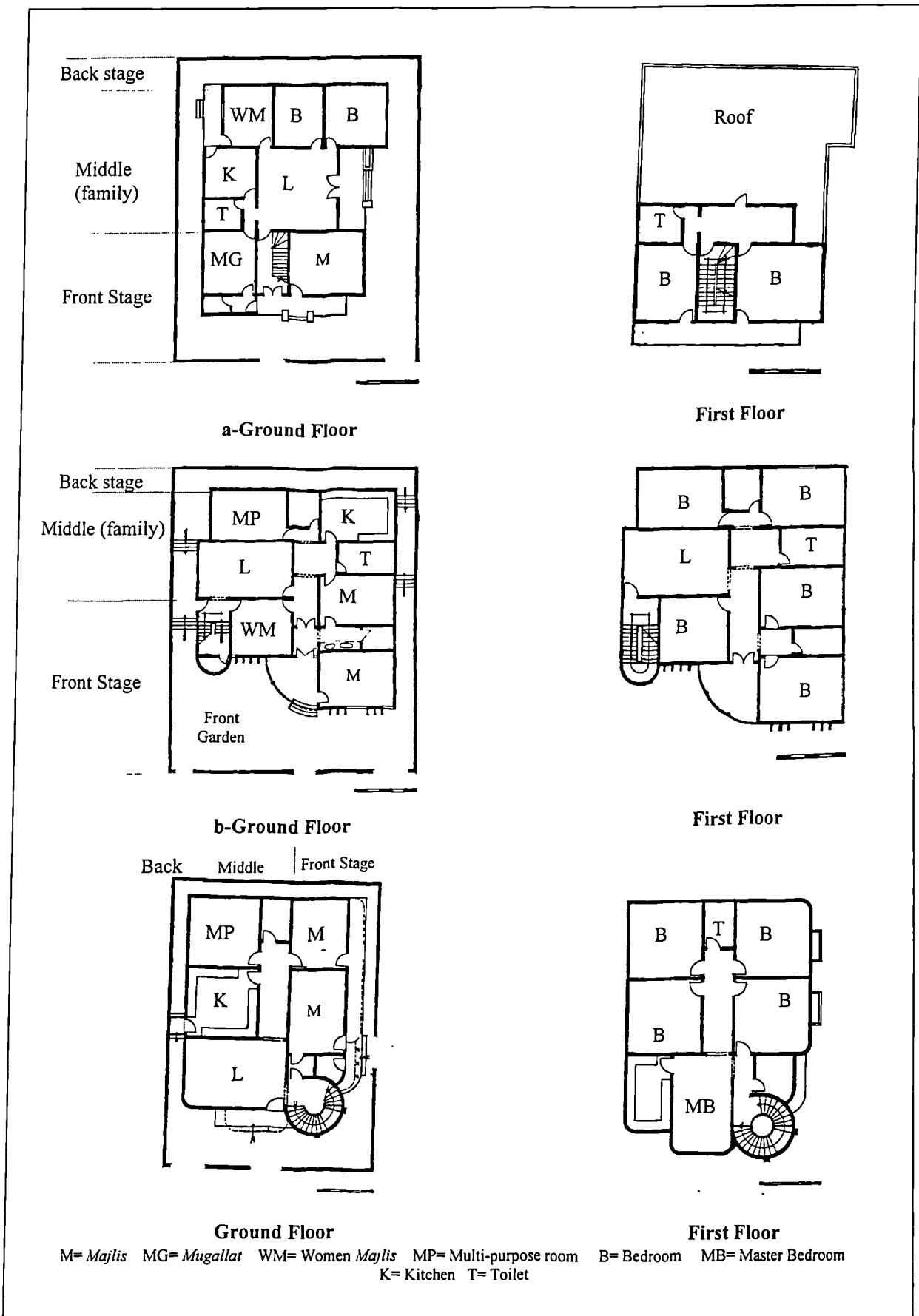


Fig.9.4: A number of villas constructed in the late 1970's and early 1980's. a) A villa (designed in 1977) shows the development of the living room. b) A villa (designed in late 1970's) shows how the house became two storeys (bedrooms transferred to first floor). c) A villa (designed in early 1980's) shows how the staircase became closer to the living room. Source: Fieldwork.

In general we can say that both the guest and family parts became more complicated in the early villa. The male reception spaces remained as the front stage of the house although the women's room and living room became more important as reception spaces. The back of the house was occupied by the back setback which was seen by people as semi-private space because of the windows of the neighbours which overlooked all outdoor spaces in the house. Many people added storage to the back setback because they never used it for sitting or as a garden (Fig.9.5).

The first floor, which is located in the middle stage, contains the bedrooms and, in some cases, family living room. In this case, the family part has become very large. Different from the previous house types, the contemporary home in Hofuf is characterised by the large number of individual spaces in the family part. This can be attributed to the fact that individuals in every family became more educated and preferred to have their own private room. It was not acceptable for many people that time to sleep in one room with all their sisters or brothers.

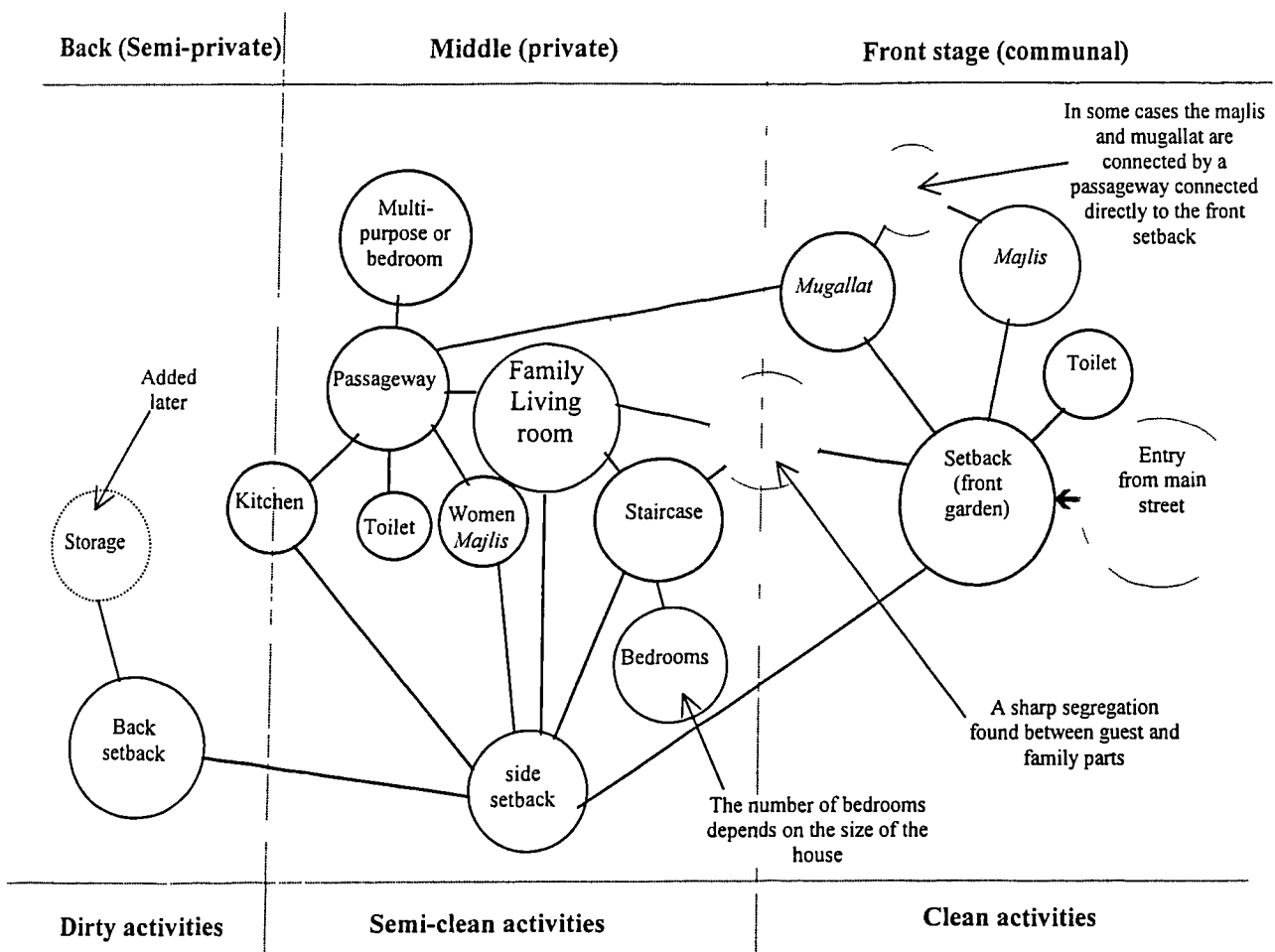


Fig.9.5: The organisation of internal domestic space of the contemporary house of the late 1970's.¹⁹

¹⁹ The women's *majlis* was one of the room in the ground floor. There was no specific room for it.

The front garden became an important symbolic element. This tempted people to treat the front setback in a different way in the later houses. Having a large outdoor space in front of the house became an image of the new modern villa in Hofuf. It was used to express the individual (family) perceptual identity.²⁰ This led in many cases to houses being situated on one corner to create large front spaces, especially with the back and front setbacks being completely unused except for circulation.

Although the pedestrian pavements in front of the house belong to the street, people used this pavement to grow trees and they paved them with different tiles to indicate their individual territories. The external visual characteristics of the early villa type in Hofuf were different from the transitional type in the sense that the abstract concrete facade had completely disappeared. The relationship between the *majlis* and the external spaces remained as they were in the transitional house. The new visual elements that were introduced with the early villa were the large front garden and new finishing materials, which were used in the late 1970s.

It is quite important to mention how the building industry influenced house facades in Hofuf. The economical upsurge after 1973 enabled many people to import construction materials. An almost completely new market developed to supply people with the needed materials, especially after the government subsidies for private housing. The house facades of the early villa were influenced by this market. For example, yellow and red stones were used in the house facade. Also a granite texture with a range of colours was used in the house facades. Now if anybody walks in the early contemporary neighbourhoods he or she will find all houses in a complete neighbourhood or street finished with one or both of the above materials (see Fig.9.6 & 9.7). This situation disappeared in the early 1980s when the municipality forced people to plaster their house facades with white plastic colours, thus imposing a collective perceptual identity on people.

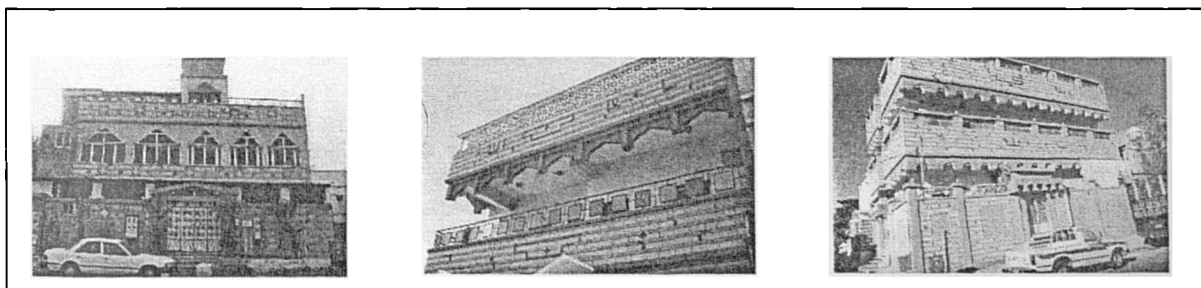


Fig.9.6: A number of stone facades (also notice the pavement in front of the house facade which is used to emphasise the visual characteristics of the contemporary private home in Hofuf). Source: Fieldwork

²⁰ Abu-Ghazzeah found that the front garden was used as vehicle to personalise the contemporary houses in Jordan. Abu-Ghazzeah, T. (1997) 'The Dialectic Dimensions of Homes as an Expression of Identity and Communitality in Amman, Jordan', *Housing Studies*, Vol. 12, No. 2, pp. 247-63.

One of the main interesting phenomena is that, despite the fact that different materials were used in the external facades, people tried to express their individual and collective visual images. People used the stone facades to write several words such as ‘Allah’ and other words from Quran and Prophet’s traditions. People used the facade granite as a medium to express their personal image. Several mural paintings were developed, most of them illustrating well known elements such as the palm tree (Fig.9.7). It was very clear that people tried to personalise their houses because the standardisation that the regulations and material market imposed upon people’s image left them with minimum contact with their physical environment. In the traditional homes, we noticed how people personalised their houses by the arrangement of the coffee space, which was different in every house. In the early villa the personalisation took the form of external rather than internal differences.

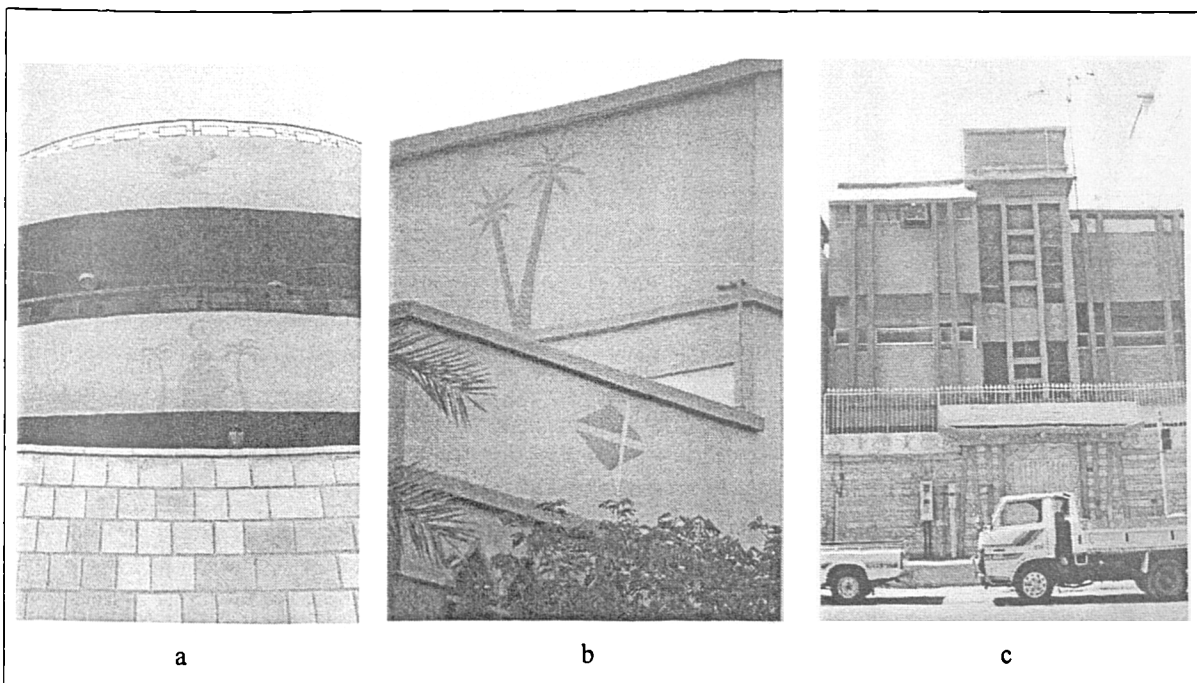


Fig.9.7: Granite facades with some visual symbols (mainly palm trees and Quranic calligraphy). Source: Fieldwork.

This phenomenon can also be seen in the main gateway when, in the early villa, it displayed fantastic designs. Compared to the transitional house, where the gate was very simple and only a shed of concrete with minimum decoration, the early villa gate became different in every house. Although the traditional gate had worked as a medium for people to personalise the house through changing the ornamentation pattern in the top of the wooden door, a consistent form was used to express the collective perceptual identity (Fig.9.8). What happened in the early villa was an indication of the growth of the new identity towards

individuality. The collective perceptual identity became less important through the introduction of the design profession and endless construction materials

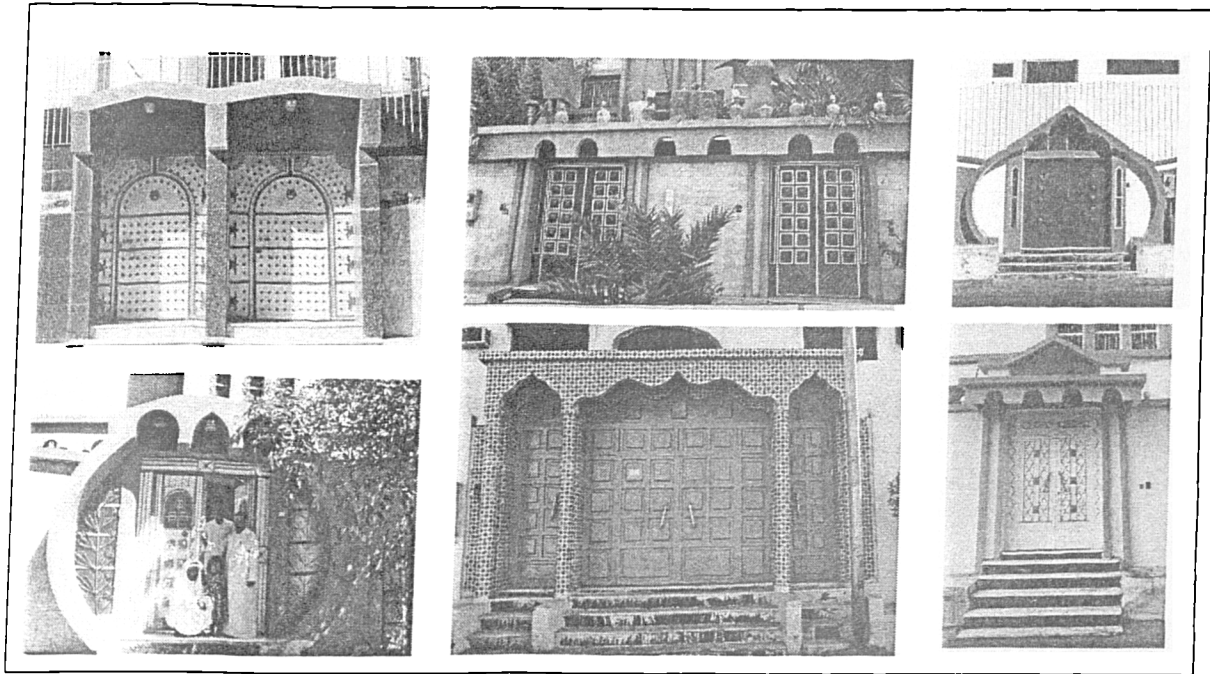


Fig.9.8: A number of gateways constructed in the late 1970s reflect the growth of the individual perceptual identity. Source: Fieldwork.

We are not trying to say here that there was always a smooth transition from one type of housing to another in Hofuf, but rather, as we discussed in Chapter VIII, there was a point where a radical paradigm change took place. We noted how the hybrid house, which was almost traditional, was replaced by a transitional house, which was the first step towards the villa type. In the following discussion we see how the private home in Hofuf developed another path by changing the status of several internal spaces.

9.3.2 REFINING THE VILLA TYPE (1980s)

It is important to mention that the recent identity of the contemporary home in Hofuf developed during the 1980s when the main spatial elements took their position and relationships. This was the decade when the contemporary private home in Hofuf took a unique form, particularly in the late 1980s. In this period the people of Hofuf localised the new spaces that had been introduced with the early villa type, and from the 1980s on the private home has shown consistent and repetitive spatial characteristics that continue with minimum change until present time.

One of the major changes in the spatial organisation of the private home in the 1980s was that the staircase moved to the middle of the living room. We can understand how this change influenced the image of local people from a comment from one of the architects:

‘The positioning of the staircase in the middle of the living room in private homes in Hofuf was a historical event because it made people change their attitude towards the living room. In the previous houses they thought that the living room was merely similar to the traditional courtyard, a central space connecting several rooms around it. Now the living room holds a symbolic role in addition to its utilitarian one.’

This is not the only change in the private home at that time. In general, we can discuss two stages for the development of the house form in the 1980s. Our criteria are based on the development of the living room, which was, in the first place, a transitional space containing the staircase in the middle, while it moved towards the front stage and became more symbolic in the late 1980s.

Fig.9.9, considers an example of the private home constructed in the middle of 1980s. It shows the changes that took place in the former five years in spatial organisation, especially on the ground floor. The living room became more important and took a central position. The staircase was positioned in the middle of the living room; it works as transitional space to link the ground floor with the first floor through the living room. This led to an increase in the importance of the staircase in the later houses. People encouraged the designers to develop several fantastic designs for the staircase as an element to express the prestige of the living room,.

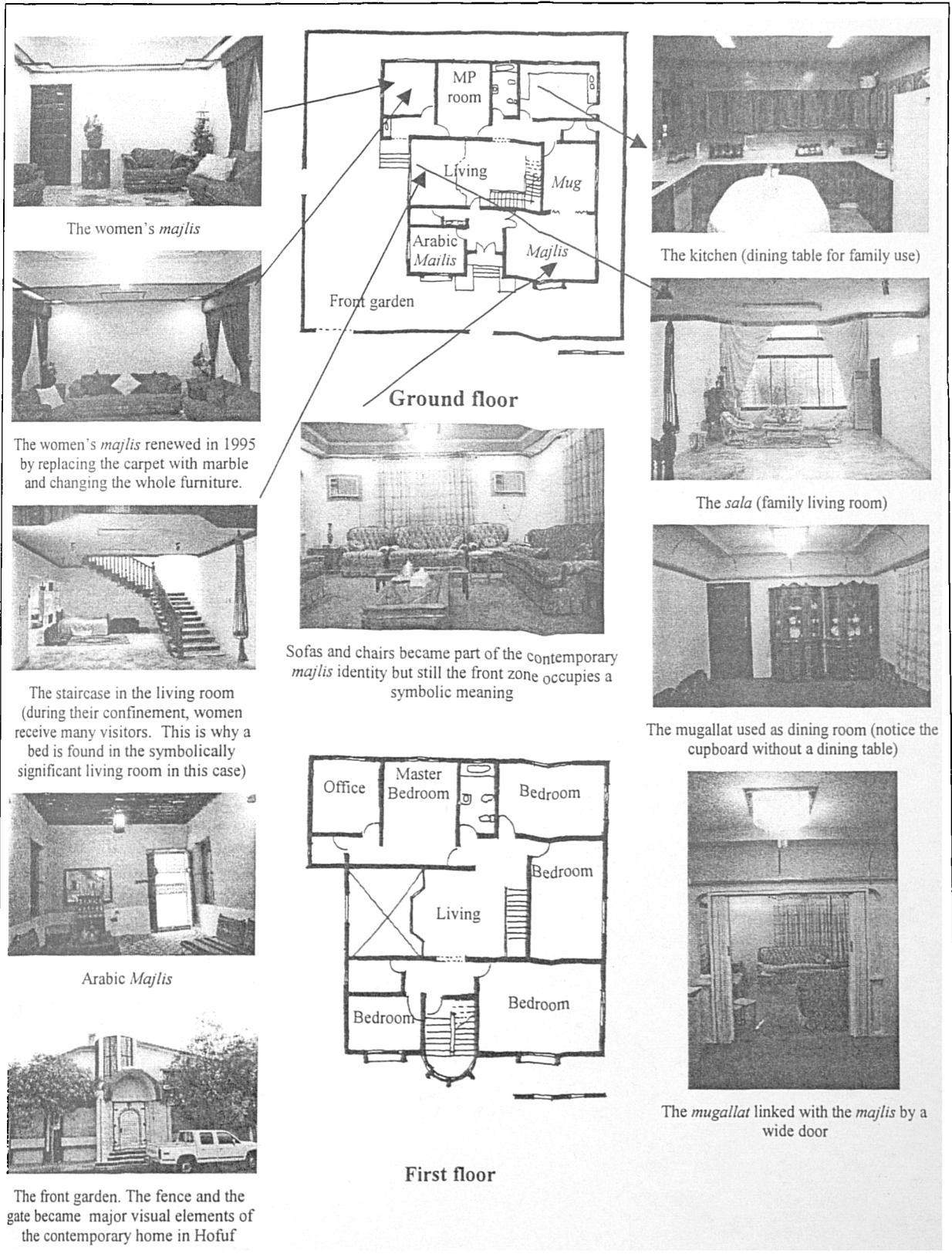


Fig.9.9: A villa constructed in the middle of the 1980s in *Alkhaldiyyah* neighbourhood. Source: Fieldwork.

Another important development can be seen in this case, that is the women's *majlis*, which became more isolated and had its own entrance hall. We should mention that the development of the women reception space was still in its beginning and not every house had a separate entrance for the women's *majlis* (See Fig.9.10). But we can say that there was tension at that time, headed by women, to express themselves in their houses. In the beginning they strove to locate a space in the house to use as a women's *majlis*; then they used pressure to separate this space from the family's part, which in fact they achieved later.

The municipal regulations of the late 1970s encouraged the clustering of the main reception spaces in the villas of the early 1980s, so that the *majlis* and the *mugallat* became associated as one space separated only by an folding door. This is because the *mugallat* was designed as a dining room which required positioning it in a location close to the kitchen as well as to the *majlis* hall. People accepted this new idea, but for different reasons. They used the *majlis* hall and *mugallat* as one space on those occasions, especially marriages, where many men need to be seated.²¹

In the aforementioned particular case, the owner asked the designer to add one more space. This space is used as the Arabic *majlis*. By that time this concept was not common and only a few people wanted to have this space in the male reception spaces. This was because the *mugallat* was very deep and had no access except through the *majlis* hall.²² What happened later is that the *mugallat* regained its function as an informal sitting place while the Arabic *majlis* was used as a small museum. This is because the owner reproduced the traditional *majlis* with its coffee place (this happened in 1994) and kept it for special occasions.²³ One thing needs to be mentioned about this case, and that is that there was a dining table in the *mugallat* but after few months the owner took it out and left the cupboard in its place.²⁴ This was because it is rare in Hofuf that people take their food on tables.

²¹ When we asked the interviewed architects about the spatial organisation of the contemporary private home in Hofuf they indicated that some people had insisted on linking the *majlis* hall with the *mugallat* because they thought that they needed to have at least one large space for special occasions.

²² There was need for a space to serve the food for male guests at the same time there was a need for a space for informal sitting. This led to increase the number of the male reception spaces in some cases, especially those which situate the *mugallat* in deep locations.

²³ It is a phenomenon now in Hofuf that people have reproduced the traditional *majlis* with its coffee place. This can be seen as a nostalgic attitude, especially when people experienced the modern house and felt that they would not be able again to live in their traditional houses.

²⁴ The owner himself imported all the furniture from America

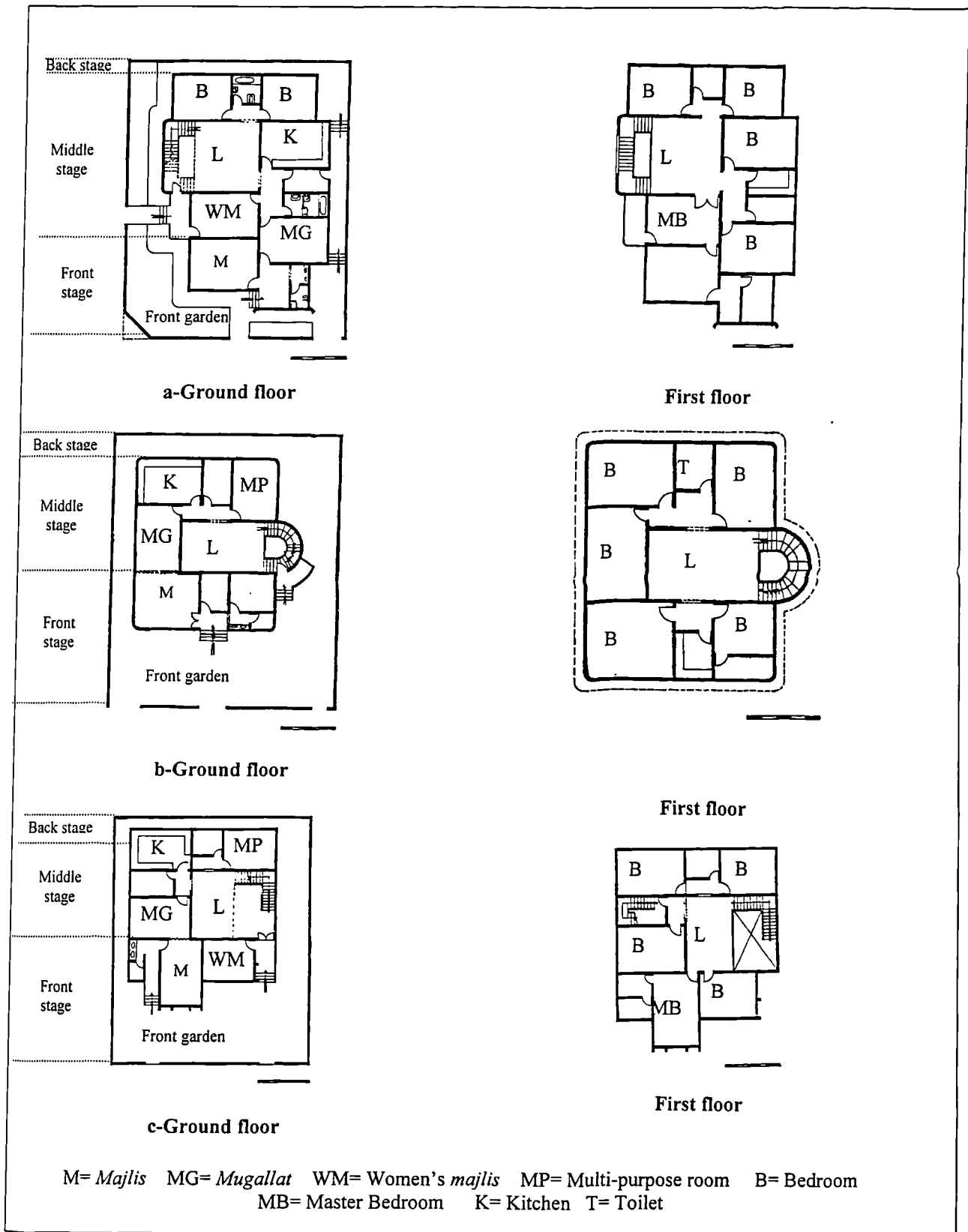


Fig.9.10: Development of private home in the early 1980s. a) The staircase moved to the living room and the women's majlis became well identified. b) The majlis hall associated with the mugallat (was to be used on occasions as one space). c) The living room is half covered and half open to the first floor rooms. Source: Fieldwork.

One of the interesting things is the use of the term 'Arabic *majlis*'. When the owner in the above mentioned case asked the designer to add this space he did not think of it as an 'Arabic *majlis*'. What was in his mind was that the *majlis* hall should be kept for formal sitting. This cannot be done unless there is a space for the daily gathering, or what people of Hofuf call '*dariyyah*'. The phrase 'Arabic *majlis*' was used in the late 1980s and became common in the 1990s, which indicates that people, after a short experience of the new lifestyle, had evaluated this experience and refined it to make it compatible with their own ways of living. The *majlis* hall, as it was in the traditional house, was used to express the contemporary family status, while the *mugallat* and Arabic *majlis* were used to entertain their closest friends.

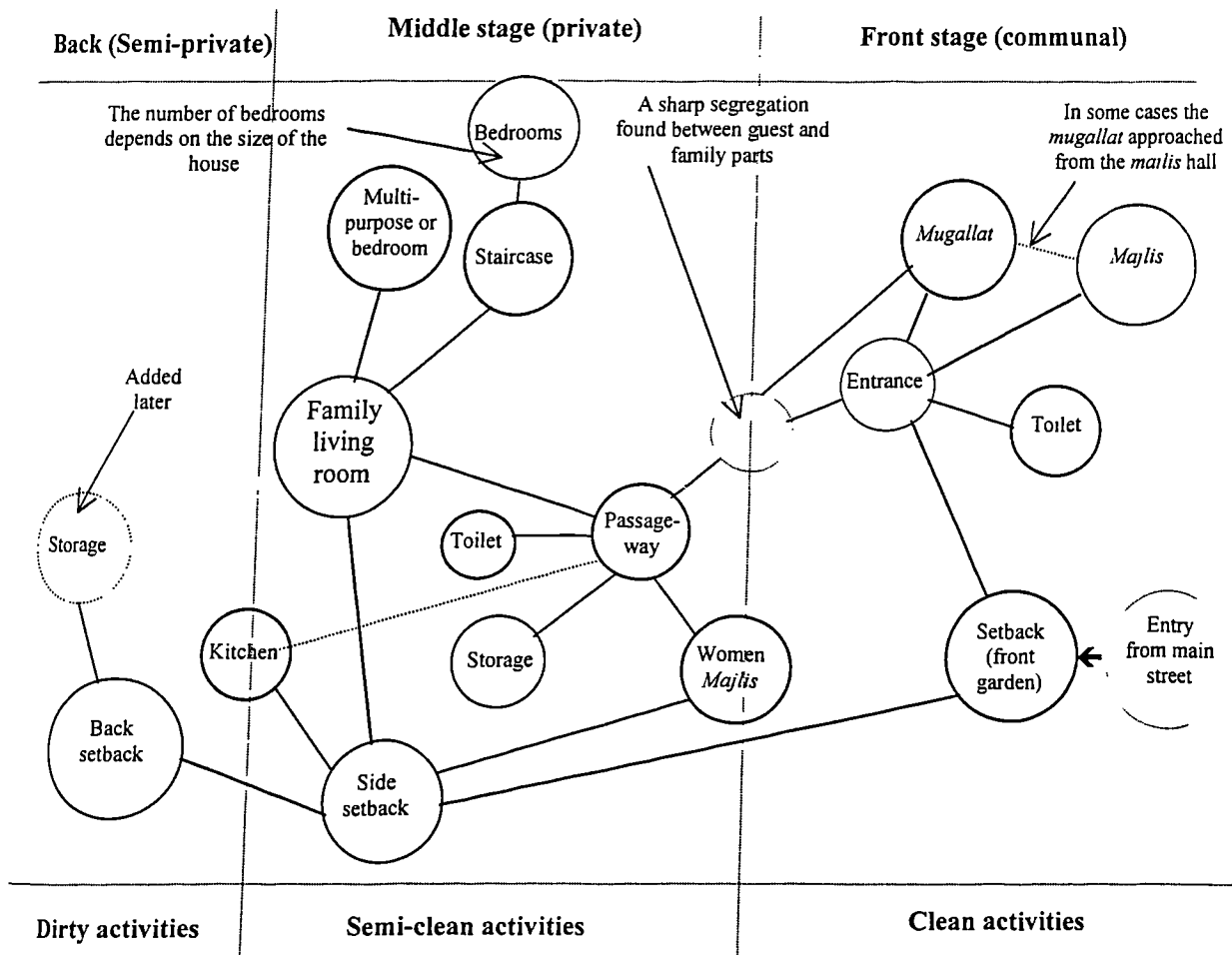


Fig.9.11: The organisation of internal domestic space of the contemporary house of the early 1980s.

The private home in the early 1980s still consisted of three zones, front middle and back. The front was occupied by the most symbolic space in the house, the *majlis* hall. The middle part was occupied by a number of family and women reception spaces. While the back setback represented the back stage of the house, which in many cases was used as storage area when people built a storage room in it. At that time, there were some changes in the middle stage. The women's *majlis* and the living room moved slightly towards the front stage and showed some independence from the other family spaces on the ground floor (Fig.9.11). This is because women started to express their status and communicated with their domain very strongly at that time, something which appeared very clearly in the later houses when the women's *majlis* and living room moved further to the front stage.

In the second half of the 1980s, as we have already noted, the form of the private house in Hofuf was refined and developed towards a constant and repetitive organisation. This was because people had involved themselves in their own house design. They had already witnessed the advantages and disadvantages of the new forms and spaces introduced in the early 1980s house. They realised, for example, the symbolic role of the living room; therefore, they opened it out and made it two storeys in height (Fig.9.12. a). This change was very critical because it introduced another possibility for people to personalise their houses through using different design alternatives for the living room. In fact, both types of living room, the single-storey and double storey-rooms are still found in private homes in Hofuf.

If we considered the positioning of the staircase in the living room as a new paradigm in the development of the private home in Hofuf, using fantastic designs in the front stages in the second half of the 1980s can be seen as another paradigm shift (Fig.9.12.b). This is because this attitude changed the external and internal quality of the front spaces such as the *majlis* hall and the living room. Visual complications of the front facade became very important factor for expressing the uniqueness of home in Hofuf at that time. We have already indicated the increasing of personal identity in the early villa. This phenomenon took one decade to become very clear in every single space in the house, and in the composition of the house as a whole. Now, there are male spaces which are shaped and refined by the household requirements and there are female spaces which are also shaped and refined by the women in the house. Everyone in the house has become aware of his territorial space and personal identity.

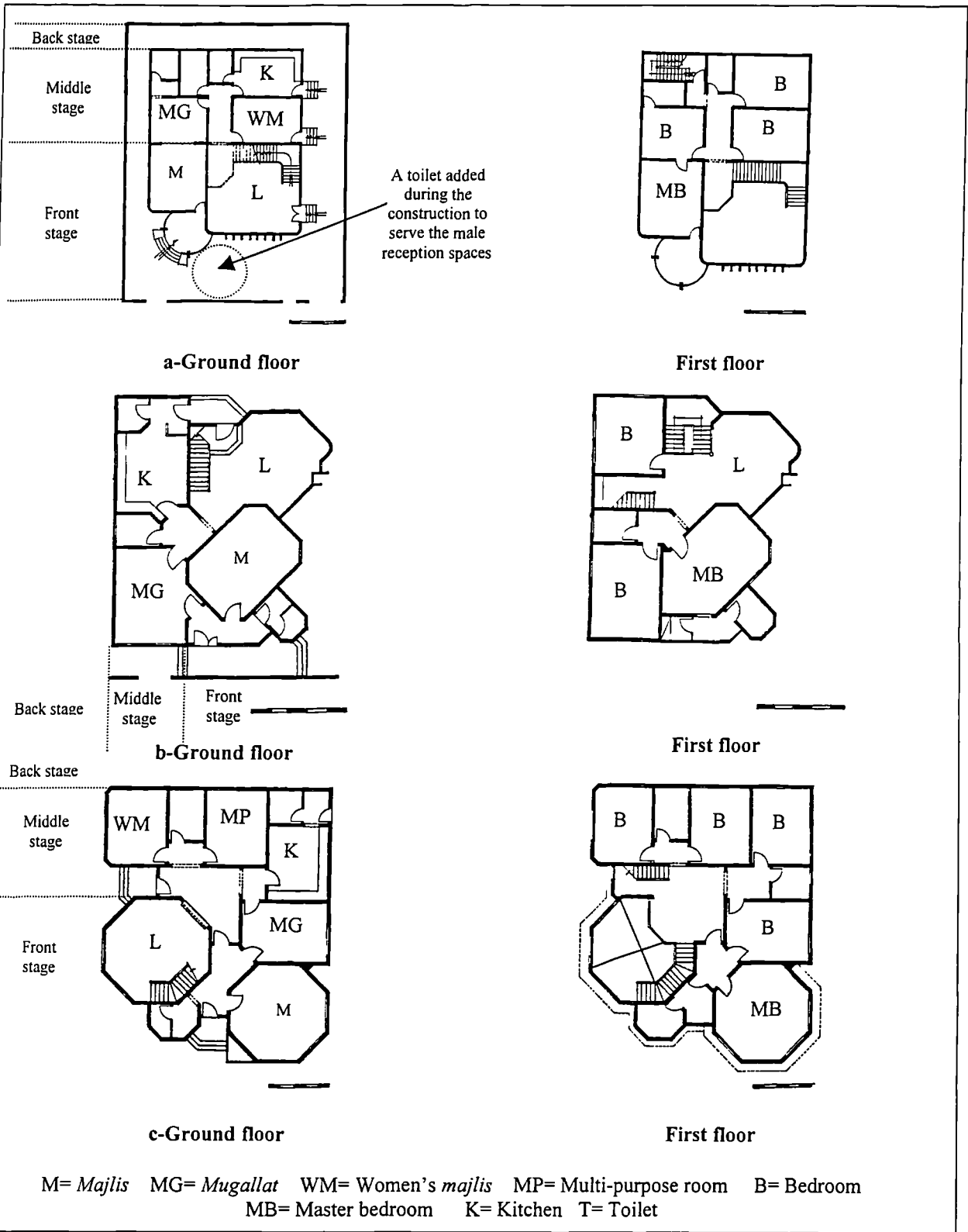


Fig.9.12: Development of the private home in the late 1980s. a) The living room became two storeys in height and moved towards the front stage. b) the house form started taking fantastic forms. c) The living room confirmed its position between the middle and the front stages. The house firmly developed its spatial organisation by developing the two entrance halls.

Although some houses in the early and middle of the 1980s had developed similar spatial organisation (Fig.9.12.c), the late 1980s houses developed repetitive spatial organisations with some fantastic forms, especially in the front stage. The house simply took an L shape. In one leg were the male reception spaces and the other part was occupied by the women's *majlis*. The rear corner is always occupied by the kitchen while the living room was located between the male reception space and the women's *majlis*, and separated from them by two entrance halls, one belonging to male part, other one belonging to the female part. This spatial organisation continued with slight refinements in later years, as we will see in the forthcoming discussion.

One of the interesting things is the way that people described their houses in the early 1980s. They criticised them by describing them as '*sindook*'.²⁵ This means that the house is a mere rectangular box. People tried to put pressure on the designers by using this word, and designers were compelled to react by attempting to develop dynamic forms in order to satisfy their customers. This dynamism was achieved by playing with front spaces, the *majlis* hall and living room, which led in the end to adopting the fantastic design of the front stage. This indicates, firstly, that people actually have the power to impose their identity through their collective criticism, and secondly that people of Hofuf became more conscious about the external image of their private homes.

Fig.9.13 shows a typical private home of the late 1980s. The living room and women's *majlis* in this house took a position between the front stage and middle stage, an attitude which remains common to this day. The *majlis* hall remained in its position in the front stage. As we have said, this typical floor plan of the ground floor found great acceptance by people because it satisfied both the male and female partners in the house. It is obvious that the male reception spaces occupied a more important location in the house, and this potential problem was solved when the living room became part of the female reception spaces. This was clear when the owner of the house mentioned that:

'We rarely use the living room for the family activities. We have a multi-purpose room, which is used for family dining and TV watching. I see the living room when I go upstairs to my bedroom. In the night we use the upstairs living room which is real the family living room. We use the main living room for entertaining our closest relatives or on the occasions when my wife has a party to present the food in it'

²⁵ The word '*sindook*' here is different from the traditional meaning of the same word. In the traditional home environment the word *sindook* has a positive meaning. This was because it was used to describe the most secure houses. It had never been used to describe the house form. While in the contemporary home environment this word is used to describe the form of the house. It connotes a negative meaning because if any one said this house is '*sindook*' he meant that the house is only a rectangular box with no visual or spatial quality.

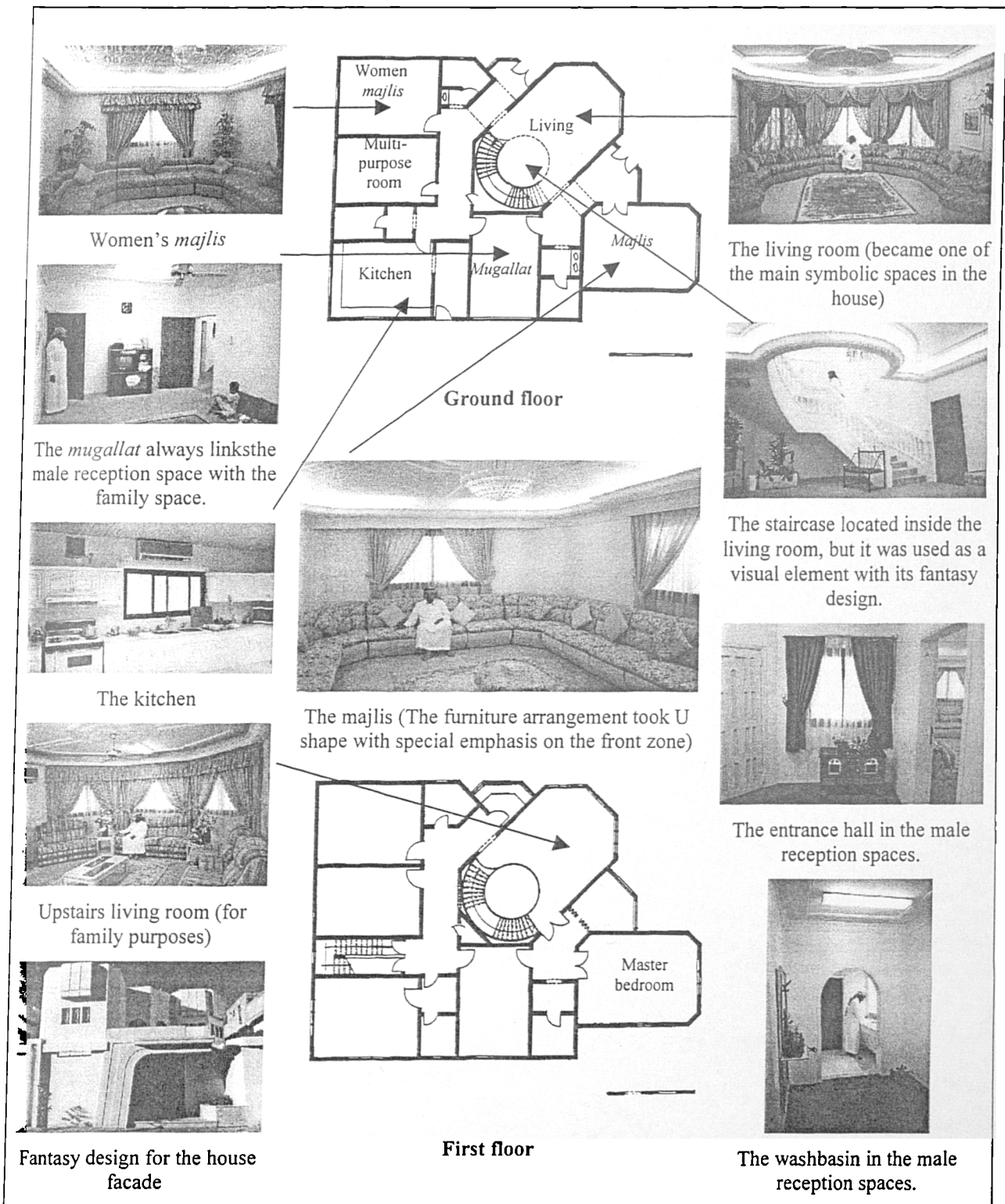


Fig.9.13: A private home constructed in the late 1980s. Source: Fieldwork.

One of the interesting things here is that people started to refine bedrooms on the first floor. The bedrooms are divided into three clusters, the master bedroom, which is usually located at the top of the main *majlis* because of its location and size, the boys' cluster, which is usually two

bedrooms and a toilet in between, and finally there is the girls' section, which is similar to the boys' one. This clustering depends on the numbers in the family and whether the boys are more or less in number than the girls, but it is noted that the house of the late 1980s developed this clustering as a common phenomenon.

In general the private home of the late 1980s developed a kind of cluster either on the ground floor or on the first floor. What is noteworthy about this type is that there are similar spaces on both floors grouped and connected by a transitional space. This attitude is very important in offering and understanding of how the private home in the 1990s took its form. On the ground floor the male and female spaces developed as kinds of clusters, while the supportive spaces, such as the kitchen, remained in the rear corner (Fig. 9.14).

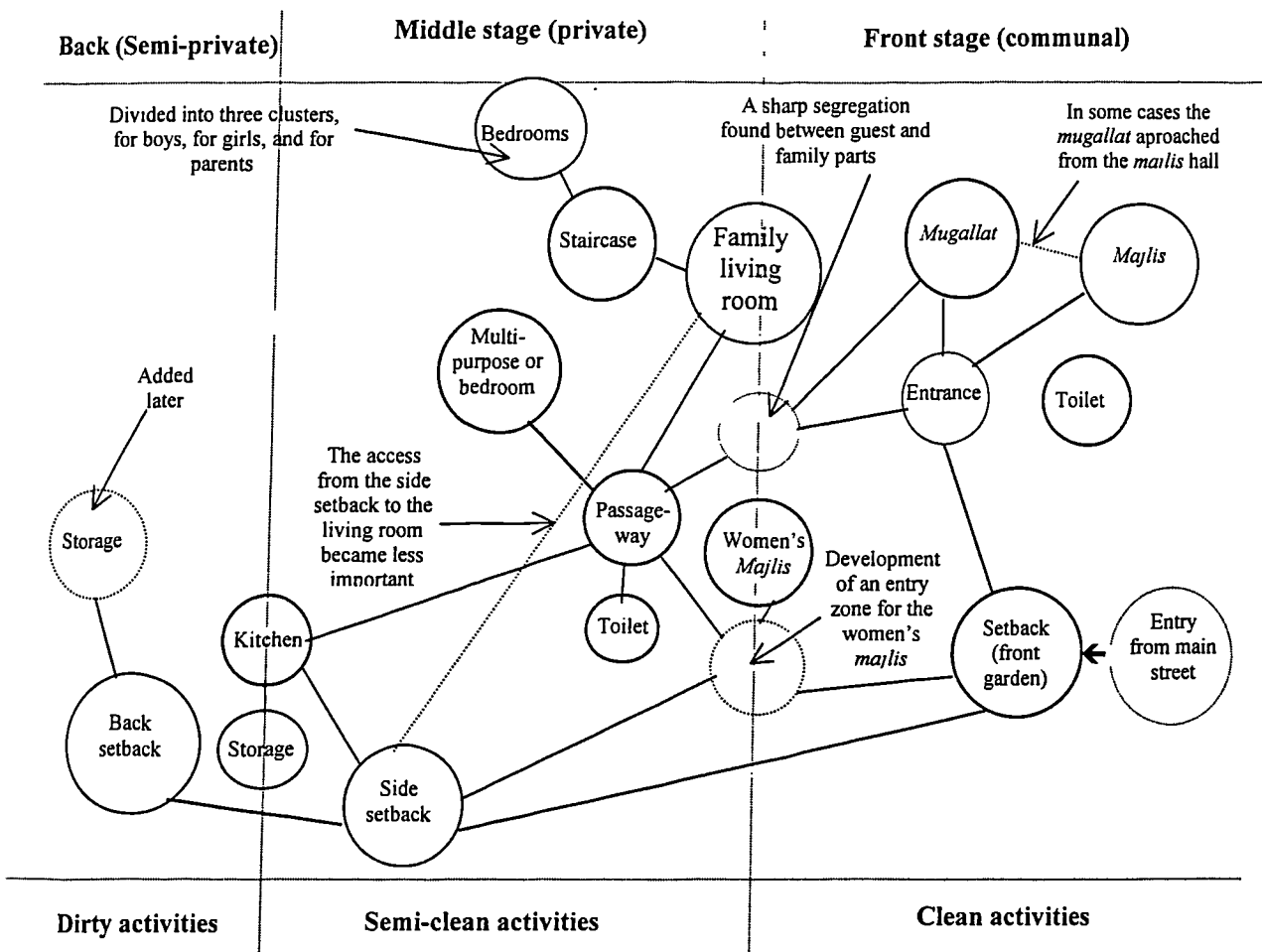


Fig.9.14: The organisation of internal domestic space of the contemporary house of the late 1980s. The living room and women's *majlis* became more symbolic and displaced towards the front stage.

One final point needs to be mentioned with regard to the 1980s house, and that is that the gate and the front features of the house were used, as with the early villas, to personalise the house. Indeed, the house gate became bigger and in some cases contains some figures to indicate whether it is for the use of family or guests (Fig. 9.15). It is obvious after all these social changes that individual perceptual identity had taken on great importance; in fact it had become the defining new identity of the Hofuf home environment.

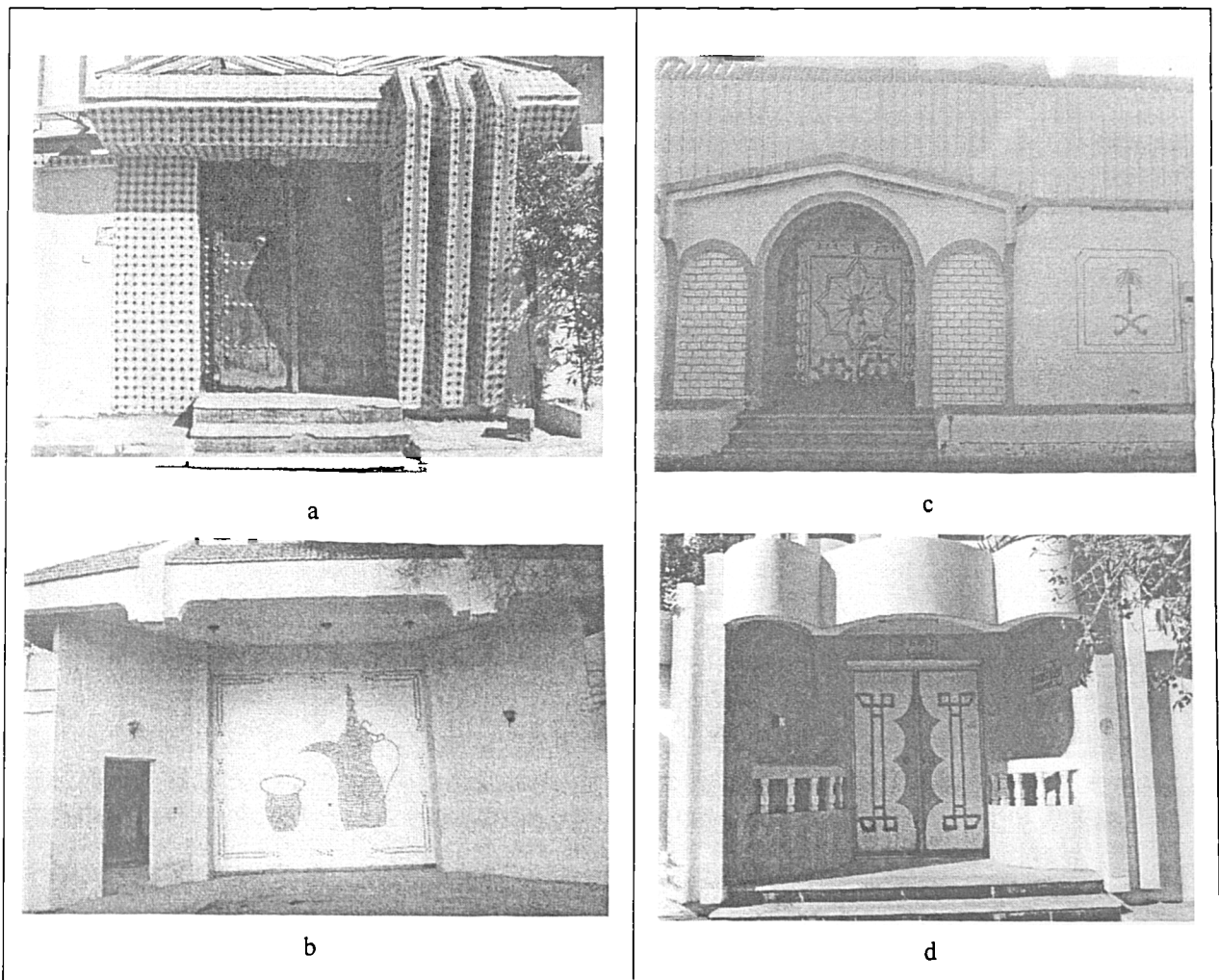


Fig.9.15: A number of gates constructed in the first half of the 1980s. a) A gate decorated with ceramic tiles. b) The traditional coffee pot image drawn on the main door to indicate the guest door. c) A gate and a fence show the Saudi symbol. d) Notice the sign in the side of the gate, which indicates the guest door. Also, the sign in the top which carries the expression of 'In the Name of Allah the Compassionate, the Merciful'. Source: Fieldwork.

9.3.3 LOCALISING THE VILLA TYPE

In the previous part we discussed how the people of Hofuf involved themselves in the design of their houses and mobilised their past experiences in refining the new ideas produced by the architects. They criticised the form of the house and refined the spatial organisation in a way that helped, to some extent, the architects in Hofuf to understand people's cultural aspirations in the context of the home. The house form, therefore, was directed by the past experiences of people who wished to be modern and part of the contemporary era. This led, as we have noted, to the development of a unique house type compatible to some extent with people's lifestyle.

In this part we need to consider the private houses of the 1990s. There has not been much change in spatial organisation except that people realised that having a staircase in the middle of the living room made it difficult for them to use it freely. This is why they developed a space, beside the living room, in which the staircase might be positioned. This change started as a complete splitting of the staircase from the living room (Fig.9.16a), which, however, meant the loss of the symbolic effect of the staircase. An awareness of this loss has led to attempts to re-establish the symbolic importance of the staircase in the design of the latest houses in Hofuf.

This is not the only development in the private home of the 1990s. In fact, the tendency towards clustering of the ground and first floor spaces became important for people (Fig. 9.16b). Now, people know exactly what their house components are when they discuss their home design with their designers. Because we are interested in the ways that people took to localise the villa type, this requires us to understand the process of identifying the space and the steps that have been taken to embody local meanings in it. The increasing of people's involvement in their house design was one of the very important means of localising the villa style in Hofuf. It is obvious that the knowledge that people gained from their own and from their relatives' and friends' experiences with the villa type in the 1970s and 80s helped them to refine their houses in the 1990s because it became part of their past experience. Our argument here is that the past experience of the people in Hofuf is now composed both of the strong traditional images and the modified and new images that people acquired from their experiences with the new house types since the 1940s.

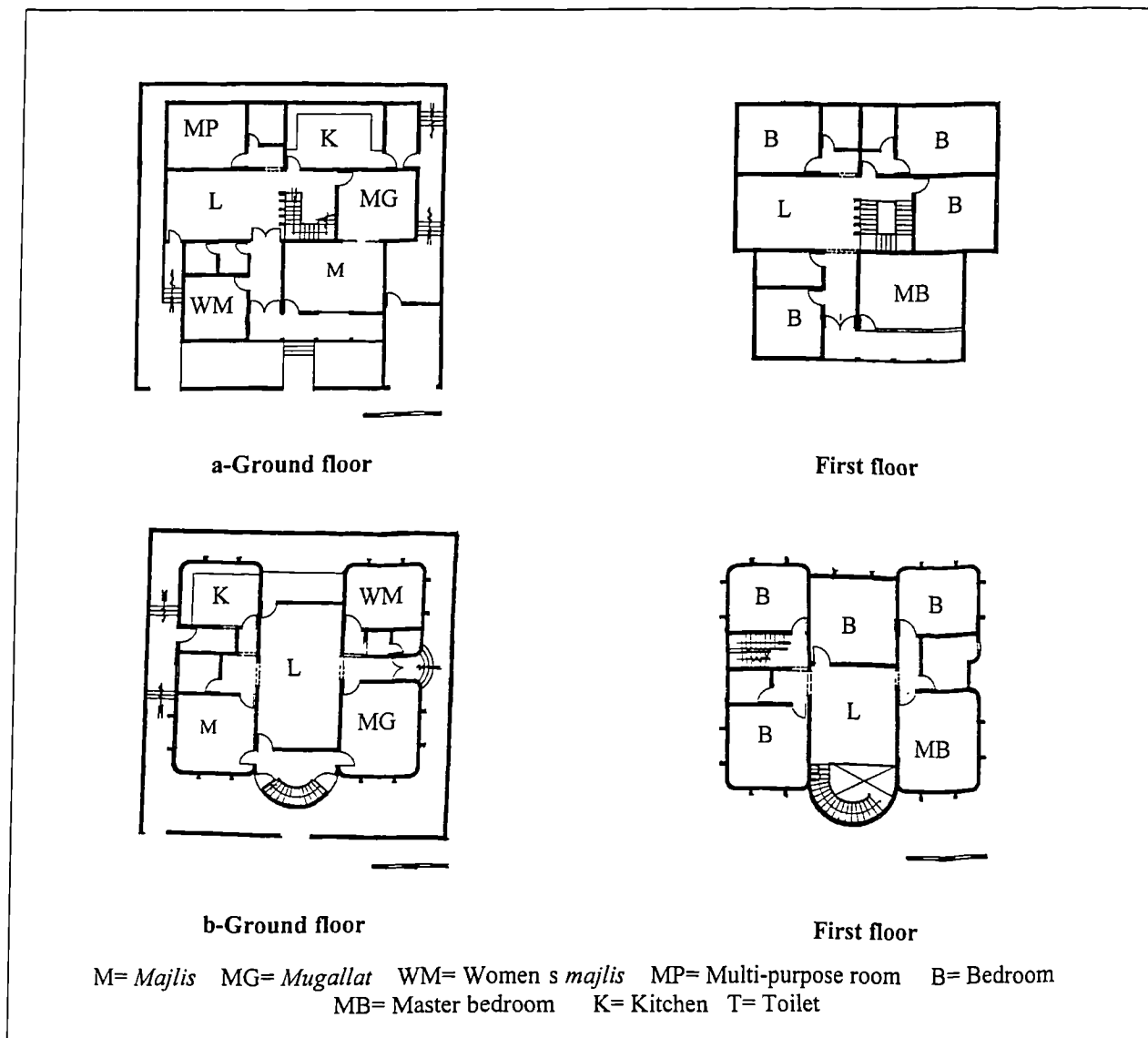


Fig.9.16: Two examples showing how the staircase split from the living room in the 1990s houses. Source: Fieldwork.

Fig. 9.17 Is a typical example of the early 1990s houses. In this example the staircase has split from the living room and has been situated in a transitional space. This important change was the beginning of further significant development in the private home of Hofuf. The spatial organisation of the house was still in the L shape of the late 1980s, with some changes and internal space re-organisation. By adding the transitional space of the staircase the ground floor became clearly divided into a group of clusters, each one of them consisting of spaces with a similar function.

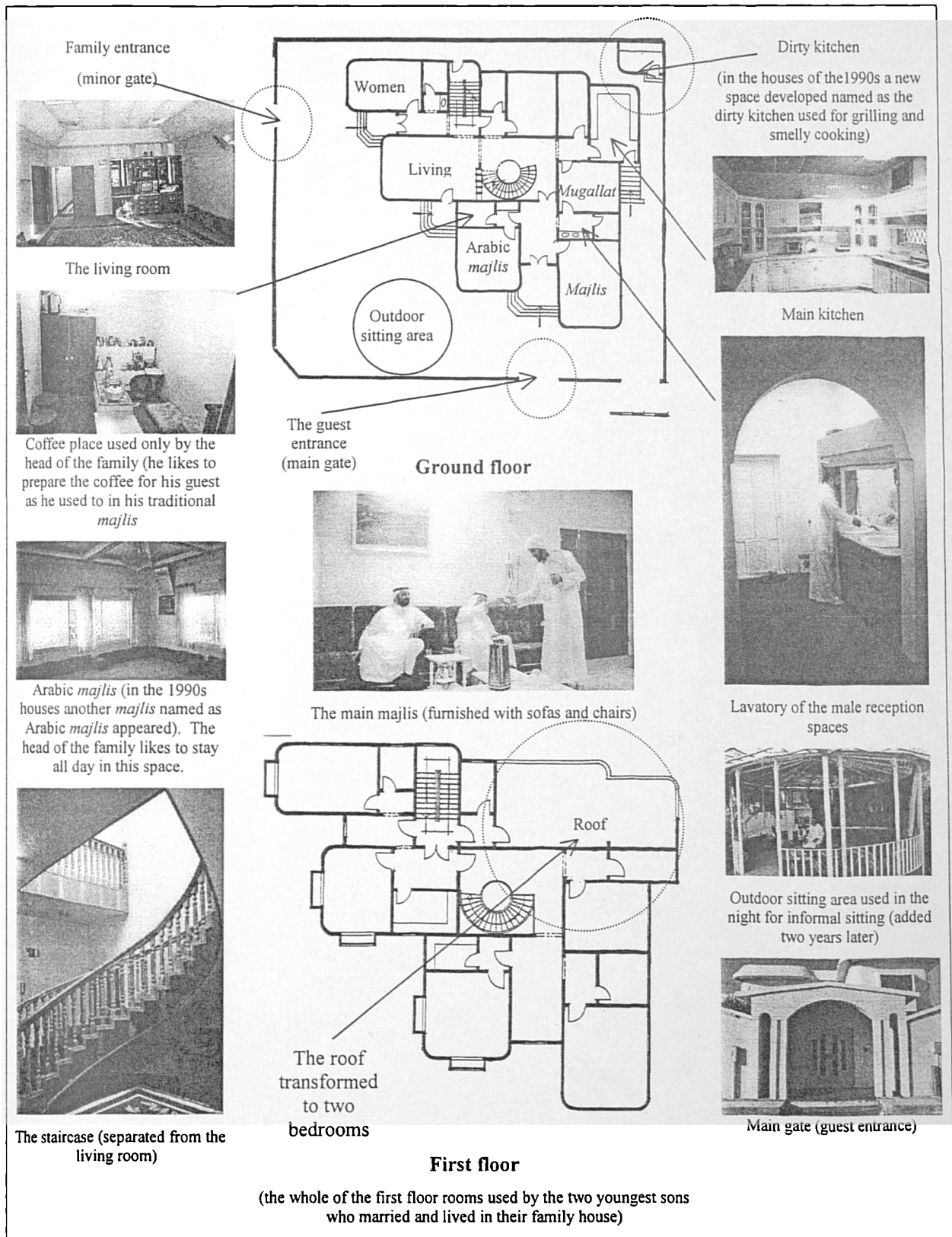


Fig.9.17: A villa constructed in the early 1990s. Source: Fieldwork.

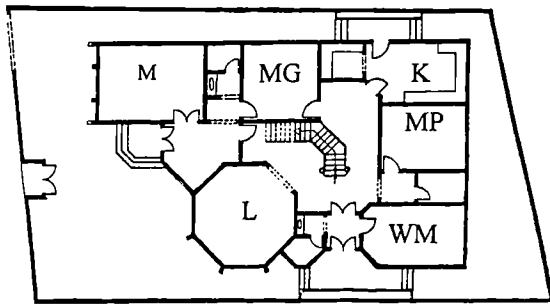
Although the owner of this house experienced the early villa in the late 1970s, which he left in the early 1990s, he insisted on having a coffee place beside the Arabic *majlis* to prepare the

coffee for his guests just as he did in his traditional house in *Alkut*. One of the interesting things is that he prefers to stay in the Arabic *majlis* all day. He knows that people are now busy with their jobs and schools but he always expects some guests, even in the morning. This is because some old people still maintain the traditional habit of visiting each other after the *Fajr* prayer..²⁶ The coffee place in this house was reproduced not because of its visual quality, which was the main motivation with many people in their homes, but because the head of the family, 75 years old, preferred to maintain his traditional life routine.

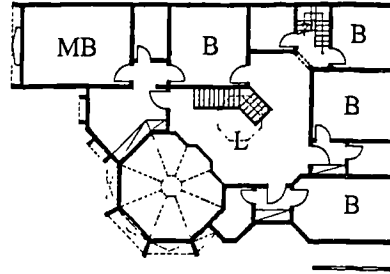
As we have stated the visual symbolic role of the staircase was significant. Therefore, separating it completely from the living room, as happened in the present cases, was not acceptable to many people. This led to other refinements for internal spaces. The transitional space, which included the staircase, opened on to the living room and created a small living space used by the family, while the main living room retained its position between the front and the middle stages. This latter change duplicated the size of the living spaces in the house and led to an increase of unused or occasionally used spaces in the living room (Fig.9.18). We need to indicate here that because all the bedrooms are located on the first floor, people are tempted to increase the size of the ground floor spaces, especially since an average of five bedrooms in every house, with their supportive facilities, made the first floor very large, which means that the ground floor also became very large.

One of the consequences of opening up the living spaces on the ground floor was the changing status of the kitchen. Now it moved forward from its location in the rear corner, which was connected with the back stage, to the middle stage. This tempted people in the later houses to associate it with the living spaces, especially because the dirty kitchen was already developed and its existence was known by people. This is the first time since the late 1970s that the kitchen has moved from its rear corner.

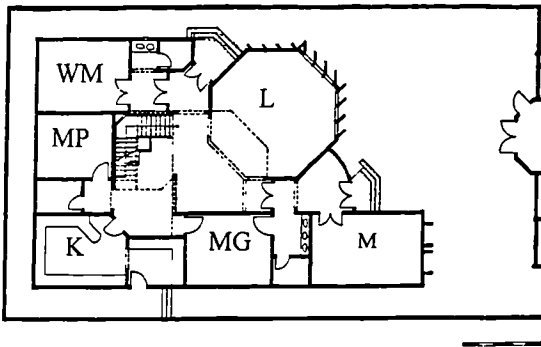
²⁶ See Chapter VI.



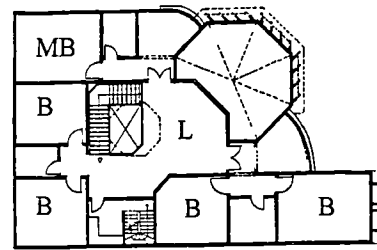
a-Ground floor



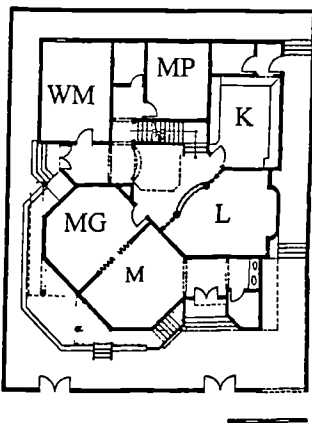
First floor



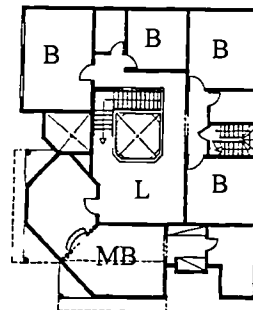
b-Ground floor



First floor



c-Ground floor



First floor

M= *Majlis* MG= *Mugallat* WM= Women's *majlis* MP= Multi-purpose room B= Bedroom
 MB= Master bedroom K= Kitchen T= Toilet

Fig.9.18: A number of villas constructed in the first half of the 1990s showing the re-establishment of the symbolic role of the staircase. Source: Fieldwork.

Another part which has seen some development in the recent private house in Hofuf is the female part which mainly consists of the women's *majlis*, multi-purpose room, washing basin and

toilets. These spaces concentrate around an entrance hall called *madkhal al'a'la* (family entrance). As we have said, this development originally started to become clear in the early 1980s houses. What is really interesting in this context is that this entrance became more important after 1995 when people separated the women's *majlis* from the family spaces, and its increased importance is one instance of the women's parts of the house developing their own identity (Fig.9.19).

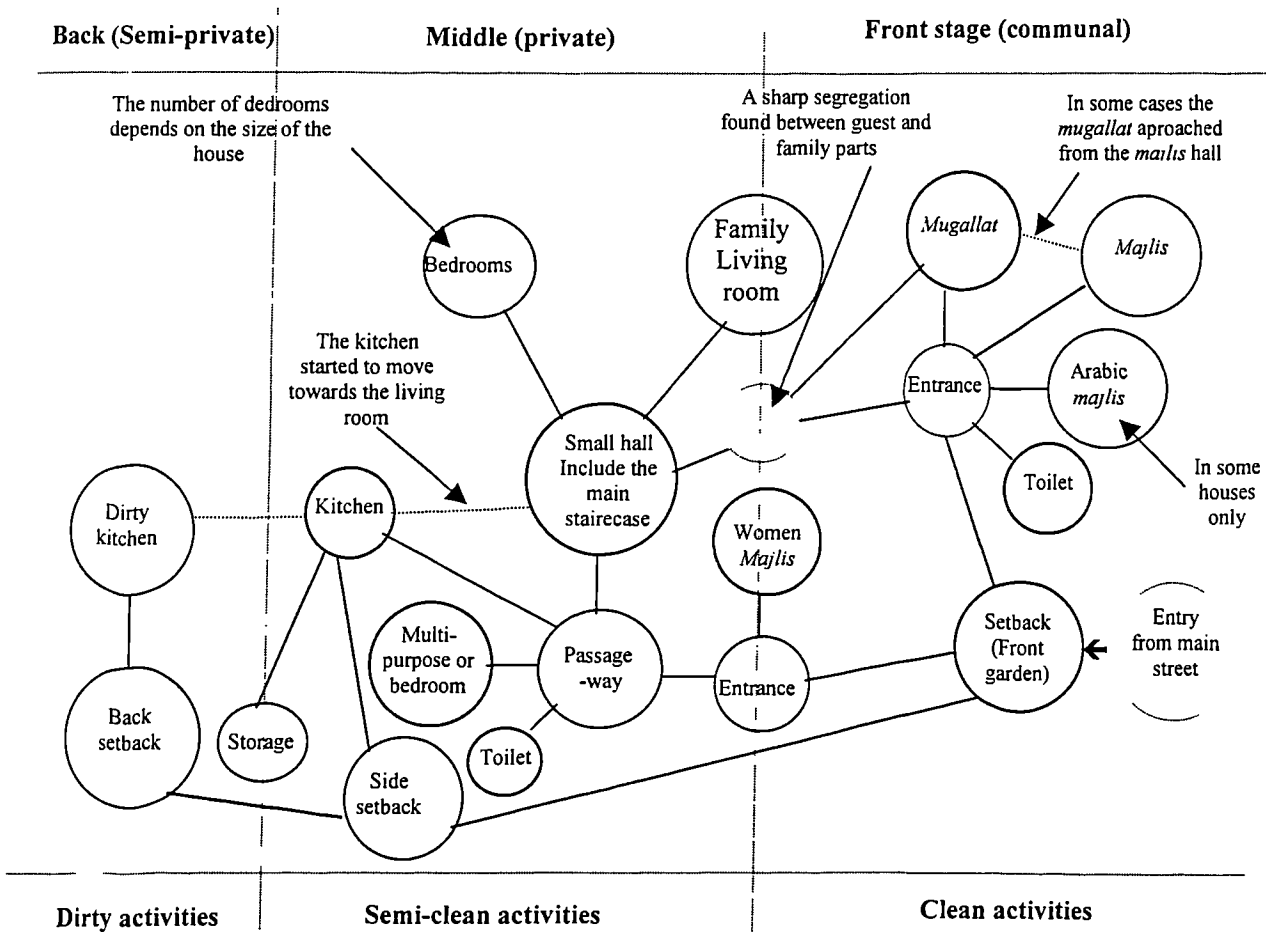


Fig.9.19: The organisation of internal domestic space of the contemporary house of the early1990s. The living room and women *majlis* became more symbolic and displaced towards the front stage.

We can say that this last development introduced yet another cluster into the private home in Hofuf. In addition to the male and female cluster, the central living spaces and the kitchen became one cluster. Because this cluster consisted of, on the one hand, symbolic elements such as the living room and the staircase, and on the other hand a utilitarian element such as the kitchen, people attempted to integrate these two types of spaces. However, this did not occur in the long run because people still hesitated about the way they could make such intergration. In

general, the houses of the early 1990s witnessed changes in the living spaces and the status of the kitchen. Also, they showed more tendency toward clustering the internal spaces in both ground floor and first floor levels (Fig.9.20).

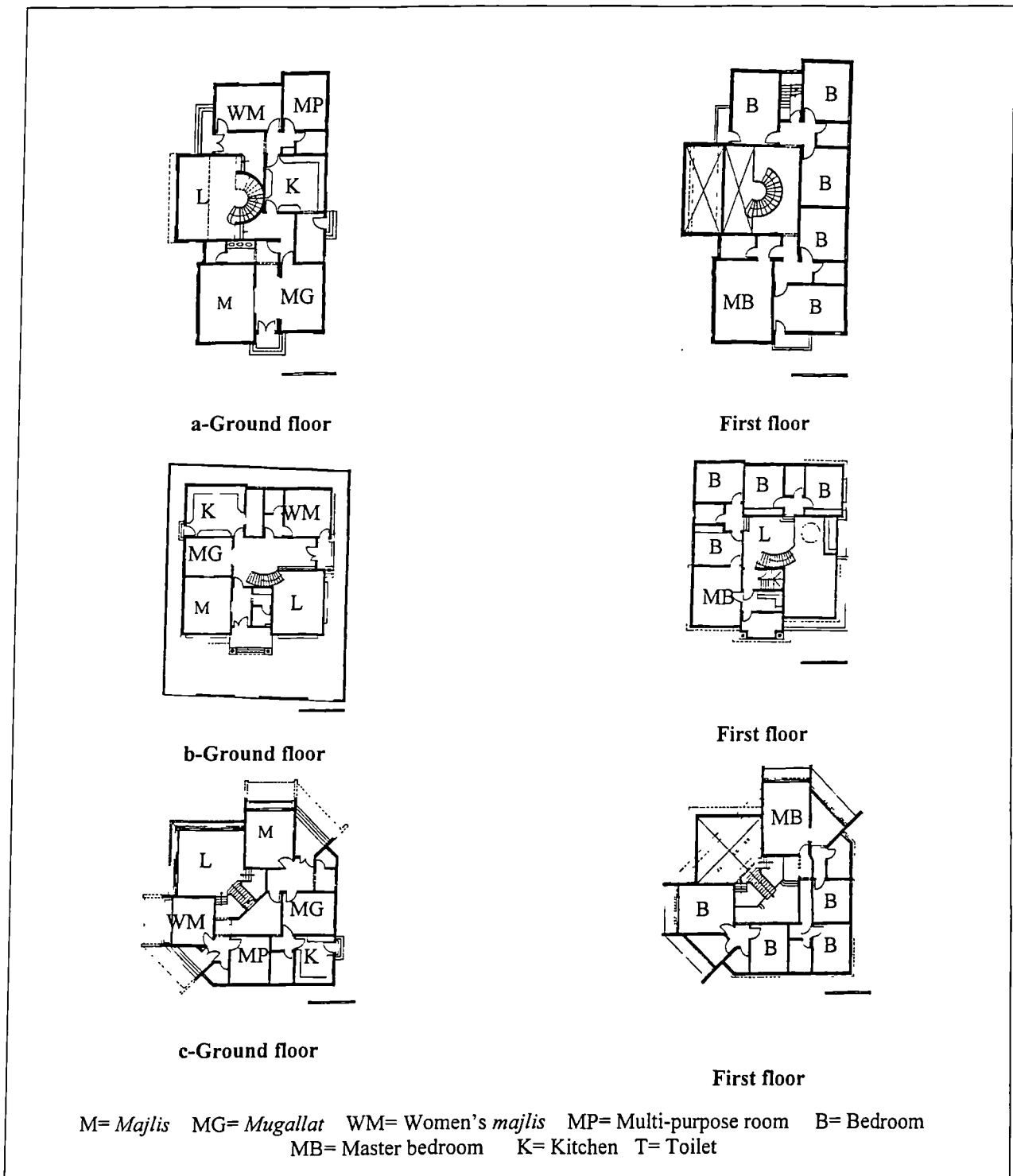


Fig.9.20: A number of villas constructed in the early 1990s showing the treatment of the central areas which are always occupied by the living spaces. Also, they show how the kitchen became very close to the living spaces. Source: Fieldwork.

The need to integrate the kitchen with the living room has been fulfilled when, in the most recent houses, the kitchen has become more associated with the living spaces, and has taken on more of a symbolic than a utilitarian role. Opening the kitchen on to the living room was encouraged partly by the existence of the dirty kitchen, which had already taken over the traditional cooking role of the kitchen, and partly by the developing role and status of women within the household. Women now prefer to observe all living spaces and watch their children playing. By making this later change, especially when the people of Hofuf saw these new developments in their friends' and relatives' houses in the nearby cities of Dammam, Khobar and Dharan, the private home in Hofuf made a further step in the changing of the symbolic meaning of its internal spaces (Fig. 9.21).

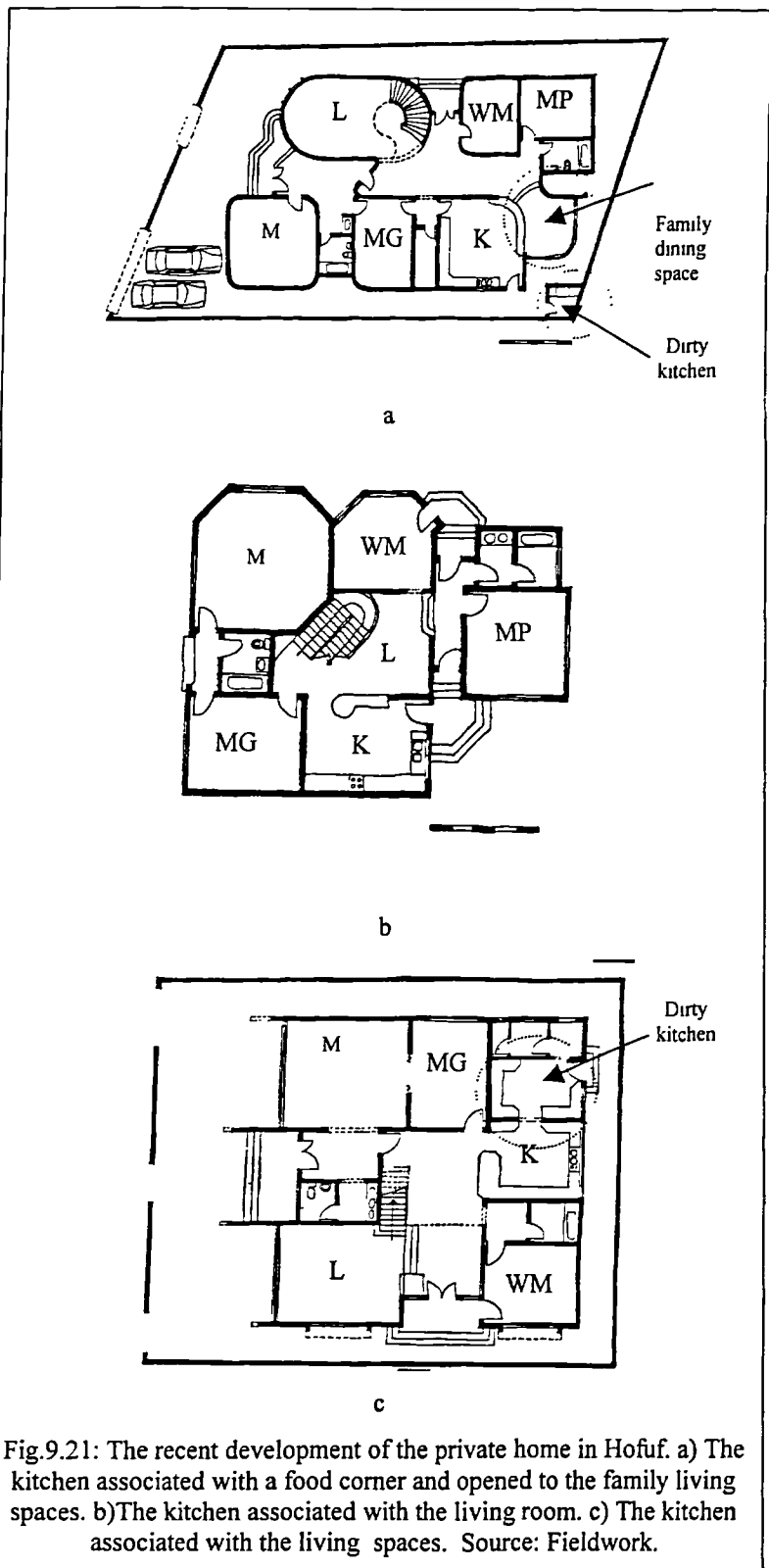


Fig.9.21: The recent development of the private home in Hofuf. a) The kitchen associated with a food corner and opened to the family living spaces. b)The kitchen associated with the living room. c) The kitchen associated with the living spaces. Source: Fieldwork.

The spatial organisation of the present house in Hofuf as it was developed in the late 1980s remained with its three stages on the ground floor, which are the front occupied by the main reception areas, the middle, occupied by the supportive spaces while the living room and the

women's *majlis* remained in between the front and middle stages. The back stage continued to consist of the back setback and the dirty kitchen. It is important to note the areas occupied by the women's *majlis* and the living room in the most recent houses. The fact that they now occupy an area between the front and the middle stages is an indication that, despite the increasing status of women, Hofuf society is still basically male-dominated. It is male spaces which still occupy those areas of the house which inter-relate the family and the community (Fig. 9.22).

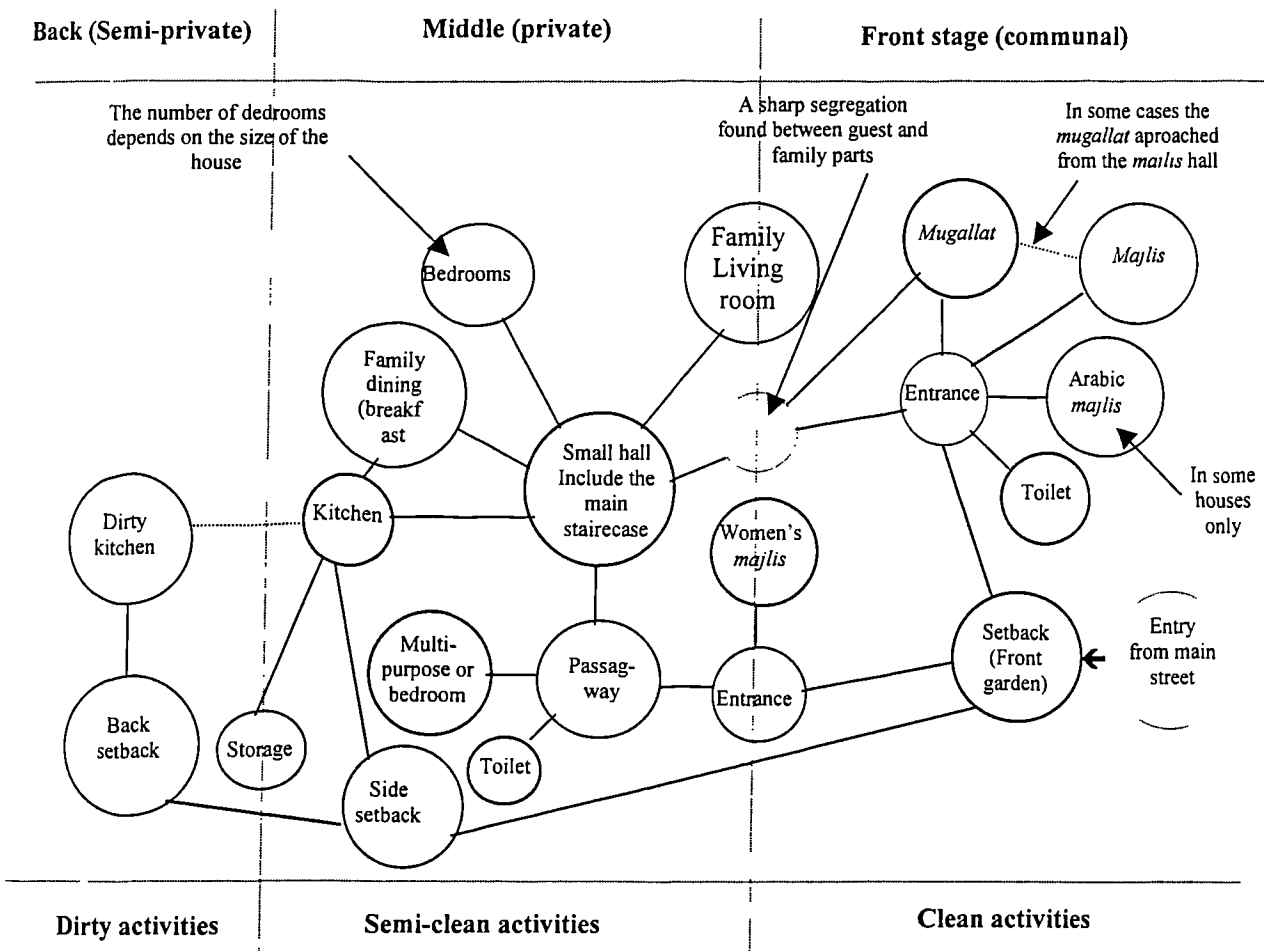


Fig.9.22: The organisation of internal domestic space of the recent contemporary house (after 1995). The living room and women *majlis* became more symbolic and displaced towards the front stage.

The gate, which we have already noted had been used to personalise the house, saw even further development in post-1995 houses. This development took the form of a great increase in size, some gates becoming quite massive, with the addition of decoration and adornment of various kinds, so that the gate also became a fashion statement (see Fig.9.23 and 9.24). We cannot separate what is happening to the gate from the entire front context of the private home in Hofuf.

The dynamic form which was developed in the late 1980s continued in the 1990s, the front garden with the front pavement being used in a way similar to previous houses to personalise the house by expressing individual perceptual identity.

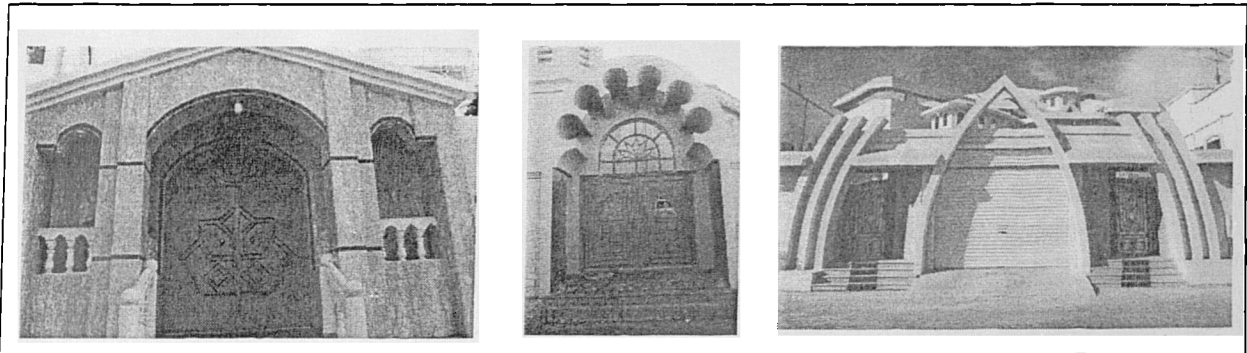


Fig.9.23: A number of gates constructed in the early 1990s. The gate was used to personalise the house. Source: Fieldwork.

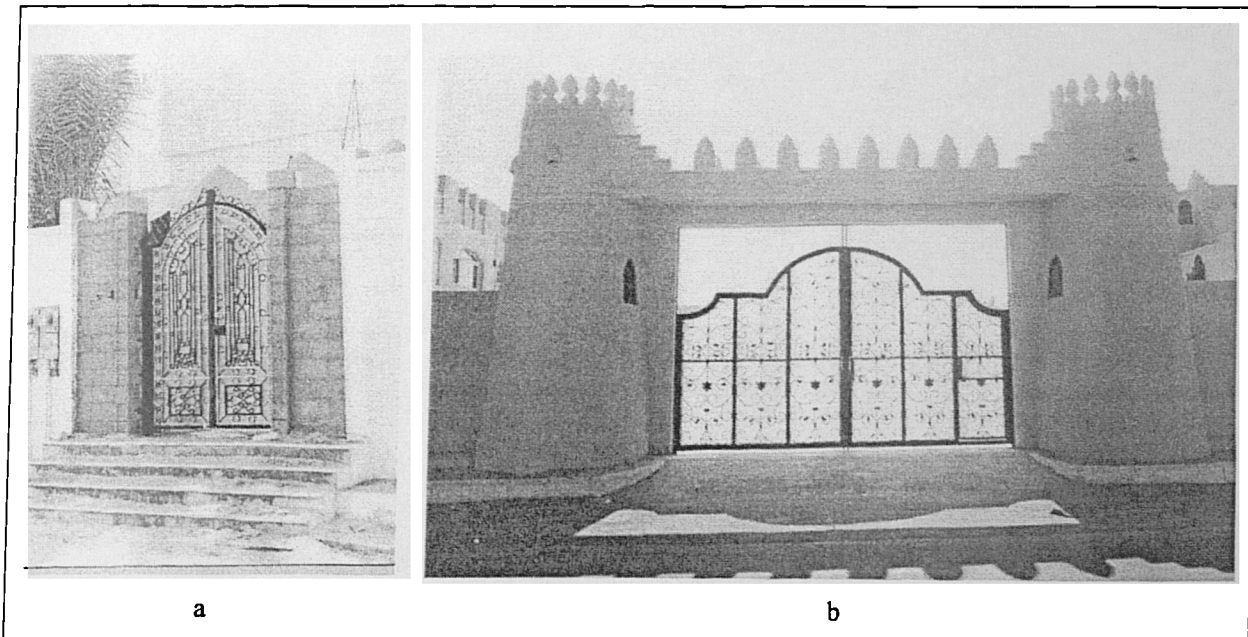


Fig.9.24: The recent gate fashion in Hofuf. a) The old gate of a house constructed in the early 1980s was replaced by a new one during the time of the fieldwork. b) A gate of cluster of houses occupied by one extended family. Source: Fieldwork.

The development of the private home in Hofuf has shown some consistency. Individual identity, which became important since the early villa, worked within the frame of the collective identity. This led to developing a prototype for the present home in Hofuf. Individual perceptual identity was satisfied by the uniqueness of the physical image of every house. Everybody wanted to be different but within the communal frame. The spatial organisation and the use of space express this commonness. There is always a dialectic between the family and the community in the private home in Hofuf.

9.4 RITUALS AND CEREMONIES OF THE CONTEMPORARY PRIVATE HOME

In the previous section we discussed the development of the contemporary private home in Hofuf in the last two decades. We find that the house becomes clearly divided into several clusters. Each one consists of rooms with similar functions. New spaces, such as the living room and the women's *majlis* developed and moved from the middle part of the house to the front stage. The new meanings that attached to them resulted from the social changes that took place in the last two decades. The separation of the male reception spaces from the family part continued to distinguish the private home in Hofuf.

In this part we need to understand the use and meaning of the internal domestic spaces in the contemporary homes in Hofuf. Our argument here is that, although new spaces and forms had been introduced in the contemporary private home in Hofuf, the use and meaning of space is much the same as it was in the traditional home environment, especially the male reception spaces. This suggests that even if the perceptual identity changed, the associational identity, in many cases, will resist the change and continue in one way or another. The new form, as we have said, could carry an old meaning. The following discussion is about the use of internal domestic space in the contemporary home in Hofuf.

9.4.1 RITUALS AND CEREMONIES IN THE MALE RECEPTION SPACES

Although the private home in Hofuf has passed through many changes since the 1940s, the male reception spaces have remained major elements in the house over time. Their location has consistently occupied the front stage in the house, their relationship with the family part of the house is continuously distinguished by their sharp segregation through the existence of transitional space ended by a door either from one side or both sides. Like the traditional *majlis* hall, the contemporary *majlis* is used for hosting the guests. The three zones of the *majlis* continued much the same as in the traditional home but with minimum spaces for the front zone and less visual quality. Also, the coffee place completely disappeared and alternative ways developed to maintain this important ritual.

People continued to use the front zone in the *majlis* hall for the old and important guests. The way that people furnished their *majlis* indicates the desire to emphasise the front zone. When we

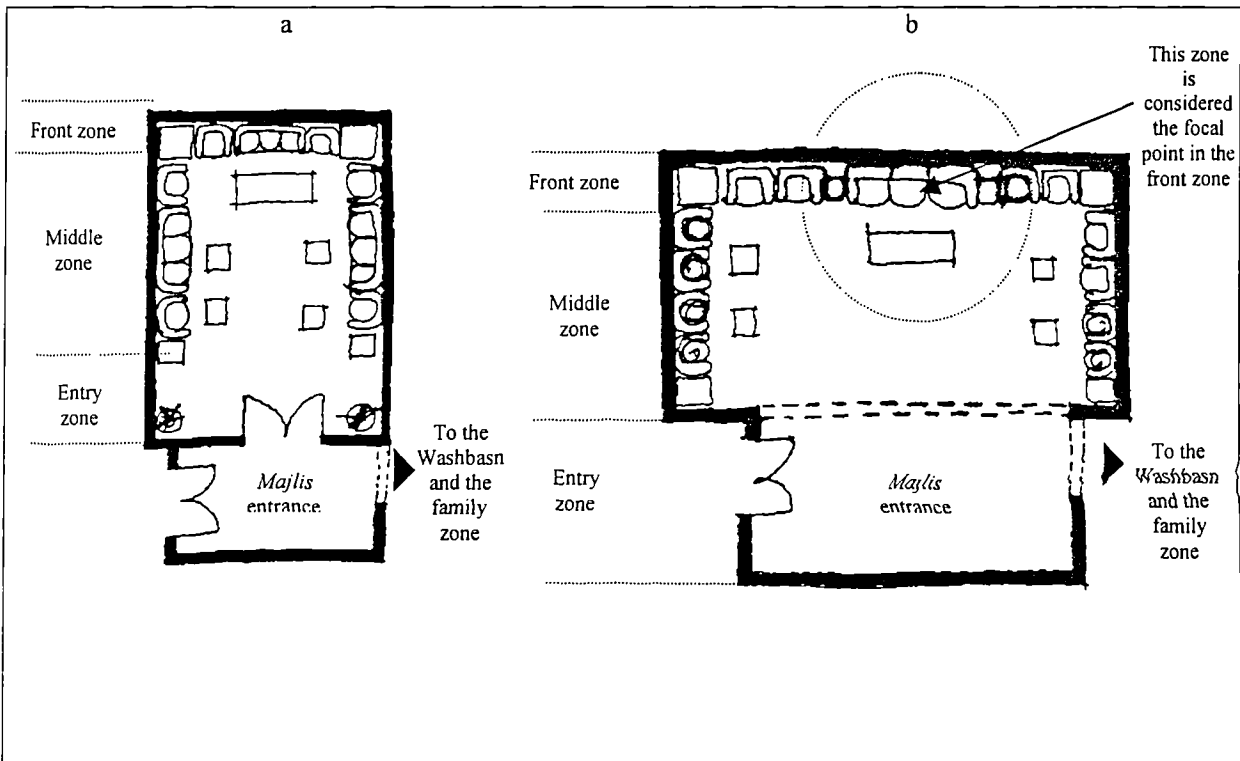


Fig.9.25: Furniture arrangement of the contemporary *majlis* in Hofuf. a) A typical *majlis* hall approached from a transitional entrance zone. b) A *majlis* hall opened to the entrance zone (after 1995). Source: Developed from the fieldwork.

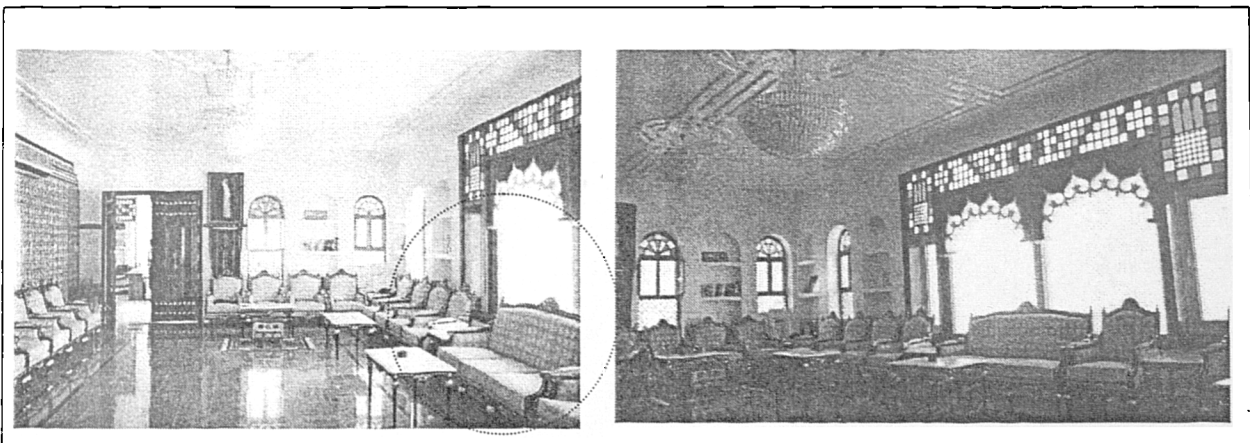


Fig.9.26: The front zone moved from the narrower side in this large *majlis* hall to the wider side. Only the emphasised zone is considered the front zone while the rest of the row is considered to belong to the middle zone. Source: Fieldwork.

The *majlis* has thus changed in form from what it was in the traditional houses of Hofuf, through various intermediate stages in the hybrid and transitional houses, to the form that it now has. These changes in form have been accompanied by an element of change in perceptual meaning. What has been retained, however, despite the external form changes that the *majlis* has

undergone, has been its associational meaning, and it seems likely that, whatever changes of form the *majlis* may take in the future, this associational meaning will prove resilient enough to remain (see Fig.9.27).

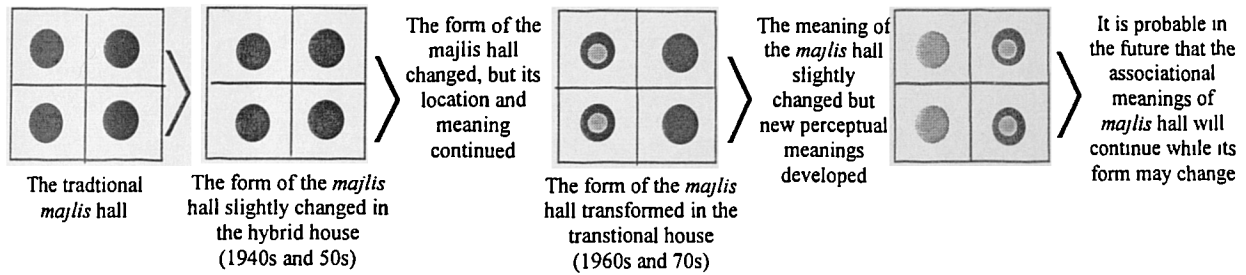


Fig. 9.27: The Spatio-temporal path of the spatial development of the *majlis* hall in the private home of Hofuf

9.4.1.2 *Mugallat* and Arabic *Majlis*

One of the main characteristics of the recent homes in Hofuf is the organisation of the male reception spaces. Now the male reception spaces should contain a space for formal meetings, which is the main *majlis*, and another for informal gathering. The interesting thing here is that people in Hofuf prefer to sit on the ground.²⁹ The use of chairs and sofas or what local people call '*kanabat*' is employed symbolically to reflect wealth and modernity. Most of the gathering activities occurred informally in the *mugallat* or in the Arabic *majlis*. This classification of the male reception spaces aims to preserve the symbolic role of the *majlis* hall as well as to provide people with the ability to practise their social activities in a less formal way. We can say that a new tradition had been developed recently in Hofuf, namely that the male reception spaces have developed to include two types of sitting, one more symbolic and the other more utilitarian; one to express the status of the family, the *majlis* hall with its sofas and chairs, and the other to practise the daily social activities, the *mugallat* and/or the Arabic *majlis* with their mattresses and cushions (Fig. 9.28).³⁰

²⁹ Al-Naim, M. (1995) 'The Furniture: Authenticity Vs Modernity', *Al-Qafila*, Vol.44, No. 7, pp. 24-28 (Arabic).

³⁰ New local manufactured seats have been developed recently in Saudi Arabia including Hofuf. These seats are similar to the early long seats that been imported from Kuwait in the transitional house in the 1960s and 70s but they had less height (see Fig.9.33). This type of furniture is an attempt to replace the mattresses in the informal rooms, as well as an attempt to localise the sofas and chairs by making them more compatible to people's lifestyle. People do not yet use this furniture in the *majlis* hall.

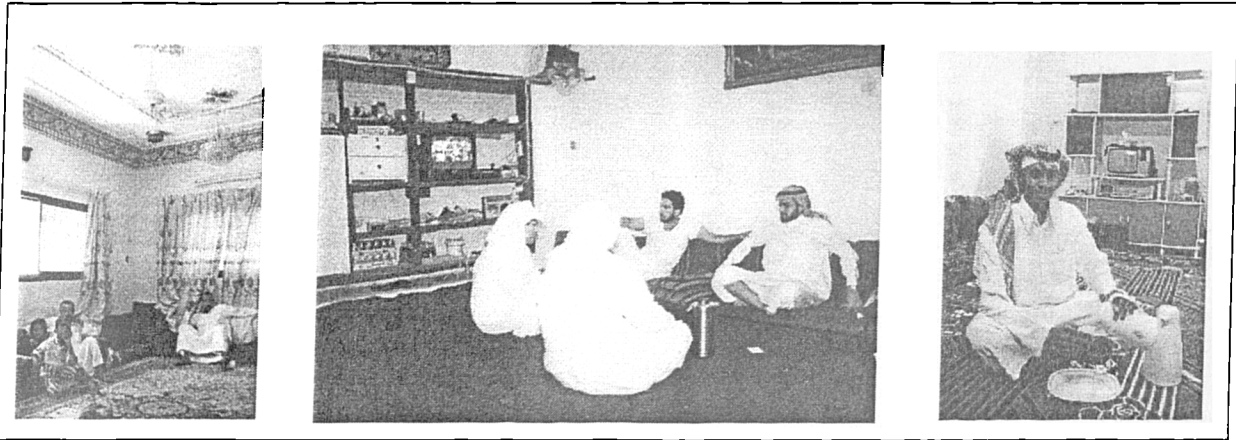


Fig.9.28: Informal gathering always held sitting on the ground, mainly in the *mugallat* and recently in the Arabic *majlis*. Source: Fieldwork.

The *mugallat* is not only used for informal gathering. It is usually designed to be a dining room but few people in Hofuf use a dining table and instead they furnish it with mattresses and cushions. This is because people in Hofuf still prefer to host their guests sitting on the ground. Food is usually presented in rectangular or square (and sometimes circular) plastic mats while guests move to the *mugallat* when the host calls them for food. The important and older guests will go first then the youngest guests (Fig.9.29). Even if there is a dining table, the same rituals apply (Fig.9.30).



Fig.9.29: People still prefer to host their guests in the ground. The *mugallat* is the room which used by people as a dining room as well as an informal gathering place. Source: Fieldwork.

It is possible to say that the *mugallat* is used in the recent houses in Hofuf as a multi-purpose room to serve the male reception space. In some houses it is used also as family dining room. What is interesting about this space is that it links the family, and especially the kitchen, with the male reception space. Almost all the cases that we presented in the previous section showed a very strong relationship between the *mugallat* (or as it is called by the designer ‘the dining room’) and the kitchen. This led, as we noticed, to introducing a passageway inside the family

part to provide privacy for the family when guests used the *mugallat* for informal sitting or for eating.

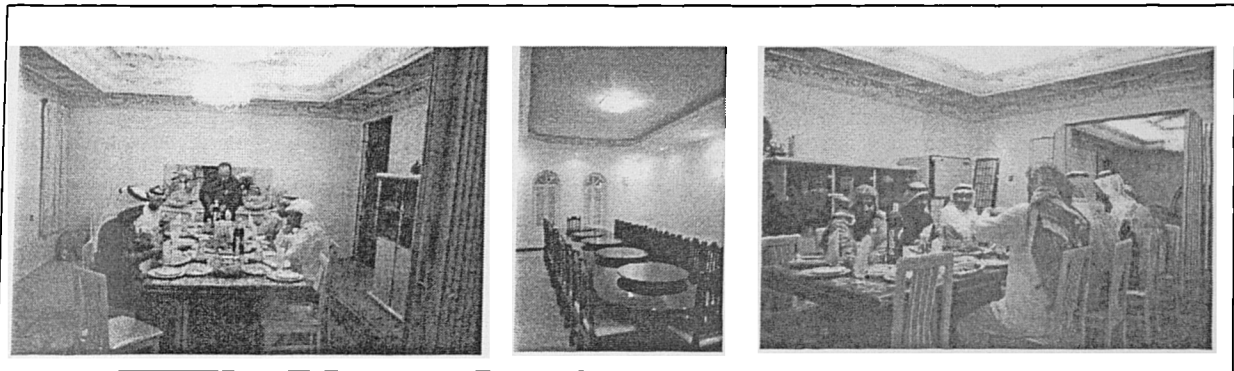


Fig.9.30: Few people use the dining table in the contemporary home. Source: Fieldwork

9.4.1.3 The Entrance Hall

Another interesting development in the male reception spaces is the use of the entrance hall. In the foregoing discussion we have mentioned that the entrance hall is used as transitional space to link the male reception spaces with the family part. Also, we illustrated how it included the *majlis* hall when, in the recent houses, it opened entirely on to the *majlis* hall. Still, we need to mention that it is used in some cases as sitting space. Traditionally, the *dehreez* (the entrance hall) was used as sitting area in some traditional houses. This traditional experience was perhaps the motive that encouraged some people to use the entrance hall in the male reception space as a sitting space for short chats or as an informal sitting place linked with the main *majlis* (Fig.9.31).

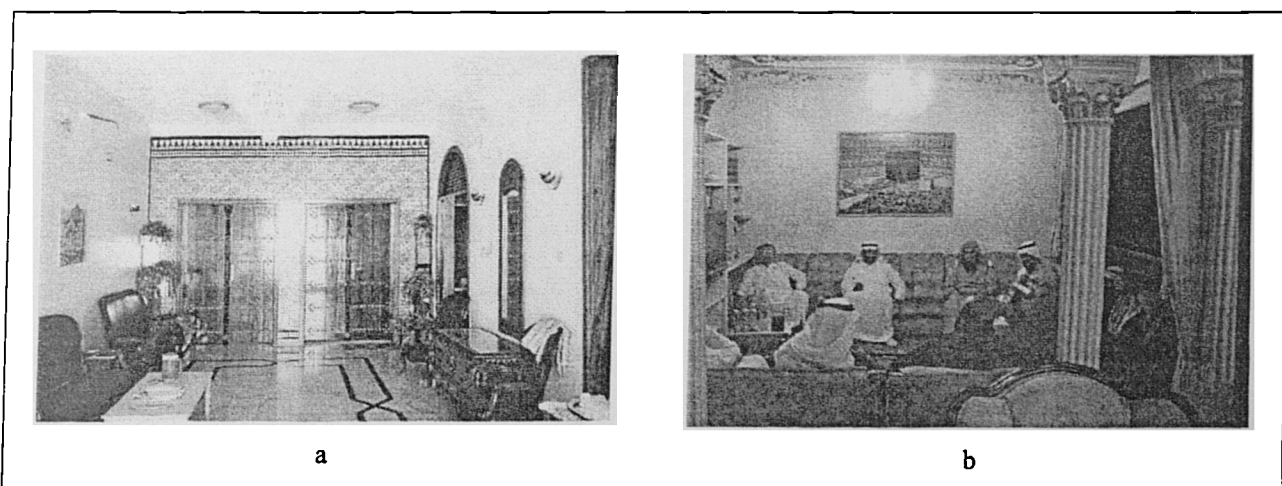


Fig.9.31: a) The entrance hall used as sitting place for short chats. b) The entrance hall used here as place for informal sitting, opening entirely on to the main *majlis* hall. Source: Fieldwork.

Because the entrance hall is the only access to the guest washbasin and toilet, people treated the washbasin as a visual element, with a potential to reflect the family status. This happened when people started to use very expensive marble tiles to decorate this space (Fig.9.32). Although this space is used only if there is an occasion, still people never hesitate to spend a lot of money to treat this space as a visual symbol. This is because, in many recent houses, it occupies a location with a very strong visual contact. It is usually located in the opposite side of the entrance door, which means that it is within the visual contact of the visitors when they enter the *majlis* hall even if they do not use it.

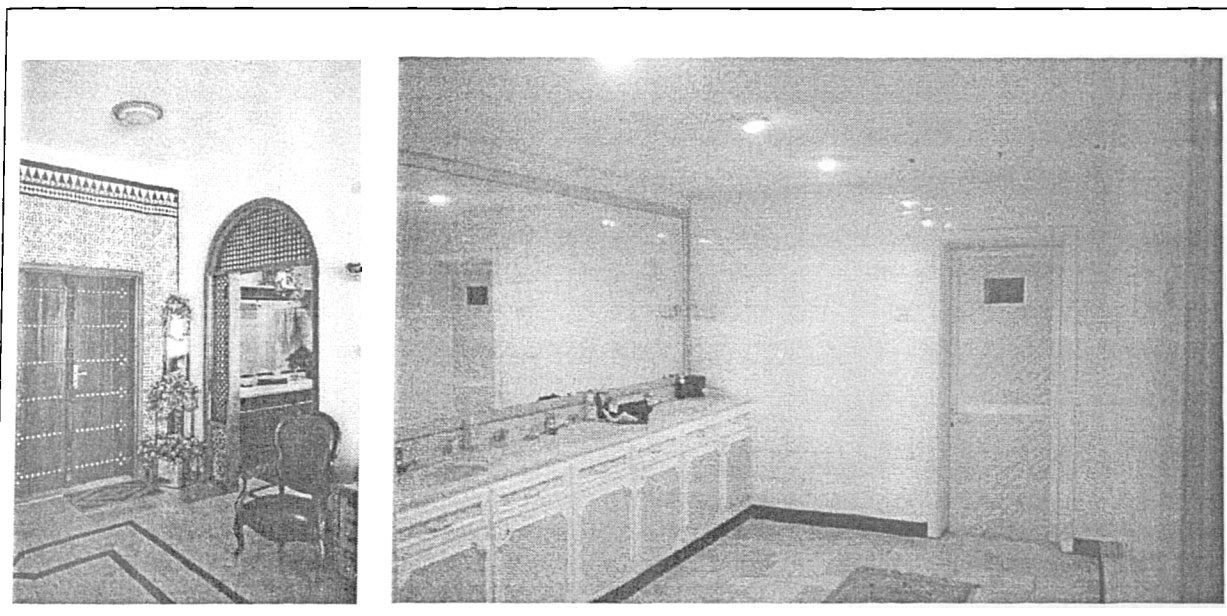


Fig.9.32: The washbasin usually opening to the entrance hall in the male reception spaces. It is used by people to reflect the family status by tiling it with expensive marble tiles. Source: Fieldwork.

9.4.1.4 The Coffee Ritual

When we analysed the traditional house in Hofuf in Chapter VII, we concentrated on the coffee ritual because it was strongly linked with people's perceptual and associational identities. We indicated also some changes to this ritual when we discussed the development of the private home in Chapter VIII. In this chapter we need to build a spatio-temporal path for the development of this ritual in Hofuf. Although the traditional coffee place had disappeared from private homes in Hofuf since the 1960s, people have tried to introduce other options to maintain this important convention. It is important to realise that things may continue but not in identical ways, or as Werner calls it 'spiralling' which is 'used to suggest that ... nothing can occur in an

identical way, but always changes a little'.³¹ The Coffee ritual in Hofuf can be considered among those conventions that continued in the contemporary private home but with some changes in the way of its preparation as well as in its visual, but not symbolic, status.

To begin with, the way that people present coffee in the contemporary home in Hofuf is almost identical to the traditional one. People still hold the coffeepot by the left hand and a number of small cups (*fanajeel*) in a stack in the right hand. The person who serves the coffee should remain standing up to refill the cups. He also must start from the right side or from the older or important guests (Fig.9.33). The only change is that the rituals of preparing the coffee in the presence of the guests and the visual composition of the *wijaq* and the coffeepots have completely disappeared.

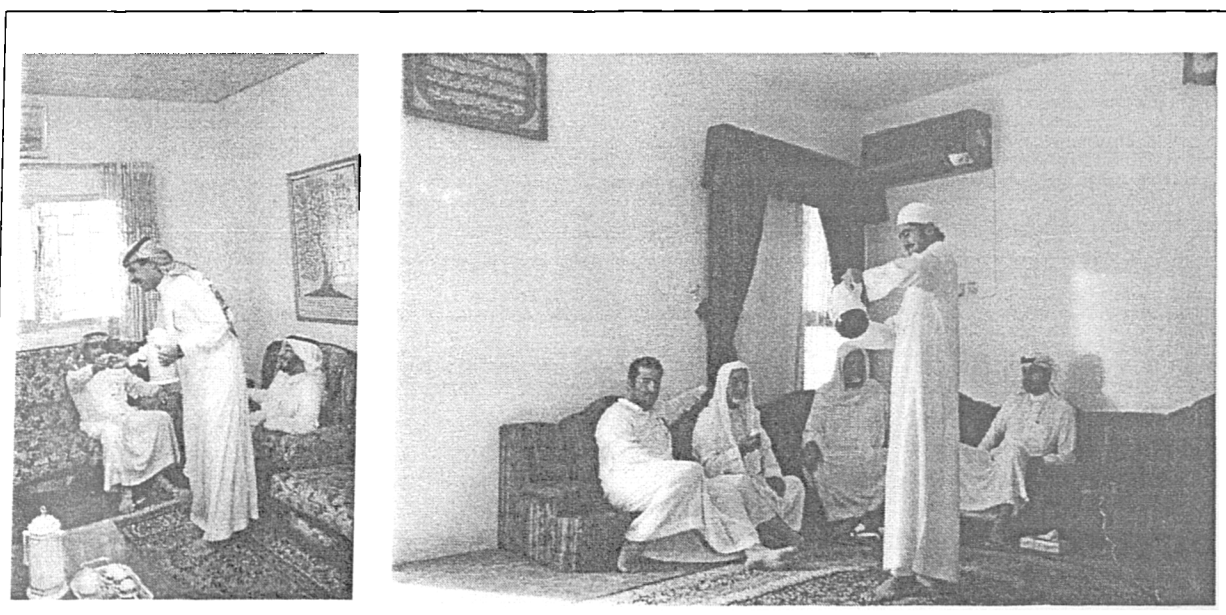


Fig.9.33 Serving the coffee is still very important in contemporary Hofuf. The traditional way of holding the pot with the left hand and holding a number of small cups with the right hand is still considered very important for the people of Hofuf. Source: Fieldwork.

³¹ Werner, C. M. (1987), Op. Cit., p. 172.

The composition of the traditional coffee place, which was different in every house, was used by people to personalise the house. This place disappeared from the private homes in Hofuf due to the new technology which enabled people to prepare the coffee and keep it hot for a long time. A new pot appeared in the market in the 1940s, imported when Aramco started its work in Saudi Arabia, to keep the liquid hot or cold for a long time. This pot is called by local people *termis* which is obviously derived from the Greek word 'thermos' which was a trade mark for this type of pot. People in Hofuf at that time never used the word '*dalla*' to designate the new pot (Fig.9.34).

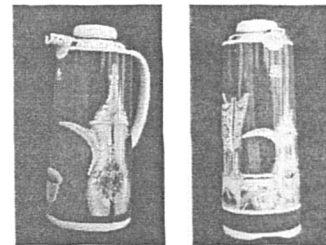
The early form of the new pot was very abstract with no variety. It was a very utilitarian device. This changed when people started using it. Another pot with similar form but with different ornamentation appeared in the market in the 1960s. The need for variety was realised by those who imported this device to satisfy the symbolic need that was associated with the coffeepot. Until that time, people never used this pot to serve coffee and instead it was used for serving tea. However, because of the technological changes and the visual variety in the new device that started to appear on the market people started using it to serve coffee in the 1960s. To persuade people to use this pot instead of the traditional one, a new pot with photographs showing the traditional coffeepot appeared in the 1970s. By that time, people were ready to adopt the new pot fully and give it the name '*dalla*'



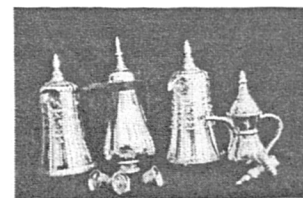
The early *termis* in the 1950s



Individual designs appeared on the market in the 1960s



Photographing the traditional coffeepot on the new *termis* in the 1970s and early 80s



Reproduction of the traditional form of the coffeepot



Fig.9.34: Process of localising the modern coffeepot. Source: Fieldwork (private collections).

It is very important to understand why there was a need for variety in the form of the coffee pot. As we have said, the coffee ritual is one of the most important collective rituals in Hofuf. It was employed to show the family status and indicate the generosity of the host. When the new coffeepot was introduced to the local market people resisted it and refused to use it to serve coffee until the 1960s, when the ability to express the individual identity became possible through the design variety of the pot at that time. The merchants realised this phenomenon and tried to persuade people to use the new pot by using the image of the traditional coffeepot either as mere photograph or as a form. Now a woman prefers to own a coffeepot with a unique design or at least different from her friends and relatives. This encourages the market to produce hundreds of models with different forms and colours to satisfy the individual perceptual identity (Fig 9.35)

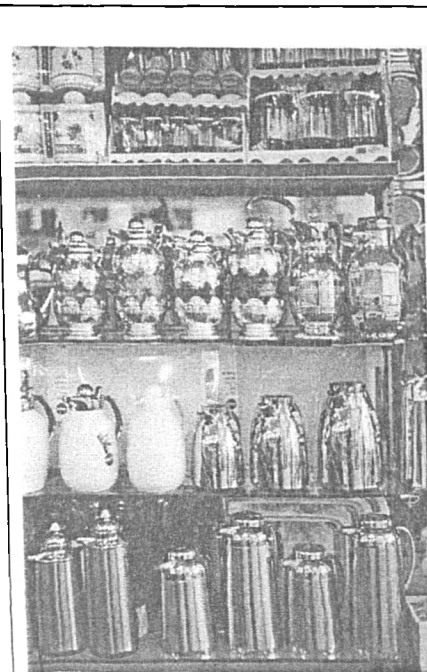


Fig.9.35: Variety in form and design for the modern coffee pot. Now, almost every year, several models of the coffee pot reach the local market to satisfy individual needs. Source: Fieldwork

9.4.2 RITUALS AND CEREMONIES OF THE WOMEN'S *MAJLIS*

Different from the traditional home environment, the contemporary home environment has reduced the level of social interaction for women.³² This has shifted the women's activities from outdoors on the roofs to indoors. Because open spaces in the contemporary house are overlooked by the surrounding houses, it is difficult for women to practise any activity in the external spaces.³³ In the traditional houses space to amuse women visitors existed, but it was one of the multi-purpose rooms, which was used as a main bedroom for the head of the family in the

³² This phenomenon is not only limited to Hofuf. It is found in several regions in Saudi Arabia. For example Al-Nowaiser quoted a middle aged women who was experienced the traditional environment in the central region. She said 'we used to see our neighbors about twice a day ... in old AlKhabra [the town where she lives]. Also, spatial organization of the neighbourhood provided privacy protection for the women - to enable her to move from her dwelling to the neighbours' places ... Under this protection, I used to move around and sit in these areas without having to cover my head and face and all my body. Sometimes I would be in my nightgown or a house-dress. Now in the modern settlement, we have to use a lot of cover in order to go outside.' This opinion is supported by Al-Olet when he said 'Socialisation among women has shifted from outdoor to indoor'. Al-Hussayen also indicated that '... space for women outside the home domain, in many cases, does not exist as it used to in the traditional built environment ...' Al-Nowaiser, M. A. (1987), Op. Cit., p. 307. Al-Olet, A. A. (1991), Op. Cit., p. 230. Al-Hussayen, A. S. (1996), Op. Cit., p. 143.

³³ This led as we discussed in Chapter II to raising the house fences with metal sheets to maintain the house privacy.

night. The recent women's *majlis* is completely different in the sense that it developed its own identity inside the contemporary private home in Hofuf.³⁴

One of the interesting things is that people used marble to tile the floor in the recent house in Hofuf (after 1995), especially the main *majlis*, women's *majlis*, and the living room. One of the informant's comments on this phenomenon is that 'I think by using marble as a floor finish in the women's *majlis* another problem has appeared. Women now use their shoes while they are sitting. This will encourage women to use very expensive shoes for effect.' This can be seen as an indication of the changing status of women and how women have now redeveloped their own domain and socialise regularly with their friends.

The women's *majlis*, then, has become very important in recent houses in Hofuf because it is the only place that links women with their friends in a society dominated by men. It became symbolic because it ties the women with the women's community. The important point here is that the ground floor of the private house in Hofuf is divided into two main sectors. One is for male reception spaces, while the other is for female reception spaces. Even the living room can be reckoned to be the female part because it is used by women on occasions. Using the living room as a dining room on occasions satisfied the need for supportive facilities for a women's *majlis*. It is rare that women use the *mugallat* to host guests. This is because women now prefer to have their food on table and serve it as an open buffet rather than present it on the ground as men do. We can attribute this difference to the fact that women's rituals had developed as new traditions in the contemporary society of Hofuf while men's rituals were very old, which made it difficult to change (Fig.9.36).

³⁴ As we have discussed, the women *majlis* was developed in the last two decades from a space within the family part to a completely separate space similar to the main *majlis* hall, within the entrance hall. This can be attributed to the fact that the role of women in contemporary society in Hofuf had changed. Women became more educated and economically independent.

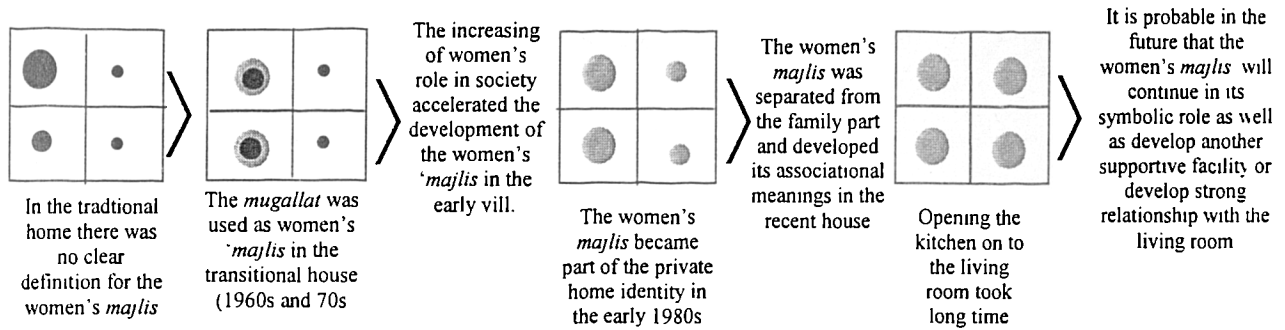


Fig. 9.36: The Spatio-temporal path for the spatial development of the women's *majlis* in the private home of Hofuf

9.4.3 RITUALS AND CEREMONIES OF FAMILY SPACES

The family parts in the contemporary private home in Hofuf are divided into two parts, one more utilitarian and located on the first floor while the other is symbolic and located on the ground floor. In this study we are concerned with the symbolic spaces because we are interested in those spaces that were used by people to express their individual and collective identities. It is obvious that the desire to have a separate bedroom is an indication of the increasing of the individual identity but, as we said, we are interested more, as in the previous chapters, in those spaces which created the dialectic between the family and the community. Before we do that it is useful to mention that a tendency of clustering the bedrooms into two zones was noticed by many designers and informants in Hofuf. Now people prefer to have two bedrooms with a toilet in between for boys, and the same arrangement for girls. Also, the master bedroom has developed to include a toilet and closet, and sometimes also an office.

9.4.3.1 THE LIVING ROOM

One of the most interesting developments in the private home in Hofuf is the living room. It is possible to build a spatio-temporal path for the development of this space since it was a central courtyard in the traditional house. The link between the traditional courtyard, which was the central space of the family activities, and the contemporary living room passed through a stage as the transitional living room, which was a mere central space connecting the bedrooms in the ground floor. The function of the living room was seen by people in Hofuf much the same as the traditional courtyard. This attitude was changed slightly when the living room became more isolated in the 1980s. Now the living room is still a central space even if it is moved to the front stage. Its symbolic role became more important than its function. (Fig. 9.37) Although the

living room is considered the largest space in the house, people only use a small corner of it for family gatherings while the main activities of the family are carried out in the multi-purpose room. The rest of it is to express the family status, especially when women use it on occasions. (Fig. 9.38)

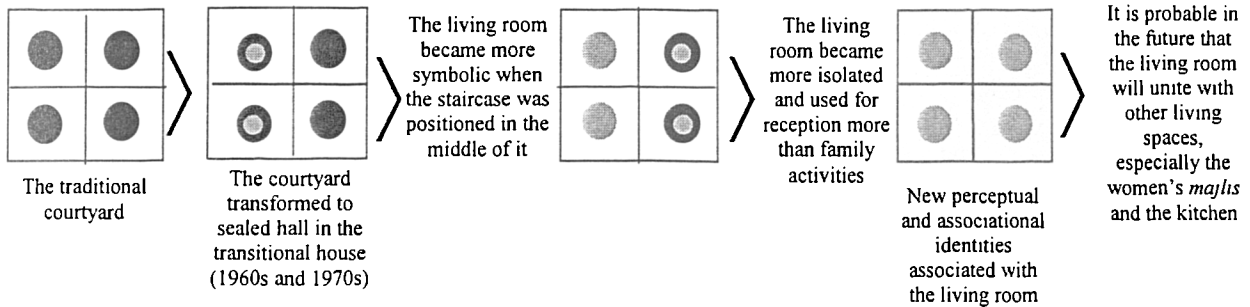


Fig. 9.:37 The Spatio-temporal path of the spatial development of the living room in the private home of Hofuf

The furniture of the living room in the early 1980s was nothing except a few mattresses and cushions. It was used only as a large transitional space connecting the different areas on the ground floor as well as connecting the ground floor with the first floor. The staircase was in the middle of the living room, which made it difficult for people to use it for other than circulation and as a connecting space. This situation changed in the early 1990s when people developed another space to move the staircase to, and kept the living space more isolated and not any more as transitional space. Since then, people started to furnish the living room with sofas and chairs and they also used it for reception more than for family activities.

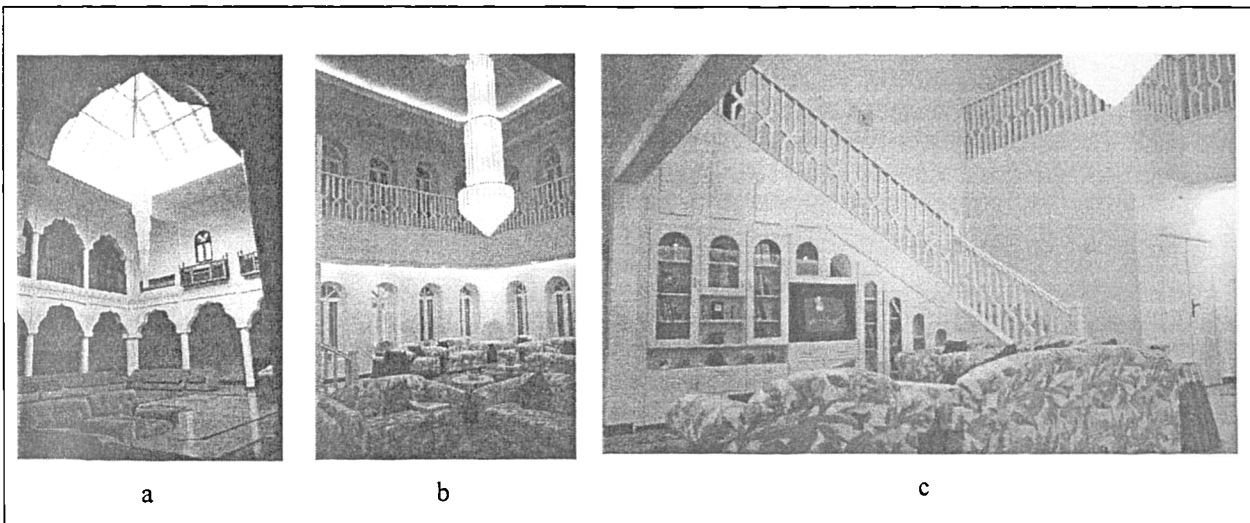


Fig.9.38: The living room in the contemporary house is more symbolic and only small part of it used for the family. a) A living room designed to reflect the image of the traditional courtyard. b) An *Agasi* (traditional gallery around the courtyard) reproduced in one of the contemporary living rooms). c) The space under the staircase in many living rooms used for cupboard and TV. set. Source: Fieldwork.

9.4.3.2 THE KITCHEN

In the traditional house there was no need for the kitchen to be close to the male reception spaces because men prepared the coffee inside the *majlis*. But now the coffee is prepared in the kitchen.³⁵ It is clear that this change in the coffee rituals has influenced the spatial organisation of the contemporary home especially the location of the kitchen, which has been transferred from a place in the back stage to a place associated with the most symbolic space in the family section, the living room. However, we can not attribute this change to the coffee rituals alone because, without the technological development which has transformed the kitchen's utilitarian functional potential, people would not have found it practical to make these changes.

It is true that imported technology changed the people's attitudes towards the kitchen and encouraged them to move towards the living spaces but the location of the kitchen inside the house was mainly influenced by the changes in the people's lifestyle. The kitchen took a position adjacent to the *mugallat* and was linked with it by a passageway since the early villa in the late 1970s. This is because the host needs to go frequently to the kitchen to bring the coffee and serve his guests.

³⁵ Food occasions are important also but not so important as the coffee because the host may need to present coffee to his guests several times every day while food would be presented only on special occasions.

In the foregoing discussion, we noticed how the kitchen became part of the living spaces after 1995. The recent kitchen has not only supported the male reception spaces but it has linked with the living spaces and serves the women’s reception space. It has, therefore, become a key space in the recent private home in Hofuf. Table 9.1, indicates two major changes in the contemporary house in Hofuf. First, that some houses have more than one kitchen, which indicates the new idea of having a dirty kitchen linked with the back setback while the main kitchen is used as a place for showing the expensive furniture and equipment as the real cooking gets done in the external kitchen. Second, an average of 2.6 toilets are found in every house in Hofuf, which indicates that the supportive spaces have become very important.

Table 9.1: Kitchen and Toilet in Hofuf’s Houses (1612 families)

Type of Facility	Kitchen	Toilet
Number of Facility	1729	4173
No. per house	1.07	2.59

Source: Developed from Al-Khrajji, S. (1996) (Report of the Basic Data, Vol.3), p.5.90.

The meaning of the kitchen has changed from a dirty space in the traditional home to a symbolic space in the recent home when people began to connect it with the living space and exposed it to the visitors. We noticed that the kitchen remained in the back of the house for long time and it is only few years ago that it took on the embodiment of symbolic meanings. People, in fact, were hesitant to change the status of the kitchen. This is because the kitchen, until the recent past, was a source of bad smells in the house but when the separate out-of-the-way dirty kitchen was developed it became possible for people to use the main kitchen for visual purposes (Fig.9.39).

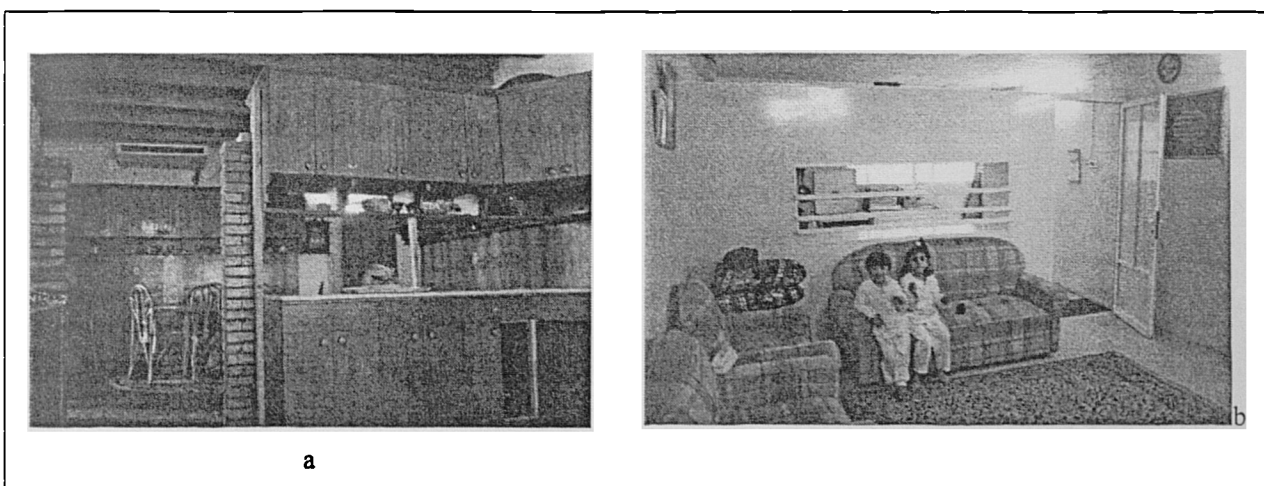


Fig9.39: a) A kitchen opening to family living spaces.b) A kitchen in one of the early villas opening to the living space. Source: Fieldwork.

We can attribute this change also to personal action when some people imported this concept from the near cities, especially Dammam, Khobar, and Dhahran, where many foreigners and Saudi citizens who have had long exposure to western material culture live. It became possible for people to expose the kitchen to the living room when they saw others, relatives and friends, do just that. This is not to say that it is now an accepted practice in Hofuf, that every one will open the kitchen on to the living room when he builds a house, but it could be a commonly accepted thing in the near future (Fig.9.40).

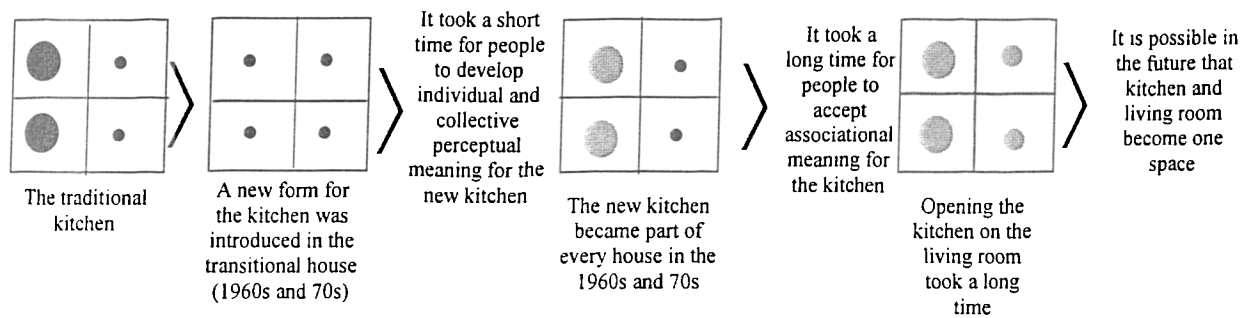


Fig. 9.40: The Spatio-temporal path for the spatial development of the kitchen in the private home of Hofuf

9.5 SUMMARY

In the discussion of the development of the contemporary private home, we conclude that people in the recent home (after 1995) developed spatial relationships that remind us of the traditional home, which was composed of three parts each one of them concentrated around one transitional space mainly used for circulation and to connect other parts. In the recent home of Hofuf, we found that the house was first divided into two floors, each one of them holding certain functions. The ground floor holds the symbolic spaces, the reception spaces, and the kitchen. The first floor holds only bedrooms and in a few cases a family living room.

The staircase was the transitional space, which connected the ground floor with the first floor. This element, as we have noticed, played a very major role in the spatial organisation of the private home in Hofuf in the last two decades. It was developed from a minor element mainly located in the side of the house to a central element connecting all the house parts. As Al-Shayeb mentioned

‘The staircase was the main element that defined the type of the house. The contemporary house in Hofuf passed through several stages, every stage characterised by the location of the staircase. The

interesting thing is that there were some people who transformed their living room several times because of the change that occurred in the location of the staircase.³⁶

The staircase as a transitional element was very important for people. This is because people realised that, by locating the staircase in the living room it made it a transitional space as well. Also, it created a privacy problem because males can not pass to their bedrooms if the living room was being used by women visitors, which led in the early 1980s to using the living room for family purposes only. However, women needed support space, which was mainly the living room. This privacy conflict had changed the location of the staircase, which was changed in the later houses but it kept its symbolic and utilitarian roles by developing another transitional space to link other parts in the ground floor and connect them with the first floor rooms.

The second division which was continuous in the private home in Hofuf was the separation of the family parts from the guest part. This was one of the major criteria for the suitability of the house for life patterns in Hofuf. One of the interesting things here is the way that people refined the male reception spaces. In the transitional house as well as the early villa type, the *majlis* hall was opened directly on to the front setback. This was mainly because the house was very small and no spaces were available to create deeper places for guests. Also, there was a need to maintain the relationship with the community, a relationship which was weakened by imposing the setback regulations. This case completely changed in the later houses because the size of the plot became larger (400-600m²).³⁷ The need to link the guest spaces with the community was maintained by emphasizing the door of the guests, which is mainly the main gate. Also, the front garden and the front pavements became very important visual elements.

The entrance hall of the guest spaces appeared in the early 1980s. People accepted this concept because, as we mentioned in Chapter VIII, many people had moved directly from the traditional home environment to the contemporary neighbourhoods. In the traditional house, the male reception spaces had an entrance separated from the *majlis* hall and from the *dehreez almajlis* (guest zone in the entrance hall). Even in the early hybrid house this spatial organisation continued, which indicates its importance for the people of Hofuf. In the contemporary house people reproduced this concept and clustered the male spaces around this entrance hall. It became a symbolic space when people opened the *majlis* hall to it in recent times. Many *majlis*

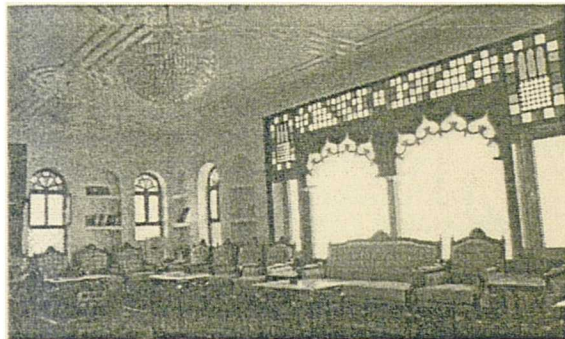
³⁶ Personal interview

halls now are without doors, and the wall which separates the *majlis* from the entrance hall has been removed completely. Visually, it was used to give prestigious feeling for the *majlis* hall by expanding it. In general, the guest entrance hall after 1995 became an important element to express the status of the family. Still, the guest entrance hall functioned as a transitional space to link the guest spaces, *majlis* hall, *mugallat*, Arabic *majlis*, and the washbasin and toilet, with both front garden and family spaces. In one way or another it worked as it had in the traditional house. The only difference is that, in the traditional house, the *majlis* entrance was used to increase the link between the *majlis* hall and the external spaces as well as to provide the family part with full privacy, while the recent *majlis* entrance works as a central space to link several spaces together. Its traditional function has been weakened but has not disappeared.

Development of the women's *majlis* and the multi-purpose room as a cluster in the recent house reflects the new changes in social roles of male and female in the contemporary society of Hofuf. The reception space of women developed from undefined space in the traditional house to well defined space in the contemporary house. Because women have only indoor activities, their reception space has developed to satisfy this need. We have attributed the development of the women's *majlis* to the fact that woman in contemporary Hofuf lack the external activities which were available for their in the traditional home environment because of the existence of the roof routes. In general, there was a need to separate the women's *majlis* from the family part. This is because women now have their formal gathering and they prefer to have their private spaces away from the sight of their visitors.

Compared to the traditional house, the recent house type in Hofuf has a similar behavioural attitude towards the spatial organisation. It is obvious that the recent house is more complicated, but people have followed the same way when they divided the house into clear clusters with clear functions. This can be used as evidence to support our assumption that the contemporary house in Hofuf is composed of old and new traditions, experiences and images: Old in the sense that people have persisted in a similar way, almost due to the common past experience, of organising the internal spaces; new, in the sense that the recent house is more complicated and supported by modern technology, which enables people to do many things which were not possible in the traditional home environment.

¹⁷ There are some bigger houses but mainly the preferred plot size in recent Hofuf is 600m². The small sizes found in a few neighbourhoods. The bigger sizes are mainly found when people joined to lands and used them for one house.



Contemporary *majlis* hall in Hofuf

CHAPTER X

CONCLUDING REMARKS

CONTENTS

- 10.1 Prologue
- 10.2 Identity in Hofuf's Home Environment
 - 10.2.1 *Fereej* System as an Identity Maintenance
 - 10.2.1.1 The *Fereej* System as a Place Making
 - 10.2.1.2 Relevance of the *Fereej* System to the Current Issues in Saudi Home Environment
 - 10.2.2 Searching for Identity as Form Giver
 - 10.2.2.1 The Three Portions of the House
 - 10.2.2.2 The Family and Community Relationship
 - 10.2.2.3 Personalising the House
- 10.3 Future of the Home Environment and Private Home in Hofuf
 - 10.3.1 Encouraging the *Fereej* System
 - 10.3.2 Managing Internal Space Clustering
 - 10.3.3 Respecting Associational Meanings in the Home Environment
 - 10.3.4 The problem of the House Size
 - 10.3.5 Allowing Future Transformation
- 10.4 Areas for Further Research

10

CONCLUDING REMARKS

10.1 PROLOGUE

If there is one phenomenon that has impressed itself upon the researcher in studying the continuity and change of identity in the home environment, it is that people will use any means to personalise their homes, as well as to communicate through them with their community. The dialectic between personality and community is an important phenomenon in any home environment. People seem as individuals to need innately to express their individuality through using the surrounding physical objects, yet at the same time they cannot live simply as individuals; rather they need to live within communities, which demands at least a modicum of shared values and outlook.

In drawing together the conclusions of this research, what this investigation tries to show is that searching for identity is not a simple matter. It cannot be accomplished by developing a set of regulations or borrowing images from the past, but rather it is, as one of the Saudi intellectuals has said, a matter of 'every day practice'.¹ He differentiates between two types of identity when he says that there is 'high or sacred identity' and there is 'practical identity'. High identity is 'idealistic' and never exists in reality. It exists only in the intellectuals' minds and is mainly associated with myth and legend, while practical identity is something which occupies people in their everyday life. This is why, when you ask the man in the street about his identity, he will answer you directly with down-to-earth information about his name, his nationality, his religion, his interests and his lifestyle. Searching for identity, as Al-Hamad explains, is not a problem for the public, but it is a problem for the intellectuals, who always think about some imaginary identity which has no relation to the way the concept is understood in everyday life.²

¹ Al-Hamad, T. (1988) 'Identity without Identity: Ourselves and Globalisation', a paper presented at the Conference on Globalisation, Cairo (April 1988). Published in *Al-Youm* (local newspaper), Nos. 9086, 9093, 9100, 9107 (between 1-5-98 and 22-5-98).

² Dr Turky Al-Hamad is a former Professor in the School of Political Science in King Saud University.

When, in the introduction to this study, we criticised the current architectural trend in Saudi Arabia, a trend that borrows from the past as a way to revive architectural identity, we recognised from the beginning that identity cannot simply be 'revived' by doing this, but it can be 'directed' by encouraging some cultural experiences which have become accepted over time. This view finds support in the contribution by Al-Hamad, where he claims that intellectuals have an impractical understanding of the nature of identity, and in this case the intellectuals are represented by the academicians and architects, who have tried in the past two decades in Saudi Arabia to revive architectural identity by recycling traditional images. This nostalgic identity has never been appropriated as practical identity by people, who instead have mobilised their past experiences and refined the new forms according to what they themselves accept, not according to what the architects attempt to impose upon them. The people of Hofuf have enriched their past experiences by their subsequent experiences to build a collective image for the present private home in their city. There has been no real crisis of identity in the Hofuf's home environment; rather people have persisted in their most important associational and perceptual meanings and have localised several new ones. This indicates firstly that identity is a dynamic social phenomenon and cannot be simply revived by reproducing or recycling the traditional past, and secondly that there is a possibility, if the decision makers and designers have a proper appreciation of the identity of the home environment, to direct people's choices towards local culture to achieve a collective local identity. However, this possibility is not a simple matter, but rather needs real social research to understand the current social preferences as well as to provide people with alternatives to choose from to satisfy their individuality.

This final chapter draws together the findings of our study, associating them with the contemporary debate on the Saudi home environment. Some of those findings, which have been summarised at the end of previous chapters, will therefore be re-introduced in order to consider their relevance to the current issues of this contemporary debate. The future of the home environment and private home design in the city of Hofuf are also discussed in this concluding chapter, and some relevant suggestions and recommendations for the future are propounded.

10.2 IDENTITY IN HOFUF'S HOME ENVIRONMENT

Expressing individual and collective identity is an important factor in the study of the development of the house form. One of the main goals of this study is to highlight the need for any future consideration of the house form to give proper weight to the question of how people express themselves as individuals and as groups in their home environment. In the introduction to this study we developed a hypothetical filtering model for the process that people follow to adapt and localise new forms. Our suggestion was that the residents' existing traditions, images, and past experiences would refine new forms that they might bring into any home environment.

Our understanding is that these refining measures are not immutable but rather grow over time in the light of the new experiences that people undergo. It is only those 'high' values - religious and some important social values - which continue with minimum change. The filtering model depends on two filters that people usually use to localise the new forms. The first and more important filter is the cultural filter, which functions to maintain collective identity by sustaining the minimum shared values and images. The personal filter, on the other hand, is linked with individual identity. It is associated with the lowest level in the value system, habit, which is more dynamic, and therefore more susceptible to change. As we have discussed in the third and fourth chapters in this study, these two filters are very important to an understanding of how identity may grow from a lower level to a higher level and how form can develop from a mere isolated and individual image to a collective image.

Some spatio-temporal paths for the development of a number of spaces and forms have been illustrated in Chapter Nine. As we noted, several spaces have been refined over time with people using their past experiences, on the one hand, to refine the new forms and, on the other hand, finding that their experiences, in turn, were built up through the new images and technology. In the illustrated example we found that changing physical form is easier than changing the meaning of space. This is because the physical form belongs to the perceptual spectrum, which can be changed overnight when new forms or technology are introduced, while the meaning of space belongs to the associational spectrum, which is connected with the deepest meaning and enduring values underlying the ethos of society. In the concluding discussion which follows, we will re-introduce the two levels that every home environment in Hofuf has - the *fereej* and the house levels.

10.2.1 *FEREEJ* SYSTEM AS AN IDENTITY MAINTENANCE

In contemporary Hofuf the move towards the western model of the nuclear family has been accelerated, encouraged by the physical characteristics of the new home environment introduced into Hofuf which ignored the traditional social structure. Yet the *fereej* system has continued and people have found a place for their shared values by reproducing the concept in different forms and in a variety of ways. This has proved possible because the *fereej* is much more than simply a family grouping; it also serves as a vehicle for social values since it is deeply engrained in people's minds as an image of appropriate social behaviour, and since it draws its resilience and vigour from its ability to resume its original shape or position over time.

This reproduction by the people of Hofuf of the *fereej* concept in their contemporary home environment stems from particular needs: communality as an attractive social quality connected with people's way of life, the acceptance of living as extended groups (intermediate relationships), and extended family bonds (primary relationships). These factors have proved capable of resisting or adapting to the physical changes in the organisation of neighbourhoods and have thus contributed to the survival and continuity of the *fereej* as a concept with which common people can identify and which they can reproduce.

So we can say that the process of modernisation, which has affected the physical appearance of the home environment in Hofuf, has had a much smaller impact on cultural aspects. Inter-family relationships, private and communal behaviour, a retained sense of identity and social status remain distinctively part of contemporary society in Hofuf. The primary relationships may be weakened due to the economic independence of young generations, but symbolically the family house nevertheless remains a reference point where every member in the family (even those sons and daughters who have left the family house) conceives of as a special place which they hold in common.

10.2.1.1 THE *FEREEJ* SYSTEM AS A PLACE MAKING

The *fereej* system, then, has worked as a device for maintaining the identity of the home environment in Hofuf, since it is part of people's collective identity. It constitutes the main frame of the cultural filter in the home environment in Hofuf. While choosing the location of the house plays a vital part in people's happiness with their private home, and living within a group, as we have noticed, enhances the dialectic between the individual houses and the whole community, it is the *fereej* system which maintains the bond between the members in every group in society and defines their territories.

The greatest challenge to the establishment of the *fereej* system in the new home environment of Hofuf came, not when the residents of the traditional quarter of *Arrifa* moved to *Assalhiyyah* in the first decade of the twentieth century, but in the hybrid neighbourhoods of 1940s and 1950s. In the early days of the first population relocation, we notice how people expressed their individual and collective perceptual and associational identities very quickly. In fact they almost reproduced their traditional home environment and localised the grid pattern to the extent that even western travellers did not notice that *Assalhiyyah* was different from the rest of the old town. This happened because people collectively moved to the area en masse and recreated their home environment as a group.

This was not the case in the hybrid neighbourhoods of 1940s and 1950s, when people had no chance to move into a neighbourhood en masse since the land was sold in individual lots, and the process that produced the physical fabric of the new home environment was different from that which had applied when the suburb of *Assalhiyyah* was first settled. Personal and cultural form, in such later cases, were incompatible, whereas the inhabitants of *Assalhiyyah* had a more intimate relationship with the built form of their environment, and cultural and personal filters worked in a compatible way to replicate traditional life in the new suburb.

These differences in the circumstances of the settlement of *Assalhiyyah* and the settlement of the hybrid neighbourhoods of the 1940s and 1950s help to explain why, in the former case, people were able to establish their perceptual and associational identities at both individual and group levels very quickly, while in the latter case difficulties stood in the way of people's establishment of their collective associational identities. The physical characteristics of the surroundings in both cases show great similarities, but the meaning of exterior space was seen differently by the inhabitants.

Although the cultural filter in Hofuf encourages people to live in identified *fereej*s, several obstacles are found in the post-oil neighbourhoods, especially the division of the inner blocks, which make it difficult for people to reproduce the *fereej* system easily. This indicates that the physical environment can encourage or discourage cultural and personal filters. It is therefore of great importance to comprehend those experiences that determine the cultural filters, particularly if we really want to direct the home environment, to respect people's collective identity, and propose a physical environment compatible with people's cultural frames.

One example which can be used to explain how the physical environment can encourage the cultural frame is the transitional *fereej*, when every *hamola* moved to a small neighbourhood which was originally farmland owned by one of the *hamola* members or bought collectively by a number of extended families from the same *hamola*. The size of the neighbourhood, in this case, was vital in encouraging people to recreate their sense of place. This is because, by developing smaller neighbourhoods, people automatically realised the suitability of the size to a reproduction of the *fereej*. The entire neighbourhood was occupied by a number of extended families from one *hamola*, or in some cases from related *hamolas*, which resulted in a homogeneous community with a high sense of place.

When, as in the contemporary home environment, the size of neighbourhoods has become very large, people have developed several solutions to reproduce their *fereej*s and create their own places. Among these solutions is the clustering of a number of the extended families from the same *hamola* and related *hamolas* in one zone within the neighbourhood. This solution, considered a common phenomenon in contemporary Hofuf, is to some extent a continuation of the transitional *fereej*, in the sense that people have tried to break down the larger neighbourhood by dividing it into smaller *fereej*s, or developing a well defined sub-neighbourhood within the main neighbourhood.

This solution, as with previous solutions, has been developed to maintain the sense of grouping and mark off the territory of the *hamola* from the rest of the neighbourhood. It is, however, far less than what people really need. This can be seen from the attempts at creating more physical connectedness through the building of groups of houses owned and occupied by members from one extended family. These houses may be linked by an internal path in an attempt to recreate the traditional *fereej*. These attempts are motivated by the cultural and

personal filters which work together to resist the gridiron land subdivision system that has been imposed in the contemporary home environment in Hofuf.

One of our most important findings is that people of Hofuf have never interacted with their home environment in a passive way. They have always striven to identify themselves and create their own places in the new suburbs. Even when the governmental institutions appointed themselves as decision-makers at the macro and micro levels in the home environment, people were innovative enough to find several solutions to overcome these constraints. We believe that it has been because of the need to maintain collective identity, which appears strongly in the *fereej* system, that the people of Hofuf have interacted positively with their home environment and tried to adapt and localise the gridiron pattern to make it suitable for their own lifestyle.

This is not to say that such efforts have always met with success, but the people have tried and have shown some measure of attainment in recreating the *fereej* system, especially the large *hamolas* where the number of members help to recreate the *fereej*. It is of prime importance here to recognise that, because the people of Hofuf still persist in reproducing the *fereej* system, a fundamental frame for collective associational identity in Hofuf's home environment, it is possible to encourage the role of the cultural frame in organising the future neighbourhoods in the city of Hofuf by proposing solutions more compatible with people's collective identity.

This can be connected to our discussion in the beginning of this chapter, which stressed that identity in the home environment cannot be revived by imposing ready-made solutions or images instead of respecting people's cultural frame. One of our main findings here, therefore, is that it is possible to direct the home environment of Hofuf to adopt some cultural solutions, such as the *fereej* system.

10.2.1.2 RELEVANCE OF THE *FEREEJ* SYSTEM TO THE CURRENT ISSUES IN THE SAUDI HOME ENVIRONMENT

From the foregoing findings one can say that it is possible to criticise the recent debate in Saudi Arabia about using the traditional fabric as a solution for recreating the lost identity of the Saudi contemporary home environments.³ As we mentioned in the first two chapters in

³ One of the interesting social changes that people have expressed recently in their home environment is what happened in *Al-'Urajja* neighbourhood in Riyadh. This residential settlement is a new suburb selected by the municipality to test proposed new building regulations. The proposed regulations have been developed to succeed the setback regulations and they allow the building to be joined

this study, it is impossible to create identity by adopting historical forms or concepts. What is important is what people feel about these forms and concepts. As we noticed, the physical form was similar in *Assalhiyyah* and the post oil neighbourhoods but people developed different social spaces.⁴

What is really needed to enhance the future home environment in Saudi Arabia is to study the current attitudes and patterns of behaviour in the home environment in every city in the country to consider how people have interacted with the physical forms around them. Then it might be possible to propose some guidelines to aid those concerned with the planning and design of the future home environment. We have noted that the people of Hofuf resisted the new land subdivision system and tried to re-create their own places. If we encourage this attitude in the future it will enhance the quality of life in the home environment.

10.2.2 SEARCHING FOR IDENTITY AS FORM GIVER

The relation between the form and the meaning of the form is debatable because, as we have already noted in several places in this study, an old meaning may be embodied in new forms and vice versa. Furthermore, the new economical and technological developments have played a major role in the formation of the contemporary private home in Hofuf. These factors are also, we believe, amongst the factors that influence people's identity, as was clearly seen when a new identity appeared in conjunction with changes in the economic status of the family in the 1940s.

The discussion which follows aims to summarise some of the important examples which throw light on how searching for identity, whether individual or collective, has worked as a mechanism for producing and refining the house form in Hofuf over time. The impact of searching for identity on the house form is one of the main goals of this study. We are

from back and sides. In *Al-Uraija*, people were not satisfied with the new regulations and some of them left the area. The reason behind this dissatisfaction was the insecurity that people felt because everyone can now easily access the neighbours' houses by the roofs. See *Al Riyadh* (Arabic newspaper) No. 10755 (4-12-97). If we compare this situation with what existed in the traditional home environment we can argue that building regulations need to be developed to deal with the process of producing the built form rather than to force people to follow a preconceived physical form. People need first to build an intimate relationship with the surrounding place to be persuaded to live as they used to in the traditional home environment.

⁴ The issue of future home environment in Saudi Arabia had been discussed in one of the local newspapers between 9-10-97 and 15-1-98. The researcher followed this issue and contributed two articles. The main points that were raised by several officials, architects and academicians concentrated on the need to review the building regulations because they were not suitable for people's lifestyle and because they were not economical. The researcher concentrated on public participation as well as the need to consider the local characteristics for every city. This means that we need specific regulations for each city rather than one set of rules applied everywhere in Saudi Arabia. See *Al-Riyadh* (local newspaper) issues 10699; 1706; 10713; 10720; 10727; 10741; 10755; 10776; 10790; 10797.

looking for those aspects which encourage people to *decide to adopt certain forms and resist or transform others.*

10.2.2.1 THE THREE PORTIONS OF THE HOUSE

The three section division of the private home in Hofuf is a phenomenon that has continued over time; there has always been a front, a middle, and a back to the house and the front stage has always contained the male reception areas, the main symbolic spaces. This area constitutes the house facade and links the family with the community. The middle stage has always been a private section; it is the female zone and contains the utilitarian and semi-symbolic spaces. The back stage consists of utilitarian spaces. The relationship between these three parts of the house has been maintained over time to express the family status through the positioning of the front stage in such a way that it affords the maximum visual contact with both the whole community and visitors to the house.

In the traditional house each zone is isolated from the others by a transitional space, a clear division of the house into three clusters so that people could maintain the privacy they needed. The domain that belonged exclusively to women was therefore the innermost part of the house and the roof routes, while individual family and collective identities were expressed through a maximising of the relationship between the front stage and external domestic spaces. As far as house sections are concerned, one of the most interesting finds of our study is that the middle stage, the family part, became the most enduring and least changed part of the house, consisting as it did of mainly utilitarian spaces between the front and the back. Change in this part of the house seemed less important for traditional Hofuf, and it was thus protected from changes in one or other of the other spaces by its location between two transitional zones.

Despite the enduring three-zone division of the private home in Hofuf, the clarity of the spaces was reduced, especially in the early villa type of house. With a few exceptions, the hybrid and transitional houses the 1940s and 1950s saw a continuation of the traditional zoning pattern, even when the back setback in the transitional house was used; it was part of the back stage. The form and meaning of the three traditional parts were maintained because people experienced their practicality, and there was in any case little change yet in the general lifestyle in Hofuf to instigate any modification.

It was not until the introduction of new building regulations in the 1980s that the clustering arrangements of the internal spaces in the private homes of Hofuf met with some difficulties. Three house divisions were still encountered in the villa type of house, but with less clarity, especially in the middle and back sections where the transitional space, the internal *sabat*, disappeared to be replaced by an undefined boundary. It was some years before the house regained its former characteristics, which was achieved by clustering a number of spaces with similar functions and linking them by transitional zones. By the time of the post-1995 houses, this clustering had become very clear and indeed the house developed more stages due to the location of the women's *majlis* and the living room between the front and the middle stages. That is to say, by this time the recent private homes developed two separate front stages to represent men's and women's domains in contemporary society in Hofuf.

Expressing the status of the family and maintaining female privacy encouraged the people of Hofuf to refine their houses and classify the spaces in them according to both their utilitarian functions and symbolic roles. So it is that we find that four clusters have developed in recent Hofuf houses. Firstly there are the male reception spaces, consisting of a symbolic space, the *majlis* hall, and a less symbolic space, the *mugallat*. Secondly there are the female reception spaces, where the symbolic role is played by the women's *majlis* and the utilitarian function by the multi-purpose room. The third cluster is that of the living spaces, recently developed to include the kitchen; here the symbolic space is the living room and the utilitarian area the kitchen and family dining room. The bedrooms, now located on the first floor, make up the fourth cluster.

Linking these clusters is a series of transitional spaces, a feature which has continued over time even when the pattern of clusters was different from that which has developed most recently. Thus even when the *majlis* hall opened directly on to the front setback in the transitional home and some of the early villa types, there was a passageway between the front setback and the family spaces. In the most recent Hofuf houses the male reception spaces are connected by an entrance hall to the front garden and to the living spaces. An entrance hall to separate the women's *majlis* from the living spaces has developed, an indication of the change in the status of women. Connecting the female reception spaces with the living spaces there is a small living space or a passageway, an area which can be considered the central transitional space because it links all the ground floor spaces, because it is connected with

both the male and female entrances, and because it links the ground floor with the first floor through the positioning of the staircase.

One fact to note is that, although recent Hofuf houses have developed into more than three sections, the three stages that we have identified have been basically retained, though with some space re-location. The women's *majlis* and the living room, for instance, are still accounted part of the front stage, even although for reasons of privacy they may in fact be located deeper within the building and not physically in the front. Clearly it is according to the meaning of a space and not its physical location that it is classified. The kitchen, for example, has become of more symbolic significance in recent Hofuf houses, when it moved from the back stage to the middle stage.

10.2.2.2 THE FAMILY AND COMMUNITY RELATIONSHIPS

Whatever the physical layout and relationship of rooms and spaces, it may be that the most unchanging phenomenon in the private home in Hofuf is the dialectic between the family and the community. The people's determination to retain the *fereej* system is an indication of their commitment to the maintenance of a balanced relationship between family and community. This relationship was maintained in the traditional house by linking the front spaces visually and physically with the external domestic spaces. Now we find that it is affirmed by developing the front stage, always occupied by the male reception spaces, as a semi-private zone within the house, which informs others symbolically about the activities that take place in these spaces.

The enduring nature of this family-community relationship can be seen in the obvious influence that it has had over the centuries in determining the traditional house form in Hofuf. This relationship survived the changes introduced in male reception spaces around a century ago, when new symbolic devices evolved to sustain it. The *majlis* hall, for example, moved to the first floor but a staircase was developed in the guest entrance hall and beside the main gate of the house to maximise the link with external spaces by allowing free entrance to the house to visitors. The privacy of the family was protected by the separation of the guest entrance hall from the family entrance hall. Visually, loggia or *masbah* were positioned in front of the *majlis* and opened on to the main *sikka* to inform visitors about the activities that might be carried out in the *majlis* and to invite them to enter the house.

The hybrid house of the 1940s kept this family-community relationship going. For the first time openings to external spaces, in the form of windows in the *majlis* hall, appeared on the ground floor of Hofuf private homes. Despite the major nature of this change it was carried out without hesitation, because people understood the symbolic role of the *majlis*, a semi-private space, as a mediator between the family and the community.

As far as the transitional house is concerned, when the *majlis* hall was separated from the external spaces, people concentrated on the visual symbols and sought solutions to re-establish the link between the male reception spaces and the external spaces. The open space at the front of the *majlis* hall became bigger than the rest of the front setback. Two doors, one for the family and the other for the guests, became part of the external appearance of the transitional and the subsequent houses. The *majlis* hall remained in its symbolic role even when its location moved to a deeper space. This was because people, in order to cope with the new circumstances, had developed new visual elements to replace the old ones.

Family and community relationships took different levels in the contemporary private home because of the increasing role of women in society. Now, not only the male reception spaces linked the family with the community but also the women's reception spaces and the living room were developed as two extra channels to enhance this relationship. The family up to the time of the transitional house expressed its identity as if one member. Personal identity was very weak. This situation changed in the last two decades by personalising the internal spaces and linking them with the male and female domains in the Hofuf community.

This attitude influenced the form of the private home in Hofuf by, as we mentioned in the previous part, clustering and personalising the internal spaces. In general, the male reception spaces are always found in locations close to external areas. They always located as close as possible to the main entrance. This is because of their symbolic role of linking the family, and in recent times the males in the family, with the community, and because of the need to maintain the privacy of the female spaces. While the women's reception spaces are found in deeper locations despite the fact that they became part of the front stage, because they should remain away from the men's sight. This means that male reception spaces still represent the most symbolic spaces due to both their location and to their visual contact with the community and because in Hofuf men still dominate society.

10.2.2.3 PERSONALISING THE HOUSE

Personalising the house is not only found in the contemporary houses. It was part of the traditional house image when the main gate and the coffee areas were used by people to express the uniqueness of the home and specifically the uniqueness of the male reception space. However, this attitude was not an indication of an intention to personalise the internal spaces or to create different domains in the house, as happened in the recent houses in Hofuf, but rather an expression of the family identity as whole. In the traditional house the attitude was towards personalising the house as one unit but in the post-1995 houses the attitude is to personalise the house as well as to personalise the spaces inside the house.

The recent house in Hofuf can be seen as an expression of individual identity when we see it as individual spaces. The women's *majlis*, for example, is an expression of the new role of women in society. Women in this case have tried to express themselves by insisting on the separation of the women's *majlis* from the family part and by furnishing it with sofas and chairs, similar to the male reception space. In the relationship and use of spaces, the recent house is an expression of collective identity. The internal spaces relate to each other in a way that expresses the collective ethos of contemporary Hofuf society. Clustering of spaces, for example, is an expression of a collective inherited experience and the separation of guest spaces from the family part is collective behaviour worked out to maintain the collective identity of the private home in Hofuf over time.

This behavioural duality is what makes the contemporary home in Hofuf more local and more a genuine expression of contemporary Hofuf society. The new identity, which started in the 1940s, is now characterised by the rise of individual identity. Collective identity has become less important than it was in the traditional home environment. This was expected especially with the economic independence of younger generations.

10.3 FUTURE OF THE HOME ENVIRONMENT AND PRIVATE HOME IN HOFUF

Future planning for a conservative society such as the one in Hofuf needs to consider those major cultural issues that constitute the belief system and ethos. It is obvious that the efforts to modernise Hofuf were concentrated mainly on physical appearances and the applications of foreign models, without considering or realising the consequences on people's daily life.

Future home environments, in this sense, should reflect a different planning attitude in order to meet people's social and cultural needs.

This can be seen from the fact that implementing insensitive development measures in the traditional home environment in Hofuf led to a complete decline of traditional areas. Ignoring the hidden boundaries of the *fereej* system reduced the environmental quality and forced people to move to places where they could reproduce their *fereej*s.

Planners, then, may destroy existing home environments if they work without considering the prevailing social and physical determinants. Future planning for any existing residential settlement should work within the systems that exist, not only the physical configurations but more importantly the social ones, which need more research and sensitive treatment.

10.3.1 ENCOURAGING THE *FEREEJ* SYSTEM

One way to think about the future home environment in Hofuf is to let people create their own *fereej*s. To do that planners need firstly to understand that this system is a deep expression of social behaviour and also that its physical representation is not fixed, which means people may reproduce their *fereej*s in different forms. Further, it must be grasped that the physical environment should support this attitude by developing flexible mechanisms and techniques in the micro-scale; thus dwelling arrangements and design can be modified with changing life circumstances.

The current land subdivision and land allocation system in Saudi Arabia militates against the development of the *fereej* system. In order to encourage the establishment of *fereej*s consideration should be given to a reduction in the size of neighbourhoods. For one thing, this would facilitate a sense of local identity and awareness, since the area would not seem too large for traditional communal associations. A further result would be to encourage the relocation of large *hamolas* to neighbourhoods as a single group so that the human material for the development of the *fereej* would already be on hand. *Hamolas* should also be consulted about the layout and use of areas in which they are going to live. Since the evidence of our study indicates that people will in any case seek to re-establish *fereej*s even though with some changes of superficial form, their social and communal value has clearly been recognised by the people and deserves to be encouraged by decision makers.

10.3.2 MANAGING INTERNAL SPACE CLUSTERING

As a result of the unique situation regarding privacy requirements in Saudi Arabia, the space clusterings that we now find in the contemporary Hofuf house have evolved and carry particular significance. The desire for each individual to have his or her own bedroom, combined with the need to express personal identity and other symbolic factors relating to spaces and clustering, have now resulted in an increase in the size of the contemporary house such that it is becoming unviable in terms of cost.

What is therefore required is a re-consideration of space use and meaning in the traditional Hofuf home, where privacy requirements and the expression of identity were accommodated without the need for such large houses, in order to see whether lessons about design and layout can be learned from them, while still preserving privacy and satisfying the other needs and aspirations of the residents. This issue, however, is not a straightforward one, since it has to be recognised that the personalising of space that we now find in the contemporary home did not exist in the traditional Hofuf house. More work, therefore, needs to be done on this.

10.3.3 RESPECTING ASSOCIATIONAL MEANINGS IN THE HOME ENVIRONMENT

It has been an ongoing phenomenon of the Hofuf home environment that, irrespective of the changes in form that may have taken place. The associational meanings have been retained. We can see this in the case of the *fereej*, where the form of the home environment has changed, but the associational need to live within a well-identified group continues. This is applicable also at the house level, where the need for clustering internal spaces continued despite the change of the house form. At the smallest level the meaning and use of the male *majlis* hall continued with its internal hierarchy, even when the form of the *majlis* changed. These three examples show that the associational meanings are very important and need to be considered in any future home environment.

10.3.4 THE PROBLEM OF HOUSE SIZE

It is clear that the need for separating the house into two floors, one for sleeping and the other for reception and entertaining, has increased the size of the house. Because everyone in the family needs a separate room, four bedrooms in addition to the master bedroom have become one of the main requirements of the family in present-day Hofuf. This has led in most cases to an increase in the sizes of the spaces on the ground floor. People were tempted to take this step because there were no extra costs from the construction point of view. However, they

did not appreciate the high cost of energy every month, nor, in many cases, the expenditure involved in extra furniture.

The cost of the house now is not affordable for the younger generation because of the standards that people demand for their private homes. One of the main suggestions that can solve the problem in the future is to bring back the three portions of the house by including the living room with the women's *majlis* and the multi-purpose room with the family dining room. It is difficult with the current family size in Hofuf to reduce the number of the bedrooms, but it is possible to reduce the size of the rooms themselves, which will help in reducing the size of the house.

10.3.5 ALLOWING FUTURE TRANSFORMATION

Despite the changes that have taken place in the house form over the years, form remains, in comparison with image, a relatively static element. Image is more dynamic and more susceptible to change. We should therefore in the future look to develop more flexible forms in order to accommodate the changes that are taking place in people's lives due to the development of technology. For example in the last two decades the living room has become the most dynamic space in the house, developed from a central space like a courtyard to a space holding symbolic meaning and connecting the whole house together.

Understanding this spatial dynamism and development in the private home requires from us a re-evaluation of our current construction techniques and materials in Saudi Arabia. Concrete as a construction material allows very little change. We therefore need to consider more adaptable and flexible materials, such as the wood used in the traditional home, which allowed people to transform their houses and to cope with the changes over time with minimum cost.

10.4 AREAS FOR FURTHER RESEARCH

We have used the phenomenon of the expression of individual and collective identities in the private home to understand the past development of Hofuf society, but still there is much work to be done to understand contemporary conditions of Hofuf society. One of the main findings regarding this subject, for example, relates to the role of women, which has changed considerably and has become very important in the last two decades.

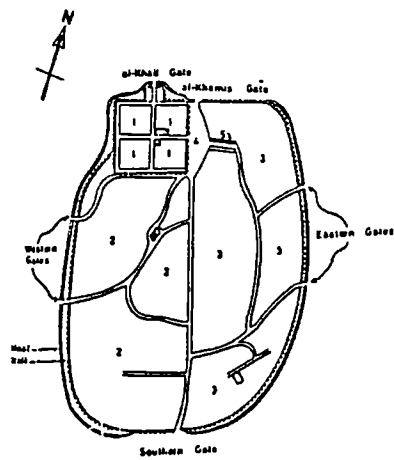
Further, if we really wish to improve the future home environment in Saudi Arabia, it is necessary to concentrate on environment-behaviour studies. This present study may perhaps be considered as one contribution among several studies on the private home in Saudi Arabia. One of the most important areas of study, which can be linked closely to this present contribution, would be on the influence of expressing individual and personal identities in existing houses. How have the desire to express oneself and communicate with the community worked as impulses to encourage people to transform their private homes? In this study we have touched upon some of these influences, but a more comprehensive investigation is required to understand this phenomenon more fully.

Significant investigation can be carried out on how searching for identity has increased the cost of living in Saudi Arabia in general and in the city of Hofuf in particular. We have noted that searching for identity has duplicated the size of the private house in Hofuf, which has increased the cost of construction as well as the cost of energy and long-term maintenance, and this is an area which could be followed up. There is the related question of the viability of existing houses if the cost of energy increases in the future, an area of particular significance especially when the Saudi government is concerned about energy consumption.

What is now required is a quantitative investigation, seeking to measure and substantiate the weight of the variables that apply to the contemporary home environment in Hofuf, and that have been brought to light in this current qualitative study. Such variables would include living in a group, the continuing significance of the *majlis* as a mediator between the family and community, the importance of the women's *majlis* and the living room - of particular significance in the contemporary home because of the recent changes in the status of women - and the clustering of spaces within the home, all of which help to constitute the identity of the contemporary home environment in Hofuf. Research, using our findings, should be able to identify and quantify the role played by the different variables in the satisfaction of the people with their contemporary home environment, and should thus be able to establish guidelines for those who will plan and design the future home environment in Hofuf, so that they plan and design an environment appropriate to the needs and aspirations of the people.

This study has demonstrated that a consideration of people's past experiences is very important in order to understand their behaviour, because they always use these experiences to evaluate the present and decide about the future. With this in mind, we can venture a final suggestion for further research with respect to other cities in Saudi Arabia. The results of this

investigation can be used as a comparative study to test the need for different design guidelines and building regulations for every local society in Saudi Arabia. It should be borne in mind that, as things stand at present, the building regulations in Saudi Arabia form a standard for use in all localities without consideration for the differences which may exist between different local areas. A similar methodological approach might be used in other cities in Saudi Arabia, which will make it possible for decision makers to test the results and understand the differences between local societies, and to take them into account in any future planning.



Hofuf in 1862.

APPENDICES

Appendix

I

FORMATION OF THE TRADITIONAL SETTLEMENT IN HOFUF

A.1.1 HISTORICAL BACKGROUND¹

Originally, Hofuf began as a small village in Al-Hasa Oasis called *Arrigayyat*. The small village *Arrigayyat* is considered the core of Hofuf.² This small village was created by revivification of the agricultural lands through the process of small decisions made by the farmers in the area which, through time, eventually formed the *Arrigayyat* village.³ Back in the time of *Al-Jabriyeen*, in the fifteenth century, a new quarter nearby was created to become the administrative base for the state of *Al-Jabriyeen*.

There is a belief that the name of Hofuf first came to be used during that time. In the 16th century, the Portuguese invaded the area because of its important trading and strategic location. This encouraged the Ottomans to move to the area to protect the

region which was considered the eastern gate of the two holy places of Makkah and Madina. The Ottomans conquered the area in 1550 and built defensive walls, moat, jail, military hospital, several mosques and madrasas including the Ali Basha mosque in 1571 and *Madrasat Al-Qubba* (School of dome) in 1612, the latter of which both still exist in *Alkut* (Fig.a.1.1).

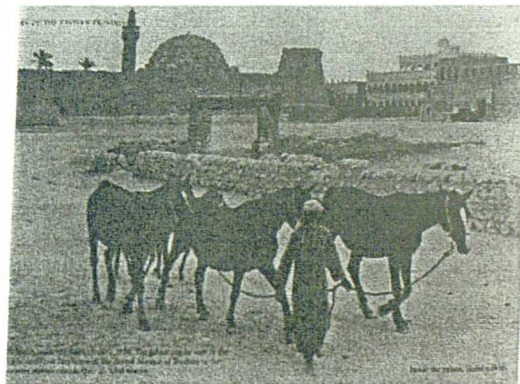


Fig. A. 1.1: The mosque of Ali Basha in 1950 (*Alkut*), Source: Facey, W. (1994) The Story of Eastern Province of Saudi Arabia, London, Stacy International, p. 74.

During the first Ottoman reign, the city still had the mechanisms of revivification and allotments that helped city growth. The urban growth in Hofuf started by filling the empty

¹ This part is a summary of wider reading. For Example, the Arabic references are: Al-Abdulgader, M. (1960) The History of Al-Hasa, Al-Hasa, Mktabat Al-Ahsa; Nakhla, Mohammed Urabi (1980) The Political History of Al-Hasa, Kuwait, That Al-Salasil. (Arabic Text); Gabashi, Adel M.N. (1985/1405-1406H) A Study of some of the Ottoman Buildings in Hofuf in the Second Half of Tenth Century of Al-Hejra (Sixteenth Century), Unpublished Master Thesis, Makkah, University of Um-Alqura. (Arabic Text); Al-Mulla, A. (1990) History of Hajer, Al-Hasa, Maktabat Al-Ta'awin Al-Thaqafi. (Arabic). The English references will be mentioned in the text.

² In the fifteenth century, the *Al-Jabriyeen* tribe settled adjacent to this village, and built their new governmental quarter called *Bahila* adjacent to the original *Arrigayyat* village. (Interview with well known historian *Abulrahman Ben Ahmed Al-Mulla* in 1992)

spaces in the city, subdivided the houses, and expanded to new suburbs outside the city wall. In the 19th century, Hofuf expanded to include the small village of *Arrigayyat*. However, regional insecurity was the compelling factor that made people live inside the walled city which was forced to accommodate the population increase without enlarging its limits. Consequently, large houses were subdivided to accommodate the extended family, the sons of the original owner and their families.

During the reign of Bani Khalid who ruled the area between 1671 and 1792, after the Ottomans, the Danish traveller Niebuhr wrote that, by 1765, Hofuf was a large city.⁴ At that time, a religious revivalist movement was commencing nearby in *Najd* headed by *Mohammed Ibn Abdulwahhab*. The first Saudi state was established and later conquered Hofuf in 1792. The unstable political situation due to the fighting between *Bani Khalid* and Al-Saud in the area discouraged city growth. Sadler, a British officer who visited Hofuf in 1819, described the city as:

‘The principal or walled town is called [Hofuf]; its walls are of mud, and about fifty feet high, surrounded by a deep dry ditch. It has two gates; the houses within the fort are mean; to the east is an open village, interspersed with cultivated grounds and date plantations. [Hofuf] and its suburbs do not contain fifteen thousands inhabitants.’⁵

All these mechanism of growth were influenced by various factors. Firstly, the political instability of the city for a long period of time had great effect on the urban growth. During the administrative period of *Bani-Khalid*, the city was extended and/or shrank according to political pressure. Moreover, between 1772 and 1819, the city was at a most critical time because it went through many social upheavals and violent outbreaks.

The second Saudi state emerged between 1819 and 1871, which was a time of political stability. The economy flourished, and the city expanded rapidly and creates the present historic core of Hofuf. In 1862, Hofuf took its shape that carried on in its historical core until today. The three quarters: *Alkut*, *Arrif'a* and *Anna'athil*, were established and gained their physical morphology. In 1862 Palgrave visited Hofuf. He described the form of the city as ‘a large oval’ shape, and the ‘public square, an oblong space of about three hundred yards in length by a fourth of the same width, occupies the meeting-point of the three quarters’ (Fig.a.1.2).⁶

⁴ Nakhla, (1980) *The Political History of Al-Hasa*

⁵ Sadleir, G.F. (1866) *Diary of A Journey Across Arabia (1819)*, Bombay. (Reprinted with an Introduction by F.M. Edwards, Cambridge: The Oleander Press, 1977), p. 72. The name of Hofuf mentioned as ‘Foof’ in the original text.

⁶ Palgrave, (1866), Op. Cit., p. 149.

At that time, Hofuf was the only really habitable and important inland region in Al-Hassa. Lois Pelly passed through Hofuf in 1865 and he indicated that Hofuf was bigger than Riyadh at that time. He also mentioned the economic importance of the area when he said that: Al-Hasa and its two ports of Qatif and Uqair formed the biggest trade centre in the Saudi state.⁷

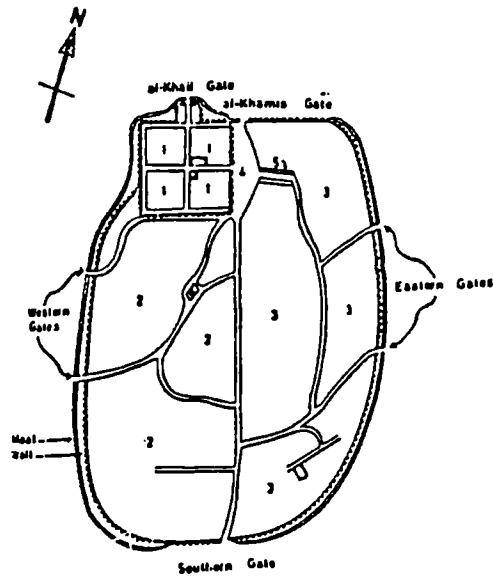


Fig. A.1.2. Hofuf in 1862: Palgrave (1866).

In the 1875 the Ottomans returned to the area and remained until 1913 when king Abulaziz occupied Al-Hasa in 1913. Towards the end of the 19th century, Hofuf was 'oblong, with a length from north to south of 1 to 1 ½ miles and a breadth of ½ a mile.'⁸

⁷ Pelly, L. (1866) *Report on a Journey to the Wahabee Capital of Riyadh in Central Arabia* Byculla, the Education Society's Press, p. 63.

⁸ Lorimer, J. G. (1908), *Op. Cit.*, p. 745.

A.1.2 PHYSICAL CHARACTERISTICS OF THE TRADITIONAL HOME ENVIRONMENT

‘THE last chalky plain is that over which the houses of Hofuf and the dome and minaret of the mosque can be seen on the far or western side. It is a landscape of whites, as the chalky sandstone of the houses is the same colour as the country around, with a dark-green background of palms from a separate group of flowing wells to the north and west of the town.’⁹

Similar to any Arabic-Islamic city, old Hofuf has an irregular shape and grew gradually through time. As we discussed earlier, several mechanism were operative in the construction of the old city. The physical organisation of Hofuf reflected its social characteristics.¹⁰

However, in Hofuf the city consists of separate quarters but they had used the terms *hay* for the whole quarter while they used the term *hara* for the smallest unit in the quarter. *Hara* in many cases is part of *fereej* which is a social term used in Hofuf to define the locations of different groups from each other. The head of each quarter, called *omda*, represents the government in the quarter and is responsible about the internal affairs.

The streets in Hofuf followed an irregular pattern. The main street of the city separated between the city quarters, connecting the main gateways in the north and south (Fig.a.1.3). Because of its location in between the city’s quarters and its width, the main street attracted most commercial activities in the city.



Fig.A.1.3: Main street in old Hofuf, source: Aramco

The main street in the city divided the city into two halves and isolate the quarters of the city from each other. By the end of 19th century, three quarter made up the city of Hofuf including *Alkut*, *Arrif'a*, and *Anna'athil* (Fig.a.1.4).

⁹ Cheesman, O. B. E. (1926), Op. Cit., p. 59.

¹⁰ Gibb & Bowen (1950) described the physical organisation of the Arabic-Islamic cities in eighteenth century as: ‘Beneath the external unity of emplacement, represented by the city wall, and of function, represented by the main *suks* or bazaars, the urban area was subdivided into a large number of separate quarters, called *hara*, each self-contained, with its own communal buildings (mosque, bath, market) and its own gates, by which it asserted and maintained its separate existence. Each *hara* formed an administrative unity under its own *seyh*, and was inhabited by families between whom there existed some natural tie, either of origin, occupation, or religion, thus constituting a homogeneous group’ (Vol. 1, p. 279).

The *Alkut* was the most distinctive of the quarters because it was the administrative quarter in the Turkish period and continued in Saudi times. It had the governmental buildings and governor's palace. It could almost be considered to have been a self-sufficient town within the city of Hofuf.



Fig.A.1.4: Hofuf before 1904 with its three quarters.
Source: Developed from Winterhalter, C. (1981), *Op. Cit.*, p. 49.

The houses in the quarter varied in sizes, but commonly the houses were small. Many of these had a long history dating back possibly from the early beginning of the quarter. The larger houses and the less crowded portions of *Alkut* are to be found in its northeastern corner which possibly was the former residential area for the high ranking Ottoman administrators. Plagrave described *Alkut* in 1862 as a

'vast citadel, surrounded by a deep trench, with walls and towers of unusual height and thickness, earth-built with an occasional intermixture of stone ... it is nearly square ... Three sides of this fortress are provided each with a central gate; on the fourth or northern side a small but strong fortress forms a sort of keep ... for the whole space, even up to the inner line of the walls, is thickly inhabited; it is divided by rectangular streets running from gate to gate, and from side to side'.¹¹

The *Alkut* continued without any major changes until the middle of this century. For example Lorimer described *Alkut* in 1908 as:

'Kut, which forms the north-western corner of the town, is really a large fortified enclosure with sides about 600 yards long and completely surrounded by a ditch; it is inhabited by the Turkish troops, the turkish dome community, and others. It contains a ... mosque having a dome ... also another good building which is used as a military hospital ...'¹²

Philby in 1922 had indicated the first changes in *Alkut* by the Saudi governor. By that time the governor's palace had been renewed. In fact, there were no major changes in the residential context, except that the Turkish resident had left Hofuf. He said

'Kut quarter ... forming a regular square fortress within a fortified town; in it, besides the *Sarai*, the *Amir*'s private residence, the houses of other officials and the fort and

¹¹ Palgrave, (1866), *Op. Cit.*, pp. 149-150.

¹² Lorimer, J. G. (1908), *Op. Cit.*, p. 745.

mosque of Ibrahim Pasha [Ali Pasha], are a jail and several rows of ordinary houses and shops of all kinds; the Kut is thus complete in itself and fully provided against the emergency of siege, as it needed to be in the days of Turkish rule, both from within and without a bulwark to the town against foreign invasion and refuge for the garrison in the event of popular rising'.¹³

The *Arrif'a*, as Palgrave described, was a 'noble quarter, [it] covers a considerable extent ... in some places of even handsome dwellings'. He added that the 'streets of the ... [*Arrif'a*] are, for a hot country, wide and very clean ... This quarter is very healthy; it stands on slightly rising ground'.¹⁴ Lorimer in 1908 described *Arrif'a* as:

'The Rifa'a quarter forms the entire eastern side of the town; it is healthier and somewhat higher than the others, and in it are the residences of a number of the better families.'¹⁵

Arrif'a was originally considered as one quarter but people of Hofuf distinguish between the north and south *Arrif'a* because of people who lived in each part of this quarter. The southern part was accepted by wealthy people while the artisans lived in the northern part. Philby (1922) said that the *Arrif'a* quarter

'includes the Qaisariyya and occupies the whole length of the eastern side of the town; in it are the dwellings of the merchants and other people of substance, buildings of modest enough appearance from the outside, being of the common limestone plastered over with *juss* or mud, but doubtless more or less luxurious within according to the means of their various owners'¹⁶

The *Arrif'a* with its two parts formed the largest quarter in old Hofuf, occupying almost half of the total area of the town. Moreover, there were many differences between the north part and the south part of *Arrif'a*. In the south part the houses are bigger than those in the north part because many merchants lived in the former. The streets in the north *Arrif'a* were very narrow, and may be attributed to it being originally a village (*Arrigayat*). It had many *sabats*, nearly every street had a *sabat* or more.

¹³ Philby, (1922), Op. Cit., p. 28.

¹⁴ Palgrave, (1866), Op. Cit., p.151.

¹⁵ Lorimer, J. G. (1908), Op. Cit., p. 745.

¹⁶ Philby, (1922), Op. Cit., p. 29.

In the south part, the streets were wider and the *sabats* are less than the north part. The small houses increase the number of the families who lived in this part which, in consequence increased the density. Moreover, this large number of *sabats* in the north part was a result of the high density and the small sizes of the houses, which force the families to extend their houses over the street frequently (Fig.a.1.5).



Fig. A.1. 5: Narrow street in northern part of *Arrif'a* quarter, Source: Field work

The *Anna'athil* quarter got its name from one of the prominent families who lived in the area in the 19th century. This quarter is considered the last extension of Hofuf in the last century. In this quarter 'every description of dwelling is to be seen - for rich and poor, for high and low, palace or hovel'.¹⁷ Lorimer described *Anna'athil* in 1908. He said the quarter

'... includes the southern and western parts of the town and is, in extent, a good half of the place; it is inhabited promiscuously by all classes ... it is separated from Kut by a date grove; and within its limits are enclosed occasional garden and a few trees ...'¹⁸

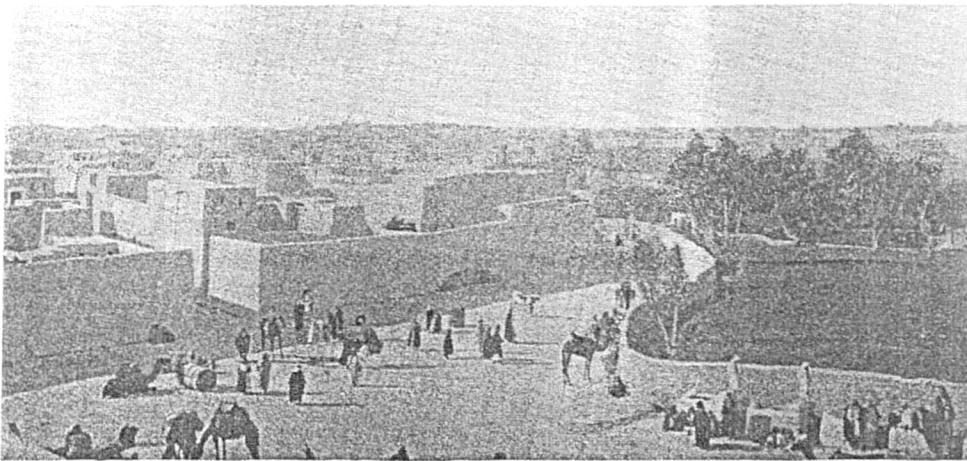


Fig.A.1.6. *Anna'athil* quarter in 1908, Source: Lorimer, J. G. (1908), Op. Cit., p. 740.

The building quality of the quarter was very poor in the last century. Philby (1922) called this quarter a 'slum'. He described the physical quality of the quarter as follows; 'the streets are narrower and less regular than elsewhere and the houses are less elegant for want of plaster, while here and there they seemed to be in a ruinous condition'.¹⁹

¹⁷ Palgrave, (1866), Op. Cit., p.151

¹⁸ Lorimer, J. G. (1908), Op. Cit., p. 745.

¹⁹ Philby, (1922), Op. Cit., p. 30.

However, in the early part of this century the inhabitants of the quarter developed it and built some of the largest and most decorative houses in old Hofuf. The development of the quarter took place between 1900-1950 and was implemented by different mechanisms. The most common mechanism was by connecting several small houses to create one big house or by demolishing a group of small houses and rebuilding one big house (Fig. a.1.6 & a.1.7).

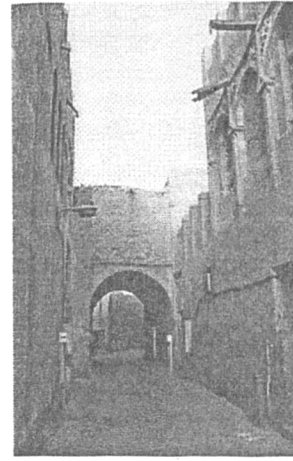


Fig. A.1.7: *Sikka* and *Sabat* in *Anna'athil*,
Source: Field work

The social systems in traditional Hofuf, also, influenced the physical morphology of the whole traditional home environment in Hofuf. For example, in the oldest quarters in Hofuf such as *Arrif'a Ashshmaliiyyah* streets were very narrow between houses and almost every street has one *sabat* or more. The case in *Alkut* was different *sabats* were exist but less than *Arrif'a*, while in *Anna'athil* has less than the previous two quarter. This is mainly due to the social mechanisms that were effective in the traditional home environment over centuries. Despite the physical differences in the traditional quarter in Hofuf, the social systems were same and produced the same physical systems, even though there were some individual and group characteristics that developed due to the immediate interaction between those individuals and groups with the physical environment.

Arrif'a Ashshmaliiyyah, for example, was occupied by craftsmen, who have big extended families, at the same time they had a very limited area which forced them to have narrow streets and extend their houses over streets. *Al-Kut* was the administration quarter, and not every body allowed to reside in it. This reduced the pressure on the land but the *fereej* system was still considered the main communal system and played an essential role in defining the social and physical characteristics of the whole quarter. In *Anna'athil* the situation is different, because it suffered many changes in the last century which divided it into different areas. Some of them had very old houses and the other had houses constructed in the last decades of last century and the early decades of this century. However, in both cases the *fereej* system was the main identification tool used by families and groups to define their territories.

Appendix II

THE COMMUNITY OF HOFUF: CONTINUITY AND CHANGE

A.1 GENERAL CHARACTERISTICS OF HOFUF'S SOCIETY

The society of Hofuf is one of most urbanised societies in the Arabian Peninsula. In the traditional society, there was a strong sense of belonging. Every person needed to feel that he was a member in a specific group. The reason behind this need was because the individual identity was not important and was replaced by a strong social identity. This is not to say that individual identity did not exist, but to say that it was dominated by the social forms, features, and function of the whole society.

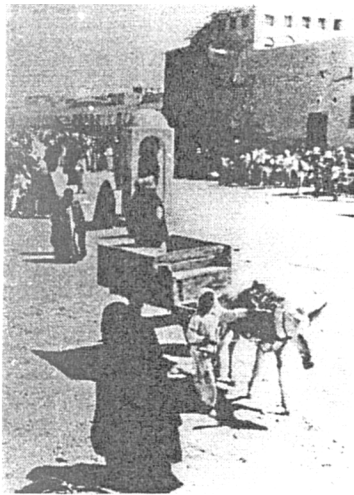
This sense of belonging was coupled with shared values to create a homogeneous society characterised by a specific social structure and institutions. Moreover, the economic and geographical characteristics of Hofuf work also to define the shared lifestyle and social identity in the traditional society. In this respect, the agricultural land influenced the lifestyle. It mixed with the people's view of life and art. Palgrave noticed in 1862 'industry, commerce, agriculture, and art, all of them favoured by the geographical position and local resources of Hasa' (Fig.a.2.1 & Fig.a.2.2).¹



Fig. A.2.1: Traditional carpenter and pottery maker in Hofuf. Source: Field work.

¹ Palgrave, W.G. (1866), *Op. Cit.*, Vol. 2, p. 146.

From the historical background, we can argue that the process of change occurred a long time ago in Hofuf's society. People of the area have been exposed to frequent contact with the other cultures through history. This provided the inhabitants of the city with certain characteristics which made the society of Hofuf distinct from surrounding societies in Arabia. Palgrave mentioned that inhabitants of Al-Hasa are very different from the central and northern Arabian people. They are 'much better adapted to make the stranger feel himself at home'.² He attributed this characteristic to the commercial relations with surrounding countries. This observation was supported by Pelly (1866) when he noticed that, compared to other cities in Arabia, in Hofuf 'there was a look of cheerfulness and movement in the place'.³



Source: Aramco



Source: Field work

Fig. A.2.2: *Gary* (transportation cart in traditional Hofuf).

A.2 LIFE PATTERN IN HOFUF: CONTINUITY AND CHANGE

The society of Hofuf has its specific regional and local characteristics. Compared to Arabic cities in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, Hofuf had a similar social system from the general perspective. The society of the main Arabic cities in the eighteenth century consisted of several corporations, e.g. artisans; builders, traders, etc.; each corporation has its own master or *sheikh*. The role of the master of the corporation was to represent the corporation in their relations with government. Also, he was aware of the internal affairs of the corporation and solved the disputes that might arise between its members. Therefore, 'within

² *Ibid.*, p. 142.

³ Pelly, L. (1866) *Report on a Journey to Wahabee Capital of Riyadh in Central Arabia* Byculla, the Education Society's Press, p. 64.

the limits imposed by religion, tradition, and ‘usage’ ... the corporations were relatively free and autonomous’⁴

Hofuf was not big enough to develop a complex corporation system similar to what was existed in the large Arabic cities such as Cairo or Damascus. It had established its own system which was, from a general perspective, similar in one way or another to those big cities, but it was shaped by its long standing traditions. These traditions were strongly influenced by the religious, historical, physical, demographic, economic, and technological characteristics of the area. Mackie, for example, described in 1924 one of the customary system in Al-Hasa. This systems deals with the distribution of the irrigation water between the farms. He said

‘The system of distribution is laid down by no written rules and regulations, but is the result of long years of experience and custom, and no one would now venture to make any change in the existing system without the consent of a very large majority of the people likely to be affected ... There are no officials maintained for this work, which is done solely by the people themselves, nor does there exist any law other than custom which can impose punishment on any person or persons who attempt to break the customary rotation.’⁵

This reflects the main system by which people developed their own rules and regulations to solve the disputes that occurred between people in the built environment (Fig.a.2.3).

As we mentioned earlier, the traditional social system in Hofuf had its unique characteristics. The old city was divided into three main quarters. Each one of them was also divided into several *fereejis*. This system was developed due to the three hierarchical levels of relationships that existed in the city.⁶ At the bottom level we find the family relationship.



Fig. A.2.3: One farmer in Al-Hasa trying to irrigate his farm. Source: Field work

⁴Gibb, H. & Bowen, H. (1950) Islamic Society and the West: A study of the Impact of Western Civilization on Moslem Culture in the Near East, Oxford, Oxford University Press. Vol. 1, p. 278.

⁵Mackie (1924), Op. Cit., pp. 204-205.

⁶For more detail, see Chapter VI.

This included the single extended family which is mainly one household or living in a house with his married sons. In the intermediate level, we find the extended family which mainly consisted of a group of single and single-extended families from the same tribe living together in the same *fereej*. The communal level was wider and regulates the relationships between different *fereej*s inside the quarter and between the quarters.

People in fact had certain control over their territories. For example, each family or group of families controlled part of the old quarters (*fereej*). Strangers could not pass easily through these areas without inspection. The three quarters were controlled by the governor who lived in the *Alkut* quarter. This system was developed later on by creating the *Umda* whose work was mainly similar to the *shiekh*. The *Umda* was the representative of the governor in each quarter.

The *Umda* system has continued until today but it is now very weak. This is because government has developed several institutions to deal with people. Also the concept of isolated settlements has completely disappeared. What is important for this study is to understand the life pattern in Hofuf and how it changed over time. In the following discussion we will try to reconstruct a picture of the daily life in Hofuf in its traditional and subsequent periods.

A.2.1 MARRIAGE RITUALS

Participation and co-operation amongst family members can be seen physically, symbolically, and financially on a number of occasions, such as marriages and funerals. For example, the marriage ceremony in traditional Hofuf was one of the most important occasions expressing inter-family cohesiveness. There were several conventions established for the celebration of marriage in the city of Hofuf to express shared values and images. The first step in the marriage was the engagement, where the father of the husband-to-be talked to the father of the wife-to-be. The engagement and the *mulkah* were done secretly. After the engagement the girl disappeared from the sight of men and women, including her family members, until the day of the marriage celebration.

The second step was *almahr* or *aljahaz*, money and items given by the bridegroom to the bride so that she could prepare herself for the marriage. In most cases, the husband would send some clothing and jewellery to the wife one night before the marriage celebration. This night was called *lilat alhaflah*. Also, he would present a wooden box containing his clothes and the gift, called *assibaha*, which he would present to his wife on the morning of the first day of the marriage. The relatives and friends of the husband would assist him and give him many presents, called *al'aniyyah*, to cover the marriage expenses.

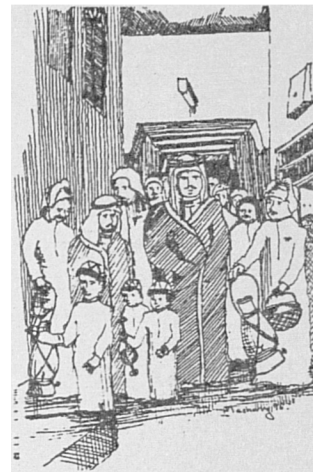


Fig.A.2.4: *lilat atteeb*.

The day of the celebration is called *yوم alghasoul*, when the father of the bridegroom would invite some relative to accompany his son to one of the springs in the oasis for a swim. They would spend the whole day and come back before night. On their way back the husband would usually be mounted on a horse and his friends and relatives around him would sing and celebrate. This procedure would inform others about the occasion and would invite them to share the celebration, because there was no specific invitation to the marriage. At night, people gathered in the husband's house. They called this gathering *lilat atteeb*, the night of perfume (Fig.a.2.4). People greeted the bridegroom's family and drank coffee, after which they passed the perfume pots, *marsh al'eter* (the perfume pot), and *almebkhar* (the pot of frankincense) to each other. All these people made up an escort for the husband when he walked from his house to the house of his bride's family.

A.2.2 RAMADAN RITUALS

Ramadan, the fasting month, played an important role in developing several conventions in the area. People used Ramadan to express their shared values and views and reflect their social identity. The day before Ramadan was called *yوم al-qarsh*. The name of this day maybe refers to expenditure on buying foodstuff of Ramadan. However, this day is considered a very important occasion for the whole of society until the present. All family members and relatives gathered in the farms and spent all day celebrating the arrival of Ramadan. This occasion has continued until today, but now most of the family members gathered at home and have a lunch together.

In the past, Ramadan was divided into three parts; each part containing ten days characterised by a specific activities. The first part was called *'ashrat aljazar*, this name referred to the

type of food in those days which was made from meat. Because the people in the past had no refrigerator, they ate the meat they bought for Ramadan in the first ten days. However, they used to store the meat for long time by a process called *algafra*, where the meat was mixed with salt and exposed to the air until dry. The problem in Ramadan is that *algafra* is not preferred because of the salt, which means that people need to drink a lot of water especially in extreme heat. Therefore, in the first ten days people consumed the meat they had. This part was an occasion for the people to eat meat daily because in the rest of the year they ate meat weekly or may be monthly.

The second part was called *a'shrat albazaz*, where the people prepared themselves for the *Eid* occasion by buying their cloths. The last part was *a'shrat alkhyat*, where the people sewed their clothes for the *Eid*. However, these parts of Ramadan were strongly influenced by the economical and technological changes that happened in city. For example, the first part is now completely missing because every family nows owns a refrigerator to freeze their meat. Moreover, the improvemnet of the economical conditions of the families enables them to buy their requirements every day. The availability of the food in the nearby superstores has changed these conventions. However, the other two parts still exist but the distinction is now blurred. In the past buying new clothes considered an occasion; thus, people celebrated this occasion in Ramadan. Now, the meaning of this occasion has been lost because people buy new clothes all the time, not only in Ramadan.

Although the social transformations has changed the conventions that were established for celebrating Ramadan, people still consider Ramadan the month of worship. They express the meaning of worship by co-operation with each other and helping the poor. Moreover, a new convention has developed regarding the type of food in Ramadan. Now the families prepare several dishes and exchange these dishes with other families.

On Ramadan nights, people tend to spend part of the night in worship and then they gather in groups and each group sit and spends the rest of the night listening to historical stories. In the *suhoor* time there was a person responsible for informing people about the *suhoor*. This person was called *bu tbaila*, the name coming from the drum he used (Fig.a.2.5).



Fig. A.2.5: *Bu tbaila*.

Bu tbaila always passes a cross all the city quarters and sing. Many children follow him and repeat his songs. However, this institution existed until the late 1970s. Unfortunately, the intensive intra urban migration from the old Hofuf into the new suburbs and the introduction of the television in each house caused this institution to disappear.

Another important occasion performed in the middle of Ramadan was called *al-girgai'an*. This occasion is for the children to celebrate. The children were divided into groups and each child hangs a carrier, made from clothes, on his/her shoulders or around his/her neck. The children pass by the houses from the morning until afternoon. They knock the doors and sing a well-known song for this occasion to ask the household for nuts and candies. Nowadays this occasion and its name still exist but take a different form. Children no longer pass by the houses and instead the nuts and candies are distributed between families in the middle of Ramadan (Fig. a 2.6).

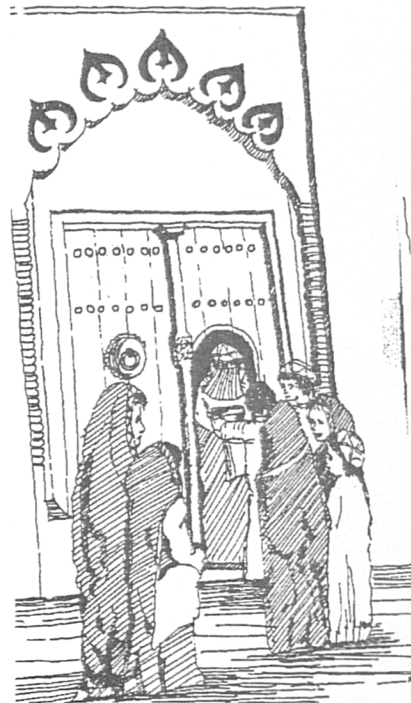


Fig. A.2.6: A number of children singing and asking for nuts in *al-girgai'an*.

A.2.3 EID RITUALS

In Islam there are two *Eids*. The first one is *Eid Al-Fetr*, which comes after Ramadan. The second one is *Eid Al-Adhha*, which comes after the day of Haj. Each society has established its own conventions regarding the celebration of *Eids*. In addition to preparing the house for this occasion, people of Hofuf pay more attention to the spaces and the objects that the visitors will see and use. For example, the furniture of the *majlis*, the men's reception space in the traditional houses, is cleaned, especially the coffee pots. After the *Eid* prayer, the family members gather in the house of the oldest or prominent person in the family to drink the coffee and have their breakfast. Then they move as one group or divided into sub groups to greet other families and relatives in the same quarter. In this context, people tend to leave their house doors open to express hospitality and welcoming to the visitors. In fact there was a specific custom of communal visiting in traditional Hofuf. In the first day the families in

each quarter greeted each other. For example, the northern *fereej*s in *Alkut* visited the southern ones. In the second day, the inhabitant of *Arrif'a*, *Anna'athil*, and *Assalhiyyah* visited the inhabitant of *Alkut*. In the third day the inhabitants of *Alkut* returned the visit.

A.3 CHANGE IN THE DAILY LIFE

As we noticed, the society of Hofuf was distinguished by its deep conventions that developed over centuries. Most of these conventions were related to religious and social rituals. These conventions enhanced the sense of belonging of the society members to the whole group and linked them with the place. However, what happened in Saudi Arabia in general and Hofuf in particular in the second half of this century was a radical change. This drastic change influenced every aspect of life.

The question is why this change occurred. As has been mentioned earlier, the economic growth of Saudi Arabia encouraged the government to modernise the Saudi cities. In reality, this desire was neither properly planned nor was it realistic in term of human resources and the way of living that people had. This is because there was a need to make rapid changes. Jarbawi supports this view when he states that:

‘The desire to modernize as quickly as possible forced the Arab to borrow the products of Westernization without taking its values or understanding its way of life. Arabs would take the West’s technology and know-how, import its machines and consumer goods, copy its style, imitate some of its most superficial ways, but when it comes to the fundamental issue of values and attitudes they would mostly balk and resist.’⁷

He added that the western influence affects the political and social institutions, but ‘their greatest impact is on cities, buildings, roads, and style of life’.⁸

This change remained in the physical forms rather than the core values of the society. The rapid change and the desire to modernise the Saudi cities coupled with the conservative nature of Saudi society to limit the impact of the changes to lifestyle and behaviour rather than to values and attitudes. Al-Suba’ee argues that the changes that Saudi Arabia experienced in the second half of the twentieth century brought about a new lifestyle to Al-Hasa society, and the people of the area adopted these changes. However, the system of

⁷ Jarbawi (1981), Op. Cit., p.1 99.

⁸ Ibid., p. 205.

values is continued and the changes in these values were very slight and can not compare to the changes in the physical features.⁹

To understand how and why the society of Hofuf had changed, it is important to construct spatio-temporal images for main traditions and rituals in the society. However, this dissertation tries to present some highlights about the change of life pattern in the city, especially those changes which are related to the home environment. The main questions that this part tries to answer are how people resist the change and by which means they have done that in their home environment.

In general, we have four main factors that encouraged social change in Saudi Arabia in general and Hofuf in particular. These factors are economic development, formal education, technology, and communication. The responses of people to these factors influenced daily life and changed the whole structure of the traditional community in Hofuf. This is not to say that society in Hofuf has completely changed its old traditions, but that the old life pattern was changed. A large or small part of old traditions may be continued but they are associated with new forms and activities.

A.3.1 IMPACT OF ECONOMY

Despite the physical change in Hofuf that took place early this century in the *Assalhiyyah* neighbourhood, social transformation started with the discovery and exporting of oil in 1938. However, the radical and rapid transformation occurred in the second half of this century after the increase in the oil revenue in the first oil boom. The impact of economic development on the family took place very early. Hamdan highlights the conversion of society to consumerism. He said the 'family is not a production unit for food any more, as this has been transferred to other agencies in the society'. Moreover, the family members adapted themselves to work outside the family domain. The monthly income has changed the living patterns. In that sense, 'many people left their home areas looking for a better way of living in cities where industries and employment opportunities are available'.¹⁰

A.3.2 IMPACT OF EDUCATION

One of the most important developments that accompanied the economic prosperity was educational development. Before 1950, education in Saudi Arabia was very poor and depended on the traditional way except for a few schools which had been established by particular people. Official education started in the second half of this century and many

⁹ Al-Suba'ee, A. (1988), Op. Cit., pp.48-49.

¹⁰ Hamdan, (1990), Op. Cit., p. 22.

schools and universities were established. Families were encouraged to educate their children due to the increase of their income.

When formal education started there were no Saudi teachers. This encouraged the government to provide teachers from the neighbouring Arab countries, especially from Egypt, Syria and Jordan. Although those teachers shared many religious values and conventions with Saudi society, they had been exposed to western culture for a long time and passed by the direct interactions with material culture of the West. In that sense, those teachers brought with them new forms of lifestyle and transmitted these forms to their students either directly or indirectly.

The educational system that developed in Saudi Arabia is strongly influenced by the Islamic religious values both in the segregation of male and female in all educational levels and in the curriculum which concentrate on religious education as well as the modern sciences. This established a balance between the radical social change that took place in Hofuf and the religious values that the whole society respects. People resisted any change that may occur to the religion.

Another consequence of formal education was the education of women. This encouraged women, for the first time, to spend a long time outside the home. This was prohibited in traditional society because there was a belief that the real role of the women is in her home and they were proud that a woman would stay in her home until she went to her grave. Nevertheless, education of women is not the end because they need a job and ways of spending the money earned. The interaction with female society encouraged women to use their private income to express themselves and their social status through dress and other things.¹¹ The social role in the family is completely changed. In the past the women did all the house work while in the present time the man shares with the woman in some house work and takes care of children in many cases.

The work of women outside the home forced many families to have a home maid or nanny to replace the role of the women in the children's nursery and other house work. This situation has developed at the present time as a tool to express social status. This increased the change in social roles in the Saudi family and brought about a new way of living for women.

¹¹ See Chapter IX to understand how the work of women encouraged the appearance of women's *majlis* in the contemporary house in Hofuf.

A.3.3 IMPACT OF TECHNOLOGY

Any traditional society has its own lifestyle. This lifestyle was developed through time to be compatible with the limited technological abilities of that society. However, when traditional society is exposed to modern technology, several changes will occur to the behaviour of its members and new mechanisms will be used to express the individual and social identity. As Lomax and Berkowitz states

‘Each stage of technological development produces a syndrome of communication and organization that is, in its setting, a unique and ideal adaptive pattern. Each new combination of the basic structural factors with the other, less determined, factors gives rise to a new life-style.’¹²

The introduction of new technology to Hofuf had great effect on the people’s daily life. For example, many industrial projects were constructed in 1954 in Dammam and Khobar including furniture, soft drink products, bakeries, etc.,. Most of these projects encouraged the consumption habits in the Saudi families. However, the most important early industry was cement in 1960, which encouraged the change of house types.¹³ Moreover, by 1955, a water supply system was introduced to Hofuf and gradually replaced the old system that depends on private wells inside the house, or public wells in the quarters. In 1957, the electricity services had already served many houses in Hofuf and changed many habits in using the spaces inside and outside the houses.¹⁴

The Saudi family was exposed to new technology intensively in the second half of this century. The economic ability of the family to own several modern installations, especially in the kitchen, increased. The concept of kitchen changed from a place that held a dirty function to a place exposed to family members, and maybe to the visitors. Therefore, we can argue that the new technology in Saudi Arabia concentrates on the house and ‘contributes in changing the situation of the Saudi women particularly.’¹⁵ In conclusion, the imported technology changed the home environment either at the urban level or at the house level.

A.3.3 IMPACT OF COMMUNICATION

The contemporary communication system changed most of the local characteristics of the traditional societies. At present there are no isolated societies. Morely and Robins argue that

¹² Lomax, A. with Berkowitz, N. (1973), Op. Cit., p. 84.

¹³ Al-Subai’ee, A. (1987) *Oil Discovery and its Impact on the Economic Life in the Eastern Province (1933-1960)*, No publisher, p. 200.

¹⁴ *Ibid.*, pp. 182-185.

¹⁵ Hamdan, S. (1990), Op. Cit., p. 37.

'There is ... an expansionist tendency at work, pushing ceaselessly towards the construction of enlarged audiovisual spaces and markets. The imperative is to break down the old boundaries and frontiers of national communities ... Audiovisual geographies are thus becoming detached from the symbolic spaces of national culture, and realigned on the basis of the more 'universal' principles of international consumer culture'.¹⁶

The early impact of communication can be seen from the movies which were presented on the TV. In Hofuf, all the Gulf countries' TVs were received which widen the impact of different ways of living on people's life. At the house level, people had been inspired by the new house image and types and arrangements of furniture. In the interviews with middle age people (40 -50 years), they mentioned that they were inspired by the villas that appeared in the Egyptian movies in the 1950's and 60's. One of them had said that the picture of the stair in the middle of the living room remained in his mind until he applied it in his house.

A.4 TRANSFORMATION OF THE SOCIAL INSTITUTIONS IN HOFUF

As has been mentioned earlier, visiting and gathering in traditional Hofuf had their rituals. These rituals were linked to the physical and social characteristics of old Hofuf. For example, most of the prominent *hamolas* had their own visiting rituals. These were limited to the members of these *hamolas* only. Most of the *hamolas* had a weekly meeting, usually after the Friday prayer. Members of the family gathered in the head of the family's house without an invitation. Some families had a daily meeting, especially between *Magreb* and *Isha* prayers.

In fact the above rituals continued in Hofuf in several forms. The first form is that most of the *hamolas* in Hofuf established common *majlises* to be used by every family member. These *majlises* carry the name of the family and became well known in Hofuf in recent times. They have been found in the last two decades to overcome the urban dispersed which make people live far from each other. It is now a convention in Hofuf that people visit each other on occasions (such as *Eid* celebration, marriage, funerals) in their family *majlis* rather than in their private homes.

¹⁶ Morely and Robins (1995), Op. Cit, p. 11

The second form of continuity of the visiting rituals is that some people have continued to open their *majlises* in their new private homes. The researcher visited several people in their *majlises*. Some of them have daily *majlis* while the other have weekly *majlis*. Also, some of them have kept the old tradition of receiving guests early in the morning (after *Fajer* prayer).



Fig. A.2.7: Men of the same *hamola* meet every Friday in a farm in Hofuf. Source: Field work.

Different from the family *majlises*, these opened *majlises* are very small and limited to specific people from the same family. This is not to say that other people are not welcomed, but to say that they were developed initially to bind the extended family which faced many changes in the last four decades.

The last form of continuity of the visiting rituals is a traditional form which is the daily meeting of the *hamola* members in the prominent people's *majlises* between *Magreb* and *Isha* prayers. This continuity is very limited to one or two *hamolas*. In fact, this ritual is now facing many changes because the number of the *hamola* members is increasing, which may force people in the near future to find another way to meet.

Maybe the beginning of change in this form of visiting has started already by transferring the daily meeting to the farms rather the houses (Fig.a.2.7). In fact, meeting in the farms is an old convention in Hofuf, but it was mainly for entertainment and irregular. This phenomenon was used to express the social status. People who gathered in farms call this gathering 'tea *majlis*'. In most cases, wealthy people who owned farms held these *majlises*. They may have permitted other people to join them or they may have restricted them to the *hamola* members, especially if the *hamola* was large enough. In these *majlises*, people discussed many matters and recited poems and recalled some of the past events. Also, some of them were used as daily religious courses for the family members.

We mentioned that old people in the traditional home environment sit on *dakas* near their houses. This convention is considered one of the most important to indicate how people persist on their old traditions in the external home environment. In fact one of the main observations that helped the researcher understand the external social features of the home environment in Hofuf is the discussion with old people who gather and sit in front of their houses (Fig.a.2.8).

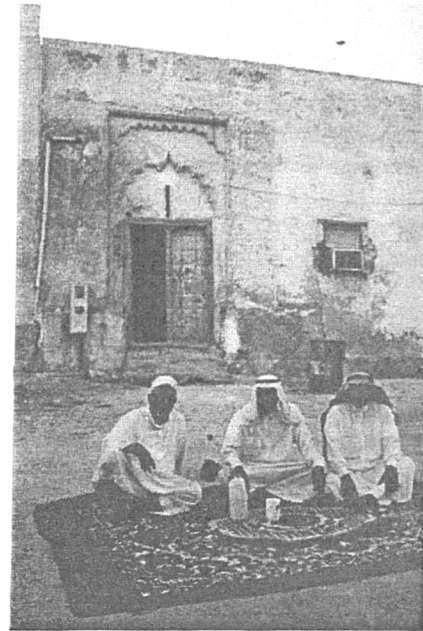


Fig. A.2.8: Old people still gather in the traditional areas.
Source: Fieldwork.

One notable factor is that people who still live in the traditional areas gather on specific areas known by most of the old people who live, or used to live, in these areas. From the frequent visits to these areas, the researcher found that the same people gather every day in the same place, usually occupying the same place in the group. Some of them have already left the area but they still like to gather with their old friends. This observation was repeated in those settlements which had been constructed in the 1940's and 50's by local people who moved from the old city (Fig.a.2.9).

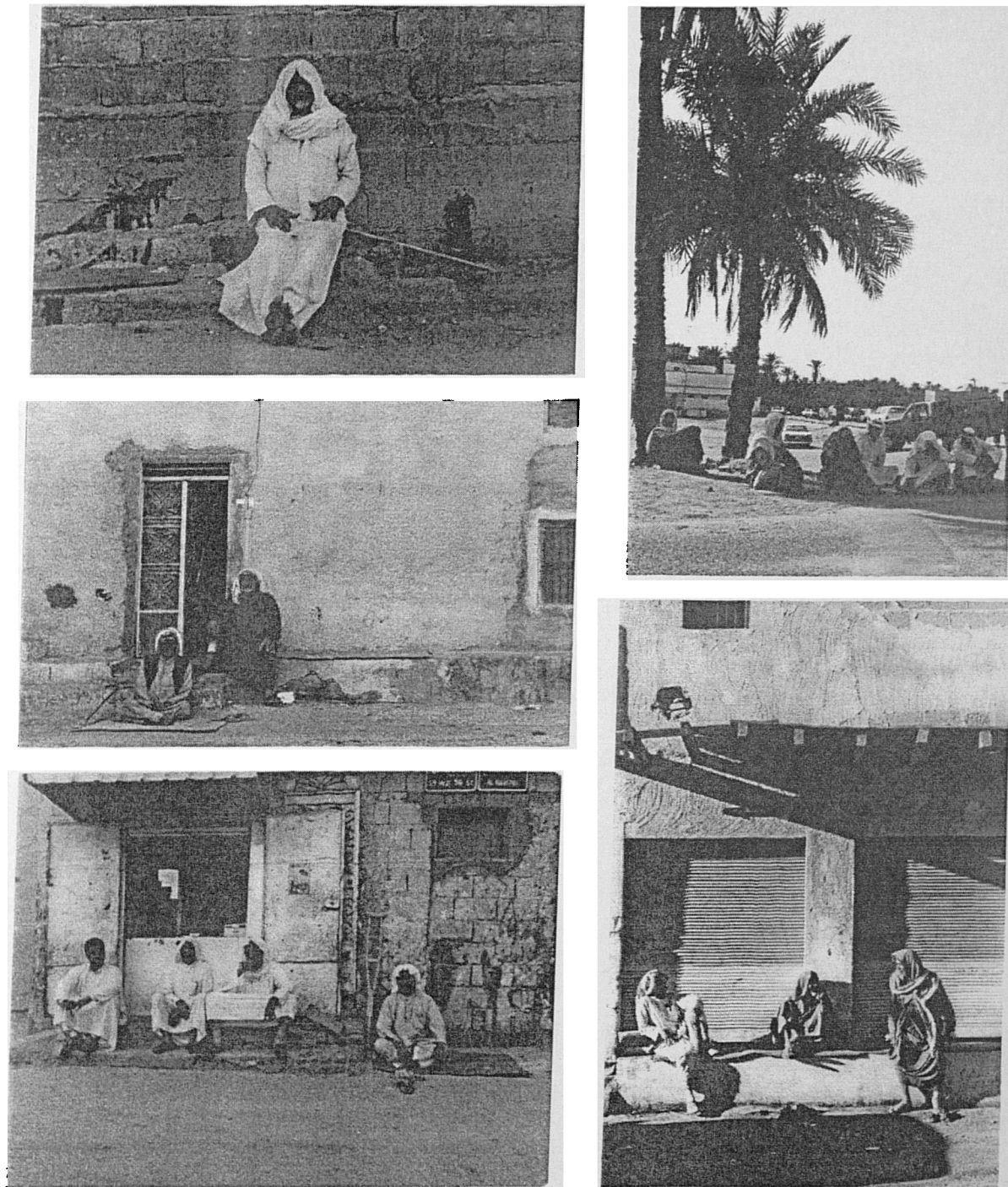


Fig. A.2.9: Old people gathering. Source: Field work

This phenomenon continues in the contemporary home environment in Hofuf. However, it was expected that people who have no open *majlises* would meet and gather as they used to do in their traditional or hybrid environment. In fact, the researcher found that many people who moved to the new settlements, such as *Alwesaitah*, *Alkhaldiyyah*, and *Assalmaniyyah*, preferred to sit in front of their houses, especially at the gate of the house. Maybe the design

of the gate, which provides a large space similar to the *daka* has encouraged people to set and entertain in the afternoon in the fresh air. Two or three old men, in some cases, gather and have a chat all afternoon.

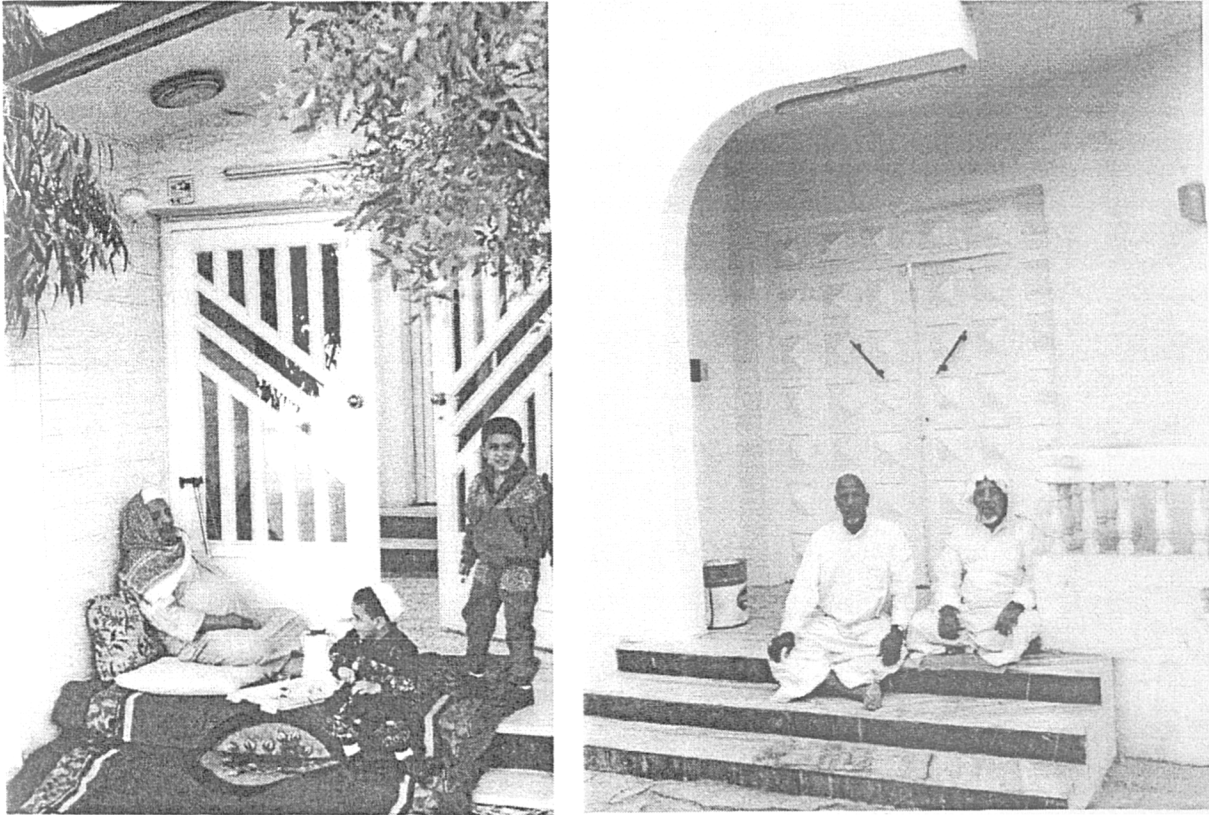


Fig. A.2. 10: Old men used his villa gate as setting area. Source: Field work

Appendix III

POPULATION GROWTH OF HOFUF

Table A.3.1: Population growth of Hofuf (1819-1995)

Year	Population	Reference
1819	15,000	Sadleir, G.F. (1866), Op. Cit., p. 72.
1865	24,000	Palgrave, W.G. (1865), Op. Cit., p. 149.
1908	25,000	Lorimer, J. C. (1908), Op. Cit., p. 664.
1924	30,000	Makie, J.B. (1924), Op. Cit., p. 195.
1935	50,000	Al-Shuaibi, A. M. (1976), Op. Cit., p. 223.
1951	55,000	Ibid., p. 223
1955	60,000	Vidal, F. S. (1955), Op. Cit., p. 17.
1962	80,000	Albert N. Abdo 'Marketing Channels, Practices and Facilities', p. 17 (Cited in Al-Shuaibi, A. M. (1976), Op. Cit., p. 222.
1974	106,971	Central Department of Statistics, Population Census (1977).
1981	143,520	Anderson, G. (1984), Op. Cit., p. 315.
1983	175,000	Ibid., p. 242.
1993	225,847	Department of Statistic, Ministry of Finance and National Economy, Population Census , p. 10.
1995	228,5000- 244,000	Ministry of Municipal and Rural Affairs, Final Draft of Al-Hassa Master Plan (1996), First Report (Basic Data), Vol. II, p. 2-7.

EXAMPLES OF THE IN-DEPTH COMBINED TECHNIQUE

In this study we used combined technique (for each in-depth case study) consists of measuring floor plans and discussing the use of internal space with the owner. Preparing the drawing before interview was initial for this technique.

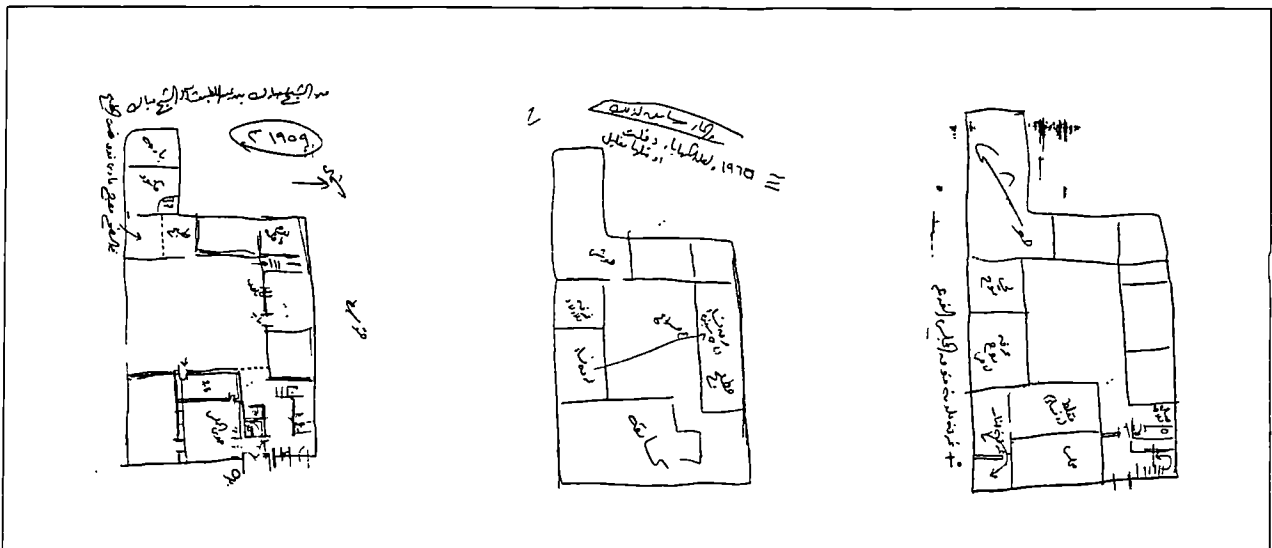


Fig. A.5.1: Sketches by the interviewee showing the transformation of his house in *Assalhiyyah*. The interviewee used the drawing of the existing house which was prepared by the researcher to reconstruct the changes that the house passed through.

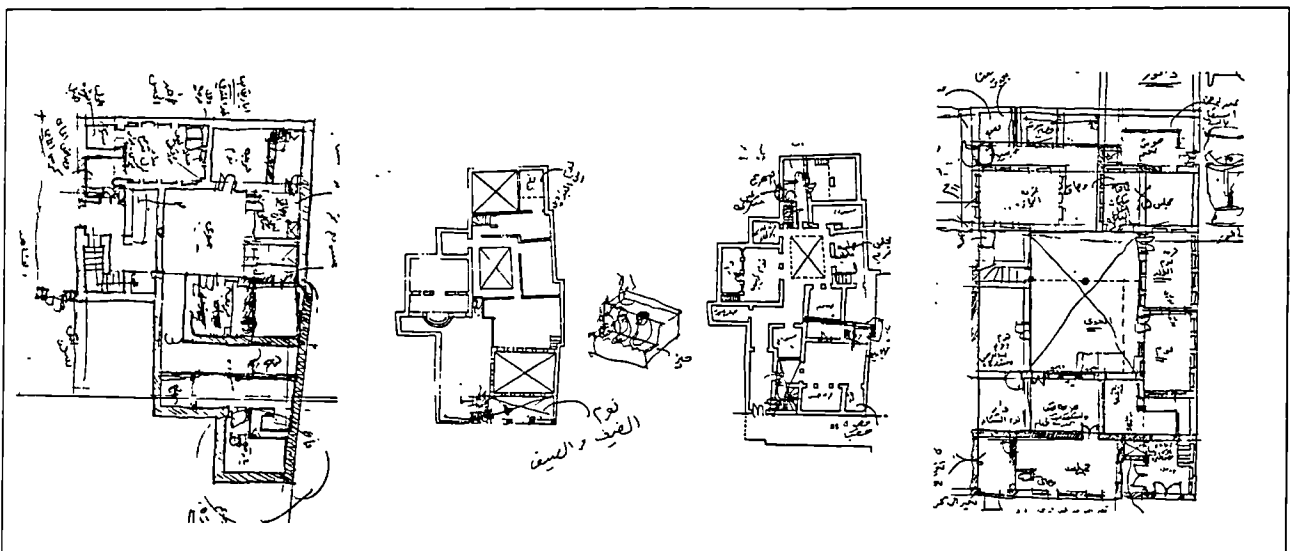


Fig. A.5.2: Examples of documenting the data on the floor plan.

Appendix VI

THE ISSUE OF IDENTITY AND HOME ENVIRONMENT IN THE LOCAL NEWSPAPERS

وجهة نظر
مشاري عبدالله التميمي

الهوية العمرانية.. ذلك الجوهل
Public participation in the formation of the home environment (No. 10678).

البيئة العمرانية.. حوار حول المستقبل
Architectural identity (No. 10797)

وجهة نظر
مشاري عبدالله التميمي

السياسات العمرانية مشكلة المخطوم.. أم التخطيط
Built environment (No. 10902)

وجهة نظر
مشاري عبدالله التميمي

السياسات العمرانية مشكلة المخطوم.. أم التخطيط
Architectural policies (No. 10972)

Fig. A.6.1: A number of articles written by the researcher in Al-Riyadh newspaper (between 17-9-97 and 9-7-98).

تجزيرات من التقريب، في بناء المدن العربية
Westernisation of Arabic city (about the city of Riyadh) (Asharq Al-Awsat, No. 5882)

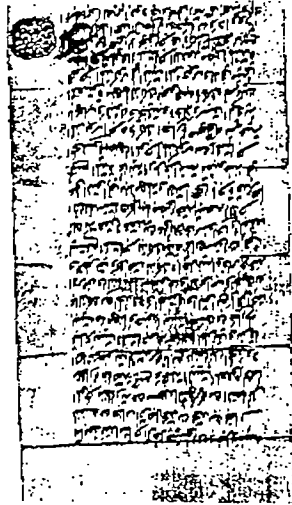
مخططات مستوردة وكل أسمنت: بناينا الحاضرة بالخصية عملية
Issue: our contemporary buildings have no identity. (Al-Youm, No. 8698)

الرياض العمران قضية تصاميم هائلة: المعمار يوا
The issue of designing our houses. (Al-Riyadh, No. 10699)

Fig. A.6.2: The issue of identity and home environment in the local newspapers.

REFERENCES

Historical document from traditional Hofuf



REFERENCES

- Aba Al-Khail, A.** (1988) 'The Quran and Sunnah, the Basis of Interpretation of the Arabic House and Mosque Architecture', Albenaa, Vol. 8, No. 43 (Septemper-October), pp. 3-7.
- Abdulla, S.** (1994) 'Arabic Coffee: Conventions and traditions', Al-Mathorat Al-Sh'abiyah, Qatar, Vol. 9, No. 35, pp. 7-20 (Arabic).
- Abercrombie, T.** (1966), "Saudi Arabia Beyond the Sands of Mecca", National Geographic, Vol. 129, No. 1, pp1-53.
- Abecrombie, S.** (1975) 'The Middle East: Design, Politics and Policy', Design and Environment, Vol. 7, No. 4, pp. 11-13.
- Abercrombie, N. et al** (1994) The Penguin Dictionary of Sociology London, Penguin Group.
- Abul Ela, M. T.** (1959) A Geographical Study of Man and his Environment in Al Ahsa Province (Saudi Arabia), Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, Dublin, Trinity College.
- Abu-Ghazze, T.** (1997) 'Vernacular Architecture Education in the Islamic Society of Saudi Arabia: Towards the Development of an Authentic Contemporary Built Environment', Habitat Int., Vol. 21, No. 2, pp. 229-253.
- Abu-Ghazze, T.** (1997) 'The Dialectic Dimensions of Homes as an Expression of Identity and Communality in Amman, Jordan', Housing Studies, Vol. 12, No. 2, pp. 247-63.
- Abu-Lughod, J.** (1972) 'Migrant Adjustment to City Life: The Egyptian Case', In Gerald Breese (ed) The City in Newly Developing Countries, London, Printice Hall International Inc., pp. 376-388.
- Akbar, J.** (1988) Crisis in the Built Environment: The Case of the Muslim City, Singapore, Concept Media.
- Al-Abdulgader, M.** (1960) The History of Al-Hasa, Al-Hasa, Mktabat Al-Ahsa.
- Al-Akkad, A. A.** (1974) Socio-Economic Impact of Development Schemes on a Rural Community, Al Umran Al-Shimaliyah, Al-Hasa Oasis, Saudi Arabia, Unpublished M.Sc., Bangor, University of North Wales.
- Alangari, A.** (1996) The Revival of the Architectural Identity: The City of Arriyadh, Unpublished PhD Thesis, Edinburgh, University of Edinburgh.

- Al-Baker, M. M.** (1995) Arabic Coffee in Folklore, Beirut, Lebanon, Besan. (Arabic)
- Al-Elawy, I. S.** (1976) The Influence of Oil Upon Settlement in Al-Hasa Oasis, Saudi Arabia, Unpublished Ph.D., Durham, University of Durham.
- Al-Gabbani, M.** (1984) Community Structure, Residential Satisfaction, and Preferences in a Rapidly Changing Urban Environment: The Case of Riyadh, Saudi Arabia, Unpublished PhD, Michigan, University of Michigan.
- Al-Hamad, T.** (1988) 'Identity without Identity: Ourselves and Globalisation', a paper presented at the Conference on Globalisation, Cairo (April 1988). Published in Al-Youm (local newspaper), Nos. 9086, 9093, 9100, 9107 (between 1-5-98 and 22-5-98).
- Al-Harbi, T. H.** (1989) The Development of Housing in Jeddah: Changes in Built Form from the Traditional to the Modern, School of Architecture, University of Newcastle Upon Tyne.
- Al-Hathloul, S.** (1981) Tradition, Continuity, and Change in the Physical Environment: The Arab-Muslim City, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, MIT Cambridge.
- Al-Hathloul, Saleh & Anis-ur-Rahmaam** (1985) 'The Evolution of Urban and Regional Planning in Saudi Arabia', Ekistics, Vol. 52, No. 312 (May / June), pp. 206-212.
- Al-Hathloul, S. & Edadan, N.** 'Housing Stock Management Issues in the Kingdom of Saudi Arabia', Housing Studies, Vol. 7, No. 4.
- Al-Hathloul, S.** (1992) "Authentication of Modern Architecture", Al-Muhandis, Vol. 5, No. 2, pp. 46-7 (1412 H) (Arabic).
- Al-Hussayen, A.** (1996) Women and Built Environment: Case Studies: Ar-Riyadh and Ushaigir, Unpublished PhD Thesis, Edinburgh, University of Edinburgh.
- Ali, A. Y.** (1989) The Holy Qur'an Brentwood, Amana Corporation.
- Al-Khaldi, M.** 'The Role of Shopping Mall and the Satellite Channels in Spreading the Consumption culture', Al-Yaum (Arabic newspaper), No. 8692. (2/4/1997).
- Alkhars, S.** (1990) Community Structure and Residential Satisfaction in a Transitional Urban Environment: With the Emphasis on Residential Relocation. The Case Study of Al-Hasa, Unpublished Master Thesis, Dhahran, King Fahad University of Petroleum and Minerals.
- Al-Khrajji, S.** (1996) Master Plan of Al-Hasa, Ministry of Municipal and Rural Affairs. (Arabic).
- Al-Madina** (local newspaper), No. 12529.

Al-Mulla, A. (1990) History of Hajer, Al-Hasa, Maktabat Al-Ta'awin Al-Thaqafi. (Arabic).

Al-Musallam, A. (1995) Al-Hasa Traditional House: A Case Study of Al-Kut District, Special Work-Shop in Architectural Design (Unpublished), Dammam, King Faisal University.

Al-Naim, M. (1992) 'The Ideal House', Al-Iqtisad (Dammam, Saudi Arabia), No. 227 (April), pp. 56-61 (Arabic).

Al-Naim, M. (1993) Potentiality of the Traditional House: A Case Study of Hofuf, AlHasa, Unpublished MA Thesis, Dammam, King Faisal University.

Al-Naim, M. (1994) 'Lessons from the Traditional Built Environment: A Study of Assalhiyya Quarter in Hofuf, S.A.', Al Ma'thurat Al Sha'biyyah, Qatar, G.C.C. Folklore Centre, No. 33 (January), pp. 7-29, (Arabic).

Al-Naim, M. (1994) 'Mural Painting in Al-Hasa Traditional Houses', Al-Qafila, Vol. 43, N.7, pp. 40-43 (Arabic).

Al-Naim, M. (1995) 'The Furniture: Authenticity Vs Modernity', Al-Qafila, Vol.44, No. 7, pp. 24-28 (Arabic).

Al-Naim, M. (1996) 'The Impact of Social Change on the Intra-Urban Migration in the Saudi Cities: The Case of Hofuf', Addarah, Vol. 22, No. 1, pp. 179-214 (Arabic).

Al-Naim, M. (1996) 'The Palm in Decorative Engravings in Al-Hasa Region', Al Ma'thurat Al Sha'biyyah, Vol.11, No. 43 (July), pp. 7-19 (Arabic)

Al-Naim, M. (1996) 'Culture, History, and Architecture: Qasr Al-Hokm District in Riyadh', Ahlan Wasahlan, Saudi Arabian Airline Magazine, Vol. 20, No. 9, pp.12-17.

Al-Naim, M. (1997) 'Functional and Aesthetic Harmony in the Built Environment', Al-Qafila, Vol.46, No.1 (May), pp. 38-43 (Arabic).

Al-Naim, M. (1997) 'The Symbolic Function of the Arabic Coffee in Al-Hasa Region', Al-Qafilah, Vol. 46, No. 7 (December), pp. 11-16 (Arabic).

Al-Naim, M. (1998) 'Cultural Continuity: A Mechanism for Future Home Environments, Study of the Fereej System in Hofuf, Saudi Arabia', Paper presented in the 15th Inter-School Conference on Development, 29-31 March, Cardiff, University of Wales.

Al-Nowaiser M. A. (1983) The Role of Traditional and Modern Residential Urban Settlements on the Quality of Environmental Experience in Saudi Arabia: Unyzeah and New Alkabra in Alkaseem Region, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, California, University of Southern California.

Aloweid, A. M. (1991) An Evaluation of Urban Housing in the Kingdom of Saudi Arabia, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, Queensland (Australia), University of Queensland.

Al-Olet, A. A. (1991) Cultural Issues as an Approach to Forming and Managing the Future Neighbourhoods: Case Study: The Central Region of Saudi Arabia Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, University of Strathclyde.

Alp, A. (1990) The Architectural Heritage of Saudi Arabia's Eastern Province, Unpublished Report, Dhahran, King Fahad University of Petroleum & Minerals.

Al-Riyadh (local newspaper) Nos. 10370, 10412, 10678, 10699; 1706; 10713; 10720; 10727; 10741; 10755; 10776; 10790; 10797, 10902, 10972.

Al-Saati, A. J. (1987) Residents Satisfaction in Subsidized Housing: An Evaluation Study of the Real Estate Development Fund Program in Saudi Arabia, Unpublished Doctoral Dissertation, University of Michigan.

Al-Saati, A. J. (1989) 'Housing Finance and residents' Satisfaction: the Case of real Estate Development Fund (REDF)', Open House International, Vol. 1, No. 2, pp. 33-41.

Al-Said, F. (1992) Territorial Behaviour and the Built Environment. The Case of Arab-Muslim Towns, Saudi Arabia, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, Glasgow, University of Glasgow

Al-Shahi, A. (1986) "'Welcome, my House is Yours" : Values Related to the Arab House', In A. Hyland & Ahmed Al-Shahi The Arab House, Proceedings of the Colloquium Held in the University of Newcastle Upon Tyne, 15/16 March 1984, pp. 25-32.

Al-Shayeb, A. (1985) Al-Jubail Saudi Village (Architectural Survey), Qatar, The Arab Gulf States Folklore Centre.

Al-Shuaibi, A. M. (1976) The Development of the Eastern Province with Particular Reference to Urban Settlements and Evolution in Eastern Saudi Arabia, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, Durham, University of Durham.

Al-Soliman, Tarik M. (1991) 'Societal Values and their Effect on the Built Environment in Saudi Arabia: A Recent Account.', Journal of Architectural and Planning Research, Vol. 8, No. 3, Autumn, pp. 235-255.

Al-Subai'ee, A. N. (1987) Oil Discovery and its Impact on the Social Life of Eastern Province (1930-1960). (Arabic)

Al-Subai'ee, A. N. (1987) Oil Discovery and its Impact on the Economical Life of the Eastern Province (1930-1960). (Arabic)

Altman, I. (1975) The Environment and Social Behavior: Privacy, Personal Space, Territory, Crowding, California, Brooks/Cole Publishing Company.

Altman, I. & Gauvain, M. (1981) 'A Cross-Cultural and Dialectic Analysis of Homes', In L. Liben et al. (Eds) Spatial Representation and Behavior A Cross the Life Span: Theory and Application, New York, Academic Press, pp. 283-320.

Altman, I. & Chemers, M. M. (1980) Culture and Environment, Monterey, CA, Brooks-Cole.

Altman, I. & Werner, C. (Eds) (1985) Home Environments: Human Behaviour and Environment, Volume 8, New York, Plenum Press.

Al-Yaum (Arabic newspaper) , Nos., 8664; 8698, 9016.

American Heritage Dictionary (1991).

Anderson, G. (1984) differential Urban Growth in the Eastern Province of Saudi Arabia: A Study of the Historical Interaction of Economic Development and Socio-Political Change, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, Baltimore, Maryland, University of John Hopkins.

Arias, E. (1993) The Meaning and Use of Housing, Aldershot, Avebury.

Asharq Al Awsat (Arabic newspaper), No. 5882.

Assah, A. (1969) Miracle of the Desert Kingdom, London, Johnson Publications Ltd.

Assyasa (Kuwaiti Newspaper) (6-2-1983).

Assimeng, M. (1978) 'Crisis, Identity, and Integration in Africa', In Hans Mol (Ed) Identity and Religion: International, Cross-Cultural Approaches, London, SAGE Publication Ltd, pp. 97-118.

Babad, E., Birnbaum, M., & Benne, K. (1983) The Social Self: Group Influences On Personal Identity, London, Sage Publication.

Bahammam, A. (1992) An Exploration of the Residents' Modification: Private-Sector Low-Rise Contemporary Housing in Riyadh, Saudi Arabia, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis. Michigan, University of Michigan.

Ball, M. & Smith, G. (1992) Analyzing Visual Data Qualitative Research Methods Series 24, London, Sage Publications.

Bechtel, R. B. (1989) 'Behaviour in House: A Cross Cultural Comparasion Using Behaviour-Setting Methodology', In Low S. & Chamber E. Housing, Culture and Design ---A Comparative Perspective, Philadelphia, PA, University of Pennsylvania Press, pp. 164-187.

Benswessi, A.H. (1987) A Study of the Concept of Identity: Towards an Architecture as a Harmonious Identifiable Fabric, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, University of Pennsylvania, USA.

- Bernard, Y.** (1991) 'Evolution of Lifestyles and dwelling Practices in France', The Journal of Architectural and Planning Research, Vol. 8, No. 3, (Autumn), pp. 193-201.
- Bernard, Y.** (1993) 'Flexibility in the Usage of Dwelling', In Marjorie Bulos & Necdet Teymur (Eds) Housing: Design, Research, Education, England, Avebury.
- Bernarad, Y., Bonnes, M., and Giuliani, V.** (1993) 'The Interior Use of Home: Behavior Principles Across and within European Culture', In E. G. Arias The Meaning and Use of Housing Aldershot, Avebury, pp. 81-101.
- Bin-Bisher, O. A.**(1974/1394H) History of Najed, Saudi Arabia, Ministry of Education. (Arabic Text).
- Blee, M. J.** (1966) 'The Meeting: Man and Man-Made Object, Architectural Implications', In Gyorgy Kepes (ed) The Man Made Object, New York, George Braziller, pp. 76-89.
- Bloom, W.** (1990) Personal Identity, National Identity and International Relations, Cambridge, Cambridge University Press.
- Boon, J.** (1982) 'The Modern Saudi Villa: Its Cause and Effect' , American Journal for Science and Engineering, Vol. 7, No. 2, pp. 132-143.
- Boulding, E.** (1973) 'The Family as an Agent of Social Change', Ekistics, Vol. 35, No. 210 (may) pp. 307-311.
- Bourassa, S.** (1991) The Aesthetics of Landscape London, Belhaven Press.
- Broady, Maurice** (1966) 'Social Theory in Architectural Design', Arena-The Architectural Association Journal, 81, (January), pp. 149-154.
- Broadbent, G., Bunt, R. & Jencks, C.** (1980) Signs, Symbols, and Architecture Chichester, John Wiley & Sons.
- Brunskill, R.** (1971) Illustrated Handbook of Vernacular Architecture London, Faber and Faber.
- Candilis** (1976) Master Plan of Al-Hasa, Ministry of Municipal and Rural Affairs.
- Celik, Zeynep** (1984) The Impact of Westernization on Istanbul's Urban Form, 1838-1908, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, Berkeley, University of California.
- Chadirji, R.** (1995) 'Criticising the Architectural Trends in the Eastern Arabic World', Paper presented in the workshop of 'Theory and Practice Conflict in the Traditional Architecture', ((16-18 January), Bahrain (Arabic).
- Chadirji, R.** (1995) Dialogue on the Structure of Art and Architecture, London, Riad El-Rayyes, p. 98. (Arabic).

- Cheesman, O. B. E.** (1926) In Unknown Arabia, London, Macmillan and Co., Limited.
- Cooper, C.** (1972) 'The House as Symbol of Self', Design and Environment, No. 3, pp. 30-37.
- Costello, V. F.** (1977) Urbanization in the Middle East, Cambridge, Cambridge University Press.
- Cowell, F. R.** (1970) Values in Human Society USA, An Extending Horizons Book.
- Csikszentmihalyi, M. & Rochberg-Halton, E.** (1981) The Meaning of Things: Domestic System and the Self Cambridge, Cambridge University Press.
- Dalley, K.** (1976) 'The Current State of Play in Saudi Arabia', RIBAJ, May, p. 166.
- Daniel N.** (1971) 'Westernisation in the Arab World' in Michael A. The Middle East, London, Anthony Blond, pp. 516-25.
- Despres, C.** (1991) 'The Meaning of Home: Literature Review and Directions for Future Research and Theoretical Development', The Journal of Architectural and Planning Research, Vol. 8, No. 2 (Summer), pp. 96-115.
- Dodd, P.** (1973) 'Family Honor and the Forces of Change in Arab Society', International Journal of Middle East Studies, No. 4, pp. 40-54.
- Douglas, M.** (1972) 'Symbolism Orders in the Use of Domestic Space' In Ucko, P., Tringham, R. and Dimbleby, G. W. Man, Settlement and Urbanism, England, Duckworth Co. Ltd., pp. 513-21.
- Dovey, K.** (1985) 'Home and Homelessness', In I. Altman and C. M. Werner (Eds) Home Environment New York, Plenum Press, pp. 33-64.
- Doxiadis Associates** (1977) 'Formulating a Housing Program for Saudi Arabia', Ekistics, Vol. 44, No. 261, pp. 105-8.
- Doyal, L. & Gough, I.** (1991) A Theory of Human Need, London, Macmillan.
- Duncan, J.** (1981) (Ed) Housing and Identity Cross-Cultural Perspectives, London, Croom Helm Ltd.
- Duncan, J.** (1981) 'From Container of Women to Status Symbol: the Impact of Social Structure on the Meaning of the House', in James S. Duncan (Ed) Housing and Identity Cross-Cultural Perspectives, London, Croom Helm Ltd, pp. 36-59.
- Duncan, J.** (1985) 'The House as Symbol of Social Structure', In Irwin Altman & Carol M. Werner, Home Environments, New York, A Division of Plenum Publishing Corporation, pp. 133-151.

Earls, M. (1989) Architecture: The Sources of the Traditional Architecture of the Eastern Province of Saudi Arabia, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, Newcastle Upon Tyne, University of Newcastle Upon Tyne.

Eco, U. (1980) 'Function and sign: The Semiotics of Architecture', In G. Broadbent, R. Bunt and J. Charles (Eds) Signs, Symbols and Architecture, Chichester: John Wiley & Sons, pp. 11-69.

Eisenstadt, N. (1966) Modernisation: Protect and Change, Englewood Cliffs, N.J., Prentice-Hall.

Erikson, E. (1980) Identity and the Life Cycle New York, W. W. Norton & Company (first published in 1959).

Facey, W. (1992), Riyadh the Old City: From its Origin Until the 1950s, London, Immel Publishing.

Facey, W. (1994) The Story of Eastern Province of Saudi Arabia, London, Stacy International, p. 74.

Fadaak, T. A. (1984) Urban Housing Policy Evaluation in the Kingdom of Saudi Arabia, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, USA, Portland State University.

Fadan, Y.M. (1983) The Development of Contemporary Housing in Saudi Arabia. (1950-1983), Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, MIT Cambridge.

Fiske, J. (1990) Introduction to Communication Studies, London, Routledge.

Fletcher, R. (1989) 'The Messages of Material Behaviour: A Preliminary Discussion of non-verbal Meaning', In I. Hodder (Ed) The Meanings of Things: Material Culture and Symbolic Expression, London, Harper Collins Academic, pp. 33-40.

Frampton, Kenneth (1980) Modern Architecture A Critical History, London, Thames and Hudson.

Francescato, G. (1993) 'Meaning and Use: A Conceptual Basis', In E. G. Arias The Meaning and Use of Housing Aldershot, Avebury, pp. 35-49.

Fromm, Eric (1955) The Sane Society, New York, Holt, Rinehart and Winston.

Fu, Chao-ching (1990) Regional Heritage and Architecture - A Critical Regionalist Approach to a New Architecture for Taiwan, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, Edinburgh, University of Edinburgh.

Gabashi, Adel M.N. (1985/1405-1406H) A Study of some of the Ottoman's Buildings in Hofuf in the Second Half of Tenth Century of Al-Hejra (Sixteenth Century), Unpublished Master Thesis, Makkah, University of Um-Alqura. (Arabic Text)

Gibb, H. & Bowen, H. (1950) Islamic Society and the West: A study of the Impact of Western Civilization on Moslem Culture in the Near East, Two Vol., Oxford, Oxford University Press.

Giuliani, M. V. (1991) 'Towards and Analysis of Mental Representations of Attachment to the Home', The Journal of Architectural and Planning Research, Vol. 8, No. 2, (summer), pp. 132-47.

Goffman, E. (1959) The Presentation of Self in Everyday life, London, Penguin Books.

Gold, R. L. (1997) 'The Ethnographic Method in Sociology' Qualitative Inquiry, Vol. 3, No.4 (December), pp. 388-402.

Gombrich, E. H. (1979, 1984) The Sense of Order: A Study in the Psychology of Decorative Art, London, Phaidon.

Gopalan, S. (1978) 'Identity-Theory Against the Backdrop of the Hindu Concept of Dharma: A Socio-Philosophical Interpretation', In Hans Mol (Ed) Identity and Religion: International, Cross-Cultural Approaches, London, SAGE Publication Ltd, pp. 119-132.

Gordon, D. F. (1978) 'Identity and Social Commitment', In Hans Mol (Ed) Identity and Religion: International, Cross-Cultural Approaches, London, SAGE Publication Ltd, 229-241.

Habermas, J. (1974) 'On Social Identity', Telos, Vol. 19, (Spring), pp. 91-103.

Habraken, N. J. (1982) Transformations of the Site, Cambridge, Massachusetts, Awater Press.

Habraken, N. J. (1985) The Appearance of the Form, Cambridge, Massachusetts, Awater Press.

Hakim, B. (1986) Arabic-Islamic Cities: Building and Planning Principles London, KPI limited.

Hakim, B. S. (1994) 'The 'Urf' and its Role in Diversifying the Architecture of Traditional Islamic Cities', Journal of Architectural and Planning Research, Vol. 11, No. 2, pp. 108-127.

Hamdan, S. S. (1990) Social Change in the Saudi Family, Unpublished Ph.D., Iowa State, University Ames, Iowa.

Hardie, G. J. (1985) 'Continuity and Change in the Tswana's House and Settlement Form', In Irwin Altman & Carol M. Werner, Home Environments, New York, A Division of Plenum Publishing Corporation, pp. 213-236.

Harrison, P. W. (1924) The Arab at Home, New York.

Heidegger, M. (1960) 'The Principle of Identity', In Essays in Metaphysics: Identity and Difference, New York, Wisdom Library.

- Hiller, R. & Hanson, J.** (1984) The Social Logic of Space, Cambridge, Cambridge University Press.
- Hirsch, E.** (1982) The Concept of Identity, Oxford, Oxford University Press.
- Hodder, I.** (Ed) The Meanings of Things: Material Culture and Symbolic Expression, London, Harper Collins Academic.
- Hume, D.** (1967) A Treatise of Human Nature, Oxford, Clarendon Press (First Edition was published in 1739).
- Hunter, I.** (1957) Memory London, Penguin Book Ltd.
- Jarbawi, A. B.** (1981) Modernism and Secularism in the Arab Middle East, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, Cincinnati, University of Cincinnati.
- Jenkins, R.** (1996) Social Identity, London, Routledge.
- Jeremy, M. & Robinson, M. E.** (1989) Ceremony and symbolism in the Japanese home Honolulu, University of Hawaii Press.
- Jin, J. H.** (1993) 'Home as Expression of Identity', In Marjorie Bulos & Necdet Teymur (Eds) Housing: Design, Research, Education, England, Avebury, pp. 181-192.
- Johns, R.** (1977) 'Saudi Arabia', Middle East Annual Review, pp. 287-308.
- Jomah, H. S.** (1992) The Traditional Process of Producing A House in Arabia During the 18th and 19th Centuries: A Case of Hedjaz, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, Edinburgh, University of Edinburgh.
- Jones, R. K.** (1978) 'Paradigm Shifts and Identity Theory: Alternation as a Form of Identity Management', In Hans Mol (Ed) Identity and Religion: International, Cross-Cultural Approaches, London, SAGE Publication Ltd, pp. 59-82.
- Kaufman, J.** (1982) 'Post Modern Architecture' An Ideology, Unpublished PhD Thesis, Los Angeles, University of California.
- King, G.** (1998) The Traditional Architecture of Saudi Arabia, London, I. B. Tauris.
- Kellet, P.** (1995) Constructing Home: Production and Consumption of Popular Housing in Northern Colombia, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, Newcastle, University of Newcastle Upon Tyne.
- Kelly, K. & Schnadelbach, R. T.** (1975) 'Dry Prospects in Saudi Arabia', Landscape Architecture Magazine, October, PP. 442-44.

Kimball, S. T. (1956) 'American Culture in Saudi Arabia', Transaction of the New York Academy of Sciences, Ser. II, Vol. 18, No. 5.

Klapp, O. (1969) Collective Search for Identity, New York, Holt, Rinehart and Winston, Inc.

Konash, F. (1980) Evaluation of Western Architecture in Saudi Arabia: Guideline and Critique, Unpublished Master Thesis, Albuquerque, New Mexico, University of New Mexico.

Kose, S. (1993) 'Changing Lifestyle, Changing Housing Form: Japanese Housing in Transition', In Marjorie Bulos & Necdet Teymur (Eds) Housing: Design, Research, Education, England, Avebury, pp. 193-206.

Kron, J. (1983) Home-Psyche: the Social Psychology of Home Decoration, New York, Clarkson N. Potter.

Larrain, J. (1994) Ideology & Cultural Identity: Modernity and the Third World Presence, Cambridge, Polity Press.

Lawrence, R. (1982) 'Domestic Space and Society: A Cross-Cultural Study', Comparative Studies in Society and History, Vol. 24, No. 1, pp. 104-130.

Lawrence, R. (1983) 'The Comparative Analysis of homes: Research Method and Application', Social Science Information (SAGE), 22, 3, pp. 461-85.

Lawrence, R. (1983) 'Understanding the Home Environment: Spatial and Temporal Perspectives', Housing Science, Vol. 7, No. 1, pp. 13-25.

Lawrence, R. (1985) 'A More Humane History of Homes: Research Method and Application', In Irwin Altman & Carol M. Werner, Home Environments, New York, A Division of Plenum Publishing Corporation, pp. 113-132.

Lawrence, R. (1987) Housing, Dwelling and Homes: Design Theory, Research and Practice, Chichester, John Wiley.

Lawrence, R. (1987) 'What Makes a House a Home', Environment and Behaviour, Vol. 19, No. 2, pp. 154-168.

Lawrence, R. (1991) 'The Meaning and Use of Home', The Journal of Architecture and Planning Research, Vol. 8, No. 2, (Summer), pp. 91-95.

Lebkicher et al (1960) Aramco Handbook, Netherlands, Arabian American Oil Company.

Lerner, D. (1958) The Passing of Traditional Society: Modernizing the Middle East Glencoe, New York, Free Press.

Lewins, F. W. (1978) 'Religion and Ethnic Identity', In Hans Mol (Ed) Identity and Religion: International, Cross-Cultural Approaches, London, SAGE Publication Ltd, pp. 19-38.

Lewis, B., Pellat, C., & Schacht, J. (ed) (1965) Encyclopedia of Islam, Vol. II, London, Luzac & Co.

Lipsky, G. A. (1959) Saudi Arabia: Its People, its Society, its Culture, New Haven, HRF Press.

Lomax, A. with Berkowitz, N. (1973) 'The Evolutionary Taxonomy of Culture', Ekistics, Vol. 36, No. 213 (August), pp. 77-84.

Lorimer, J. C. (1908) Gazetteer of the Persian Gulf. 'Oman and Central Arabia, Vol. II, Calcutta, Superintendent Government Printing, India.

Makie, J.B. (1924) 'Hasa: An Arabian Oasis', Geographical Journal Vol. LXIII, pp. 189-207.

Malcolm, M. (1974) Crisis in Architecture, London, RIBA Publications.

Manju & Sinha, B. (1978) 'Ways of Yoga and the Mechanisms of Sacralisation', In Hans Mol (Ed) Identity and Religion: International, Cross-Cultural Approaches, London, SAGE Publication Ltd, pp. 133-150.

Marshall, C. & Rossman, G. (1995) Designing Qualitative Research London, Sage Publications.

Martin, R. D. (1972) 'Territoriality and Demarcation of Land' In Ucko, P., Tringham, R. & Dimbleby, G. (eds.) Man, Settlement and Urbanism, England, Duckworth Co. Ltd, pp. 427-445.

Ministry of Finance and National Economy (1993) Department of Statistic, Population Census.

Ministerial Committee for the Environment MCE, (1995), Agenda 21: Saudi Arabia.

Ministry of Municipal and Rural Affairs (1995) Al-Hassa Master Plan (Final Draft), First Report (Basic Data), Vol. II.

Mofti, F.A. (1989) 'Transformation in the Built Environment in Saudi Arabia', Urban Futures, Vol. 2, No. 4.

Mol, H. (1976) Identity and Sacred, Oxford, Basil Blackwell.

Mol, Hans (Ed) (1978, a) Identity and Religion: International, Cross-Cultural Approaches, London, SAGE Publication Ltd.

Mol, Hans (1978, b) 'Maori Identity and Religion', In Hans Mol (Ed) Identity and Religion: International, Cross-Cultural Approaches, London, SAGE Publication Ltd, pp. 179-202.

Morely, D. and Robin, K. (1993) 'No Place Like Heimat: Images of Home (Land) in European Culture', In Carter, Erica, Donald, James & Squires, Judith (Eds) Spaces & Places: Theories of Identity and Location, London, Lawrence & Wishart.

- Morely, D. and Robin, K.** (1995) Spaces of Identity, London, Routledge.
- Nakhla, Mohammed Urabi** (1980) The Political History of Al-Hasa, Kuwait, That Al-Salasil. (Arabic Text).
- Nasar, J.** (1993) 'Connotative Meaning of House Style', In E. Arias The Meaning and Use of Housing, Aldershot, Avebury, pp. 143-67.
- Nasr, Seyyed Hossein** (1965) Knowledge and the Sacred, Edinburgh, Edinburgh University Press.
- Okaz** (Arabic newspaper), No. 11252 (7/6/1997).
- Oliver, P.** (1975) Shelter, Sign & Symbol London, Barrie & Jenkins.
- Palgrave, W.G.** (1865) Narrative of Year's Journey Through Central and Eastern Arabia (1862-3), London.
- Parsons, T.** (1964) Social Structure and Personality, USA, The Free Press of Glencoe: A Division of The Macmillan Company.
- Parsons, Talcott & Bales, Robert F.** (1968) (First Published in England 1956) Family Socialization and Interaction Process, London, Lowe & Brydone (Printers) Ltd.
- Patton, M. Q.** (1987) How to Use Qualitative Methods in Evaluation London, Sage Publications.
- Patton, M. Q.** (1990) Qualitative Evaluation and Research Methods, London, Sage Publication.
- Pelly, L.** (1866) Report on a Journey to Wahabee Capital of Riyadh in Central Arabia Byculla, the Education Society's Press.
- Petroski, H.** (1993) The Evolution of Useful Things London, Pavilion Books Limited.
- Philby, B.** (1922) The Heart of Arabia: A Record of Travel & Exploration, London, Constable and Company LTD, Vol.
- Popper, K.** (1968) 'Towards a Rational Theory of Tradition', in his The Growth of Scientific Knowledge, New York, Harper and Row, pp. 120-35.
- Payne, G.** (1977) Urban Housing in the Third World, London, Leonard Hill.
- Ragin, C. C.** (1994) Constructing Social Research, USA, Thousand Oaks, California, Pine Forge Press.
- Rapoport, A.** (1968) 'The Personal Element in Housing-an Argument for Open-Ended Design', Journal of the Royal Institute of british Architects, (July), pp. 300-307.

- Rapoport, A.** (1969) house form and culture, Englewood Cliffs, N.J., Prentice-Hall, INC.
- Rapoport, A.** (1970) 'Symbolism and Environmental Design', International Journal of Symbology (USA), Vol. 1, No. 3 (April).
- Rapoport, A.** (1973) 'The Ecology of Housing', Ecologist (UK), Vol. 3, No. 1 (January).
- Rapoport, A.** (1973) 'Some Perspectives on Human Use and Organization of Space', Architectural Association Quarterly (UK) Vol. 5, No. 3 (July/September)
- Rapoport, A.** (1973) 'Some Thoughts on the Methodology of Man-Environment Studies', International Journal of Environmental studies (UK), Vol. 4
- Rapoport, A.** (1977) Human Aspects of Urban Form, Oxford, Pergamon Press.
- Rapoport, A.** (1981) 'Identity and environment: A cross-cultural perspective', in J.S. Duncan (Ed) Housing and Identity: Cross-Cultural Perspectives, London, Croom-Helm, p.6-35.
- Rapoport, A.** (1982) The Meaning of the Built Environment: A Nonverbal Communication Approach Tucson, The University of Arizona Press.
- Rapoport, A.** (1984) 'Culture and the urban order', In J. Agnew, J. Mercer and D. Sopher (Eds) The City in Cultural Context, London, Allen and Unwin, p.50-75.
- Rapoport, A.** (1985) 'Thinking about Home Environments', In Irwin Altman & Carol M. Werner, Home Environments, New York, A Division of Plenum Publishing Corporation, pp. 255-286.
- Rapoport, A.** (1985) "'On Diversity' and 'Designing for Diversity'", in B Judd, J Dean, and D Brown (Eds) Housing Issues I: Desing for Diversification, Canberra, Royal Australian Institute of Architects. (See Rapoport, A. (No Date) Thirty Three Papers in Environment-Behaviour Research, Newcastle Upon Tyne, The Urban International Press, pp. 373-97.
- Rapoport, A.** (1986) 'Culture and built form - a reconsideration', In D.G. Saile (Ed) Architecture in cultural change (Essays in Built Form and Culture Research) Lawrence, University of Kansas, p.157-175.
- Rapoport, A.** (1990) 'Levels of Meaning and Types of Environment', In Y. Yoshitake, R. Bechtel, T. Takahashi and M. Asai (Eds) Current Issues in Environmental-Behaviour, Tokyo, University of Tokyo, (see Rapoport A. (no date) Thirty Three Papers in Environment-Behaviour Research, Newcastle upon Tyne, The Urban International Press), pp. 513-528.
- Rapoport, A.** (1990) 'Environmental quality and environmental quality profiles', In N. Wilkinson (Ed) Quality in the Built Environment, Newcastle (UK) Urban International Press, p.75-83.

- Read, H.** (1966) 'The Origin of Form in Art' In Gyorgy Kepes (ed) The Man Made Object, New York, George Braziller, pp. 30-49.
- Relph, E.** (1976) Place and Placelessness, London, Pion Limited.
- Rubin, H. J. & Rubin, I. S.** (1995) Qualitative Interviewing: The Art of Hearing Data London, Sage Publication.
- Rustow, D. A.** (1967) A World of Nations: Problems of Political Modernisation, Washinton D.C., Brookings Institution.
- Rutherford, J.** (Ed) Identity: community, culture, difference, London, Lawrence & Wishart
- Rutledge, A.** (1985) A visual Approach to Park Design, New York, A Wiley – Internscience Publication.
- Rybczynski, W.** (1986) Home A Short History of an Idea, Middlesex, Penguin Books Ltd.
- Sadleir, G.F.** (1866) Diary of A Journey Across Arabia (1819), Bombay. (Reprinted with an Introduction by F.M. Edwards, Cambridge: The Oleander Press, 1977).
- Salah, S.** (1978) Panorama of Saudi Arabia, Dhahran, IPA.
- Salam, H.** (1990) (Ed) Expressions of Islam in Buildings, Proceedings of International Seminar, Sponsored by the Aga Khan Award for Architecture and the Indonesian Institute of Architects, Jakarta and Yogyakarta, Indonesia
- Shaffir, W.** (1978) 'Witnessing as Identity Consolidation: The Case of the Lubavitcher Chassidim', In Hans Mol (Ed) Identity and Religion: International, Cross-Cultural Approaches, London, SAGE Publication Ltd, pp. 38-57.
- Shaker, F.** (1972) Modernization of the Developing Nations: The Case of Saudi Arabia, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, Purdue University.
- Shata, A.** (1985) Studies in Saudi Society, (publisher not mentioned) (Arabic).
- Shiber, S. G.** (1967) 'Report on City Growth in the Eastern Province, Saudi Arabia', in his Recent Arab City Growth, Kuwait
- Shirreff, D.** (1979) 'Saudi Arabia' Middle East Annual Review, Essex, England, pp. 315-38.
- Shirref, D.** (1980) 'Housing-Ideas Differ on what People Want', Middle East Annual Review, in J. Andrews and D. Shirref World Information, Essex, England, pp. 59-62.
- Shetty, R.** (1990) 'The Impact of Kinship Systems on the Generation of House-TypesÓ, TDSR, Vol. I, No. 11, pp. 49-60.
- Shils, Edward** (1966) Political Development in the New States, Paris, Mouton& Co.

- Shoemaker, S.** (1984) 'Personal Identity: A Materialist's Account', In Sydney Shoemaker and Richard Swinburne, Personal Identity, Oxford, Basil Blackwell, pp. 67-132.
- Sixsmith, J.** (1986) 'The Meaning of Home: An Exploratory Study of Environmental Experience', Journal of Environmental Psychology, Vol. 6, pp. 281-298.
- Stoddart, K.** (1986) 'The Presentation of Everyday Life: Some Textual Strategies for "Adequate Ethnography"', Urban Life, Vol. 15, pp. 103-121.
- Studer, R.** (1993) 'Meaning and Use: A Basis of Understanding', In E. Arias (1993) The Meaning and Use of Housing, Aldershot, Avebury, pp. 29-34.
- Sweet, E.** (ed) (1970) People and Cultures of the Middle East, New York, The Natural History Press (two volumes).
- Swinburne, R.** (1984) 'Personal Identity: The Dualist Theory', In Sydney Shoemaker and Richard Swinburne, Personal Identity, Oxford, Basil Blackwell, pp. 1-66.
- Tayeb, F. A.** (1983) An Ethnographic Study of Al-Hasa Region of Eastern Saudi Arabia, Jeddah, Tihama.
- Talib, K.** (1983) Shelter in Saudi Arabia, London, Academy Edition.
- Taylor, R. & Brower, S.** (1985) 'Home and Near-Home Territories', In Irwin Altman & Carol M. Werner, Home Environments, New York, A Division of Plenum Publishing Corporation, pp. 183-212.
- Tipple, A. G.** (1998) 'User-Initiated Extensions as the Way Forward for Low Cost Housing Estates', Paper presented in the 15th Inter-Schools Conference on Development (29 - 31 March), Cardiff, University of Wales.
- Turner, V.** (1967) The Forest of Symbols: Aspects of Nedembu Rituals London, Cornell University Press.
- Vidal, F. S.** (1955) The Oasis of Al-Hasa, Dhahran, Saudi Arabia, Arabian American Oil Co.
- Weeks, J.** (1990) 'The Value of Difference', In Jonathan Rutherford (Ed) Identity: community, culture, difference, London, Lawrence & Wishart, pp. 88-100.
- Werner, C. M., Altman, I., & Oxley, D.** (1985) 'Temporal Aspects of Homes', In Irwin Altman & Carol M. Werner, Home Environments, New York, A Division of Plenum Publishing Corporation, pp. 1-32.
- Werner, C. M.** (1987) 'Home Interiors: A Time and Place for Interpersonal Relationships', Environment and Behaviour, Vol. 19, pp. 169-79.

Winterhalter, C. P. (1981) Indigenous Housing Patterns and Design Principles in the Eastern Province of Saudi Arabia, Unpublished Ph.D. Thesis, Zurich, Swiss Federal Institute of Technology.

Zeisel, J. (1981) Inquiry by Design: Tools for Environment-Behaviour Research, Monterey, CA, Brook/Cole.

asked some architects about the most important space that people decorate all of them mentioned that the *majlis* hall comes first, then the living room. They said that people never move to their new houses unless the *majlis* hall is well furnished. Al-Shayeb, for example, said that ‘it is possible that people move to their new houses even if it is not yet furnished but with one condition: that is the *majlis* hall should be completely furnished and ready to receive guests before they move’.²⁷

9.4.1.1 The *Majlis* Hall

One of the interesting changes in the contemporary *majlis* is change in the location of the front zone now found in the longer side. Normally the front zone was located in the narrower side of the *majlis* hall, usually facing the entry door. In the recent houses (after 1995) a new concept appeared: that is the *majlis* hall completely opened to the *majlis* entrance. The wall and the door, which separate the two zones, disappeared from many houses. This led to the transfer of the front zone to the wider side. The new location provides the front zone with more visual depth to let the important people, who usually sit in this zone, enjoy the variety of space.²⁸ The *majlis* entrance in this case became the entry zone, which provides the *majlis* with the ability to accommodate a large number of guests by including the entry zone in the previous *majlises* in the middle zone (Fig. 9.25).

This is not the only reason that changed the location of the front zone in the contemporary *majlis*. From our survey, we found that some people had very large *majlises*. This made it difficult for them to situate the front zone in the narrower and deeper side of the *majlis* hall because this would lead to decreasing the importance of this zone, especially with the lack of visual quality, which existed in the traditional *majlis* through the existence of the coffee area. People in this case displaced the location of the front zone to the wider side in the *majlis* hall and emphasised it with furniture and windows. In some cases only the emphasised zone was considered the front zone while the other seats in the wider side were considered to belong to the middle zone (Fig.9.26). This illustrates that the front zone has more to do with meaning than the location itself.

²⁷ Personal interview

²⁸ The researcher designed a few houses in Hofuf in the last four years, while he was doing his study in UK, for his friends and brothers. They asked him to make the guest entrance one and half storeys in height. They indicated that the entrance hall had now become an important element from inside and outside.